



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

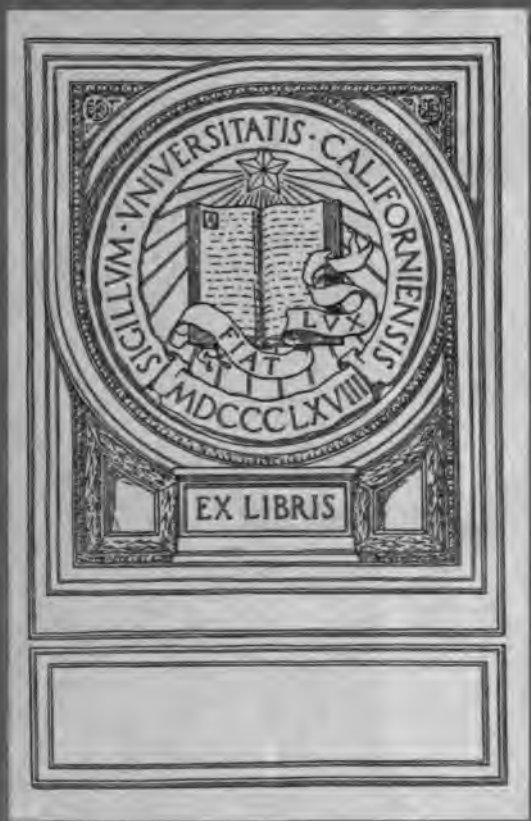
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



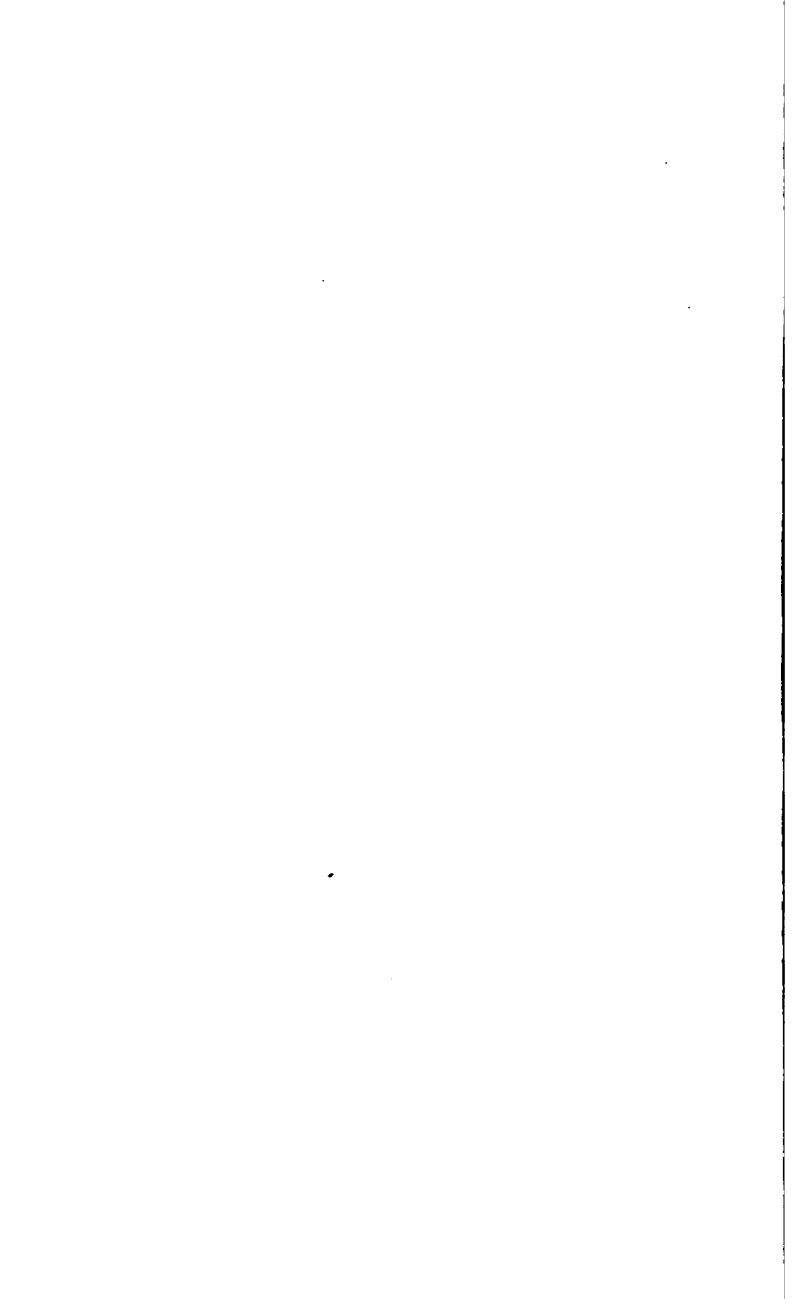


EX LIBRIS



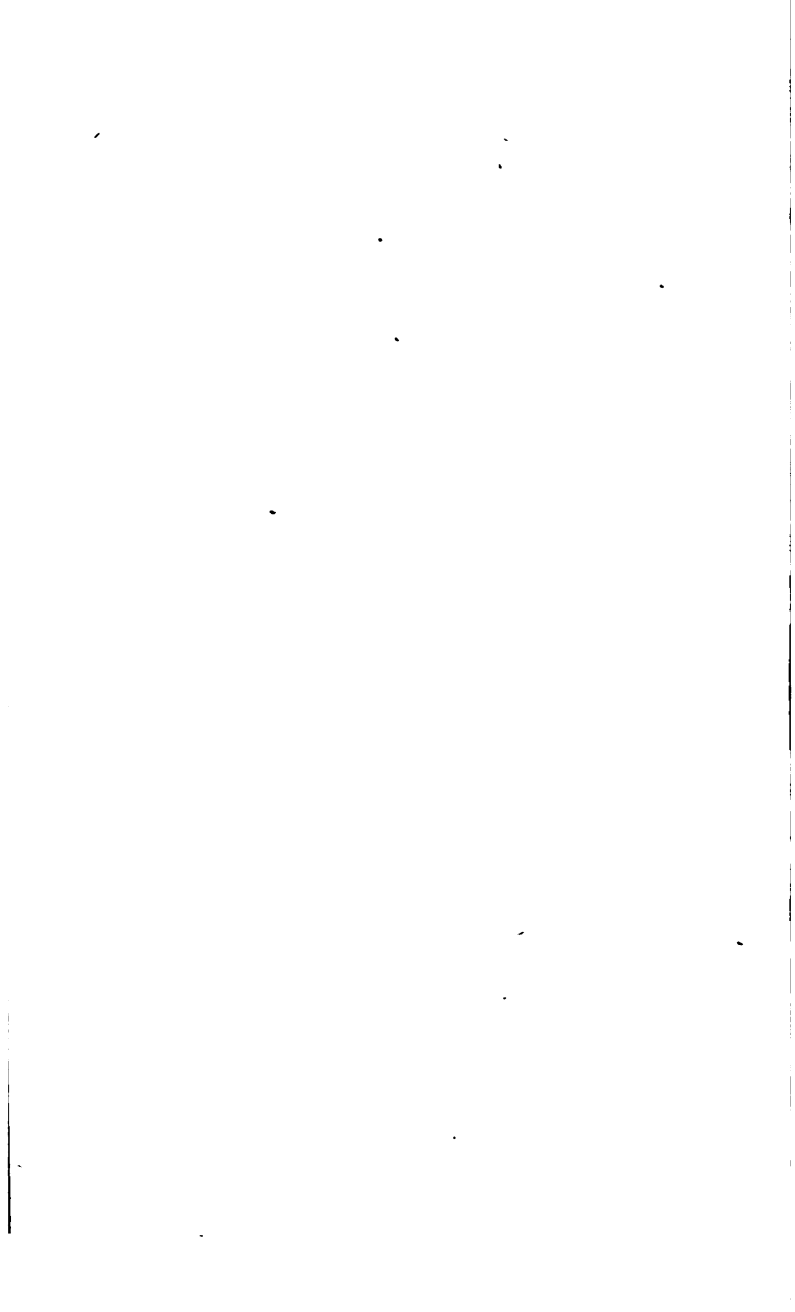








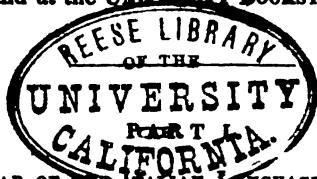




# CORSO DI STUDIO ITALIANO,

OR A

**COURSE OF STUDY FOR THE ITALIAN LANGUAGE**, prepared by **Dr. BACHY**, Instructor in Harvard University; and for sale by **C. C. LITTLE & Co.**, Washington Street, Boston; and at the **UNIVERSITY BOOKSTORE**, Cambridge.



**A GRAMMAR OF THE ITALIAN LANGUAGE**; a New Edition revised and improved, with the addition of Practical Exercises and numerous Illustrations, drawn from the Italian Classic Writers. 1 vol. 12mo.

## PART II.

**RACCOLTA DI FAVOLE MORALI**, or a Collection of Italian Fables in Prose and Verse, with Interlinear Translations. 1 vol. 12mo.

## PART III.

**SCELTA DI PROSE ITALIANE**, or Extracts from the Works of the best Italian Prose Writers, both Ancient and Modern. 1 vol. 12mo.

## PART IV.

**TEATRO SCELTO ITALIANO**, or a Selection of Italian Dramas, from the Works of Goldoni, Nota, Giraud, Alfieri, Monti, and Manzoni, with Notes. 1 vol. 12mo.

## PART V.

**I POETI ITALIANI MAGGIORI**, or Extracts from Tasso, Ariosto, Poliziano, and Petrarca, and the Inferno of Dante, with Analytical and Historical Notes. 2 vols. 12mo. (The first volume is in Press.)

## PART VI.

**CONVERSAZIONE ITALIANA**, or a Collection of Phrases and Familiar Dialogues in Italian and English. 1 vol. 12mo.

## PART VII.

**A KEY** to the **EXERCISES** contained in the Italian Grammar. 1 vol. 12mo. (In Press.)

---

At the Bookstore of C. C. LITTLE & Co. may be had also the following Works of the same Author :

## I.

**RUDIMENTS OF THE ITALIAN LANGUAGE**, or Easy Lessons in Spelling and Reading, with an Abridgment of the Grammar. Adapted to the Capacity of Children. 1 vol. 16mo.

## II.

**MRS. BARBAULD'S HYMNS FOR CHILDREN**, in Italian ; being a Sequel to the "Easy Lessons in Reading," in the abovementioned Rudiments. 1 vol. 16mo.

## III.

**A COMPARATIVE VIEW OF THE ITALIAN AND SPANISH LANGUAGES**, or an Easy Method of Learning the Spanish Tongue for those who are already acquainted with the Italian. 1 vol. 12mo.

## IV.

**A COMPARATIVE VIEW OF THE SPANISH AND PORTUGUESE LANGUAGES**, or an Easy Method of learning the Portuguese Tongue for those who are already acquainted with the Spanish. 1 vol. 12mo.

---



**CORSO DI STUDIO ITALIANO.**

---

**PART I.**

**ITALIAN GRAMMAR.**

**CAMBRIDGE:**  
**FOLSOM, WELLS, AND THURSTON,**  
**PRINTERS TO THE UNIVERSITY.**

• Italian

A  
GRAMMAR.

OF THE

ITALIAN LANGUAGE

BY

*Brown*

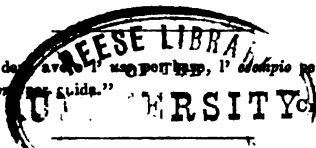
PIETRO BACHI,

INSTRUCTOR IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

---

A NEW EDITION REVISED AND IMPROVED,  
WITH THE ADDITION OF  
PRACTICAL EXERCISES AND NUMEROUS ILLUSTRATIONS,  
DRAWN FROM THE ITALIAN CLASSICS.

“Una lingua de avero l'uso por l'uso, l'adempio per consiglio,  
e la ragione per guida.”



BOSTON:

CHARLES C. LITTLE AND JAMES BROWN.

LONDON:

RICHARD JAMES KENNETT.

---

M DCCC XXXVIII.



779  
F. 22

Entered according to act of Congress, in the year 1838, by  
PIETRO BACHI,  
in the Clerk's office of the District Court, for the District of Massachusetts.

24915

PC1109

B22

1535

MILIN

“DE *exteris hominibus* jam nunc dicam, quorum de-  
merendi, si tibi id cordi est, persanè ampla in præsens  
oblata est occasio. Ut enim *apud eos* ingenio quis  
forte floridior, aut moribus amœnis et elegantibus,  
*linguam Etruscam* in deliciis habet præcipuis, *quin et*  
*in solidâ etiam parte eruditionis esse sibi ponendam*  
*ducit*, præsertim si Græca aut Latina vel nullo, vel  
modico, tinctu imbiberit. Ego certè istis utrisque  
linguis, non extremis tantummodo labris madidus, sed,  
si quis alius, quantum per annos hœuit, poculis ma-  
joribus prolutus, possum tamen nonnunquam ad illum  
*Dantem et Petrarcam*, aliosque vestros complurimos,  
libenter et cupidè comissatum ire. Nec me tam ipsæ  
Athensæ Atticæ cum illo suo pellucido Ilisso, nec illa  
vetus Roma suâ Tiberis ripâ retinere valuerunt, quin  
*sæpe Arnum vestrum et Fæsulanos illos colles invisere*  
amem.”

MILTON. *Epist. ad Benedictum Buommattei* ;  
*Florent., Sept. 10., 1638.*

# PREFACE

TO THE FORMER EDITION.

---

AS A NATURAL consequence of the general advancement of this country in literature, the importance attached to an acquaintance with the Italian Language, as a part of polite education, has considerably increased. Not only does it now enter into the circle of the elegant studies of females, as the handmaid and ally of the ornamental arts, but the spirit of its higher literature begins to be understood by the cultivated of both sexes; and within a short time a place has been conceded to *Dante* and *Tasso* in the same academic course with Homer and Virgil.

But while the other languages of the continent of Europe have possessed the advantage of a variety of good grammars written in English, the Italian Instructor has had the mortification to see in almost universal use the farrago of *Veneróni*,\* to the disparagement of his native tongue and the perplexity of those who would learn it. It is true, that other grammars are extant of various degrees of merit, and those of *Galignóni*, *Santagnéllo*, and *Vergóni* are entitled to much praise; the first two, however, are hardly known here,

---

\* *Veneróni* was a native of *Verdun*, a small town of Burgundy, in France; his real name was *Vignerón*; but, having learnt Italian, and wishing to teach it in Paris, he *Italianized* his name and called himself a *Florentine*. The *Complete Italian Master* by Signór *Veneróni* was written for a few crowns by *Roséllk*, the extraordinary adventurer, who has left us his history in the romance entitled *The Unfortunate Neapolitan*.

and the last, which is perhaps the best of them all, has been confined principally to New-York; where indeed the want of a suitable grammar has been far less felt than in other places, from the singular good fortune of that city in enjoying the living instruction of the venerable *Da Ponte*, whose own writings, in prose as well as in verse, form an integral and permanent part of the noble literature, which he has done so much to propagate in America.

The field, therefore, was open for attempting to treat in English the *Grammar of the Italian Language* in a manner better suited to the wants of the public; and the author, in entering it, has flattered himself that he should render an acceptable service, if, after a thorough study of Italian writers on their own tongue, and a diligent examination of the labors of his predecessors both in Great Britain France, and Germany, he should be able to produce a more complete, and methodical, and, at the same time, strictly practical treatise, than now exists in English, however far he might fall short of that perfection of which he has the idea.

In the *Introduction* are given very summarily the principles of general grammar, and the terms are defined in which those principles are afterwards applied to the Italian tongue.

The Part devoted to *Pronunciation* affords, it is believed, more full information on the subject than can elsewhere be found; and, as the words are carefully represented by English combinations of letters of equivalent sound,\* students who can-

---

\* The vowel *a* is represented by the combination of letters *ah*, pronounced without aspiration as in the words *sirrah*, *hallelujah*, &c. : *e*, by *ay*, as in *day*, except when it occurs before certain consonants with which in English it has what is called the short sound, nearly resembling the sound in Italian, as in the syllables *em*, *el*, &c. ; before *r*, however, *e* is sounded long, like *ay* : *i*, by *ee*, as in *sleep* : *u*, by *oo*, as in *ooze*. In the combinations *k,y* — *g,y* — *l,y* — *n,y*, a comma is inserted to prevent the letter before it from coalescing with the *y*, which is to be pronounced with the following vowel as if it began the syllable.

not avail themselves of oral instruction, may yet make such an approximation to a just pronunciation, as to perceive and enjoy in a good degree the rhythm and harmony of the classic authors, and, with few errors to unlearn, be prepared to take advantage of future opportunities of improving their pronunciation by intercourse with accomplished speakers of the language.

In treating of the different Parts of Speech, in the division called *Analogy*, while the author has wished that nothing should be wanting to the completeness of this part of his treatise, he has striven so to methodize the various particulars that they should lie ready for use. The verbs, especially, are given with unexampled fulness; and to both the regular and irregular verbs are annexed the *poetical forms*, which constitute no small difficulty for learners, even in reading the older prose writers. This is an advantage not afforded to the same extent in any preceding grammar.

As to the *Syntax*, a few scattered observations only are to be found in the best grammars. These are here digested under their proper heads, increased by various new ones, and all of them supported by citations from those Classics from whose authority no appeal can be allowed, though colloquial usage may in a few instances be at variance with them.

The *Orthography* contains the result of what has been written by Italian authors on the subject, and such rules as have been deduced from the usage of the best writers.

Throughout the Grammar, it should be observed, the principal rules are placed under their appropriate heads, in large type; exceptions to general rules and subordinate observations are printed in smaller type. Every Italian word of more than one syllable is carefully accented, that the mere perusal of the Grammar may operate as a perpetual lesson in pronunciation, preparing the pupil to read currently the first author put into his hands, and sparing the instructor the

trouble of much inculcation. For an analogous reason, every Italian word and sentence is accompanied by a literal English version, which is often indispensable to the beginner, and can rarely be unuseful.

The author is well aware of the amount of indulgence which his English style will require on the part of his readers, whose very pursuit of a foreign literature implies a degree of cultivation in their own, which must make them impatient of the constraint and want of idiomatic propriety they will here meet with. Grammatical propriety, however, and perspicuity were the highest qualities to which he could at present pretend, in a language whose idioms are so remote from his own; and, if he has been in any good degree successful in attaining these, he relies on the candor of ingenuous scholars to attribute his defects to the difficulty of the case, and not suppose that he undervalues or is insensible to the charms of a good style; which would indeed be inexcusable in one whose ambition it is to spread a knowledge of the most graceful of modern dialects:

“*Illam, quidquid agit, quoquò vestigia movit,  
Componit furtim subsequiturque Decor.*”

TIBULL. l. 4. c. 2.

---

b

## PREFACE TO THE PRESENT EDITION.

---

THE flattering reception, which the former edition of this Grammar has met with, both in this country and abroad, and the wide circulation, which in a few years it has obtained in the different quarters of this Union, have made it the duty of the author to redouble his efforts to approach nearer to the end which he originally proposed to himself.

A long experience in teaching, the useful suggestions made to him by friends who have been using his book both in private and public instruction, together with an incessant study of his native tongue in the works of the classic writers, have enabled him to make such improvements, as to render the work more deserving of the public favor.

But the light, which the writings of *Móni*, *Compagnóni*, *Románi*, *Ambrosóli*, *Lucchesíni*, and others, have shed on Philology, in Italy, has given origin, within the last few years, to so many valuable treatises on Grammar, that, to derive advantage from their works, and to suit this book to the present times, it was necessary to remodel the former plan, and introduce such changes, as appeared to be required by the philosophy of the language, and the progress of grammatical science.

To obtain this object, the Grammar has been newly written, the arrangement altered, the method simplified, and the style generally improved. Several remarks, which had been found useless, have been omitted, and many important rules, which had been omitted, have been introduced. The *verbs* have been better displayed; and the *Syntax* has been increased

by several important chapters, such as those on the *Regimen of Words*, the *Agreement of Participles*, &c.

Sensible of the truth of the principle, that a grammarian ought not to limit himself to a mere exposition of principles, but should deduce them from sound reason and verify them by the authority of the classic writers, — (“Grammaticorum sine ratione testimoniisque auctoritas nulla est.” — SANCT. MINERV. l. 1. c. 2.) — the author has, in this new edition, endeavoured first to write and explain his rules, and then to add, by way of illustration, the classical authorities, which have furnished him the *Examples* corroborating the principles he has laid down.

Convinced, too, of the advantage which the student <sup>actually</sup> derives from the practical application of abstract principles, he has introduced, in each chapter of the Grammar, one or more *Exercises*, as the subject or the importance of the rules seemed to require.

The *Examples*, as well as the *Exercises*, have been chiefly drawn from the writers of the fourteenth century, such as *Dante*, *Petrarca*, *Boccaccio*, *Villani*, &c.; in many instances from those of the sixteenth, as *Machiavelli*, *Guicciardini*, *Ariosto*, *Tasso*, &c.; and, when these have failed to supply apposite illustrations, from the best poets and prose writers of the eighteenth century, and from those among the moderns who have distinguished themselves for purity of diction and elegance of style, as *Alfieri*, *Foscolo*, *Botta*, *Manzoni*, &c.

To prevent any interruption in the regular progress of the different parts of the book, and to reduce the principles to a more compact form, it was at first thought advisable to throw into an *Appendix*, at the end of the volume, certain lists of words and supplementary remarks, which formerly occupied a place in the *Analogy*; but the size, which the work had already attained,



determined the author to reserve it to be published in a separate form, particularly as its omission at present affects in no manner the completeness of the Grammar, however useful such an appendage might be.

Some improvements have also been made in the typographical execution of the work. The most important parts of the rules have been printed in *italics*. In the examples, which immediately follow, the words which directly illustrate the rules are printed in SMALL CAPITALS; and the whole of these examples, which always recur in the succeeding citations from the classics, are there printed in SMALL CAPITALS, to engage the attention of the learner to their connexion with the longer passages, from which they were at first detached.

Should the volume appear to any one larger than is necessary for common use, he should observe, that, of the whole number of pages, 351 only are occupied by the *rules of the language* and their *immediate illustrations*, and that the remainder of the book is filled by *Exercises* (which are commonly printed in a separate volume), and by a collection of *eighteen hundred* citations from the classics, which exhibit all the principal phenomena of the language, in a form which gives the student ready access to a high authority for, and a happy exemplification of, every principle, thus making him familiar beforehand with the idioms and constructions, which would be the chief impediments in his reading the most difficult authors.

As to the mode of using this Grammar, the author would recommend the following plan. Let the principles first be properly explained and exemplified by the instructor, and let them be properly learned and recited by the student. This done, let the instructor point out the application of them in the citations from the classics which follow the rules of each chapter, and let the student account for them (and for as many others as he may have

already learned), by parsing the words which form the subjects of the rules with which he is already acquainted; and, when he has become familiar with them, let him be directed to write out the Exercises. This method, if strictly adhered to, cannot fail to prove highly useful to the learner, and satisfactory to the teacher.

Desirous that his book should not fall short of that perfection, which grammatical science seems lately to have reached in Italy, the author has spared neither expense nor diligence in procuring all the best treatises on the Italian language, which have hitherto been published in Europe. Some of these have been of great assistance to him in his labors, and in many instances he has not hesitated to adopt from them many excellent hints and valuable remarks. Still he trusts, that the manner in which he has combined his scattered materials into a body of principles, all illustrated by a variety of unquestionable classical authorities, will secure to his work the character of originality, so far as this can belong to any grammar of a language long since settled in its usages and idioms:

“Etiamsi omnia a veteribus inventa sunt, hoc tamen erit  
semper novum, usus et dispositio inventorum ab aliis.”

SENEC. *Epist.* 64.

*Cambridge, September, 1838.*

## A LIST OF WORKS

EXAMINED WITH REFERENCE TO THE COMPILATION OF THIS  
GRAMMAR.

- ALBERTI** (*di Villanuova, Francesco d'*), Dizionario Universale Critico Enciclopédico della Língua Italiána. Lúcca, 1805. 6 vol. 4to.
- Alberti** (*de Villeneuve, François d'*), Grand Dictionnaire François-Italien, et Italien-François. Bassano, 1831. 2 vol. 4to.
- Algarótti** (*Francesco*), Lettere Filológicas, raccolte da Bartolomméo Gamba. Venézia, 1826. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Alunno** (*Francesco*), Le Ricchezza della Língua sopra il Decamerone. Venézia, 1557. 1 vol. 4to.
- Ambrosóli** (*Francesco*), Manuale della Língua Italiána. Miláno, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Barberi** (*J. Ph.*), Grammaire des Grammaires Italiennes, ou Cours Complet de Langue Italiennne. Paris, 1819. 2 vol. 8vo.
- , Petit Trésor de la Langue Française et de la Langue Italiennne. Paris, 1821. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Baretti** (*Joseph*), A Dictionary of the English and Italian Languages. London, 1835. 2 vols. 8vo.
- Bártoli** (*Daniéle*), Trattáto dell' Ortografia Italiána. Miláno, 1830. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Bazzarini** (*António*), Ortografia Enciclopédica Universale. Venézia, 1824. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Bembo** (*Piétro*), Prose, nelle quali si ragióna della Volgár Língua, cólle Giunte di Lodovico Castelvétro. Miláno, 1824. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Bergantini** (*Giován-Piétro*), Vóci Italiáne d' Autori Approvati dalla Crúscá, nel Vocabolário di éssa non registráte. Venézia, 1745. 1 vol. 4to.
- Biagioli** (*G.*), Grammaire Italiennne Élémentaire et Raisonné. Paris, 1825. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Borélli** (*Pasquále*), Principj dell' Arte Etimológica. Nápoli, 1830. 1 vol. 4to.
- Brosse** (*Charles de*), Traité de la Formation Mécanique des Langues. Paris, 1801. 2 vol. 12mo.

- Brini (Donato Antonio)*, Osservazioni sopra la Língua Toscana. Nápoli, 1759. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Bullet (J. B.)* Memoires sur la Langue Celtique. Besançon, 1760. 3 vol. fol.
- Buonmattéi (Benedetto)*, Délla Língua Toscana, Libri Due, còlle note di Anton-Maria Salvini. Miláno, 1807. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Caléffi (Giuseppe)* Grammatica délla Língua Italiána, compilata sulle migliori modérne Grammatiche. Firénze, 1832. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Cardinátì (Francésco)*, Dizionario portátile délla Língua Italiána. Bológna, 1828. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Carducci (Facondo)*, Eleménti della Lettúra, ed Ortografia Italiána. Siéna, 1828. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Césari (Antonio)*, Dissertazione sopra lo Státo délla Língua Italiána. Veróna, 1810. 1 vol. 4to.
- Cesarótti (Melchiór)*, Sággi sulla Filosofia délle Língue, e del Gústo. Miláno, 1821. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Cinónio* [alias *Mambélli (Marc-António)*], Osservazioni délla Língua Italiána, illustráte ed accresciúte da Luigi Lambérti. Miláno, 1811. 4 vol. 8vo.
- Cittadini (Céso)*, Le Origini délla Toscana Favélla. Siéna, 1828. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Compagnóni (Giuseppe)*, Teórica dé' Vérbi Italiáni, regolári, anómali, difettivi, e mal-nóti; compilata sulle Ópere del Cinónio, del Pistolési, del Mastroffini, e d' áltri piú illústri Grammatici. Livórno, 1830. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Corticélli (Salvadóre)*, Régole ed Osservazioni délla Língua Toscana. Bassáno, 1827. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Coureil (Gio. de)*, Nuóva Grammatica délla Língua Italiána per gl' Italiáni. Livórno, 1816. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Dalmástro*, Osservazioni intórno álla Língua Italiána. Venézia, 1821. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Da-Pónte (Lorénzo)*, Eleménti délla Língua Italiána. Nuova-Yórk, 1831. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Dell' Arte délla Paróla*, consideráta né' varj Módi délla súa Espressióne. Miláno, 1827. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Del-Miuro (Vincenzo)*, Grammatica Ragionáta délla Língua Italiána. Nápoli, 1804. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Destutt-de-Tracy (Antonio Luigi Clemente)*, Grammatica Générale, còlle Annotazioni di Giuseppe Compagnóni. Miláno, 1817. 2 vol. 8vo.

- Dizionario della Lingua Italiana.* Pádova, 1827. 7 vol. 4to.
- Dólce (Lodovico), Osservazioni sulla Lingua Italiana.* Venézia, 1562. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Elementi della Lingua Italiana ad Úso delle Scuole.* Venézia, 1810. 1 vol. 8vo.
- della Grammatica, e della Ortografia Italiana, ricavati dal Pallavicino, Bártoli, Rogacci, Buommattéi. Nápoli, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Faccioláti (Jacopo), Ortografia Moderna Italiana.* Nápoli, 1831. 1 vol. 4to.
- Ferrarii (Octavii), Origines Linguae Italicae.* Patavii, 1676. 1 vol. fol.
- Fornasari, Theoretisch praktische Anleitung zur Erlernung der Italienischen Sprache, in einer neuen, und fasslicheren Darstellung.* Wien, 1830. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Francini (Stéfano), Grammatica Inferiore della Lingua Italiana.* Miláno, 1832. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Galignani (J. A.), Grammar and Exercises, in Twenty-four Lectures on the Italian Language, enlarged and improved by Antonio Montucci.* London, 1823. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Giambullári (Pier-Francésco), Lezioni, aggiuntovi l' Origine della Lingua Fiorentina, altrimenti il Géllo.* Miláno, 1827. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Giannelli (Leonardo), Régole Grammaticali per chi vuol parlare, e scrivere correttamente Toscano.* Lúcca, 1820. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Gigli (Girólamo), Lezioni di Lingua Toscana.* Venézia, 1722. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Gióia (Melchiór), Ideologia.* Miláno, 1822. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Gório (A. F.), Storia Antiquaria Etrúscá.* Firénze, 1749. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Gran Dizionario della Lingua Italiana.* Bologna, 1828. 7 vol. 4to.
- Grassi (Giuseppe), Saggio intorno ai Sinonimi della Lingua Italiana.* Firénze, 1832. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Jagemann (Chr. Jos.), Neues Deutsch-Italienisches Hand-Wörter-Buch.* Leipzig, 1799. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Jaklitsch (Giuseppe), Principj Elementari della Lingua Italiana.* Miláno, 1829. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Lémmi (Giov. Spirito), Elementi ragionati della Lingua Toscana.* Livórno, 1808. 1 vol. 8vo.

- Luochestini (Césare)*, Dell' Illustrazióne délle Língue Antiche e Modérne, e principalménte dell' Italiána. Lucca, —. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Máier (Andréa)*, Délla Língua Comúne d' Itália. Venézia, 1822. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Mánni (Doménico Maria)*, Lezioni di Língua Toscana. Miláno, 1824. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Martignóni (Girolamo)*, Nuóvo Método per la Língua Italiána la piú Scélta, estensivo a tútte le Língue. Miláno, 1743. 2 vol. 4to.
- Mastrofini (Márco)*, Teoría e Prospétto, ossia Dizionario Crítico dé' Vérbi Italiáni coniugáti, specialménte dégli anómali, e mal-nóti. Róma, 1814. 2 vol. 4to.
- Mastróti (Francésco)*, Corso di Língua Italiána. Nápoli, 1833. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Mazzinghi*, Ortografia Italiána. Nápoli, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Meidinger*, Praktische Italienische Grammatik, wodurch man diese Sprache auf eine ganz neue, und sehr leichte Art in kurzer Zeit gründlich erlernen kann. Leipzig, 1821. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Menággio (Egidio)*, Origini délla Língua Italiána. Parigi, 1669. 1 vol. fol.
- Menzini (Benedétto)*, Délla Costruzióne Irregoláre délla Língua Toscana. Veróna, 1744. 1 vol. 4to.
- Mómo (Giovánni)*, Sintássi, Frási, e Vóci per perferzionársi nélla Língua Italiána. Miláno, 1809. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Mónti (Vincénzo)*, Propósta di alcúne Correzióni ed Aggiúnte al Vocaboláριο délla Crúscá. Miláno, 1826. 7 vol. 8vo.
- Múcci (Doménico)*, Nuóva Grammatica Italiána, formáta su i Principj di Grammatica Generále. Nápoli, 1832. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Muratóri (Ludovico Antónto)*, Dissertazióni sópra le Antichità Italiáne. Miláno, 1751. 3 vol. 4to.
- Napíone (Francésco Galeáni)*, Dell' Úso e dé' Prégi délla Língua Italiána. Miláno, 1830. 2 vol. 12mo.
- Nési (Lorénzo)*, Dizionario Ortológico Prático délla Língua Italiána. Pavia, 1825. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Nuóva Ortografia Italiána*, con l'Aggiúnta di várie Vóci Dúbbie. Pádova, 1825. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Onoráti (Nicolò)*, Dizionario di Vóci Dúbbie Italiáne. Nápoli, 1783. 1 vol. 4to.
- Ortografia délla Língua Italiána*. Miláno, 1829. 1 vol. 18mo.

- Furiani (Antonio)**, An Elementary Italian Grammar. London, 1828. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Paréti (Marco-Antonio)**, Annotazioni al Dizionario Italiano, che si stampa in Bologna. Modena, 1826. 3 vol. 8vo.
- Peretti (Vincent)**, Grammaire Italienne composée d'après les meilleurs Auteurs et Grammairiens d'Italie. Paris, 1815. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Pergamini (Giacomo)**, Trattato della Lingua Italiana. Venezia, 1613. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Pezzana (Angelo)**, Osservazioni concernenti alla Lingua Italiana, ed ai suoi Vocabolari. Parma, 1823. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Pistolési (Giam-Battista)**, Prospetto de' Verbi Italiani regolari e irregolari. Pisa, 1813. 1 vol. 4to.
- Ponza (Michèle)**, L'Annotatore degli Errori di Lingua. Torino, 1829. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Grammatica della Lingua Italiana. Torino, 1834. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Puoti (Basilio)**, Règole Elementari della Lingua Italiana. Napoli, 1836. 2 vol. 12mo.
- Ràbbi (Carlo Costanzo)**, Sinonimi ed Aggiunti Italiani. Venezia. 1817. 1 vol. 4to.
- Romani (Giovanni)**, Teorica della Lingua Italiana. Milano, 1825. 2 vol. 8vo.
- , Teorica de' Sinonimi Italiani. Milano, 1825. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Dizionario Generale de' Sinonimi Italiani. Milano, 1826. 3 vol. 8vo.
- , Osservazioni sopra Varie Voci del Vocabolario della Crusca. Milano, 1826. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Opuscoli Scelti sulla Lingua Italiana. Milano, 1826. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Rosasco (Girólamo)**, Della Lingua Toscana, Dialoghi Sette. Milano, 1824. 2 vol. 12mo.
- Róster (Giacomo)**, Osservazioni Grammaticali intorno alla Lingua Italiana. Firenze, 1826. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Elementi Grammaticali Ragionati di Lingua Italiana. Firenze, 1827. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Salviati (Leonardo)**, Avvertimenti della Lingua sopra il Decamerone. Milano, 1810. 3 vol. 8vo.
- Santagnello (M.)**, A Complete Grammar of the Italian Language. London, 1828. 1 vol. 12mo.

- Scilla di Vici* délla Língua Italiána, con Régole ed Osservazioni. Miláno, 1828. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Sodæ* (*Francesco*), Grammatica Ragionáta délla Língua Italiána, còlle Aggiunte di António Bianchini. Bréscia, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Soldati* (*Mattéo*), Súllo Státo presénte délla Língua Italiána. (Atti dell' Acád. Itál., vol. L.)
- Sortisi* (*Pier-Doménico*), Erudiménti délla Língua Italiána. Miláno, 1831. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Spadafora* (*Plácido*), Prosodia Italiána, còlla Giunta di tre brévi Trattáti; l' úno délla Z, e súa varietà; e l' áltro dell' E e O; il tézzo délla buóna e réa Pronúzia. Venézia, 1830. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Tommaso* (*Niccolò*), Nuóvo Dizionario dé' Sinónimi délla Língua Italiána. Firénze, 1830. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Toselli* (*Ottávio*), Orígene délla Língua Italiána. Bológna, 1831. 3 vol. 8vo.
- Vanzon* (*Cárlo António*), Grammatica Ragionáta délla Língua Italiána. Livórno, 1834. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Dizionario Universále délla Língua Italiána. Livórno, 1827. 3 vol. 8vo.
- Varchi* (*Benedétto*), L' Ercoláno, o Ragionaménto sülle Língue, ed in particuláre délla Toscana e Fiorentína. Miláno, 1803. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Vergani* (*M. A.*), A New and Complete Italian Grammar. Leghorn, 1824. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Vocabolário* dégli Accadémici délla Crúscá. Venézia, 1763. 7 vol. 4to.
- , còlle Aggiunte di António Césari. Veróna, 7 vol. 4to.
- *Universále* délla Língua Italiána. Nápoli, 1829— [I primi] 5 vol. 4to., [che conténgono le léttere A—RU. (Ópera in córso.)]
- Zanobétti* (*Giovánni*), Nuóvo Dizionario Portátile délla Língua Italiána. Livórno, 1827. 1 vol. 16mo.
- Zotti* (*Romualdo*), Grammaire Italienne, et Thèmes sur la Langue Italienne. Paris, 1823. 2 vol. 12mo.
-



## A TABLE

OF THE ABBREVIATIONS OF THE NAMES OF AUTHORS AND OF  
THE WORKS QUOTED IN THIS GRAMMAR.

AGH. PAND. o.	<i>Pandolfini (Agnolo)</i> , 'Trattato del Governo della Famiglia,' página o.
Alam. Colt. o. o.	<i>Alamanni (Luigi)</i> , 'La <i>Coltivazione</i> ,' libro o. pág. o.
Alberg. Nov.	<i>Albergati-Capacelli (Francesco)</i> , 'Novelle.'
Albert.	} <i>Albertano</i> , Giudice da Bréscia, Volgarizzamento dé' 'Tre Trattati,' capitolo o.
Abertan. c. o.	
— o. o.	} <i>Alfieri (Vittorio)</i> , 'Tragédie,' <i>Filippo</i> , atto o. scéna o.
Alf. Fil. o. o.	
— Filip. o. o.	} _____, <i>Saul</i> , atto o. scéna o.
— Antig. o. o.	
— Saul. o. o.	} <i>Allégri (Alessandro)</i> , 'Lettere e Rime,'
Alg. lett.	
Alleg.	} <i>Ambra (Francesco d')</i> , 'La <i>Cofanaria</i> ,'
Allegr. o.	
Ambr. Cof. o. o.	} 'Ammaestramenti degli <i>Antichi</i> ,' raccolti e
Am. Ant.	
Amm. Ant. d. o. r. o.	} Concórdio, <i>distribuzione</i> o. <i>rubricas</i> o. am-
— — o. o. o.	
Amor.	<i>Amortti (Carlo)</i> , 'Viaggio ai Tre Lághi; Maggiore, di Lucáno, e di Cómo.'
Ann. Car.	Védi <i>Car.</i> , <i>Caro</i> .
Ann. Vang.	'Annotazioni sopra gli <i>Evangelij</i> .' (Testo a penna citato nel Vocabolario della Crusca.)
Ariost.	} <i>Ariosto (Ludovico)</i> , 'Orlando Furioso,' càn-
— Fur. o. o.	
B.	Védi <i>Bocc</i> .
Barb. Gr. Gr.	<i>Barberi (J-Ph.)</i> , 'Grammaires des Grammaires Italiennes.'
Bellinc.	<i>Bellincioni (Bernardo)</i> , 'Rime.'
Bomb.	} <i>Bémbo (Piétro)</i> , 'Stória di Venézia,' lib. o.
— Stor. o. o.	
— Lett. o. o. o.	} _____, 'Lettere Volgári,' volume o. lib. o.
Ben. Varch.	
	Védi <i>Varch</i> .

Bent.	}	<i>Bentivoglio</i> (Cardinal Guido), 'Littere,'	
— lett. o.		littera o.	
Benv. Cell. Oref. o.	}	<i>Cellini</i> (Benvenuto), 'Trattati (due) dell' <i>Oreficeria</i> , e della <i>Scultura</i> ,' pag. o.	
Ber. Tass. lett.		<i>Tasso</i> (Bernardo), 'Littere.'	
Bern. Orf. o. o.	}	<i>Berni</i> (Francesco), 'Orlando <i>Innamorato</i> ,'	
— Rim. o. o.		canto o. stanza o.	
B.	}	—, 'Rime <i>Burlesche</i> ,' vol. o. pag. o.	
Bocc.		<i>Boccaccio</i> (Giovanni), 'Decamerone,' <i>Introduzione</i> .	
— Intr.	}	—, 'Decam.' <i>Proemio</i> .	
— Introd.		—, —, <i>giornata</i> o. <i>Proemio</i> .	
— Proem.		—, —, <i>giornata</i> o. <i>novella</i> o.	
— g. o. Proem.		—, —, <i>giornata</i> o. <i>canzone</i> .	
— g. o. n. e.		—, —, <i>Conclusioni</i> .	
— g. o. canz.		Vedi — <i>Lab.</i> , <i>Liber</i> o.	
— Concl.		—, 'Amleto,' pag. o.	
— Corb.		}	—, 'Fiammetta,' lib. o. numero o.
— Amet. o.			—, 'Filicolo' e 'Filicopo,' lib. o.
— Fiam.		}	—, 'Laberinto d' Amore,' ossia 'il Cor-
— Fiamm. o. o.	haccio,' num. o.		
— Filic. o.	}	—, 'Testide,' canto o. stanza o.	
— Laber. o.		—, 'Testamento.'	
— Tes. o. o.	}	—, 'Amorosa Visione,' canto o.	
— Testam.		—, 'Comento sopra i primi Diciassette	
— Vis. o.	}	Canti dell' Inferno di Dante.'	
— Vis. Amor.		—, 'Vita di Dante Alighieri,' pag. o.	
— Com. Dant.	}	<i>Boccacini</i> (Traiano), 'Ragguagli di Par-	
— Vit. Dant. o.		nasso.'	
Boccal.	}	Vedi <i>Varch</i> .	
Boez. Varch. o. o.		<i>Borghini</i> (Raffaello), 'Il Riposo,' num. o.	
Borgh. Rip. o.	}	—, (Vincenzo), 'Della Toscana, e delle	
— Tosc. o.		sue Città,' discorso, pag. o.	
— Arm. Fam. o.	}	—, 'Dell' Arme delle Famiglie Fiorentine,'	
Bott. Stor. Am. l. o.		discorso, pag. o.	
Brun.	}	<i>Botta</i> (Carlo), 'Storia della Guerra della	
Brunet. Tes. o. o.		Indipendenza degli Stati Uniti di Ameri-	
— Pataf. o.	}	ca,' lib. o.	
		<i>Brunetto</i> Latini, 'Il Tesoro' volgarizzato	
	}	da Bono Giamboni, lib. o, cap. o.	
		—, 'Il Pataffo,' cap. o. (Tutto a pen-	
		na, citato nel Vocabolario.)	

Buom.	}	<i>Buommattéi</i> (Benedétto), 'Della <i>Lingua</i>
— Ling. Tosc. o. o.		<i>Toscána</i> , <i>Líbrì Dúe</i> , lib. o. trattáto o. cap. o.
Buon.	}	<i>Buonarróti</i> (Michel-Ángelo, il vécchio),
Buonar. Rim. o.		' <i>Rime</i> ,' pág. o.
— Fier. Introd.	}	— (Michel-Ángelo, il giováne), 'La
— — — o. o. o.		<i>Fiera</i> , comédia in cinque giornáte, <i>Introduzióne</i> .
Burchiell. p. o. s. o.	}	— — — giornáta o. átto o. scéna o.
But. Com. Dant.		<i>Burchiello</i> , 'Sonétti,' <i>parte</i> o. <i>sonétto</i> o.
— Inf. Purg. Par. o.	}	<i>Búti</i> (Francésco di Bártolo da), 'Coménto,
Cant. Carn. o.		ovvéro <i>Lettúra</i> sópra il Poéma di <i>Dánte</i> .'
Car.	}	<i>Inférno</i> , <i>Purgatórío</i> , <i>Paradiso</i> , cánto o.
Caro. lett. o. o.		<i>Cánti Carnascialésci</i> , pág. o. ( <i>Téstó a</i>
— Matt. s. o.	}	<i>pénna</i> , <i>culáto nel Vocabolário</i> .)
Casa Galat. o.		<i>Cáro</i> (Annibal), 'Léttere Familiári,' <i>parte</i>
— lett. o.	}	o. pág. o.
Castigl. Cort. l. o. o.		—, 'Maltaccóni,' <i>sonétto</i> o.
Cavalc.	}	<i>Cása</i> (Monsignór Giovánni délla), 'Il
— Att. Apost o		<i>Galatéo</i> , pág. o.
— Espos. Simb. o. o.	}	—, 'Léttere,' <i>léttera</i> o.
— Frutt. Ling.		<i>Castiglione</i> (Baldassáre), 'Il <i>Co</i> <del>no</del> ,'
— Med. cuor.	}	<i>lib. o. pág. o.</i>
— Pungil. o.		<i>Caválca</i> (Fra Doménico), <i>Volgarizzaménto</i>
— Specch. Cr.	}	dégli 'Atti dégli <i>Apóstoli</i> ,' pág. o.
— Stolt. o.		—, 'Esposizióne del <i>Simbolo</i> dégli
Cavalcánti.	}	<i>Apóstoli</i> , lib. o. pág. o.
Cecch. Dot. o. o.		—, 'Trattáto de' <i>Frútti délla Lingua</i> .'
— Esalt. cr.	}	—, 'Medicína del <i>Cuóre</i> .'
— Inc. o. o.		—, 'Pungilíngua,' cap. o.
— Spir. o. o.	}	' <i>Spécchio délla Cróce</i> .'
Cesar.		—, Trattáto délle 'Trénta <i>Stoltizie</i>
Cinon. t. o.	}	dell' <i>Uómo</i> ,' pág. o.
		'Esposizione delle sue Canzoni.'
	}	<i>Cécchi</i> (Giován-María), 'La <i>Dóte</i> ,' comédia,
		átto o. scéna o.
	}	—, 'L' <i>Esaltazióne délla Cróce</i> ,' comédia,
		átto o. scéna o.
	}	—, 'Gl' <i>Incantésimi</i> ,' comédia, átto o.
		scéna o.
	}	—, 'Lo <i>Spirito</i> ,' comédia, átto o. scéna
		o.
	}	<i>Cesarótti</i> (Melchiór), Traduzióne dell' 'Ilíade d' Oméro.'
		<i>Cinónio</i> , 'Osservazióni délla <i>Lingua Italiána</i> ,' <i>tómo</i> o.

Class.	Esémpio tiráto da Autóre <i>Clássico</i> , del quále non si rimémбра il nóme. Occórre raríssime vólte.
Cort. Osserv.	<i>Corticélli</i> (Salvadóre), 'Régole ed <i>Osservazioni</i> della Língua Toscana.'
Cr.	} <i>Crescénzi</i> (Piétro dé'), 'Trattáto dell' Agricoltúra, lib. o. cap. o. núm. o.
Cresc. o. o. o.	
Cron. Mor.	' <i>Crónica</i> di Giovánni <i>Morélli</i> .'
Crus.	} 'Vocaboláριο dégli Accadémici délla <i>Crúscá</i> .'
Crúscá.	
Dant. Inf. o.	} <i>Dánte Alighiéri</i> , 'Divína Commédia,' <i>Inférno</i> , cánto o.
— Pur. & Purg. o.	
— Par. & Parad. o.	} —, —, <i>Paradiso</i> , cánto o.
— Conv.	
— Rim.	—, ' <i>Ríme</i> .'
Dav.	} <i>Davanzáti</i> (Bernárdo), 'Ópere.'
Davan.	
— Scism. p. o.	—, ' <i>Scisma</i> d' Inghiltérra,' pág. o.
— Colt.	—, ' <i>Coltivazióne</i> Toscana.'
— Tac. ann. l. o. o.	—, Volgarizzaménto dégli ' <i>Annáli</i> di <i>Cornélio Tácito</i> ,' lib. o. pág. o.
— St.	} —, Volgarizzaménto délle ' <i>Stórie</i> di
— Stor.	
— Tac. Stor. o. o.)	<i>Tácito</i> ,' lib. o. pág. o.
— Tac. Germ. o.	—, Volgarizzaménto délla ' <i>Germania</i> di Tácito,' pág. o.
— Vit. Agr. o.	—, Volgarizzaménto della ' <i>Vita</i> di <i>Giúlio Agrícola</i> di Tácito,' pág. o.
— Tac. Perd. Eloq. o.	—, Volgarizzaménto del ' <i>Diálogo</i> délle Cagióni délla <i>Perdúta Eloquénza</i> di Tácito,' pág. o.
— Tac. Post. o.	—, ' <i>Postille</i> ái primí séi líbri délla súa traduzióne dégli <i>Annáli</i> di Tácito,' pág. o.
Declam. Quintil. C.	Volgarizzaménto délle ' <i>Declamazioni</i> di <i>Quintiliáno</i> , tésto a pénná di <i>Mattéo Caccini</i> . ( <i>Citáto</i> nel Vocaboláριο.)
Demetr. Segn. o.	Volgarizzaménto délla 'Locuzióne di <i>Demétrio Faléreó</i> ' di Piéro <i>Ségni</i> , pág. o.
Den.	} <i>Dentina</i> (Cárló), ' <i>Rivoluzioni</i> d' <i>Isáia</i> ,' lib. o. cap. o.
— Riv. Ital. l. o. c. o.	
— Letter.	—, 'Discórso Sóptra le Vicénde délla <i>Letteratúra</i> .'
— Lett.	} —, ' <i>Súggio</i> sópra la <i>Letteratúra</i> <i>Itáliána</i> .'
— Sag. Letter.	

Dep. Decam. o.	'Annotazioni e Discorsi sopra alcuni luoghi del <i>Decamerone</i> di Giovanni Boccaccio, fatti da' <i>Deputati</i> ' [eletti dal Gran-Duca Cosimo I. l'anno 1565, per la correzione di quell'opera], pag. o.
Dial. S. Greg. m.	Volgarizzamento de' ' <i>Dialoghi di San Gregorio Magno.</i> '
Din. Comp. o. o.	<i>Compagni (Dino)</i> , 'Storia, ovvero Cronaca Fiorentina, lib. o. pag. o.
Dittam.	} 'Il <i>Dittamondo</i> ' di Fazio degli Uberti, lib. o. cap. o.
— o. o.	
Eriz. Giorn.	<i>Erizzo (Sebastiano)</i> , ' <i>Le Sei Giornate.</i> '
Fav. Esop. o.	Volgarizzamento delle ' <i>Favole d'Esopo</i> ,' pag. o. ( <i>Testo a penna, citato nel Vocabolario.</i> )
Fior. Vt. c. o.	' <i>Fiore di Virtù</i> ,' cap. o.
Fir.	} <i>Firenzuola (Agnolo)</i> , Traduzione dell' ' <i>Asino d'Oro d'Apuleio</i> ,' pag. o.
Firenz. Asin.	
— As. d' Or. o.	
— dial. bell. donna. o.	—, ' <i>Dialogo delle Bellezze delle Donne</i> ,' pag. o.
— disc. an. o.	—, ' <i>Discorso degli Animali</i> ,' pag. o.
— Luc. o. o.	—, ' <i>I Lucidi</i> ,' comedia, atto o. scena o.
— nov. o.	—, ' <i>Novelle</i> ,' novella o.
— Trin. o. o.	—, ' <i>Trinizia</i> ,' comedia, atto o. scena o.
Fosc.	<i>Foscolo (Ugo)</i> , ' <i>Esame Critico de' Commentatori di Dante.</i> '
Fr. Giord.	} <i>Fra Giordano da Ripalta</i> , ' <i>Prediche</i> ,' pag. o.
Fra Giord. o.	
— S. Pred. o.	—, testo (a penna) <i>Subiati</i> , <i>predica o.</i> ( <i>Citato nel Vocabolario.</i> )
Fr. Guitt.	} <i>Fra Guittone d'Arezzo</i> , ' <i>Lettere</i> ,' lettera o.
Fra Guitt. lett. o.	
Franc. Barb. o. o.	<i>Barberino (Francesco)</i> , ' <i>Documenti d'Amore</i> ,' poesia, pag. o. verso o.
Fr. Sacch.	} Vedi <i>Sacch.</i>
Fran. Sacch.	
Franc. Sacch.	
Fris. Elog. Gall.	<i>Frisi (Paolo)</i> , ' <i>Elogio di Gabriele Gabliè.</i> '
Gal.	} <i>Gabliè Galilèi</i> , ' <i>Saggiatore</i> ,' pag. o.
Gall. o.	
— Mach. Sol. o.	—, ' <i>Istoria e Dimostrazioni intorno alle Macchie Solari, e loro accidenti</i> ,' pag. o.
Gang.	} <i>Ganganelli (Giovanni-Vincenzo Antonio [Papa Clemente XIV.])</i> , ' <i>Lettere.</i> '
— lett.	

Gell.	}	<i>Gelli</i> (Giovam-Battista), 'La <i>Circa</i> ,' diálogo
— Circ. o. o.		o. pág. o.
Giamb. l. o.	}	<i>Giambullari</i> (Pier-Francesco), 'Stória d' Europa,' lib. o.
Gian. Stor. Civ.		<i>Giannone</i> (Piétro), 'Stória Civile del Régno di Nápoli,' lib. o. cap. o.
Nap. l. o. c. o.	}	Védi <i>Ser Giov. Pecor.</i>
Gio. Fior. Pecor.		
g. o. n. o.	}	<i>Villani</i> (Giovanni), 'Stória,' lib. o. cap. o. núm. o.
Gio. & Giov. Vill.		
l. o. c. o. o.	}	<i>Giraldi</i> (Girálido), 'Lettere.'
Giral. lett.		<i>Goldoni</i> (Cárlo), 'L' <i>Avventurière Onorato</i> ,' comédia.
Gold.	}	— 'Il <i>Vero Amico</i> ,' comédia.
— Avvent.		
— Ver. Am.	}	Volgarizzaménto dé' 'Gradi di San <i>Girolamo</i> ,' cap. o. pag. o.
Gr.		Védi <i>Barb. Gr. Gr.</i>
— S. Gir. o. o.	}	<i>Guarini</i> (Giovam-Battista), 'Pastor <i>Fido</i> ,' átto o. scéna o.
Gram. Gram.		
Guar. Past. Fid. o. o.	}	<i>Guicciardini</i> (Francesco), 'Stória d' <i>Italia</i> ,' lib. o. pág. o.
Guicc.		
— Stor. o. o.	}	<i>Guido</i> Giudice dalle Colónne di Messina, Volgarizzaménto délla 'Stória délla Guérra Troiana' pág. o. (Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocabolário.)
— Stor. Ital.		
Guid.	}	'Rime Antiche d' <i>Incerti Autori</i> ,' canzóna o. Védi <i>Bocc. Lab., Labor.</i>
— o.		<i>Grazzini</i> (Anton-Francesco) détto il <i>Lasca</i> , 'La <i>Sibilla</i> ,' comédia, átto o. scéna o.
Incer. c. o.	}	—, 'La <i>Spiritata</i> ,' comédia, átto o. scéna o.
Lab. o.		
Lasc. Sibill. o. o.	}	Volgarizzaménto del 'Libro, ossia Trattáto délla <i>Cura</i> di tátte le <i>Malattio</i> .' (Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocabolário.)
— Spir. o. o.		
Lib. Cur. Malatt.	}	'Libro dégli <i>Adornamenti delle Donne</i> .' (Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocabolário.)
Libr. Adorn. Donn.		<i>Lippi</i> (Lorenzo), 'Il <i>Malmantile Racquistáto</i> ,' cánto o. stánza o.
Lipp. M. o. o.	}	Volgarizzaménto délle 'Déshe (Prima e Terza) di <i>Tito Livio</i> ,' déca o. (Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocabolário.)
— Malm. o. o.		
Liv. dec. o.	}	<i>Martelli</i> (Lodovico), 'Rime,' pág. o.
Lod. Mar. Rim. o.		<i>Lodoli</i> (Francesco), 'Novélle.'
Lod. Nov.	}	<i>Médici</i> (Lorenzo de'), 'Canzóni a Bállo,' canzóna o.
Lor. Med. c. o.		

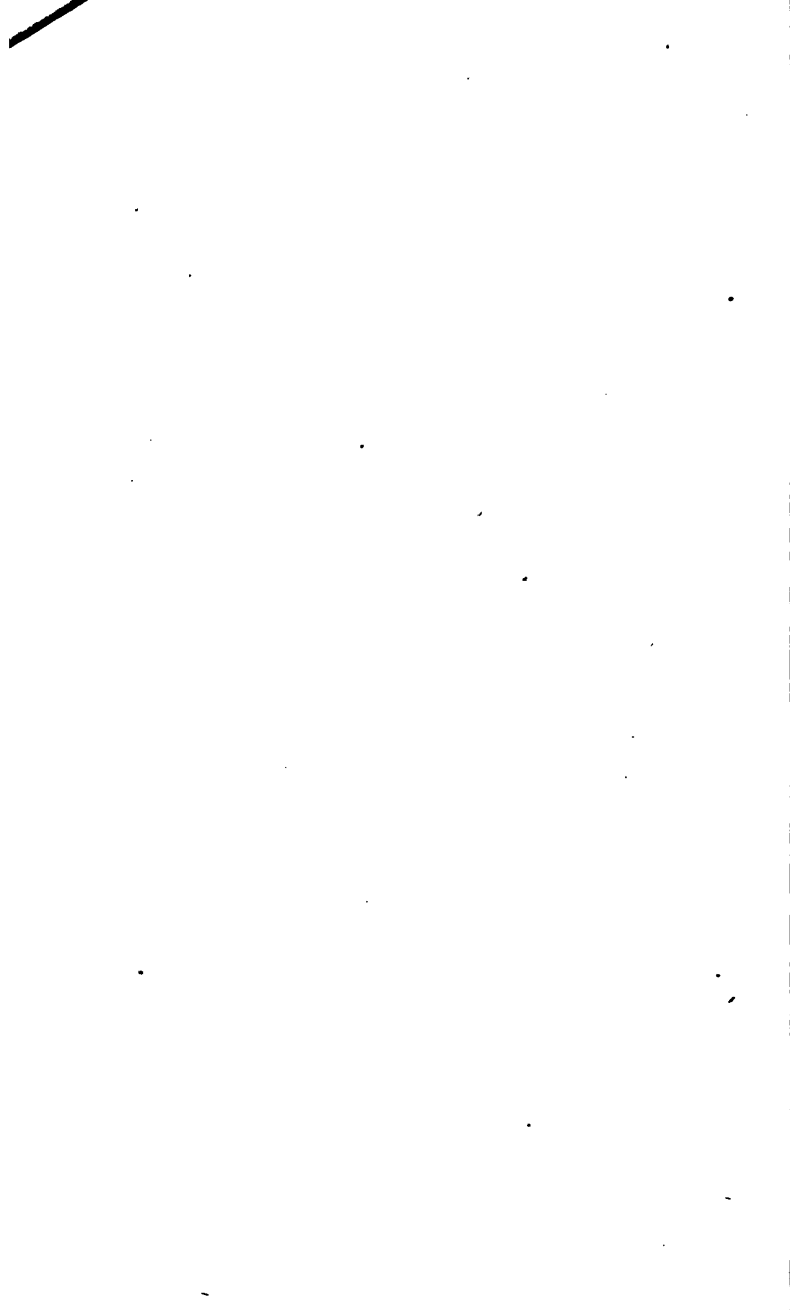
— Nenc. o.	—, 'La Nencia,' stanza o.	
— Arid. Prolog.	— ( <i>Lorenzino de'</i> ), 'Aridosio,' comedia, <i>Prologo</i> .	
— — o. o.	—, 'Aridosio,' atto o. scena o.	
Mach.	} <i>Machiavelli</i> (Niccolò), 'Istorie Fiorentine,'	
— Stor. Fior. l. o.	} lib. o.	
— Com.	—, 'Comédie.'	
— lett.	—, 'Lettere.'	
— Mandrag.	—, 'La Mandragora,' comedia.	
— Princ.	—, 'Il Principe.'	
Maestruzz. o. o.	Volgarizzamento della 'Somma Pisanella, detta il Maestrizzo,' lib. o. cap. o. ( <i>Testo a penna, citato nel Vocabolario.</i> )	
Maff. Mer. o. o.	<i>Maffei</i> (Scipione), 'Mérope,' tragedia, atto o. scena o.	
Manz. Prom. Spos. c. o.	<i>Manzoni</i> (Alessandro), 'I Promessi Sposi,' cap. o.	
Matt. Fran.	} <i>Franzèsi</i> (Matteo), 'Rime Burlésche,' vol. o.	
— Franz. Rim. o. o.	} pag. o.	
Matt. Vill. o. o.	<i>Villani</i> (Matteo), 'Storia,' lib. o. cap. o.	
Mes. Bin. Rim. l. o.	<i>Messèr Bino</i> , 'Rime Burlésche,' lib. o.	
— Cin. o.	— <i>Cino da Pistòia</i> , 'Rime,' pag. o.	
Metast. Artas. o. o.	<i>Metastasio</i> (Pietro), 'Artaserse,' dramma, atto o. scena o.	
— lett.	—, 'Lettere.'	
Miliz. Art. Dis.	<i>Milizia</i> (Francesco), 'Dizionario delle Belle Arti del Disegno.'	
Mor. S. Greg. & Gregor. o. o.	} Vedi <i>Zan. da Strat.</i>	
Nov. Ant. o.	'Il Novellino, ossia Cénto Novelle Antiche,' novella o.	
Ovid. Pist.	Volgarizzamento delle 'Pistole d' Ovidio.' ( <i>Testo a penna, citato nel Vocabolario.</i> )	
Pall.	<i>Pallavicino</i> , 'Concilio di Trento.'	
Pass.	} <i>Passavanti</i> (Fra Jacopo), 'Specchio di Vera Penitèzza,' pag. o.	
Passav. o.		
— Ver. Pen.		
— Spec. Ver. Pen.		
Past. Fid. o. o.	Vedi <i>Guar. Past. Fid. o. o.</i>	
Pataff. o.	Vedi <i>Brun., Brunet. Pataff.</i>	
Pecor. g. o. n. o.	— <i>Gio. Fior. Pecor.</i>	
Petr.}	} <i>Petrarca</i> (Francesco), 'Rime.'	
— s. o.		—, 'Rime,' sonetto. o.
— c. o.		—, —, canzone o.
— lett.		—, 'Lettere Familiari.'

— Tr.	}	—, 'Trionfi.'
— Tri.		
— Trionf.		
— — Am.	}	—, 'Trionfo d' Amore.'
— — Amor.		
— — Fam.		
— — Mort.	}	—, — 'della Morte.'
— — Tem.		
— — Temp.		
— — — c. o.		—, —, cap. o.
— Uom. ill. o.		—, 'Vite degli Uomini Illustri,' volgarizzate, pag. o.
Pign. Fav.		<i>Pignotti</i> (Lorenzo), 'Favole.'
Poliz. St. o. o.		<i>Poliziano</i> , (Agnolo), 'Stanze per la Giostra di Giuliano,' canto o. stanza o.
Pros. Fior. o.		'Prose Fiorentine,' pag. o.
Red. annot. Ditir.		<i>Redi</i> (Francesco), 'Annotazioni al suo Ditirambo.'
— cons. o. o.		—, 'Consulti Medici, vol. o. pag. o.
— Ditir. o.		—, 'Bacco in Toscana,' ditirambo, pag. o.
— Ins. o.		—, 'Esperienze intorno alla generazione degli Insetti,' pag. o.
— lett. o. o.		—, 'Lettere Familiari,' vol. o. pag. o.
— Vip. o. o.		—, 'Osservazioni intorno alle Vipere,' lettere, vol. o. pag. o.
Ricett. Fior. o.		'Ricettario Fiorentino,' pag. o.
Rim. Ant. p. o.		'Rime Antiche, ossia Raccolta di Sonetti, Canzoni, ed altre Rime di diversi antichi poeti Toscani,' pag. o.
Rosasco.		<i>Rosasco</i> (Girólamo), 'Della Lingua Toscana, Dialoghi Sette.'
Sacch. n. o.		<i>Sacchetti</i> (Franco), 'Novelle,' novella o.
— rim. o.		—, 'Rime,' pag. o.
— Op. div. o.		—, 'Opere Diverse,' pag. o.
Sag. Nat. esp. o.		'Saggi di Naturali Esperienze,' fatte nell'Accademia del Cimento, descritti da Lorenzo Magalotti, pag. o.
Salv. Avvert. vol.	}	<i>Salviati</i> (Leonardo), 'Avvertimenti della Lingua sopra il Decamerone,' vol. o. lib. o.
· o. l. o.		
— o. o. o.		
— Granch. o. o.		—, 'Il Granchio,' comedia, atto o. scena o.
— Spin. o. o.		—, 'La Spina,' comedia, atto o. scena o.
Salvin. Pros. Tosc. o.		<i>Salvini</i> (Anton-Maria), 'Prose Toscane,' pag. o.



Scal. S. Agost.	Volgarizzamento della 'Scála del Paradiso,' attribuita a Sant' Agostino. (Testo a penna, citato nel Vocabolario.)
Segn. Crist. instr. } o. o. }	Ségneri (Paolo), 'Il Cristiano Istruito nella sua Legge,' parte o. ragionamento o.
— Mann. Marz. o.	—, 'Mánna dell' ánima,' mese di Márza. giorno o.
— — Nov. o.	—, —, mese di Novèmbre. giorno o.
Sen. } — Pist. o. }	Volgarizzamento delle 'Pistole di Séneca,' pistola o.
Ser Giov. Fior. } Pecor. }	Ser Giovanni Fiorentino, 'Il Pecorone,' giornata o. novella o.
— Gio. Fior. Pe- } cor. g. o. B. o. }	
Soav. Nov.	Sodve (Francesco) 'Novelle Morali.'
Sod. Colt. o.	Soderini (Giovann-Vittorio), 'La Coltivazione delle Viti,' pag. o.
St. Agost. Citt. Dio. } o. o. }	Volgarizzamento della 'Città di Dio' di Sant' Agostino, lib. o. cap. o. (Testo a penna, citato nel Vocabolario.)
Stor. Pistol. p. o.	'Storie Pistolesi, ovvero delle cose avvenute in Toscana dal 1300 al 1348,' pag. o.
Stor. Semif. o.	Volgarizzamento della 'Storia di Semifonte,' pag. o.
Tass. Am. o. o. } — Amint. o. o. }	Tasso (Torquato), 'Aminta, Favola Bosccheréccia,' atto o. scena o.
— Ger. o. o.	—, 'Gerusalénne Liberata, canto o. stanza o.
Teor. Verb. Ital. } part. o. §. o. }	'Teórica de' Verbi Italiani,' di Giuseppe Compagnoni, parte o. paragrafo o.
Tolom. } — lett. }	Tolomméi (Cláudio), 'Lettere.'
Tratt. segr. cos. } donn. }	'Trattato delle Segrete cose delle Donne.' (Testo a penna, citato nel Vocabolario.)
Vanz.	Vanzon (Carlo Antonio), 'Grammatica Ragionata della Lingua Italiana.'
Varch. } — Boez. o. o. }	Varchi (Benedétto), Traduzione della 'Consolazione Filosofica di Boezio, lib. o. prosa & rima o.
— Ercol. o.	—, 'Ercolano, ossia Ragionamento sulle Lingue,' pag. o.
— Rim. o.	—, 'Rime,' pag. o.
— Sen. ben. o. o.	Traduzione de' libri de' 'Benefici di Séneca,' lib. o. cap. o.
Vas.	Vasari (Giorgio), 'Trattato della Pittura.'
Vill.	Védi Gio. & Gio. Vill.

- Vinc. Mart. rim. o. *Martelli* (Vincenzo), 'Rime e Lettere,' pág. o.  
 Vit. S. Ant. 'Vita di Sani' Antonio.' (Testo a penna,  
 citato nel Vocabolario)  
 — S. Cater. '—— di Santa Caterina da Siena.'  
 — S. Franc. '—— di San Francesco.'  
 — S. G. Bat. } '—— di San Giovam-Battista.'  
 — S. Gio. Batt. }  
 — S. Giov. Guald. } '—— di San Giovam-Battista, MS. della  
 (Guald. lib.) o. Libreria de' Guadagni, pág. o. (Citato  
 nel Vocabolario.)  
 — SS. PP. o. o. } Volgarizzamento delle 'Vite de' Santi Pa-  
 — — Pad. o. o. } dri,' vol. o. pág. o.  
 Zan. da Strat. o. o. *Zanobi da Strata*, Volgarizzamento de'  
 'Morali di San Gregorio Magno,' lib. o.  
 num. o.  
 Zibald. Andr. o. o. 'Zibaldone, ovvero Libro di Varie Cose,'  
 testo a penna di *Andrea Andreini*, parte  
 o. pág. o. (Citato nel Vocabolario.)



# ITALIAN GRAMMAR.



## INTRODUCTION.

**GRAMMAR** is the art of *speaking* and *writing* correctly.

**SPEAKING** and **WRITING** are the expression of our thoughts by *words*.

**WORDS** may be considered as *articulate sounds*, or as *signs of our thoughts*.

**WORDS** considered as **ARTICULATE SOUNDS**, are formed of *syllables*, and syllables of *letters*.

**SYLLABLES** consist of one or more letters pronounced by a single impulse of the voice, and constituting a word, or part of a word.

**WORDS** that consist of one syllable, are called *monosyllables*; those that consist of two syllables, are called *dissyllables*; and those that consist of more syllables, are called *polysyllables*.

**LETTERS** are certain figures or characters, which represent *sounds* and *articulations*.

**SOUNDS** are simple emissions of the voice; and **ARTICULATIONS** are the modifications which sounds receive by the movements of the organs of speech. The letters which represent the sounds, as, *a, e, i, &c.*, are called *vowels*; and those which represent the articulations, as, *b, c, d, &c.*, are called *consonants*, because they can only be *sounded with a vowel*.

The union of two vowels, pronounced by a single impulse of the voice, is called a *diphthong*; and that of three vowels pronounced in like manner, is called a *triphthong*.

**WORDS** considered as **SIGNS OF OUR THOUGHTS**, are divided into several classes, which constitute the different **PARTS OF SPEECH**. These in Italian are nine; viz. the *article, noun, pronoun, verb, participle, adverb, preposition, conjunction, and interjection*.

Of these nine Parts of Speech, the *article, noun, pronoun, verb, and participle*, are **VARIABLE**, that is, change their termination; the rest are **INVARIABLE**.

The **ARTICLE** is a word placed before a noun to denote the extent of its signification; as, *il, lo, la*, 'the':—*IL libro*, 'the book'; *LO sprone*, 'the spur'; *LA casa*, 'the house'.

The **NOUN** is either *substantive*, or *adjective*.

A **SUBSTANTIVE** noun is a word, which serves to denote a person or thing; as, *Pietro*, 'Peter'; *sole*, 'sun'; *virtù*, 'virtue'.

Substantive nouns are either *proper* or *common*.

A *proper* noun is one, which is individually applicable to a person or thing; as, *Césare*, 'Cæsar'; *Róma*, 'Rome'.

A *common* noun is one, which may be applied to all persons or things of the same kind; as, *uomo*, 'man'; *città*, 'city'.

Some common nouns are also called *collective*, from their presenting to the mind the idea of a collection of persons or things; as, *gente*, 'people'; *esercito*, 'army'.

An **ADJECTIVE** noun is a word added to a substantive to express its quality; as, *dotta*, 'learned'; *bella*, 'beautiful':—*un uomo dotta*, 'a learned man'; *una bella città*, 'a beautiful city'.

Adjectives may express the quality of an object, either *absolutely*, that is, without any relation to other objects, or *relatively* to other objects; which produces different degrees of qualification: these have been reduced to the following three, viz. the *positive*, *comparative*, and *superlative*.

The *positive* is the adjective itself, expressing the quality of an object, without any relation of comparison; as *ricco*, 'rich'; *povero*, 'poor'.

The *comparative* is the adjective expressing a relation of *superiority*, *inferiority*, or *equality*, between two or more objects in comparison; as, *più, meno, or sì ricco*, 'more, less, or so rich'; *più, meno, or sì povero*, 'more, less, or so poor':—*Pietro è più, or meno ricco di Tommaso*, 'Peter is more, or less rich than Thomas'; *Tommaso è più, or meno povero di Paolo*, 'Thomas is more, or less poor than Paul'; *Pietro e Tommaso sono sì ricchi, or sì poveri come Paolo*, 'Peter and Thomas are so rich, or so poor as Paul'.

The *Superlative* is the adjective expressing the quality of the object in the highest degree of superiority, or the lowest degree of inferiority.

There are two kinds of superlative, the *relative*, and the *absolute*.

The *relative* superlative expresses the superiority or inferiority of an object, with relation to others; as, *il più, or il meno ricco*, 'the most, or the least rich'; *il più, or il meno povero*, 'the most, or the least poor':—*Tommaso è il più, or il meno ricco*,—*Paolo è il più, or il meno povero, di tutti*; 'Thomas is the most, or the least rich,—Paul is the most, or the least poor, of all'.

The *absolute* superlative shows that the object spoken of possesses a quality in the superlative degree, but without reference to any other; as, *ricchissimo*, 'very rich'; *poverissimo*, 'very poor'.

A great number of Italian nouns are susceptible of a change of termination, which, modifying the primitive idea expressed by them, augments or diminishes their signification; as, *uomo*, 'man'; *omone*, 'large man'; *ruscello*, 'brook'; *RUSCELLETTO*, 'small brook'. The nouns thus altered, are called **AUGMENTATIVES** and **DIMINUTIVES**.

With nouns are usually classed the **NUMERALS**, which are either *cardinal*, or *ordinal*.

*Cardinal numbers* are those, which determine a collection of objects, with regard to their number or quantity; as, *uno*, 'one'; *dieci*, 'ten'.

*Ordinal numbers* determine objects with regard to their order or arrangement; as, *primo*, 'first'; *décimo*, 'tenth'.

Italian nouns are varied by *gender* and *number*.

*Gender* is a division of nouns according to sex. Nouns denoting males are *masculine*; nouns denoting females are *feminine*. This division, which properly regards only nouns having sex, is in Italian extended also to all other nouns, though they have no sex; so that every noun is either of the *masculine* or *feminine* gender. But there are certain nouns which belong to both genders, and these are said to be of the *common* gender.

*Number* is the designation of one or more objects. There are two numbers, viz. the *singular* and *plural*. The *singular* designates one single person or thing; the *plural*, more than one person or thing.

The various relations of nouns, which in Latin are denoted by different terminations, or *cases*, are expressed in Italian by certain *prepositions* placed before them; and for the *nominative* and *accusative* of the Latin, have been substituted the terms *subjective*, and *objective*; and for the *genitive*, *dative*, and *ablative*,—the terms *relation of possession*, *of attribution*, and *of derivation*.

A **PRONOUN** is a word used instead of a noun, already expressed, to prevent its frequent repetition; and like the noun is either *substantive* or *adjective*.

*Substantive pronouns* are either *personal*, *conjunctive*, *relative*, or *interrogative*; and *adjective pronouns* are either *possessive*, *demonstrative*, or *indefinite*.

The *personal* pronouns are those, which mark the *persons*.

The *persons* are three, viz. the *first*, *second*, and *third*. The *first* is the person speaking; as, *io*, 'I'; *noi*, 'we':—the *second* is the person spoken to; as, *tu*, 'thou'; *voi*, 'you':—and the *third* is the person spoken of; as, *egli*, 'he'; *ella*, 'she'; *eglino*, *elleno*, 'they'.

The *conjunctive* pronouns are those, which are always joined to a verb. They are derived from the personal pronouns, and are divided into *conjunctive*, properly speaking; as, *mi*, 'me', or 'to me'; *ti*, 'thee', or 'to thee'; *si*, 'one's self', or 'to ones' self':—*mi duole*, 'it grieves me'; *ti parla*, 'he speaks to thee'; *si loda*, 'he praises himself':—and *relative conjunctive* pronouns; as, *ne*, 'of it, of him, of her', or 'of them';—*NE vorrèi veder la fine*, 'I should like to see the end of it'.

The *relative* pronouns are those, which refer to a person or thing, that has been before spoken of; as, *chi*, 'who' or 'he that'; *che*, *il quäle*, 'who', or 'which that':—*CHI si umilia si esalta*, 'who', or 'he that humbles himself exalts himself': *l' uomo, CHE OR il QUÄLE scrive*, 'the man, who or that writes'; *il libro, CHE OR il QUÄLE io leggo*, 'the book, which or that I read'.

The person or thing, which relative pronouns refer to, is called the *antecedent*.

The *interrogative* pronouns are those, which are used to interrogate, or ask a question; as, *chi?* 'who?' *che?* 'what?' *quäle?* 'which?'—*CHI è?* 'who is it?' *CHE fate?* 'what are you doing?' *QUÄLE volete?* 'which will you have?'

The *possessive* pronouns are those, which mark the possession of a person or a thing; as, *mio*, 'my', or 'mine'; *tuo*, 'thy', or 'thine'; *suo*, 'his, her, hers', or 'its':—*mio fratello*, 'my brother'; *il tuo cappello*, 'thy hat'; *questo è suo*, 'this is his, hers', or 'its'.

The *demonstrative* pronouns are those, which point out the particular person or thing of which we speak; as, *questo*, 'this'; *quello*, 'that'; *costo*, 'that near you':—*questo giovine*, 'this youth'; *quello specchio*, 'that looking-glass'; *costo libro*, 'that book near you'.

The *indefinite* pronouns are those, which express a person or thing in a general and unlimited sense; as, *alcuno*, 'some one'; *ogni*, 'every'; *niente*, 'nothing'.

Italian pronouns, like the nouns, are varied by gender and number.

A **VERB** is a word, which by itself implies affirmation; as, *essere*, 'to be':—*ESSERE amabile*, 'to be amiable': and necessarily supposes a *subject* and a *quality*, to which it affirms that the subject is, or is not attributed; as, *la virtù è amabile*,

'virtue is amiable'; *la FIGURAZIA non è LODÉVOLE*, 'slothfulness is not laudable'.

There is but one verb, strictly speaking; *essere*, 'to be'; because this alone expresses affirmation. But there are other words, which in themselves contain both the verb *essere*, and the *quality*, which it affirms to belong to the *subject* of which we speak; as, *amàre* (*essere amànte*), 'to love (to be a lover of)'; *sprezzàre* (*essere sprezzànte*), 'to despise (to be a despiser of)';—*egli AMA* (*egli è AMANTE*), 'he loves (he is a lover of)'; *ella SPREZZA* (*ella è SPREZZANTE*), 'she despises (she is a despiser of)'; and to these has also been given the name of *verbs*, and they are used to express the quality of the subject, or the action it performs or it undergoes.

Verbs are commonly divided into *active*, *passive*, *neuter*, *pronominal*, and *unipersonal*.

*Active* verbs are those, that express an action, which falls or may immediately fall upon an *object*; as, *amàre*, 'to love':—*amàre LA VIRTÙ*, 'to love virtue'.

The object upon which the action of the verb falls, is called the *regimen* or *complement* of this verb. Besides this first complement, which is called *direct*, many active verbs may have a second complement, which is called *indirect*; as, *scrivere*, 'to write':—*scrivere UNA LETTERA*, 'to write a letter':—*scrivere una lettera AD UN AMICO*, 'to write a letter to a friend.' This last, however, properly speaking, is rather a *complement* of the *preposition*, which always precedes it.

*Passive* verbs are those, that express an action which falls upon the *subject*; as *essere amato*, 'to be loved':—*LA VIRTÙ è amata*, 'virtue is loved'.

*Neuter* verbs are those, that express a state of being, or an action which does not fall directly upon an object; as, *dormire*, 'to sleep'; *nuocere*, 'to be noxious'.

*Pronominal* verbs are those, that are varied with two pronouns of the same person; as, *vender-si*, 'to sell' or 'to be sold':—*QUESTO LIBRO SI vende caro*, 'this book sells', or 'is sold dear'.

To pronominal, properly, belong *reflective* and *reciprocal* verbs.

*Reflective* verbs are those, that express either the action of a subject which acts upon itself; as, *difender-si*, 'to defend ones' self':—*IO MI difendo*, 'I defend myself'; or an action of the subject, which terminates finally in itself; as, *far-si un dovere*, 'to make to ones' self a duty':—*ESLI SI fa un dovere*, 'he makes to himself a duty'.

*Reciprocal* verbs are those, that express the action of several subjects, who act respectively the one upon the other; as, *aiutar-si*; 'to assist each other'; *NOI CI aiutiamo*, 'we assist each other'.



*Unipersonal*, or, as they are usually called, *impersonal* verbs, are those, that are used only in the third person singular of each tense; as, *accadere*, 'to happen':—*accade*, 'it happens'; *accádde*, 'it happened'; *accaderà*, 'it will happen'.

There are moreover two verbs, which generally assist to vary other verbs, and which, consequently, are called *auxiliary verbs*: these are, *avere*, 'to have'; and *essere*, 'to be':—*AVÈRE letto*, 'to have read'; *ÈSSERE partito*, 'to (be) have departed'.

Italian verbs are varied by *mood, tense, number, and person*.

*Mood* is a particular form of the verb, which shows the manner in which the action, or the state of being, is represented.

There are five moods, viz. the *infinitive, indicative, conjunctive, conditional, and imperative*.

The *infinitive*, represents the action in an indefinite manner, and without distinction of person or number; as, *scrivere*, 'to write'.

The *indicative* represents the action absolutely, and without dependence on any other word; as, *to scrivo*, 'I write'.

The *conjunctive* represents the action as depending upon another verb with which it is connected by a conjunction; as, *bisogna, che to scriva*, 'it is necessary, that I write'.

The *conditional* represents the action with dependence upon a condition; as, *to scriverei, se potessi*, 'I should write, if I could'.

The *imperative* represents the action in commanding, exhorting, or intreating; as, *scrivi*, 'write thou'; *scrivete*, 'write ye'; *scriviamo*, 'let us write'.

Each of these moods, except the imperative, has different tenses.

*Tense* is a distinction of time, which shows when the action is done. Time, strictly speaking, is either *present, past, or future*.

The *present* denotes the action doing by a subject at the very time in which we are speaking; as, *to canto*, 'I sing'.

The *past* or *preterite* denotes the action done by a subject before the time in which we are speaking; as, *to cantai*, 'I sang'.

The *future* denotes the action to be done by a subject after the time in which we are speaking; as, *to canterò*, 'I will sing'.

The preterite is divided into *imperfect* and *perfect*.

The *imperfect* expresses an action done in a time past, but present in respect to another action done in a time also past; as, *to cantava, quando voi entraste*, 'I was singing, when you came in'.

The *perfect* expresses an action done in a time completely

past, and without reference to any other action; as *to cantá un' ária*, 'I sang an air'.

Tenses are either *simple* or *compound*.

*Simple tenses* are those, which are formed without the assistance of either the auxiliary verbs *avére*, 'to have', or *éssere*, 'to be'; as, *parlo*, 'I speak'; *vénni*, 'I came'; *loderò*, 'I will praise'.

*Compound tenses* are those, which are formed of the simple tenses of the auxiliary verb *avére*, 'to have', or *éssere*, 'to be', and the participle of the verb varied; as, *ho parlato*, 'I have spoken'; *sóno venúto*, 'I (am) have come'; *avrò lodáto*, or *sarò lodáto*, 'I will have praised,' or 'will be praised'.

Each tense contains two numbers; the *singular* and *plural*.

The number is *singular*, when one single subject causes the action of the verb; as, *io mangio*, 'I eat';—and it is *plural*, when more subjects contribute to the same action; as, *noi mangiamo*, 'we eat'.

Each number has three *persons*, which are denoted by the personal pronouns, *io*, 'I'; *tu*, 'thou'; *egli*, 'he', or *ella*, 'she'; in the singular;—and *noi*, 'we'; *voi*, 'you'; *egli*, or *éllo*, 'they'; in the plural; as, *io védo*, 'I see'; *tu védi*, 'thou seest'; *egli* or *élla véde*, 'he or she sees':—*noi vedámo*, 'we see'; *voi vedéte*, 'you see'; *églino* or *élleno vedono*, 'they see'.

The assemblage of several verbs, forming all their moods, tenses, numbers, and persons, according to the same rule, is called a *conjugation*.

Such verbs as conform to the rule of any conjugation, are called *regular*; and such as differ in any respect, are called *irregular*.

Verbs which are not used in certain tenses, numbers, or persons, are called *defective*.

The **PARTICIPLE** is a word which *partakes* at the same time of the nature of the verb and of the adjective; as, *amánte*, 'loving'; *amáto*, 'loved.' It partakes of the nature of the verb, because it has its signification, and has reference to time; as, *amánte (che áma) Dio*, 'loving (who loves) God'; *amáto (che é amáto) da Dio*, 'loved (who is loved) by God'; and it partakes of the nature of the adjective, because, like an adjective, it qualifies a noun; as, *uomo onoráto*, 'honored man'; *virtù prováta*, 'tried virtue'.

Participles are divided into *present* and *past*.

The *present* participle expresses the action of the subject, or the quality of a noun, at the moment in which we speak; as, *amánte*, 'loving':—*dónna amánte*, 'a loving woman'.

The *past* participle expresses the action or quality as per-

fected or past; as, *temúto*, 'feared':—*castigo TEMÚTO*, 'feared punishment'.

With the participle is usually classed the GERUND, which, like the participle, is an inflexion of the verb, but has nothing in common with the adjective.

Italian participles are varied by gender and number.

AN ADVERB is a word, which serves to modify a verb, an adjective, or another adverb, expressing the manner, or circumstances of its signification; as, *più*, 'more'; *molto*, 'very'; *distintamente*, 'distinctly':—*egli parla DISTINTAMENTE*, 'he speaks distinctly'; *siéte MOLTO sávio*, 'you are very wise'; *PIÙ sinceramente*, 'more sincerely'.

Adverbs are divided into those of *quality, order, time, place, quantity, comparison, &c.*

Adverbs of *quality* are those, which express the manner in which things are done; as, *saviamente*, 'wisely'; *elegantemente*, 'elegantly'; *inconsideratamente*, 'inconsiderately':—*egli pensa SAVIAMENTE*, 'he thinks wisely'; *ella scrive ELEGANTEMENTE*, 'she writes elegantly'; *hanno agito INCONSIDERATAMENTE*, 'they have acted inconsiderately'.

Adverbs of *order* serve to express the arrangement of things in regard to one another; as, *prima*, 'first'; *pói*, 'then'; *da principio*, 'before'; *in séguito*, 'afterward':—*PRIMA andrémo in Francia*, 'we will go first to France'; *PÓI in Italia*, 'then to Italy'; *DA PRINCIPIO si déve evitare il mále*, 'we must before avoid evil'; *IN SÉGUITO si déve far del béne*, 'afterward we must do good'.

Adverbs of *time* are those, which express some relation of time; as, *ieri*, 'yesterday'; *oggi*, 'to-day'; *domani*, 'to-morrow':—*lo vidi IERI*, 'I saw him yesterday'; *viéni oggi*, 'come to-day'; *partirò DOMANI*, 'I shall depart to-morrow'.

Adverbs of *place* serve to denote the situation or the distance of an object; as, *quí*, 'here'; *là*, 'there'; *vicino*, 'near'; *lontano*, 'far':—*son QUI*, 'I am here'; *guardáte LÀ*, 'look there'; *sta QUI VICINO*, 'he lives near here'; *è troppo LONTANO*, 'it is too far'.

Adverbs of *quantity* are those, which modify an object in relation to quantity; as, *poco*, 'little'; *assái*, 'much'; *abbastanza*, 'enough':—*parla ASSÁI*, 'he speaks much'; *riflette POCO*, 'he reflects little'; *ne ha ABBASTANZA*, 'he has enough of it'.

Adverbs of *comparison* serve to denote the different degrees of quality of the objects compared; as, *più*, 'more'; *méno*, 'less'; *cosí—come*, 'so—as':—*l' onóre vále PIÙ delle ricchézze*, 'honor is worth more than riches'; *il suo cuore non è MÊN bello del vtro*,

'her heart is not less beautiful than her face'; *égli non è sì dócile còme è viváce*, 'he is not so docile as he is lively'.

Adverbs are either *simple* or *compound*. Simple adverbs are those which consist of a simple word; as, *quí*, 'here'; *pói*, 'then'; *béne*, 'well'; and compound adverbs are those, which consist of an adjective and the word *mén-te*, 'manner'; as, *dolcémén-te* (*con dólce mén-te*), 'sweetly (in a sweet manner)'. There are besides several expressions, which in several words announce the same idea that might be expressed by one adverb; as, *dí buón grádo*, 'willingly'; *quánto prima*, 'very soon'; *all' improvviso*, 'unexpectedly'; and these are called **ADVERBIAL PHRASES**.

A **PREPOSITION** is a word, which is placed before a noun, a pronoun, or a verb, to show its relation to some other word; as, *in*, 'in'; *con*, 'with'; *sénza*, 'without':—*non è in càsa*, 'he is not (in the house) at home'; *verrò con voi*, 'I will come with you'; *sénza andar più álle lúnghe*, 'without going any further'.

Prepositions have several denominations, viz. of *place*, *order*, *time*, *union*, *opposition*, &c. according to the several relations they express.

The word which follows the preposition is called its *regimen* or *complement*.

A **CONJUNCTION** is a word, which serves to join words and sentences together; as, *e*, 'and'; *nè*, 'nor, neither'; *ma*, 'but'; *nondiméno*, 'nevertheless':—*bélla e buóna*, 'handsome and good'; *nè mángia nè béve*, 'he neither eats nor drinks'; *égli è pòvero ma onoráto*, 'he is poor but honored'; *élla è mólto giòvane, e nondiméno è mólto sávia*, 'she is yet very young, and nevertheless she is very wise'.

Besides the general use of connecting words and sentences together, conjunctions sometimes express the particular point of view in which the mind considers the words and sentences so connected; hence the division of conjunctions into *explicative*, *adversative*, *alternative*, *conclusive*, &c.

AN **INTERJECTION** is a word, which is used to express an emotion or affection of the mind; as, *ah!* 'ah!' *oh!* 'oh!' *aimè!* 'alas!'

The affections of the mind may be of *joy*, *grief*, *indignation*, *contempt*, &c. which give to the interjections different denominations.

Of the foregoing Parts of Speech, some are occasionally employed, when they are not absolutely necessary to grammatical construction, but serve, nevertheless, to give strength and energy to the discourse; as, *già, mica, pure, mái*:—*gìl Dio non vòglia*, 'may God forbid'; *non son mica fávole*, 'they are not

fables'; *la cosa andò PUR così*, 'the affairs went off so'; *MA: sì, che io le conosco*, 'yes, that I know them'. These words, when so used, are called **EXPLETIVES**.

**WORDS** form the whole subject of Grammar. They may be either expressed by the *voice*, or represented in *writing* by characters.

The collection of letters of which the words of a language are formed, is called the **ALPHABET**.

That part of Grammar, which teaches how to express the sounds of words, is called **PRONUNCIATION**.

That part which treats of the different sorts of words and their various modifications, is called **ANALOGY**.

That part of Grammar, which treats of the connexion and right order of words among themselves, is called **SYNTAX**.

That part, which teaches how to write words correctly, is called **ORTHOGRAPHY**.



## ITALIAN ALPHABET.



THE *Italian Alphabet* contains *twenty-two letters*, which the modern Romans, following the Latin, name and pronounce as follows :

(Figure)	(Name)	(Pron.)	(Figure)	(Name)	(Pron.)
A	a	a	M	m	em
B	b	be	N	n	en
C	c	ce	O	o	o
D	d	de	P	p	pe
E	e	e	Q	q	qu
F	f	ef	R	r	er
G	g	ge	S	s	es
H	h	acca	T	t	te
I	i	i	U	u	oo
J	j	je	V	v	ve
L	l	el	Z	z	zeta

The Florentines, on the authority of the "Fathers of the Language,"\* name and pronounce them as follows :

(Figure)	(Name)	(Pron.)	(Figure)	(Name)	(Pron.)
A	a	a	M	m	émme
B	b	bi	N	n	énne
C	c	ci	O	o	o
D	d	di	P	p	pi
E	e	o	Q	q	qu
F	f	éffe	R	r	érre
G	g	gi	S	s	ésse
H	h	acca	T	t	ti
I	i	i córto	U	u	u
J	j	i húngo	V	v	vi
L	l	élle	Z	z	zéta

\* E di questi costui sono molti idioti, che non saprebbono P abboci. (Dant. Conv.)

Egli il crederebbe allora, che guardando voi, egli crederebbe, che voi sapete P abboci. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 5.)

E fu' calicatore tante beche, quante lettere ha nell' abboci. (Giov. VIII. l. 1. c. 13.)

And of such ones, there are many so ignorant, that do not know even the ab-bee-chee'.

He might think so, if looking at you at the same time, he should think that you had learned your a-b-a.

And caused so many convents to be built as there are letters in the a-b-a.

Of these twenty-two letters, *A, E, I, O, U*, are vowels; *B, C, D, F, G, L, M, N, P, Q, R, S, T, V, Z*, are consonants; *J* is considered as a vowel; and *H* is a simple sign, having no sound.

The Latin letters *K k, X x, Y y*, have no place in the Italian Alphabet.

Instead of *k*, either *c* or *ch* is used; as,

*Senza fallo & calèndi sarà capitano Buffalmacco.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) Without fail by the kalends Buffalmacco will be captain,

*Dicteu un curie ed un Sanctus.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 2.) He said a Kyrie and a Sanctus.

*X* is sometimes translated into *s* or *ss*, and sometimes into *cc*; as,

*Acciocchè io prima esèmplo dea a tutti vòi.* (Bocc. Intr.) So that I might first set the example to all of you.

*Un giovane lor nipòte, che avèa nome Alessàndro, mandarono.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.) They sent a young man, nephew of theirs, called Alexander.

*Sopra gli àlti palàgi, è sopra l' eccèlse tòrri la lèscia.* (Bocc. g. 4. Proem.) It [the wind] leaves it [the dust] upon the high palaces and the lofty towers.

The word 'Xerxes' is written with an *s*, — *Sèrse*; but the word 'Xanthus' is written with an *x*, — *Xànto*, 'the Seemander'; to distinguish it from *Sànto*, 'Saint.'

For *Y* has been substituted *i*; as,

*Vèggio lunge dè' laghi Averni, e Stigi.* (Petr. s. 265.) I see far from the Avernian and Stygian lakes.

The English and German *W w*, in translating proper names, is commonly changed into *u* when it is a vowel, and into *v* or *g* when a consonant; as, *Newton*, 'Newton': *Vallenstèin*, 'Wallenstein'; *Gàlles*, 'Wales.'

## PART I.

### ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION.



#### CHAPTER I.

##### SOUNDS OF THE VOWELS.

**A** is sounded like *a* in the English word *father* ; as,

	(Pronounce)	
<i>ára,</i>	ah'-rah,	altar ;
<i>álma,</i>	ah'-mah,	soul.

**E** has two sounds, one *open*, the other *close* :

*E open* is sounded like *ai* in the English word *fair* ; as,

<i>téma,</i>	<i>tai'-mah,</i>	theme ;
<i>véna,</i>	<i>vai'-nah,</i>	oats.

*E close* is sounded like *ai* in the English word *pair* ; as,

<i>léga,</i>	<i>lai'-gah,</i>	alliance ;
<i>méla,</i>	<i>mai'-lah,</i>	apple.

**I** is sounded like *ee* in English ; or like *i* in the English word *machine* ; as,

<i>inno,</i>	<i>een'-no,</i>	hymn ;
<i>lite,</i>	<i>lee'-tay,</i>	strife.

**O** has two sounds, one *open*, the other *close* :

*O open* is sounded like *o* in the English word *cord* ; as,

<i>bótta,</i>	<i>bot'-tah,</i>	blow ;
<i>rósa,</i>	<i>ro'-sah,</i>	rose.



*O close* is sounded like *o* in the English word *bone* ; as,

<i>folla,</i>	<i>fol'-lah,</i>	crowd ;
<i>bra,</i>	<i>o'-rah,</i>	hour.

*U* is sounded like *oo* in the English word *ooze* ; as,

<i>uso,</i>	<i>oo'-so,</i>	use ;
<i>tutto,</i>	<i>too'-to,</i>	all.

When these vowels are at the end of words marked with an accent, they have a quick and sharp sound, which very seldom occurs in the English language ; as,

<i>bontà,</i>	<i>bon-tah',</i>	goodness ;
<i>affè,</i>	<i>ahf-fay',</i>	in truth ;
<i>bali,</i>	<i>bah-lee',</i>	bailiff ;
<i>falò,</i>	<i>fah-lo',</i>	bonfire ;
<i>tribù,</i>	<i>tree-boo',</i>	tribe.

[For Rules how to Determine when the vowels *E, O,* are Pronounced *open,* or *close,* see APPENDIX, A.]

## CHAPTER II.

### PRONUNCIATION OF THE CONSONANTS.

ITALIAN consonants, except *C, G, R, S, Z,* are pronounced as in English.

*C* followed by the vowels *e, i,* is pronounced like *ch* in the English words *cherry, chilly* ; as,

<i>céna,</i>	<i>chay'-nah,</i>	supper ;
<i>cibo,</i>	<i>chee'-bo,</i>	food.

*G* followed by the vowels *e, i,* is pronounced like *j* in English ; or like *g* in the English words *gem, ginger* ; as,

<i>gelo,</i>	<i>'jay'-lo</i>	frost ;
<i>stro</i>	<i>jee'-ro,</i>	turn.

*R* in the beginning of words, or in the middle

when it begins a syllable, is pronounced like *r* in the English words *ruin*, *marine* ; as,

<i>ripe,</i>	<i>rod'-pay,</i>	<i>rock ;</i>
<i>máre,</i>	<i>mah'-ray,</i>	<i>sea :</i>

But at the end of words, or when it ends a syllable, or when preceded by another consonant, or when doubled, it has a rolling sound to which there is nothing similar in the English language, and which can be acquired only by oral instruction ; as,

<i>per,</i>	<i>payr',</i>	<i>for ;</i>
<i>érto,</i>	<i>ayr'-to,</i>	<i>steep ;</i>
<i>átro,</i>	<i>ah'-tro,</i>	<i>black ;</i>
<i>orrído,</i>	<i>or'-ree-do,</i>	<i>horrid.</i>

**S** in the beginning of words, or when preceded or followed by another consonant, or when doubled, is pronounced *sharp*, like *s* in the English words *saint*, *pulse*, *discount*, *assembly* ; as,

<i>sánto,</i>	<i>sahr'-to,</i>	<i>saint ;</i>
<i>gálsa,</i>	<i>jayl'-sah,</i>	<i>mulberry ;</i>
<i>éscá,</i>	<i>ay'-skah,</i>	<i>bait ;</i>
<i>léso,</i>	<i>lays'-so,</i>	<i>boiled.</i>

Between two vowels, and in the last syllable of all substantive and adjective nouns that end in *ése*, *úso*, *úsa*, it is pronounced *flat*, or *soft* like *z* ; or like *s* in the English word *rose* ; as,

<i>víso,</i>	<i>vee'-zo,</i>	<i>visage ;</i>
<i>palése,</i>	<i>pah-lay'-zay,</i>	<i>manifest ;</i>
<i>abúso,</i>	<i>ah-boo'-zo,</i>	<i>abuse ;</i>
<i>confúsa,</i>	<i>con-foo'-zah,</i>	<i>confounded.</i>

In the last syllable of all adjective nouns ending in *óso*, *ósa*, it is pronounced *sharp* ; as,

<i>virtuóso,</i>	<i>veer-too,oo'-so,</i>	<i>virtuous ;</i>
<i>maestósa,</i>	<i>mah,ay-sto'-sah,</i>	<i>majestic.</i>

**Z** cannot be submitted to certain rules. It can only be said, that, in the beginning of words, or when single, it is pronounced *flat*, or *soft* like *ds* in the English word *Windsor* ; as,

<i>zodiáco,</i>	<i>dso-dee',ah-ko,</i>	<i>zodiac ;</i>
<i>zanzára,</i>	<i>dsahn-dsah'-rah,</i>	<i>gnat.</i>

When preceded by a consonant, or when followed by two vowels, or when doubled, it is pronounced *sharp*, like *ts* in the English word *benefits*; as,

<i>cálza,</i>	<i>kahl'-tsah,</i>	stocking;
<i>grázia,</i>	<i>grah'-tee,ah,</i>	grace;
<i>bellezza,</i>	<i>bayl-lay'-tsah,</i>	beauty.

In the last syllable of words ending in *ánza*, *énza*, *ónza*, it is pronounced something like *z* in the English word *razor*; as,

<i>dánza,</i>	<i>dahn'-zah,</i>	dance;
<i>cleménza,</i>	<i>klay-mayn'-zah,</i>	clemency;
<i>lónza,</i>	<i>lon'-zah,</i>	panther.

[For a list of Words varying from the general Rules, respecting the Pronunciation of *Z*, see APPENDIX, B.]

## CHAPTER III.

### OF *J* AND *H*.

***J*** is considered as a vowel in Italian. It is used instead of *ii*, at the end of words, in the plural of some nouns; \* and it is sounded like *ee* in the English word *fee*, each *e* being distinctly pronounced; as,

<i>témpj,</i>	} for	<i>témpii,</i>	<i>taym'-pe,e,</i>	temples;
<i>stúdj,</i>		<i>stúdií,</i>	<i>stoo'-de,e,</i>	studies.

***H*** has no sound. It is only used to denote the hard sound of the consonants *c*, *g*, before the vowels *e*, *i*; as, in

<i>chéríco,</i>	<i>kay'-ree-ko,</i>	clerk;
<i>chítarra,</i>	<i>kee-tah'-rah,</i>	guitar;
<i>ghézzo,</i>	<i>gay'-tso,</i>	Moor;
<i>ghíro,</i>	<i>gee'-ro,</i>	dormouse:

\* We very often in books meet with words in which *j* is used instead of *i*, either at the beginning or in the middle of words; as in *jéri* instead of *éri*, 'yesterday'; *jurídico* instead of *urídico*, 'lawful'; *nója* instead of *nóia*, 'vexation'; *libráje* instead of *libráio*, 'bookseller'; but this use is disapproved by correct writers.

To prolong the sound of the vowels *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, in the interjections,

аН!	аh!	ah!
еН!	дэй!	alas!
іН!	ее!	ih!
роН!	пō!	pooh!
уН!	оō!	uh!

To distinguish the words,\*

I have,	НО,	о,	} from {	о,	о,	or;
thou hast,	Нáи,	аh',ee,		ái,	аh',ee,	to the;
he has,	НА,	аh,		а,	аh,	to;
they have,	Нáнно,	аhn'-no,		áнно,	аhn'-no,	year.

And in each case it is a sign, a mark of distinction rather than a letter.

## CHAPTER IV.

### DOUBLE CONSONANTS.

- Cc** followed by the vowels *e*, *i*, is pronounced like *tch* in the English word *match*; as,
- |                  |                          |            |
|------------------|--------------------------|------------|
| <i>accécto</i> , | <i>aht-chaym'-to</i> ,   | accent;    |
| <i>accícto</i> , | <i>aht-chee'-dee,o</i> , | slaughter. |
- Gg** followed by the vowels *e*, *i*, is pronounced like *dg* in the English word *lodge*; as,
- |                 |                       |             |
|-----------------|-----------------------|-------------|
| <i>ogécto</i> , | <i>od-jayt'-to</i> ,  | object;     |
| <i>ogécti</i> , | <i>od-jee'-dee'</i> , | now-a-days. |
- Ch** followed by the vowels *e*, *i*, is pronounced like *k* in the English words, *kept*, *keep*; as,
- |                |                  |           |
|----------------|------------------|-----------|
| <i>chéto</i> , | <i>kay'-to</i> , | quiet;    |
| <i>chíno</i> , | <i>kee'-no</i> , | inclined. |

\* Some use the *grave accent* instead of *á* to distinguish these words, writing *ó*, 'I have'; *ái*, 'thou hast'; *á*, 'he has'; *áнно*, 'they have'; in the same way that we distinguish the words *í*, 'it is'; *íá*, 'there'; *íá*, 'neither'; from *é*, 'and'; *íá*, 'the'; *íá*, 'of it'; &c.; which mode seems to be preferable, as it simplifies the orthography of the words, and dispenses with a useless letter.

Followed by the vowels *ia*, *ie*, *io*, *iu*, it is pronounced like *ki* in the English word *kind*; as,

<i>chióve</i> ,	<i>k,yak'-vay</i> ,	key ;
<i>chiésa</i> ,	<i>k,yay'-sah</i> ,	church ;
<i>chióma</i> ,	<i>k,yo'-mah</i> ,	head of hair ;
<i>chiúsa</i> ,	<i>k,yoo'-sah</i> ,	hedge.

*Gh* followed by the vowels *e*, *i*, is pronounced like *g* in the English words *get*, *giddy*; as,

<i>ghémbo</i> ,	<i>gaym'-bo</i> ,	crooked ;
<i>ghétro</i> ,	<i>gee'-ro</i> ,	dormouse.

Followed by the vowels *ia*, *ie*, *io*, *iu*, it is pronounced like *gui* in the English word *guide*; as,

<i>ghiánda</i> ,	<i>g,yahn'-dah</i> ,	acorn ;
<i>ghitra</i> ,	<i>g,yay'-rah</i> ,	quiver ;
<i>ghidto</i> ,	<i>g,yot'-to</i> ,	glutton ;
<i>teghéuzza</i> ,	<i>tayg-g,yoo'-sah</i> ,	baking-pan.

*Gl* followed by the vowel *i*, and in all words in which *i* is followed by another vowel, is pronounced like *ll* in the English word *brilliant*; as,

<i>gli</i> ,	<i>l,yee'</i> ,	the ;
<i>égli</i> ,	<i>ay'-l,yee</i> ,	he ;
<i>vóglia</i> ,	<i>vo'-l,yah</i> ,	desire ;
<i>ciélio</i> ,	<i>chee'-l,yo</i> ,	eye-brow:

But in all words in which *gli* is followed by a consonant, it is pronounced like *gl* in the English word *glimmer*; as,

<i>negligénte</i> ,	<i>nay-gee-jayn'-tay</i> ,	negligent ;
<i>anglicáno</i> ,	<i>ahn-gee-kah'-no</i> ,	Anglican.

It has the same sound in the words,

<i>ángli</i> ,	<i>ahn'-glee</i> ,	Englishmen ;
<i>ánglia</i> ,	<i>ahn'-glee,ah</i> ,	England.

*Gn* followed by the vowels *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, is pronounced something like *ni* in the English word *minion*; as,

<i>magéna</i> ,	<i>mah-gah'-n,yah</i> ,	blemish ;
<i>agnélló</i> ,	<i>ah-n,yay'-lo</i> ,	lamb ;

<i>incógnito,</i>	<i>een-ko'-n,yee-to,</i>	unknown;
<i>bisóno,</i>	<i>bee-so'-n,yo,</i>	need ;
<i>ignúdo,</i>	<i>ee-n,yoo'-do,</i>	naked.

**Sc** followed by the vowels *e, i,* is pronounced like *sh* in the English word *shell, ship* ; as,

<i>scéna,</i>	<i>shay'-nah,</i>	scene ;
<i>scímia,</i>	<i>shee'-mee,ah,</i>	ape.

**Sch** followed by the vowels *e, i,* is pronounced like *sk* in the English words *sketch, skill* ; as,

<i>schérno,</i>	<i>skayr'-no,</i>	mockery ;
<i>schífo,</i>	<i>skee'-fo,</i>	skiff.

Followed by the vowels *ia, ie, io, iú,* it is pronounced like *sk* in the English word *sky* ; as,

<i>schíavo,</i>	<i>sk,yah'-vo,</i>	slave ;
<i>schiéná,</i>	<i>sk,yay'-nah,</i>	the back ;
<i>schióppo,</i>	<i>sk,yop'-po,</i>	musket ;
<i>schúma,</i>	<i>sk,yoo'-mah,</i>	froth.

## CHAPTER V.

### OF SYLLABLES.

**CIA', ció, ciú,** are pronounced like *cha, cho, choo,* in the English words *charm, chop, choose* ; as,

<i>ciálda,</i>	<i>chah'-da,</i>	wafer;
<i>ciómpo,</i>	<i>chom'-po,</i>	clown;
<i>ciórma,</i>	<i>choor'-mah,</i>	crew.

**Giá, gió, giú,** are pronounced like *ja, jo, ju,* in the English words *jar, jove, jury* ; as,

<i>giálla,</i>	<i>jahl'-lo,</i>	yellow ;
<i>giórno,</i>	<i>jor'-no,</i>	day ;
<i>grósto,</i>	<i>ju'-sto,</i>	just.

**Sciá, sció, sciú,** are pronounced like *sha, sho, shoo,* in the English words *shall, shop, shoot* ; as,

<i>sciáme,</i>	<i>shah'-may,</i>	swarm ;
<i>sciólto,</i>	<i>shol'-to,</i>	loose ;
<i>sciugáto,</i>	<i>shoo-gah'-to,</i>	wiped.

*Guá, gué, guí,* are pronounced like *gua, gue, gui,* in the English words *language, languet, languid*; as,

GUÁncia,	gwahn'-chah,	cheek,
GUÉrra,	gwayr'-rah,	war;
GUÍda,	gwee'-dah,	guide.

*Quá, qué, quí, quó,* are pronounced like *qua, que, qui, quo,* in the English words *quality, question, quibble, quote*; as,

QUÁnto,	kwahn'-to,	how-much;
QUÉsto,	kway'-sto,	this;
QUÍnto,	kween'-to,	fifth;
QUOTIDIÁno,	kwo-tee-dee,ah'-no,	daily.

## CHAPTER VI.

### DIPHTHONGS AND TRIPHTHONGS.

ITALIAN diphthongs are so pronounced as to give to each vowel its proper sound. They are generally divided into two classes, the *long* and the *short*.

Long diphthongs are those, in which each vowel is as distinctly pronounced as if they formed each a separate syllable; as,

áe	Áere,	ah',ay-ray,	air;
ái	mái,	mah',ee,	never;
áo	páolo,	pah',o-lo,	a paul;
áu	Áura,	ah',oo-rah,	breeze;
ea	bórea,	bo'-ray,ah,	the north-wind;
ee	VEEMénza,	vay,ay-mayn'-zah,	vehemence;
éi	léi,	lay',ee,	her;
éó	Éolo,	ay',o-lo,	Æolus;
éu	fÉudo,	fay',oo-do,	feud;
ói	vói,	vó',ee,	you;
oó	coórté,	ko,or'-tay,	cohort;
úi	colóí,	ko-loo',ee,	that-one.

Short diphthongs are so pronounced, that, of the two vowels, one is so faintly heard as to seem blended with the other ; as,

<i>ia</i>	<i>fiáto,</i>	<i>fee,ah'-to,</i>	breath ;
<i>ie</i>	<i>ciéto,</i>	<i>chee,ay'-to,</i>	heaven ;
<i>io</i>	<i>pióva,</i>	<i>pee,ó'-vah,</i>	rain ;
<i>iu</i>	<i>piúma,</i>	<i>pee,oo'-mah,</i>	feather ;
<i>ua</i>	<i>quáno,</i>	<i>kwahh'-to,</i>	how-much ;
<i>ue</i>	<i>guéffa,</i>	<i>gwayf'-fah,</i>	cage ;
<i>ui</i>	<i>quinto,</i>	<i>kween'-to,</i>	fifth ;
<i>uo</i>	<i>túno,</i>	<i>too,ó'-no,</i>	thunder.

Triphthongs are generally classed with the short diphthongs, and are pronounced,

<i>aió</i>	<i>gáio,</i>	<i>gah',yo,</i>	gay ;
<i>iei</i>	<i>miéi.</i>	<i>mee,ay',ee,</i>	mine ;
<i>uoi</i>	<i>búoi,</i>	<i>boo,ó',ee,</i>	oxen ;
<i>uáio</i>	<i>guáio,</i>	<i>gwah',yo,</i>	wailing ;
<i>uóio</i>	<i>cúbio,</i>	<i>kwo',yo,</i>	leather ;
<i>iúoi</i>	<i>laccióoi,</i>	<i>lah'-choo,ó',ee,</i>	snares.

## CHAPTER VII.

### GENERAL RULES ON THE ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION.

ITALIAN words are pronounced exactly as they are written, there being no silent letter except *h*.

Every vowel always preserves its proper sound, independently of the consonants which accompany it.\*

\* There is, perhaps, no greater difficulty for foreigners in pronouncing Italian, than that of the vowels *E*, *O*, whose sound, either *open* or *close*, often determines the signification of words ; as in *méle*, *péscá*, *téma* ; *cóllo*, *féro*, *vóto*, which pronounced with *E* and *O* *open*, mean, 'honey', 'a peach', 'theme' ; 'neck', 'the bar', 'void' : and pronounced with *E* and *O* *close*, signify, 'apples', 'fishing', 'fear' ; 'with the', 'a hole', 'vow'.

[For a list of Words of Similar Orthography, but of Different Signification, distinguished by the Different Sound of *E*, *O*, see APPENDIX, A. (2)]



When consonants are doubled, each of them is separately pronounced ;\* as,

<i>fratÉLLO,</i>	<i>fráh-tayl'-lo,</i>	brother ;
<i>ADDÓBBO,</i>	<i>ahd-dob'-bo,</i>	ornament ;
<i>ERRÓRE,</i>	<i>ayr-ro'-ray,</i>	error ;
<i>ATTREZZI,</i>	<i>ah-t-rayt'-see,</i>	utensils.

If a word ends with a consonant, and the following word begins with a vowel, the consonant of the former, in the pronunciation, is joined to the vowel or first syllable of the latter ; as,

<i>PER AMÓRE,</i>	<i>pe-R AM-óre,</i>	<i>pay-rah-mo'-ray,</i>
	for love sake ;	
<i>QUÁL ANgÓSTIA,</i>	<i>qua-L AN-góstia</i>	<i>kwah-lahn-go'-shah,</i>
	what anguish ;	
<i>grand' INVITO,</i>	<i>gran-D IN-víto,</i>	<i>grahn-deen-ved'-to,</i>
	great invitation.	

When *gli* precedes a word beginning with a vowel, the vowel or first syllable of the latter is joined to *gli*, so as to form a single syllable ; as,

<i>GLI onóri,</i>	<i>GLI o-nóri,</i>	<i>lyo-no'-ree,</i>	the honors ;
<i>bÉGLI ócchi,</i>	<i>be-GLI óc-chi,</i>	<i>bay-lyok'-kee,</i>	beautiful eyes.

In all Italian words of more than one syllable, there is always one, upon which the voice, in pronouncing the word, is heard stronger than upon the others. This, which is generally effected by raising the voice upon that syllable and letting it fall upon the rest, is commonly called the *tonic accent* of the word. The syllable upon which the tonic accent falls, is pronounced longer than the other syllables ; each of which is not to

\* The importance of the observance of this rule will at once be perceived by the learner, when, in advancing in the study of the language, he observes a great number of words written with a double consonant, whose signification would be entirely altered by pronouncing them with a single consonant ; as in *cámo*, *fócco*, *préso*, *róssa*, *séna*, *sónno*, 'car', 'tassel', 'near', 'red', 'saw', 'sleep': which pronounced with a single consonant, *cámo*, *fócco*, *préso*, *róssa*, *séna*, *sónno*, signify 'dear', 'hoarse', 'taken', 'rose', 'evening', 'I am'.

[For a list of Words, whose Signification is determined by the Pronunciation of double Consonants, see APPENDIX, C.]

occupy more than half the time employed in pronouncing the accented syllable ; as,

ònda,  
uccéllò,  
ébano,  
amistà,

òx-däh,  
òòt-chäyl-lò,  
äy-bäh-nò,  
äh-mèë-stäh,

wave ;  
bird ;  
ebony ;  
amity.

### EXERCISE ON THE PRONUNCIATION.

*Cédro*, citron ; *cénere*, ashes ; *célebre*, celebrated ; *cicatrice*, scar ; *cicalàta*, chit-chat ; *cipòlla*, onion ; *ciància*, story ; *ciarlàre*, to prate ; *ciàlda*, wafer ; *ciélo*, heaven ; *ciéco*, blind ; *cioccolàte*, chocolate ; *ciòcco*, stump ; *ciò*, this ; *fanciùllo*, child ; *ciürma*, crew ; *ciuffò*, a tuft of hair ; *gènte*, people ; *gèntere*, gender ; *giro*, turn ; *gigànte*, giant ; *ginòcchio*, knee ; *giardìno*, garden ; *giammái*, never ; *giallo*, yellow ; *giòrno*, day ; *giògo*, yoke ; *giocòndo*, merry ; *giòvane*, youth ; *giùgno*, June ; *giulio*, gay ; *giudice*, judge ; *giudicàre*, to judge ; *ràme*, copper ; *rovtina*, ruin ; *orróre*, horror ; *parlàre*, to speak ; *fèrro*, iron ; *òrlo*, border ; *mercè*, reward ; *bàrdo*, bard ; *arrovellàre*, to be angry ; *irrettire*, to ensnare ; *crudéle*, cruel ; *fórza*, force ; *território*, territory ; *tartàreo*, tartarean ; *salùte*, health ; *sérvo*, servant ; *sòrte*, fate ; *stre*, sire ; *sòpra*, above ; *così*, so ; *singolàre*, singular ; *sòle*, sun ; *su*, upon ; *superàre*, to surmount ; *palése*, manifest ; *cortése*, courteous ; *spéso*, expended ; *réso*, rendered ; *ròsa*, rose ; *spòsa*, spouse ; *risa*, laughter ; *mùsa*, muse ; *virtuòso*, virtuous ; *confuso*, confounded ; *zòlla*, clod ; *zio*, uncle ; *zùppa*, soup ; *zerbino*, a spark ; *zimàrra*, night-gown ; *pòzzo*, a well ; *carézze*, caresses ; *carròzza*, couch ; *tàzza*, cup ; *ammazzàre*, to kill ; *pizzico*, pinch ; *òrzo*, barley ; *zizzània*, tare ; *rézzo*, shade ; *vizio*, vice ; *zòfico*, rude ; *lettizia*, joy ; *nazione*, nation ; *témpj*, temples ; *stúdj*, studies ; *esémpj*, examples ; *vizj*, vices ; *eccidj*, slaughters ; *augùrj*, auguries ; *ho*, I have ; *hái*, thou hast ; *ha*, he has ; *hànnò*, they have ; *ah!* ah! *deh!* alas! *ih!* ih! *poh!* pooh! *uh!* uh! *acciàio*, steel ; *accénto*, accent ; *accidiòso*, sluggish ; *lacciò*, noose ; *fùccia*, face ; *lacciudò*, snare ; *oggettò*, object ; *soggiòrno*, abode ;

*pioggia*, rain; *ruggio*, ray; *aggiunta*, addition; *oggi*, to-day; *cheto*, quiet; *chino*, inclined; *cherubino*, cherubim; *chimico*, chymist; *chermes*, cochineal; *chimera*, chimera; *chicchessia*, whosoever; *chiave*, key; *chiostro*, cloister; *chiusa*, hedge; *chiamare*, to call; *chiesa*, church; *chiodo*, nail; *chirico*, clerk; *ghembo*, crooked; *ghermire*, to gripe; *ghiro*, dormouse; *ghiribizzo*, whim; *gherone*, gore, *ghirlanda*, garland; *ghiaia*, gravel; *ghiaccio*, ice; *lusinghiere*, flattering; *preghiera*, prayer; *ghiotto*, greedy; *tegghezza*, baking-pan; *figli*, children; *fogli*, leaves; *pigliare*, to take; *famiglia*, family; *moglie*, wife; *orgoglio*, pride; *imbroglione*, embarrassment; *fogliato*, leafy; *figliuolo*, son; *negligenza*, negligence; *negletto*, neglected; *angli*, Englishmen; *anglia*, England; *anglicano*, Anglican; *campagna*, the country; *magnanimo*, magnanimous; *ingegnere*, engineer; *spingere*, to push; *magnifico*, magnificent; *signore*, sir; *legno*, wood; *ignudo*, naked; *scesa*, descent; *scemare*, to diminish; *scettro*, scepter; *scimia*, ape; *scisma*, schism; *sciagura*, misfortune; *sciame*, swarm; *sciancato*, hipped; *sciienza*, science; *coscienza*, conscience; *sciocco*, foolish; *sciorre*, to loose; *sciugatoio*, towel; *sciugare*, to wipe; *schiaivo*, slave; *schiantare*, to tear; *schiena*, the back; *schietto*, candid; *schiodo*, musket; *schiuma*, froth; *guadagnare*, to gain; *guerra*, war; *guardare*, to look; *guerre*, to heat; *guercio*, squint-eyed; *guida*, guide; *guidare*, to guide; *quattro*, four; *qualità*, quality; *quadro*, picture; *quale*, which; *questo*, this; *quercia*, oak; *quiete*, quiet; *quindici*, fifteen; *quivi*, there; *quotidiano*, daily.

## PART II.

### ITALIAN ANALOGY.



#### PARTS OF SPEECH.

(Variable)

(Invariable)

L' ARTICOLO, <i>the Article</i> ;	L' AVVÉRPIO, <i>the Adverb</i> ;
IL NÓME, <i>the Noun</i> ;	LA PREPOZIZIÓNE, <i>the Preposi-</i> <i>tion</i> ;
IL PRONÓME, <i>the Pronoun</i> ;	LA CONGIUNZIÓNE, <i>the Coniunc-</i> <i>tion</i> ;
IL VÉRBO, <i>the Verb</i> ;	L' INTERIEZZIÓNE, <i>the Interjec-</i> <i>tion</i> .
IL PARTICÍPIO, <i>the Participle</i> :	

#### CHAPTER I.

##### ARTICLES.

THERE are three articles in Italian ; *il, lo, la*, ' the ' , in the singular ; *i* or *li*,\* *gli, le*, ' the ' , in the plural number.

*Il, lo*, and *i* or *li, gli*, are used with masculine, *la* and *le*, with feminine nouns.

*Il*, and *i* or *li*, are put before masculine nouns beginning with a *consonant*, except *z*, or *s* followed by another *consonant* ; as,

IL <i>fratello</i> , the brother ;	I <i>figliuoli</i> , the children ;
IL <i>marito</i> , the husband ;	LI <i>padri</i> , the fathers.

\* We meet with *li* frequently in the Classics, especially in poetry ; but modern writers generally use *i* in preference to it.

*Lo* and *gli*, are put before masculine nouns beginning with *z*, *s* followed by another consonant, or a vowel ;\* as,

LO zio,	the uncle ;	GLI zeffri,	the zephyrs
LO strépilo,	the noise ;	GLI sproni,	the spurs ;
LO innocente,	the innocent man ;	GLI occhi,	the eyes.

## EXCEPTIONS.

The noun *Dio*, 'God', before its plural, *Déi*, 'Gods', takes the article *gli* ; as,

GLI Déi, the Gods.

After the preposition *per*, 'for, by, or through', whether the nouns begins with *z*, *s*, or any other consonant, the article *lo* is more properly used ; as,

*per* LO amore, for the love ; *per* LO braccio, by the arm.

In the plural, however, if the noun begins with any consonant but *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant, we may use indifferently, either *gli* or *li* ; as,

*per* GLI boschi, through the woods ;  
*per* LI regni, through the regions.

*La* and *le*, are put before all feminine nouns beginning either with a consonant, or a vowel ; as,

LA reina,	the queen ;	LE cortesie,	the courtesies ;
LA sorella,	the sister ;	LE madri,	the mothers ;
LA nobiltà,	the nobleness ;	LE anime,	the souls.

The articles *lo*, *la*, before a noun beginning with a vowel ; and *gli*, *le*, before a noun beginning with *i*, *e* ;

\* Poets very often use *le* before nouns beginning with other consonants than *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant ; and *il* before nouns beginning with those consonants ; as,

Lo giorno se n'andava e l'air brava ;  
 (Dant. Inf. 2.)

The day was closing, and the dusky  
 air ;

Segnato appresso il splendido, e on-  
 orando—Fricivalle ; (Boec. Vis. 1.)

Next followed the splendid and hon-  
 orable Fricivalle ;

GLI nemi schiatta, abbàta, e pèrta  
 fuèri ; (Dant. Inf. 9.)

Tears off the boughs, beats down,  
 and hurls away ;

but in prose this usage is, by all good writers, carefully avoided.

generally drop *o*, *a*, *i*, *e*, and take an apostrophe instead of them;\* as,

L' UOMO,	} the man ;	GL' infermi,	} the infirm ;
(for LO UOMO),		(for GLI infermi),	
L' Anima,	} the soul ;	L' Erbe,	} the herbs.
(for LA Anima),		(for LE Erbe),	

Sometimes the article *il* drops the *i* after a word ending with a vowel, and takes an apostrophe instead of it ; as,

E' L viso,	} and the coun- tenance ;	uscio 'L colpo,	} the blow issued.
(for E IL viso),		(for uscio IL colpo),	

## EXAMPLES.

L' UN fratello L' ALTRO abbandonava, e LA SORÉLLA IL FRATELLO, e spesse volte LA DONNA IL SÚO MARÍTO. (Bocc. Intr.)

*E che maggior cosa è, LI PADRI e LE MADRI, I FIGLIUOLI di visitare e di servire schiavavano.* (Bocc. Intr.)

LA REÍNA non si sapéva saziare d'udire LA NOBILTÀ e LE CORTESÍE del giovane re. (Nov. ant. 85.)

Non istette guári a levarsi IL RE, il quále LO STRÉPITO déi caricanti e delle bestie avéva desto. (Bocc. g. 7. Proem.)

Avévan LO INNOCÉNTÉ per falsa suspizióne accusáto. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

*E con amor si lagna—Ch' ha sì caldi GLI SPRON, sì duro IL FRÉNO.* (Petr. s. 140.)

Lucévan GLI OCCHI súoi piú che LA stélla. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

Al tempo DÉGLI DÉI falsi e bugiardi. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

One brother abandoned the other, and the sister the brother, and oftentimes the wife her husband.

And what is more, the fathers and the mothers shunned to visit and serve their children.

The queen could not be satisfied with hearing of the nobleness and the courtesies of the young king.

The king was not long in getting up, whom the noise of the beasts and of those who loaded them had already awakened.

They had accused the innocent man on a false suspicion.

And complains of love, that has so sharp spurs, and so hard a bit.

Her eyes shone more than the star.

In the time of fabled and false deities.

\* *Le* drops the *e* sometimes, and takes an apostrophe instead of it, chiefly in poetry, even before words beginning with any other vowel ; as,

El son fra L'Anime piú nere. (D. Inf. 6.)  
Cánto L'Armi pietóse. (Tass. Ger. 1.)

They are amidst blacker souls.  
I sing the pious arms.

*Sémpre tenéndo PER LO BRÁCCIO LO inférmo.* (Bocc. g. 2.n.8.)

*PER LO súo AMÓRE adúnque a nói ti piéga.* (Dant. Purg. 1.)

*Lásciáne andáre PER LI tuó' sítte RÉGNI.* (Dant. Purg. 1.)

*L' ÁNIMA túa è da vittáte offésa,—LA quál mólte fiáte L' UÓMO ingómbra,—Sicchè d' onráta imprésa lo rivólve.* (Dant. Inf. 2.)

*I pensíer son saétte E' L vísso un sólo—E' L desír fíco.* (Petr.)

*Zéfiro tórna, E' L bel témpo riména,—E i fióri, e L' ÉRBE, súa dólce famíglia.* (Petr. s. 269.)

*DÁGLI ócchi vóstri uscío 'L cólpo mortále.* (Petr.)

*Del bel paéss là dóve 'L sí súbna.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

Holding always the sick man by the arm.

Then for her love condescend to our desires.

Let us pass through thy seven regions.

Thy soul is by vile fear assailed, which oft,—So overcast a man, that he recoils—From noble undertaking.

The thoughts are arrows, and the countenance a sun,—and the desire fire.

Zephyr returns, bringing back flowers, and herbs, his sweet family.

From your eyes the mortal blow issued.

Of that fair land where it is spoken.

When the articles *il, lo, la*; *i* or *li, gli, le*, are immediately preceded by the prepositions *di*, 'of'; *a*, 'to'; *da*, 'from or by'; *in* or *ne*, 'in'; *con*, 'with'; *per*, 'for, by, or through'; *su*, 'upon'; *fra* or *tra*, 'amongst'; in order to avoid the harshness of sound produced by two monosyllables coming together, they are united to them, so as to form a single word; as,

*a i, ÁI*, to the; *da gli, DÁGLI*, from or by the; *su la, SÚLLA*, upon the; *tra le, TRÁLLE*, amongst the.

*Union of the Prepositions DI, A, DA, IN OR NE, CON, PER, SU, FRA OR TRA, with the Article*

*IL, the;*

<i>dì il,</i>	DEL,	of the;
<i>a il,</i>	AL,	to the;
<i>da il,</i>	DAL,	from or by the;
<i>in or ne il,</i>	NEL,	in the;
<i>con il,</i>	COL,	with the;
<i>per il,</i>	PEL,	for, by or through the;

*su il,*  
*fra il,*  
*tra il,*

SUL,  
FRAL, }  
TRAL, }

upon the ;  
amongst the.

*dì i or dî li,*  
*a i or a li,*  
*da i or da li,*  
*in or ne i, or in or ne li,*  
*con i or con li,*  
*per i or per li,*  
*su i or su li,*  
*fra i or fra li,*  
*tra i or tra li,*

I OR LI, the,  
DÈI OR DÉLLI,\*  
ÁI OR ÁLLI,  
DÁI OR DÁLLI,  
NÈI OR NÈLLI,  
CÓI OR CÓLLI,  
PÈI OR PÈLLI,  
SÚI OR SÚLLI,  
FRÁI OR FRÁLLI, }  
TRÁI OR TRÁLLI, }

of the ;  
to the ;  
from or by the ;  
in the ;  
with the ;  
for, by or thro.' the ;  
upon the ;  
amongst the.

LO, the ;

*dì lo,*  
*a lo,*  
*da lo,*  
*in or ne lo,*  
*con lo,*  
*per lo,*  
*su lo,*  
*fra lo,*  
*tra lo,*

DÉLLO,\*  
ÁLLO,  
DÁLLO,  
NÉLLO,  
CÓLLO,  
PÉLLO,  
SÚLLO,  
FRÁLLO, }  
TRÁLLO, }

of the ;  
to the ;  
from or by the ;  
in the ;  
with the ;  
for, by or thro.' the ;  
upon the ;  
amongst thee.

GLI, the ;

*dì gli,*  
*a gli,*  
*da gli,*  
*in or ne gli,*  
*con gli,*  
*per gli,*  
*su gli,*  
*fra gli,*  
*tra gli,*

DÈGLI,\*  
ÁGLI,  
DÁGLI,  
NÈGLI,  
CÓGLI,  
PÈGLI,  
SÚGLI,  
FRÁGLI, }  
TRÁGLI, }

of the ;  
to the ;  
from or by the ;  
in the ;  
with the ;  
for, by or thro.' the ;  
upon the ;  
amongst the.

\* Poets very often use them separate ; as,

*Nè mai nascòe il ciel sì fòlta neb-  
bia,—Che, sopraggiata dal furòr di'  
vinti,—Non fuggiasse DA I pòggi, e DA  
LE valli. (Petr. c. 14.)*

*DA L' érba, e DA LI sór dentro a  
quél seno—Pòeti, ciasògn sarìa di colòr  
vinto. (Dant. Purg. 7)*

*' Al Pàdre, al Fìglio, A LO Spìrito  
Sànte'—Cominciò 'glòria' tãtto 'i Pa-  
radiso. (Dant. Par. 27.)*

Nonever did the sky conceal so thick  
a cloud, that, overtaken by the fury  
of the wind, it would not flee from the  
hills, and the valleys ;

By the herbs and flowers, placed  
in that recess, in color all would be  
surpassed ;

' Glory to the Father, to the Son,—  
And to the Holy Spirit,' rang aloud—  
Throughout all Paradise.



## LA, the ;

<i>dì la,</i>	DÉLLA,	of the ;
<i>a la,</i>	ÁLLA,	to the ;
<i>da la,</i>	DÁLLA,	from <i>or</i> by the ;
<i>in or ne la,</i>	NÉLLA,	in the ;
<i>con la,</i>	CÓLLA,	with the ;
<i>per la,</i>	PÉLLA,	for, by <i>or</i> through the ;
<i>su la,</i>	SÚLLA,	upon the ;
<i>fra la,</i>	FRÁLLA,	} amongst the.
<i>tra la,</i>	TRÁLLA,	

## LE, the ;

<i>dì le,</i>	DÉLLE,	of the ;
<i>a le,</i>	ÁLLE,	to the ;
<i>da le,</i>	DÁLLE,	from <i>or</i> by the ;
<i>in or ne le,</i>	NÉLLE,	in the ;
<i>con le,</i>	CÓLLE,	with the ;
<i>per le,</i>	PÉLLE,	for, by, <i>or</i> through the ;
<i>su le,</i>	SÚLLE,	upon the ;
<i>fra le,</i>	FRÁLLE,	} amongst the.
<i>tra le,</i>	TRÁLLE,	

*Dìi, ài, dài, nòi, còi, pòi, sùì, frài or trài*, followed by a noun beginning with a consonant, drop the *i*, and take an apostrophe instead of it ; as,

DÉ' <i>prài</i> ,	of the meadows ;	Á' <i>cànti</i> ,	to singing ;
DÁ' <i>parènti</i> ,	by the relations ;	NÉ' <i>giardini</i> ,	in the gardens ;
có' <i>ràggi</i> ,	with the rays ;	PÉ' <i>mónti</i> ,	through the moun- [tains ;
sù' <i>libri</i> ,	upon the books ;	TRÁ' <i>fióri</i> ,	amongst the flow- [ers.

*Pel, pèllo, pèlla*, and *pèlli, pègli, pèlle*, in elegant style are better written *per lo, per la*, and *per li, per gli, per le* ; as,

PER LO <i>Duca</i> ,	by my guide ;	PER LA <i>pietà</i> ,	through pity ;
PER GLI <i>occhi</i> ,	through the [eyes ;	PER LE <i>frondi</i> ,	on account of [the leaves.

And scrupulous writers before nouns beginning with *z* or *s* followed by another consonant, use *cóllo*, *trállo*, *cóllo*, *trállo*, and *cógli*, *trágli*, *cólle*, *trálle*, and *súgli*, always separated;\* as,

CON LO splendóre, with the  
[splendor ;

SU LO smálto, upon the  
[enamel ;

TRA LE stéllé, among the  
[stars ;

CON LA zázzerá, with the  
[head of hair ;

CON GLI sciócchi, with the  
[ignorant ;

SU GLI scúdi, upon the  
[shield.

## EXAMPLES.

*Cóme né' lúcidí seréni sóno  
le stéllé ornáménto del ciélo, e  
nélla primavéra i fióri dé'  
práti, e dé' cóllo i rivestíti ar-  
buscélli ; cosí dé' laudévóli co-  
stúmi, e dé' ragionáménti bellí  
sóno i leggiádrí mótti.* (Bocc.  
g. 6. n. 1.)

*E dívenúti piú liéti ; su si le-  
várono, ed á' suóni, ed á' cánti  
ed á' nálli da cápo si diérono.*  
(Bocc. g. 3. Proem.)

*Oh, sventuráta ! che si dirà  
dá' tuói fratélli, dá' parénti,  
dá' vicíni, quándo si saprà, che  
tu sái quí trováta ?* (Bocc. g. 8.  
n. 7.)

*Quándo né' giardíni entráte,  
distéca la dilicáta máno, cogliéte  
le róse, e lasciáte le spine stáre.*  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

*Ombróse selve, óve percóte il  
sóle,—Che vi fa có' suói rággi  
álte e supérbe.* (Petr. s. 129.)

As in the bright clear sky,  
the stars are the ornament of  
the heavens, and in the spring  
the flowers are of the meadows,  
and the verdant shrubs of the  
hills, so witty sayings are the or-  
naments of praiseworthy man-  
ners and fine conversations.

And having become more  
gay, they arose and gave them-  
selves once more to playing,  
singing, and dancing.

Oh, unfortunate woman ! what  
will be said by thy brothers, by  
thy relations, by thy neighbors,  
when it shall be known, that  
thou hast been found here ?

When you enter into the  
gardens, extending your deli-  
cate hand, you cull the roses,  
and leave the thorns.

Shady woods, where strikes  
the sun, which renders you  
with its rays so lofty and noble.

\* And in poetry even before nouns beginning with any other letter ; as,

*Ecco la féra con la coda agúzza.*  
(Dant. Inf. 17.)

*Pátri Solón—Con gli áltri séi di cói  
Grécia si vanta.* (Petr. Tr. Fam.)

Behold the beast with sharpened  
tail ;

I saw Solon with the other six of  
whom Greece boasts.

*E quindi passai in terra  
d'Abruzzi, dove gli uomini e le  
femmine vanno in zoccoli su pé'  
MONTI.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

*Lascio lo féle, e vo pé' dolci  
pómi—Promessi a me PER LO  
veráce DÚCA.* (Dant. Inf. 16.)

*Così avestù ripósti—DÉ' béi  
vestigi spársi,—Ancór TRÁ' FIÓ-  
RI e l'érba.* (Petr. c. 26.)

*PER GLI ÓCCHI mi passò dén-  
tro la ménte.* (Rim. ant. p. 49.)

*Era 'l giòrno ch' al Sol si sco-  
loráro—PER LA PIETÀ del súo  
Fattóre i rái.* (Petr. s. 3.)

*Giàusc nel bóscu PER LE FRÓN-  
DI ombróso.* (Bocc. Tes. 5. 33.)

*CON LO SPLENDÓR che súa bel-  
lézza addúce.* (Incer. c. 4.)

*Non errár CON GLI SCIÓCCHI.*  
(Petr. c. 47.)

And then I passed to the land  
of Abruzzi, where men and wo-  
men go in wooden shoes up  
over the mountains.

I leave the gill, in quest of  
the sweet fruit, which has been  
promised to me by my faithful  
guide.

Thus would that thou, (O  
heart,) hadst still preserved  
some of the beautiful footsteps,  
here and there, amongst the  
flowers and the grass.

It passed through my eyes  
to my mind.

It was the day when the rays  
of the sun grew pale, through  
pity for his Maker.

He arrived in the wood, shady  
on account of its leaves.

With the splendor which  
brings her beauty.

Do not wonder in error with  
the ignorant.

The English indefinite article *a, an*, is expressed in Italian by the indefinite pronouns *un, úno, úna*, according to the rules already given with regard to the articles *il, lo, la*, 'the'; as,

UN *mercátante*, a merchant; ÚNO *spiráglio*, a breathing-hole;  
ÚNA *fidamma*, a flame; ÚNA *zéba*, a goat.

*Uno*, like *lo*, before a noun beginning with a vowel, drops the *o*, but takes no apostrophe instead of it; *úna* drops the *a* and takes an apostrophe; as,

UN *úomo*, a man; UN' *ómbra*, a shade;  
UN *amóre*, a love; UN' *óra*, an hour.

When a noun is taken in a partitive sense, the English adjectives *some* and *any* are expressed by the

words *del, dello, della*, in the singular; and *déi, degli, delle*, or *alcuni, alcune*, in the plural; as,

DEL PÁNE,	some bread;	DELL' ÓLIO,	some oil;
ALCÚNE còse,	some things;	ALCÚNI uòmini,	some men;
DÉGLI stroménti,	some instru-	DÉLLE aráncè,	some oranges.
	[ments;		

## EXAMPLES.

*In Parigi fu UN gran MERCHANTANTE.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

There was in Paris a great merchant.

*Èra Arriguccio UN Fièro UÓMO, e UN fórte.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 6.)

Arriguccio was a haughty and strong man.

*Nella qual gròtta dáva alquánto lume ÚNO SPIRÁGLIO fáto nel mónte.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

In which grotto came some light through a breathing-hole, opened in the mountain.

*UN volère, UN AMÓRE ci ha sèmpre tenúti legáti e congiúnti, cè UN medésimo giòrno ci diède al móndo; piáccavi, poichè UN' ÓRA ci tógliè, che simileménte ÚNA medésima FIÀMMA ci consúmi.* (Bocc. Filoc.)

One will, one love, has always kept us bound and united, and the same day gave us to the world; may it please you, then, since the same hour takes us from it, that one same flame should consume us.

*Gli dièdi DEL PÁNE e DEL CÁCIO.* (Firenz.)

I gave him some bread and some cheese.

*Úno dè famigliári di Messer Nèri accèso il fuóco, e pósta la padèlla sópra il treppiè, e DELL' ÓLIO méssovi, cominciò ad aspettàre, che le giòvani gli gittássero DEL PÉSCe.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)

One of the domestics of Messer Neri kindled the fire, and having put the frying-pan upon a trevet, and having put some oil in it, he began to wait that the young women should throw into it some fish.

*Di niúna còsa servieno, che di pórgere ALCÚNE còse dagl' infèrmi addomandáte.* (B. Intr.)

They rendered no service, but to reach some things called for by the sick.

## EXERCISE I.

[Let the learner here put the right Article according to the gender marked, against the Italian nouns, and the number of the same, as indicated by the English words.]

The sacred Tiber, the Egyptian obelisks, the temples  
*sácro Tevere, m., Egiziáni obelíschi, m., témpj, m.*

still dark with the vapor of the sacrifices, the Flavian  
*ancóra fóschi vapóre, m. sacrificij, m., Flávio<sup>2</sup>*

Amphitheatre which lies like a mangled giant, the  
*anfiteátro<sup>1</sup>, m.\* il quále giáce cóme sbranáto<sup>2</sup> gigánte, m.,*

columns which describe the customs of the soldiery,  
*colónne, f. che descrivono costumánze, f. milizia, f.,*

the triumphal arches, the space of the Forum, the  
*trionfáli<sup>2</sup> árcchi, m., spásio, m. Fóro, m.,*

mausoleums, the majestic ruins of the circuses and of the  
*mausoléi, m., maestóse<sup>2</sup> ruíne, f. círchi, m. e*

baths, and all the remains of the Roman splendor,  
*térme, f., e tútti avánzi, m. Romána<sup>2</sup> spléndidérza, f.,*

fill the mind | with† | delightful wonder.  
*émpiono ánimo, m. | di | soáve meraviglia.*

Nero to appease them, ordered that the fasces of the  
*Neróne per appaciár<sup>~</sup> li, † bandi che fáschi, m.*

emperor | should be borne | with the laurel. The  
*imperátóre, m. | si portássero | allóro, m.*

senators complained | against | the insolence of the  
*senatóri, m. | si dolévano | di | insolénza, f.*

plebeians, and the plebeians | against | the avarice of the  
*plebéi, m., e | plebéi, m. | di | avarizia, f.*

magistrates and of the great.  
*magistráti, m. e grándi, m.*

\* In this and the following Exercises, the numbers affixed to the Italian words are intended to denote the order in which they are to be placed; as, 'Flávio<sup>2</sup> anfiteátro<sup>1</sup>',—anfiteátro Flávio.

† When an English word or phrase cannot be rendered literally, but by an equivalent Italian word or phrase, they are both included between brackets [ ]; as, 'with' con; di, 'of'.

‡ The sign  $\sim$ , is used to denote, that the words under which it is found, are to be joined in one; as, per appaciár $\sim$ li,—per appaciárlí.

He proposed that (*the*) honors | should be rendered | to Galba,  
 —\* *Propose che* <sup>2</sup> *onóri*,<sup>3</sup>m. | *si rendessero*<sup>1</sup> | a *Galba*,  
 and that the memory of Piso also | should be celebrated. |  
*e che* <sup>3</sup> *memória*,<sup>4</sup>f. di<sup>5</sup> *Pisone*<sup>6</sup> *anche*<sup>2</sup> | *si celebrasse*<sup>1</sup>. |

He departed | to | carry | to | the temple of (*the*)  
 — *Partì* | *per* | *portare* | *in* | *tempio*,m.

Concord the standards of the empire. (*The*) princes  
*Concordia*,f. *insigne*,f. *impéro*,m. *principi*,m.

do more | with their | reputation and | with their |  
*fanno più* | *con la* | *reputazione e* | *con il* |  
 advice, than | with their | hand and | with their | arms.  
*consiglio, che* | *con la* | *mano e* | *con le* | *armi*.

Not pardoning, as in (*the*) other armies, the first fault,<sup>7</sup>  
*Non perdonando, come in* *altri eserciti*,m., *prima falta*,f.,

nor the second, but | he who | left the standard  
*né seconda*,f., *ma* | *chi* | *lasciava* *insigne*,f.

was immediately beheaded. It appeared to him that he heard  
*era subitamente decapitato*. — *parve*<sup>2</sup> *Gli*<sup>1</sup> *sentire*<sup>6</sup>

| about | (*the*) mid-night people descend in the house.  
*in su*<sup>2</sup> | <sup>4</sup> *mezzanotte*,<sup>5</sup>f. *persone*<sup>10</sup> *scendere*<sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> *casa*,<sup>9</sup>f.

Having entered into the tower, she began to weep. For  
 — *Entrata* *torre*,f., — *cominciò a piangere*. *Per*

the pain he felt, he began to roar, so that he seem-  
*dolor*,m. — *sentito*, — *cominciò a mugghiare*, *che* — *pareva*

ed a lion. Fleeting through the woods.  
*leone*,m. *Fuggendo per boschi*,m.

He was seen by a companion | of his. | Having  
 — *Fu veduto da compagno*,<sup>3</sup>m. | *suo*.<sup>1</sup> | —

caused him to come | to | a gossip | of hers. | He gave  
*Fatto lo venire* | *da* | *comare*,<sup>2</sup>f. | *sua*.<sup>1</sup> | — *diède*<sup>2</sup>

to him a purse with some florins | in it. |  
*gli*<sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> *borsa*,<sup>4</sup>f. *con*<sup>5</sup> <sup>7</sup> *fiorini*,<sup>6</sup>m. | *dentro*<sup>8</sup>. |

Having found in the garden some capons, some wine, and  
 — *Trovati orto*,m. *capponi*,m., *vino*,m., &

some eggs, he supped | entirely at his ease. |  
*uova*,f., — *cenò* | *a suo bell'agio*. |

\* Such words, as, though necessary in English, are not to be expressed in Italian, are in this part marked with a dash; and such words as are necessary in Italian, but are not expressed in English, are in this language introduced, in italics, and included between parentheses; as, 'He proposed that (*the*) honors should be rendered', — *Propose che si rendessero gli onóri*.

## CHAPTER II.

## SUBSTANTIVE NOUNS.

ALL Italian substantives end with one of the vowels *o, a, e, i, u.*\* It is these vowels that show their *gender* and *number*.

## GENDER.

Nouns ending in *o* are of the masculine gender ; as,

<i>libro,</i>	book ;	<i>spécchio,</i>	mirror ;
<i>orologio,</i>	watch ;	<i>scrittóio,</i>	scrutoire.

## EXCEPTIONS.

Proper names of women ; as,

<i>Sáffo,</i> Sappho ;	<i>E'ro,</i> Hero ;	<i>Calisto,</i> Calisto ;
<i>Eráto,</i> Erato ;	<i>Atrópe,</i> Atropos ;	<i>Alétto,</i> Alecto :

Some contracted nouns, generally used in poetry ; as,

<i>immágo,</i> (for }	image ;	<i>testúdo,</i> (for }	tortoise ;	<i>Cartágo,</i> (for }	Car-
<i>immáGINE)</i> }		<i>testúdINE)</i> }		<i>CartáGINE)</i> }	thage ;

And the nouns,

<i>máno,</i> hand ;	<i>éco,</i> echo.
---------------------	-------------------

are feminine.

Some nouns of animate beings ending in *o*, in the feminine change *o* into *a* ; as,

<i>colómbó,</i>	pigeon ;	<i>colómbA,</i>	hen-dove ;
<i>cavállibo,</i>	horse ;	<i>cavállA,</i>	mare ;
<i>gáttó,</i>	cat ;	<i>gáttA,</i>	she-cat.

\* *Lápis,* 'pencil', and some very few foreign nouns, as, *ribes,* 'currants', *chérmes,* 'cochineal,' &c., are the only exceptions to this rule. But, then, we meet in Italian with many nouns, which, in composition, are made to end with a consonant ; and this on principles, which will be explained in *Part IV.* when treating of ITALIAN ORTHOGRAPHY.

Nouns ending in *a* are of the feminine gender ; as,

*cása*, house ; *stráda*, street ;  
*pórtá*, door ; *chiésa*, church.

## EXCEPTIONS.

Proper names of men ; as,

*Enéa*, Æneas ; *Andréa*, Andrew ; *Tobía*, Toby ;  
*Áttila*, Attila ; *Battista*, Baptist ; *Lúca*, Luke ;

Nouns of professions exercised by men ; as,

*artista*, artist ; *scriba*, scrivener ; *alchimista*, alchymist ;  
*legista*, lawyer ; *póeta*, poet ; *ebanista*, cabinet-maker :

Nouns of dignity ; as,

*pápa*, pope ; *dúca*, duke ; *gerárca*, high-priest ;  
*patriárca*, patriarch ; *monárca*, monarch ; *demárca*, demarch :

Nouns derived from the Greek, ending in *ma*, *mma* ; as,

*clima*, climate ; *diadéma*, diadem ; *poéma*, poem ;  
*prisma*, prism ; *enigma*, enigma ; *programma*, programma :

Nouns formed of a verb and a noun ; as,

*pascibíctola*, logger-head ; *santinfizza*, hypocrite ; *guardaróba*, the mas-  
 [ter of the wardrobe ;

And the following,

*sofá*, sofa ; *sórra*, ——— ; *scilóma*, long discourse ;  
*scipa*, sot ; *cánapa*, hemp ; *baccalà*, cod-fish :

are masculine.

The nouns,

*idióta*, idiot ; *eremíta*, hermit ; *anacoréta*, anchorite ;  
*ipócríta*, hypocrite ; *apóstata*, apostate ; *patrióttá*, patriot ;  
*deicida*, deicide ; *parricida*, parricide ; *regicida*, regicide ;  
*fratricida*, fratricide ; *omicida*, homicide ; *matricida*, matricide ;  
*antagonista*, antagonist ; *regalista*, royalist ; *monopolista*, monopo-  
 [list ;  
*Deísta*, Deist ; *atetista*, atheist ; *Calvinista*, Calvinist ;  
 [ &c.

are of the common gender.



Some names of animate beings ending in *a*, in the masculine change *a* into *o*; as,

<i>cérva</i> , doe ;	<i>cérvo</i> , stag ;
<i>lúpa</i> , she-wolf ;	<i>lúpo</i> , wolf ;
<i>úrva</i> , she-bear ;	<i>úrvo</i> , bear.

The nouns, *téma*, *pianéta*, *dramma*, *podestà*, in the signification of 'theme', 'planet', 'drama', 'civil magistrate', are masculine; and in the signification of 'fear', 'cope', 'drachm', 'power', are feminine.

## EXAMPLES.

*Galeotto fu il libro e chi lo scrisse.* (Dant. Inf. 5.)

The book and he who wrote it were [to us] Galeotto.

*O'ra che dóbbo dire di quelli che éscono dallo scrittoio fra la gente colla penna nell'orecchio.* (Casa Galat. 86.)

Now what must I say of those, who come out of their study among the people with a pen over the ear.

*Gli abitatori di questo castello con armata mano pervennero al lido.* (Guid. 60.)

The inhabitants of this castle with arms in their hands reached the shore.

*Tale che di lontano—Nelle valli éco trista risuonava.* (Bocc. Tes. 11, 30.)

Such that at a distance sounded in the valleys like a sad echo.

*Vero dirò forse, e parrà menzogna—Ch' i senti trarmi della propria imago* (Petr. c. 4, 8.)

Perhaps I shall tell the truth and it will appear false, that I felt myself drawn away from my own body.

*Siccome quando il colombo si pone—Préso al compagno.* (Dant. Par. 25.)

As when the dove alights by his mate.

*Niuna gloria a un' aquila è pavér vinto una colomba.* (Bocc. g. n.)

No glory comes to an eagle from having conquered a dove.

*In casa tua sei orgoglioso e incomportabile; a case altrui, umile e dimesso.* (Vareh. Sen. ben. 3, 28.)

In thy house thou art proud and insupportable; and at the houses of others, humble and submissive.

*Mise dissensioné nella chiesa, tenédo sélla contro al Pápa con certi cardinalli ed altri érici.* (Giov. Vill. l. 4, 21, 1.)

He put dissension in the church, plotting against the Pope with certain cardinals and other priests.

*È IL MAGGIORE, e 'l più sávio  
LEGISTA, che fósse fino al suo  
témpo. (Giov. Vill. 8. 65, 2.)*

*Il mio signóre nella liberalità  
a quel gran MONÁRCA non cede.  
(Red. Vip. 1. 7.)*

*E così figurádo 'l Paradiso,—  
Convien saltár LO SAGRÁTO POÉ-  
MA,—Côme chi truova suo cam-  
min reciso. (Dant. Par. 23.)*

*Ribaldo, SANTINFÍZZA, gabba-  
dei,—Che a quel d'átri pon cin-  
que e cavi sei. (Lipp. M. 7. 68.)*

*Or finisci ora QUÉSTO TÚO SCI-  
LÓMA; che tu avévi cominciádo di  
colái là. (Salv. Spin. 1. 3.)*

*Paróle, le quáli lo Spirito  
Sánto sopra la lingua dell' UÓMO  
IDIÓTA ponéva. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 4.)*

*Ed ÚNA LÚPA, che di tutte  
bráme—Sembráva cárca. (Dant.  
Inf. 1.)*

*Ed ecco, vicino a léi, uscir d'  
una máccia fótta UN LÚRO grán-  
de e terribile. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.)*

*Perocchè sí mi caccia IL LÚN-  
GO TÉMA. (Dant. Inf. 4.)*

*Da QUÉSTA TÉMA acciocchè tu  
ti solve. (Dant. Inf. 2.)*

*LO BEL PIANÉTA, che ad amár  
confórta—Facéva tutto rider  
l'Oriente. (Dant. Purg. 1.)*

*Ancóra; lascio ÚNA PIANÉTA  
di zendádo vermiglio. (Bocc.  
Testam.)*

*DRÁMMA è un componiménto  
poético rappresentativo. (Crú-  
sea.)*

*Senz' éssa non fermái péso di  
DRÁMMA. (Dant. Purg. 21.)*

*Quándo verrà lor NIMÍCA PO-  
DÉSTA. (Dant. Inf. 6.)*

He was the greatest and the  
wisest lawyer, that had been  
seen until his time.

My master in liberality does  
not yield to that monarch.

And with such figuring of Pa-  
radise,—The sacred strain must  
leap, like one that meets—A sud-  
den interruption to his road.

Ribald, hypocrite, mocker of  
God, who add five to that of  
others, and take out six.

Now finish that long discourse  
that thou hadst begun about  
that man.

Words, which the Holy  
Ghost put into the mouth of the  
ignorant man.

And a she-wolf who seemed  
to be laden with wants of every  
kind.

When lo! near her, came  
out from a thick hedge a large  
and terrible wolf.

For my wide theme so urges  
me on.

That thou mayest be relieved  
from this fear.

The beautiful planet that in-  
vites to love, made all the  
orient laugh.

I bequeath, moreover, a cope  
of crimson silk stuff.

The drama is a poetical  
composition to be represented.

Without which, I did not  
rest a moment.

When shall come the Power  
adverse to them.

*Cóme piú tósto potè, n'andò a colú, che in luógo DEL PODESTÀ s'era.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.) As soon as he could, he went to him who filled the place of Podestà.

Nouns ending in *e* are some of them masculine, and some feminine ; as,

<i>cárme</i> , m., poem ;	<i>fálce</i> , f., reaping hook ;
<i>collè</i> , m., hill ;	<i>siépe</i> , f., hedge ;
<i>fióre</i> , m., flower ;	<i>néve</i> , f., snow.

Those ending in *ge*, *le*, *me*, *re*, *se*, *nte*, are generally masculine ; as,

<i>róge</i> , king ;	<i>viále</i> , path ;
<i>fiúme</i> , river ;	<i>cuóre</i> , heart ;
<i>arnése</i> , utensil ;	<i>mónte</i> , mountain.

## EXCEPTIONS.

The nouns,

<i>légge</i> , law,	<i>falánge</i> , phalanx ;	<i>laringe</i> , larynx ;
<i>indole</i> , disposition ;	<i>próle</i> , offspring ;	<i>pélle</i> , skin ;
<i>bile</i> , bile ;	<i>válle</i> , valley ;	<i>ipérbole</i> , hyperbole ;
<i>árme</i> , arm ;	<i>fáme</i> , hunger ;	<i>spéme</i> , hope ;
<i>sciúre</i> , hatchet ;	<i>pólvere</i> , dust ;	<i>vépre</i> , brier ;
<i>tórrè</i> , tower ;	<i>fébbre</i> , fever ;	<i>mádre</i> , mother ;
<i>fráse</i> , phrase ;	<i>buióse</i> , dungeons ;	<i>gènte</i> , people ;
<i>ménte</i> , mind ;	<i>lénce</i> , lens ;	<i>paténte</i> , patent ;
<i>corrénce</i> , current ;	<i>sorgénce</i> , source ;	<i>scménte</i> , seed ;

are feminine.

Those ending in *be*, *ce*, *pe*, *te*, *ve*, *ie*, *ine*, *one*, are, generally, feminine ; as,

<i>plébe</i> , common people ;	<i>ciatrice</i> , scar ;
<i>siépe</i> , hedge ;	<i>árte</i> , art ;
<i>chiáve</i> , key ;	<i>série</i> , series ;
<i>immáGINE</i> , image ;	<i>incúDINE</i> , anvil ;
<i>ragiÓNE</i> , reason ;	<i>naziÓNE</i> , nation.

## EXCEPTIONS.

The nouns,

<i>éloc</i> ,	elk ;	<i>péscs</i> ,	fish ;	<i>mántica</i> ,	bellows ;
<i>sódice</i> ,	code ;	<i>calice</i> ,	chalice ;	<i>vórtice</i> ,	vortex ;
<i>pépe</i> ,	pepper ;	<i>presépe</i> ,	stable ;	<i>récipe</i> ,	recipe ;
<i>vate</i> ,	bard ;	<i>látte</i> ,	milk ;	<i>limite</i> ,	limit ;
<i>brévs</i> ,	a brief ;	<i>concláve</i> ,	conclave ;	<i>architrávs</i> ,	architrave ;
<i>críms</i> ,	hair ;	<i>cárdine</i> ,	hinge ;	<i>confíne</i> ,	confine ;
<i>disórdins</i> ,	disorder ;	<i>glútins</i> ,	glue ;	<i>péttins</i> ,	comb ;
<i>bastóns</i> ,	stick ;	<i>matóns</i> ,	brick ;	<i>paragóns</i> ,	comparison ;

are masculine.

The nouns,

<i>áere</i> ,	air ;	<i>cárcere</i> ,	* prison ;	<i>cénere</i> ,	* ashes ;
<i>árbore</i> ,	tree ;	<i>fólgore</i> ,	thunderbolt ;	<i>frónte</i> ,	† forehead ;
<i>fónte</i> ,	fountain ;	<i>fíne</i> ,	† rope ;	<i>tráve</i> ,	beam ;
<i>gréggé</i> ,	* flock ;	<i>consórtie</i> ,	consort ;	<i>créde</i> ,	hair ;
		<i>parénte</i> ,	parent ;		

are of the common gender.

Names of animate beings, ending in *e*, are generally of the common gender; as,

<i>lépre</i> ,	hare ;	<i>serpe</i> ,	snake.
----------------	--------	----------------	--------

The noun *dimáne*, when it means 'to-morrow', is masculine; but when it signifies 'the beginning of the day', is feminine.

The noun *márgine*, when it means 'scar', is feminine; but when it means 'margin', 'extremity', is of the common gender.

The nouns *fánte*, and *fíne*, when they mean 'foot-soldier'; and 'aim' or 'design', are masculine: but when they mean 'servant'; and 'end' or 'termination', are of the common gender.

The nouns *óste*, and *órdine*, when they mean 'host', an 'inn-keeper'; and 'order', a 'command', are masculine: but when they mean 'host', an 'army'; and 'order', 'arrangement', or a 'religious order', they are of the common gender.

\* *Cárcere*, *cénere*, and *gréggé*, in the plural number, *cárceri*, 'prisons', *cénari*, 'ashes'; and *gréggi*, 'flocks', are feminine only.

† *Frónte* and *fíne*, in prose, are feminine only.

## EXAMPLES.

*Ennio di quel cantò RUVIDO  
CÀRME. (Petr. s. 153.)*

*Questa era molto bene affossa-  
ta, e con buona siepe. (Sacch.  
n. 91.)*

*Vidi gente alla riva d'un gran  
fiume. (Dant. Inf. 3.)*

*Un rivo d'acqua chiarissima,  
il quale d'una montagnetta di-  
scendeva in una valle ombro-  
sa. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)*

*Serrata la cella colla chiave,  
dirittamente sen andò alla cam-  
era dello Abate. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 4.)*

*Venne dal cielo una colomba  
bianca come neve, e, messo il be-  
co nel calice, tutto 'l sangue  
si bevve. (Pass. 136.)*

*Ed èvvi, oltre a questo, l'aire  
assai più fresco. (Bocc. Intr.)*

*Ma poicchè l'aire a divent  
buona incominciò. (Bocc. Amet.)*

*Ed entrata nel chiaro fonte  
tutta si mise nelle acque. (Bocc.  
Amet.)*

*Dintorno alla fonte si pose-  
ro a sedere. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)*

*Non credo un serpe, che ha 'l  
cor cotanto acerbò. (Dittam. 2.  
12.)*

*Te non colomba, ma velenosa  
serpe conoscendo, con tutta la  
forza di perseguire intendo.  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)*

*Lo stulto sempre procrastina  
di far bene, dicendo: 'Dimàn  
farò bene'; e sempre l'un di-  
mâne dimanda l'altro dimâne.  
(Albertan. c. 64.)*

Ennius sang of him a rude  
song.

This was well fortified by a  
ditch, and by a good hedge.

I beheld a throng upon the  
shore of a great stream.

A stream of very clear water,  
which descended from a little  
hill into a shady valley.

Having locked the cell with  
the key, he went directly to the  
chamber of the Abbot.

There descended from Hea-  
ven a dove as white as snow,  
and, having put its beak into the  
chalice, it drank all the blood.

And there, besides this, the  
air is a great deal more fresh.

But when the air began to  
be good.

And having entered into the  
clear fountain, she plunged  
herself into the water.

They sat around the fountain.

I do not believe a serpent,  
who has a heart so cruel.

Knowing thee to be not a  
dove, but a venomous serpent,  
I intend to persecute thee with  
all my power.

The fool always delays to  
do good, saying: 'To-morrow  
I will do good.' And one to-  
morrow ever requires another.

*Quando fui desto innanzi LA DIMARE,—Pianger sentii fra 'l sonno i miei figliuóli. (Dant. Inf. 83.)*

*Si ricordò lei dovère avere UNA MARGINE, a guisa d'una crocèlla, sopra l'orecchia sinistra. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)*

*Lo fondo suo, ed ambo le pendici—Fatte éron pietra, e i MARGINI d'allato. (Dant. Inf. 14.)*

*Posciachè ella si fu condotta ALLA MARGINE dell'alta ripa, nuotando scampammo. (Firenz. Amm.)*

*Mandando cinquecento FANTI Ghibellini del contado di Firenze. (Giov. Vill. l. 7. c. 109.)*

*Doloroso più che altro—Sé' fatto FANTE. (Bocc. Tes. 4. 23.)*

*Avèva Giacomino in casa UNA FANTE ATTEMPATA. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)*

*Un uomo a lieto fine pervenuto. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)*

*Questa fu LA FINE dell'imperatore Arrigo. (Giov. Vill. l. 7. c. 22.)*

*Volendo IL SUO OSTE ésser pagato, primisramente GLI diède l'una. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)*

*Così avvenne nel nostro bene avventurato OSTE. (Giov. Vill. l. 11. c. 53.)*

*Congregò UNA BELLA, e grande, e poderosa OSTE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)*

*Dal Signor Annibale Ruccellai, potrà ella intèndere L' ORDINE delle cose. (Casa, lett. 8.)*

*Se con sana mente sarà riguardato L' ORDINE delle cose. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 9.)*

When I awoke before the morning, I heard my sons sob in their slumber.

He recollected that she ought to have a scar, like a cross, above the left ear.

Its bed and sloping sides, and both the margins, were petrified.

After that she came to the margin of the high bank, we escaped by swimming.

Sending five hundred Ghibelline foot-soldiers from the territory of Florence.

Wretched more than any other, thou art made a servant.

Giacomino had in his house an elderly servant maid.

A man who had come to a happy end.

This was the end of the Emperor Henry.

His host desiring to be paid, he first gave him that one.

Thus he fell in with our fortunate army.

He collected a fine, large and powerful army.

From Mr Annibal Ruccellai, you may hear the order which I have given to him.

If we should consider with sound mind the order of things.

*PIESA L' ORDINE tra l'era, il  
trattato fu rivelato al Duce.  
(Stor. Pistol. p. 171.)*

*Io ho avuta sempre specia-  
lizzatione AL VOSTRO ORDINE.  
(Boec. g. l. n. 1.)*

*Al tempo del detto Papa Inno-  
censo si cominciò LA SANTA ÓR-  
DINE de' Fráti Minori. (Giov.  
Vill. l. l. c. 24.)*

Having made the arrange-  
ment among themselves, they  
revealed the subject to the  
duke.

I have always had a special  
devotion to your order.

In the times of the said Pope  
Innocent, was instituted the or-  
der of the Minor Friars.

Nouns ending in *i* are some of them masculine, and  
some feminine; as,

<i>eclissi, m., eclipse;</i>	<i>crisi, f., crisis;</i>
<i>bruschi, m., toast;</i>	<i>tési, f., thesis.</i>

Nouns of dignity, as,

<i>ball, bailiff;</i>	<i>pétri, peer;</i>	<i>guardasigilli, keeper [of the seal:</i>
-----------------------	---------------------	--

The noun *di*, 'day', and its compounds; as,

<i>buenđi, good day;</i>	<i>mazzedđi, noon;</i>	<i>eggidi, now-a-days:</i>
--------------------------	------------------------	----------------------------

Nouns formed of a verb and a noun in the plural; as,

<i>tasacéi, dunce;</i>	<i>graffiascái, hypocrite;</i>	<i>guardaportóni, porter;</i>
<i>leccapiátai, glutton;</i>	<i>cciadiásoli, exorcist;</i>	<i>cevadéni, tooth draw- [er:</i>

And the following,

<i>alcali, alkali;</i>	<i>ambássi, ambe-aces;</i>	<i>zánai, marry-andrew;</i>
<i>abbicci, alphabet;</i>	<i>barbagiánai, owl;</i>	<i>soprattieni, delay;</i>
<i>cremosi, crimson;</i>	<i>diéi, diesis [in music];</i>	<i>appigiómasi, notice of [a house to let:</i>

are masculine.

*Génesi, 'Genesis', is of the common gender.*

Nouns ending in *u* are some of them masculine, and some feminine; as,

<i>méu</i> , m.	dill;	<i>grù</i> , f.	crane;
<i>ragù</i> , m.	ragout;	<i>tribù</i> , f.	tribe;
<i>soprappiù</i> , m.	overplus;	<i>gioventù</i> , f.	youth.

## EXAMPLES.

*Significava gran sècco nella seguente stàte, e poi nella oppositione di quello ecclissi gran soprèchio d'acque.* (Giov. Vill. l. 11. c. 2.)

It announced a great drought in the following summer, and afterward at the opposition of that eclipse, a great abundance of water.

*Quèl, che i mèdici nostri chiaman crisi.* (Bern. Rim. l. 16.)

That, which our physicians call crisis.

*Clagonlo intòrno i suoi famosi pari.* (Ariost. Fur. 38. 79.)

His famous peers surround him.

*Il mèdico si fece loro incontro dicèndo, che Iddio desse loro il buon dì.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

The physician went to meet them, wishing God would give them a good day.

*IL maggiór cacciadiavoli non è in Toscana.* (Lor. Med. Arid. 2. 5.)

A greater exorcist is not to be found in Tuscany.

*Ma tali cose hanno più del zàmbi, e son disonestè.* (Demetr. Seng. 67.)

But such things more become a merry-andrew, and are indecent.

*Cominceremo dal principio del Gènesi.* (Giov. Vill. l. 11. c. 2.)

We will commence from the beginning of Genesis.

*Lasciassè loro un per cento di quanto hanno, e guadagnassonsi quell' uno col sudore del volto, come comanda la Gènesi.* (Dav. Scism. p. 38.)

That he should leave them one per centum of what they have, and that they should earn that one by the sweat of their brow, as is commanded in Genesis.

*IL mèu è caldo ed è erba, il chi seme è detto con simigliante nome.* (Cr. 6. 78. 1.)

The dill is warm, and it is an herb whose seed is called by the same name.

*Io ho giudicato, che egli sia oramai bene con qualche freno ritenere i caldi impeti della sua gioventù.* (Firenz. Asin. 178.)

I have thought, that it is now proper to moderate, with some restraint, the warm impulses of his youth.



Adjectives, verbs, adverbs, prepositions, when used substantively, are of the masculine gender; as,

<i>bello</i> , beautiful;	<i>seguitare</i> , to continue;
<i>dove</i> , where;	<i>quando</i> , when;
<i>come</i> , how;	<i>perchè</i> , why;
<i>sì</i> , yes;	<i>no</i> , no.

The names of the days of the week, except *Domenica*, 'Sunday'; and those of the months, are masculine; as,

<i>Mercoledì</i> , Wednesday;	<i>Sabato</i> , Saturday;
<i>Aprile</i> , April;	<i>Agosto</i> , August.

Names of trees are masculine; as,

<i>olmo</i> , elm-tree;	<i>mirto</i> , myrtle-tree;
<i>noce</i> , walnut-tree;	<i>limone</i> , lemon-tree.

## EXCEPTIONS.

*Quercia*, oak-tree; *vite*, vine; *ginestra*, broom; are feminine.

Names of fruits are feminine\*; as,

<i>péra</i> , pear;	<i>arancia</i> , orange;
<i>susina</i> , plum;	<i>ciriegia</i> , cherry.

## EXCEPTIONS.

*Pomo*, apple; *fico*, fig; *dattero*, date; *cedro*, citron; *pino*, pine; *limone*, lemon. are masculine.

Some masculine nouns, when used to denote a feminine object, take a different termination; as,

<i>amico</i> , friend, m.;	<i>amica</i> , friend, f.;
<i>cugino</i> , cousin, m.;	<i>cugina</i> , cousin, f.;
<i>genitore</i> , father;	<i>genitrice</i> , mother;
<i>autore</i> , author;	<i>autrice</i> , authoress;
<i>poeta</i> , poet;	<i>poetessa</i> , poetess;
<i>sacerdote</i> , priest;	<i>sacerdotessa</i> , priestess;
<i>duca</i> , duke;	<i>duchessa</i> , duchess;
<i>principe</i> , prince;	<i>principessa</i> , princess;
<i>re</i> , king;	<i>regina</i> , queen.

\* These are generally formed from the names of trees, changing *e* into *a*; as, *mandorlo*, 'almond-tree'; *mandorla*, 'an almond'; *gelsco*, 'mulberry-tree'; *gelsa*, 'mulberry'.

Some names of animate beings denote the feminine by a different word ; as,

*uomo*, man ;  
*toro*, bull ;  
*porco*, pig ;

*donna*, woman ;  
*vacca*, cow ;  
*troia*, sow ;

Some in the feminine take a different termination ; as,

*cane*, dog ;  
*leone*, lion ;

*cagna*, bitch ;  
*leonessa*, lioness ;

And others are either masculine or feminine, and designate both genders ; as,

*corvo*, m., crow ;

*pantera*, f., panther.

## EXAMPLES.

*Le donne, quando arrivano a quaranta anni perdono il bello della gioventudine.* (Libr. Adorn. Donn.)

When women arrive at forty years they lose the beauty of youth.

*La regina a Filomena voltata, le impose il seguitare.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

The queen turning to Filomena, ordered her to continue.

*Il dove io ho già pensato.* (Bocc. g. 2.)

I have already thought of the where.

*Sarti contento di sapere il quando.* (Petr. s. 306.)

I should be happy to know the when.

*Del come non ti caglia il perchè ti dirò.* (Bocc. Filoc.)

Do not trouble yourself about the how, I will tell you the why.

*Son certa dei sì.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)

I am certain of the affirmative.

*Ciascuno rispose del no.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Every one answered in the negative.

*Ancora il mercoledì, e 'l venerdì, e il sabato.* (Maestrucci. l. 33.)

Even Wednesday, and Friday, and Saturday.

*L'amoroso somerto—Cresce più volentier nel cespò intto.* (Alam. Cok. l. 16.)

The amorous myrtle grows better in the whole bush.

*La vite appo noi è assai conosciuta.* (Cr. 4. l. 1.)

The vine among us is very well known.

*Ti stbro gñsa, mändorle,  
e susfne.* (Bocc. Amet. 15.)

*l'son quel ätelle frütte del mal  
örto—Che qui riprëndo DÄTTERO  
per fico.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

*E di quetste consaglio fu au-  
trice üna ch'ebbe nöme Polisso.*  
(But. Com. Dant.)

*DÖNNA è nöme genérico della  
FÉMMINA della spözie umána.*  
(Crösa.)

*Mi sovvinne d'avér fatto man-  
giäre al LEÖNE della carne d'ü-  
na LEONÉSSA.* (Red. Ins. 71.)

*Infra mölte biänche colömba  
aggiügnas più di bellézza UN NÉ-  
RO CÖRVO, che un cándido cigno.*  
(Bocc. g. 9 n. 10.)

I keep for thee mulberries, al-  
monds, and plums.

He—am I, who fruit from  
evil garden brought;—And here  
my fig is with a date repaid.

And the author of this coun-  
sel was one who was named  
Polisso.

Woman is the generic name  
of the female of the human  
species.

I recollect to have made the  
lion eat of the flesh of the li-  
oness.

Amongst many white doves  
a black crow adds more beauty  
than a white swan.

#### NUMBER, or FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

Masculine nouns, ending in *o*, *a*, *e*, form the plural by  
changing *o*, *a*, *e*, into *i*; as,

*libro*, book;  
*cavällo*, horse;  
*poéta*, poet;  
*clüma*, climate;  
*fiöre*, flower;  
*lépre*, hare;

*libri*, books;  
*cavälli*, horses;  
*poéti*, poets;  
*clümi*, climates;  
*fidri*, flowers;  
*lépri*, hares.

Feminine nouns, ending in *o*, *e*, form the plural by  
changing *o*, *e*, into *i*; as,

*máno*, hand;  
*ärte*, art;  
*fönte*, fountain;

*máni*, hands;  
*ärti*, arts;  
*fönti*, fountains.

Feminine nouns ending in *a*, form the plural by chang-  
ing *a* into *e*; as,

*cása*, house;  
*ménsa*, table;

*cásæ*, houses;  
*ménsæ*, tables;

Nouns ending in *i*, *u*, or in *ie*, or with an *accented vowel*, do not change their termination in the plural; as,

<i>éstasi</i> , extacy;	<i>éstasi</i> , extacies;
<i>gru</i> , crane;	<i>gru</i> , cranes;
<i>spécie</i> , sort;	<i>spécie</i> , sorts;
<i>re</i> ,* king;	<i>re</i> , kings;
<i>città</i> ,* city;	<i>città</i> , cities;
<i>virtù</i> ,* virtue;	<i>virtù</i> , virtues.

The following nouns in the plural have an irregular formation :

<i>Dio</i> , God;	<i>Dèi</i> , Gods;
<i>uómo</i> , man;	<i>uómini</i> , men;
<i>búe</i> , ox;	<i>búoi</i> , oxen.

## EXAMPLES.

AL *ÚNI* CAVÁLLI *si dipùlano*  
a *vettùra*, *àltri* a *cárro*. (Cr. 6. 9.)

*E' divisa la tèrra in sètTE*  
*clími*. (But. Com. Dant.)

*Ed io 'l provái sul primo*  
*aprir dé' fióri*. (Petr. c. 38.)

*CÓLLE mie MÁNI avréi già*  
*pósto in tèrra—Qúeste mèmbra*  
*noióse*. (Petr. s. 29.)

*Qualcúna d' esto nótti—Chiù-*  
*da omái quéste DÚE fónti di*  
*piánto*. (Petr. c. 46.)

*E di quéllo un mézzo bicchiér*  
*per uómo désse ÀLLE prime MÉN-*  
*se*. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 2.)

*E quésto è éssere in ÉSTASI*.  
(But. Com. Dant.)

*LE GRU háanno un lóro re, e*  
*tútte lo sérvono*. (Fior. Vt. c. 19.)

*Dé' quáli animáli sóno quási*  
*infínite* LE *SPÉCIE*. (Gell. Circ.  
2. 29.)

Some horses are destined for  
burden, others to the carriage.

The earth is divided into  
seven climates.

And I experienced it at the  
first blooming of the flowers.

I should have already with  
my own hands laid in the  
ground these wearisome limbs,

Let one of these nights  
close these two fountains of  
tears.

And of that [wine] he should  
give half a tumbler to each man  
at the first course.

And this is to be in extacy.

The cranes have a king, and  
all serve him.

Of which animals, the spe-  
cies are almost infinite.

\* Such nouns are generally contracted; as *re* from *rége*, *città* from *cittade*, *virtù* from *virtude*; and when they are used entire, that is, without the suppression of any syllable *rége*, *cittade*, *virtude*, they change their termination, and make in the plural *régi*, 'kings'; *cittadi*, 'cities'; *virtudi*, 'virtues' according to the general rule.

LE CITTÀ son nemiche, amici  
i boschi—A' miei pensieri. (Petr.  
c. 37.)

Tutti i REGI del mondo sono  
meno a vostro sposo. (Fr. Guitt.  
lett. 10.)

Tosto GLI DÉI d'abisso in  
varie forme—Concorron d'ogni  
intorno all' alte porte. (Tass.  
Ger. 3. 5.)

Veggendo MÓLTI UÓMINI nél-  
la corte del padre nostro. (Bocc.  
g. 4. n. 1.)

Perchè addivénno, che i buoi,  
gli asini, le pecore, per li campi  
se n'andavano. (Bocc. Introd.)

Cities are unfriendly, the  
woods are friendly to my  
thoughts.

All the kings in the world  
are inferior to your husband.

Soon the gods of the Abyss  
in different bands, rush from  
all sides to the lofty gates.

Seeing many men frequent  
the court of her father.

Wherefore it happened, that  
the oxen, the asses, the goats,  
went astray through the fields.

Many nouns in *o* in the plural end in *i*, and more  
elegantly in *a*; as,

anéllo, ring;	{ anélli, } rings;
	{ or anélli, }
lábbro, lip;	{ lábbri, } lips;
	{ or lábbra, }
pugno, fist;	{ pùgni, } fists;
	{ or pùgna, }

Some have only the termination in *a* in the plural; as,

miglio, mile;	miglia, miles;
stajo, bushel;	staja, bushels;
uovo, egg;	uova, eggs.

[For a list of Words in *o*, making the plural in *i* or *a*, see APPENDIX, D.]

*Riso*, 'laughter'; *membro*, 'limb', or 'member of the human body', form their plural in *i* and *a*; *risi*, *risa*, 'laughter'; *membri*, *membra*, 'limbs': but *riso*, 'rice'; *membro*, 'member of a corporation or political body', form their plural in *i* only; *risi*, 'rice'; *membri*, 'members'.

*Gesto*, 'exploit'; *frutto*, 'the fruit of a tree'; *legno*, 'fire-wood', form their plural in *i* and *a*; *gesti*, *gesta*, 'exploits'; *frutti*, *frutta*, 'fruits'; *legni*, *legna*, 'wood': but *gesto*, 'gesture'; *frutto*, 'production of the earth', or 'income'; *legno*, 'the hard substance of a tree', 'a ship', or 'a coach', form their plural in *i* only; *gesti*, 'gestures'; *frutti*, 'produce' or 'income'; *legni*, 'billets of wood', 'ships', or 'coaches'.

*Ossò*, 'bone', has a treble termination in the plural, making *óssi, ósse, óssa*, 'bones'.

When these nouns take the termination in *a* in the plural, they become feminine, and receive the article *le* before them; as, *le anélla*, 'the rings'; *le miglia*, 'the miles'; *le frúttà*, 'the fruits'; *le ósse* or *le óssa*, 'the bones.'

Finally there are, in Italian, as well as in all other languages, some nouns which have only the singular number; as, all proper names,\* names of metals, and the words *pròle*, 'generation'; *progénie*, 'progeny'; *stírpe*, 'race'; *mane*, 'morning'; *mílle*, 'honey,' &c.; and others which have only the plural; as, *lári*, 'household gods'; *annáli*, 'annals'; *calzóni*, 'breeches'; *vénni*, 'wings'; *fórbici*, 'scissors'; *nózze*, 'nuptials'; *eséque*, 'exequies'; *réni*, 'the reins'; *mólle* or *mólli*, 'tongs'; *spézie* or *spézi*, 'spices'; *fróge*, 'the skin over the nostrils of a horse'; &c.

## EXAMPLES.

*Fáttoši prestàre a Madónnà  
Giacomína un DÉ suó ANÉLLI,  
quív per súa móglie sposò la  
C. l. rina.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

Having asked Madonna Giacomina to lend him one of her rings, there took Catharine to wife.

*La lúnga guérra—Che DEL-  
L'ANÉLLA fé' s' àlto spóglic.*  
(Dant. Inf. 28.)

That long war, in which was made the rich booty of the rings.

*E'lla féce portàre i dúe cap-  
póni léssi, e MÓLTE UÓVA  
frésche.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

She caused to be brought the two boiled capons, and many fresh eggs.

*Lasciàrono andár Calandrino  
con LE maggiór rísa del móndo.*  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

They let Calandrino go with the greatest laughter in the world.

*Lo spírto DÁLLE bélle MÉM-  
BRA sciólto.* (Petr. s. 359.)

The spirit freed from the beautiful limbs.

*Tánto piú celebrò Tíberio  
SÚE GÉSTA in senáto.* (Dav.  
Tac. ann. l. 2.)

Tiberius celebrated so much the more his exploits in the senate.

*Vivéano quási cóme béstie di  
FRÚTTA, e di ghiànde.* (Giov.  
Vill. l. 1. c. 23.)

They lived like beasts on fruit and mast.

\* When proper names of persons, however, are taken as common, they are used also in the plural; as, *i Chiabréro, i Filicidia, i Redi, i Menzini, i Guidi, i Frugóni, e tanti altri sublimi e pr. giatissimi ingégni*, 'the Chiabreros, the Filicicias, the Redis, the Menzinis, the Guidis, the Frugonis, and so many other sublime and most worthy geniuses.'

*Il fuoco cresce per LE LEGNA, e quante più ce ne metti maggiore si fa.* (Fr. Giord. 146.)

Fire is increased by wood, and the more you put on, the larger it becomes.

*Fu non solamente ucciso, ma fino ALL' OSSA divorato.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

He was not only killed, but devoured even to the bones.

*LA STIRPE non fa le singolari persone nobili, ma le singolari persone fanno nobile LA STIRPE.* (Dant. Conv.)

Family does not make extraordinary persons noble, but extraordinary persons render their family noble.

*Cristo volle per sua prestanza onorar LE NOZZE di Càna Galilea, e quivi fare il primo miracolo.* (Cavalc. Espos. simb. 1.)

Christ wished to honor with his presence the nuptials of Cana of Galilee, and there to work the first miracle.

Independently of the change of termination, there are in Italian many nouns, which in the plural undergo a certain change of orthography.

Thus all nouns ending in *ca*, *ga*, in order to preserve in the plural before the vowels *i*, *e*, the same sound which *c*, *g*, have in the singular before the vowel *a*, take an *h*, in the plural after the consonant *c*, *g*; as,

*monarca*, monarch;

*monarchi*, monarchs;

*collega*, colleague;

*collegni*, colleagues;

*monaca*, nun;

*monache*, nuns;

*verga*, rod;

*vergne*, rods.

Nouns ending in *co*, *go*, consisting of two syllables, also take an *h* in the plural after *c*, *g*; as,

*giuoco*, sport;

*giuochi*, sports;

*luogo*, place;

*luoghi*, places.

#### EXCEPTIONS.

*Gréco*, 'Greek'; *pórcu*, 'hog'; in the plural make, *Gréci*, 'Greeks'; *pórci*, 'hogs.' *Mágo*, 'magician', in the plural makes either *mágni*, or *mági*, 'magicians'.

Nouns in *co*, *go*, of more than two syllables, if *co*, *go*, are preceded by a consonant, take an *h* in the plural; and if they are preceded by a vowel they are written without *h*; as,

<i>bifdco</i> , laborer;	<i>bifdchi</i> , laborers;
<i>albéreo</i> , inn;	<i>albérgni</i> , inns;
<i>médico</i> , physician;	<i>médici</i> , physicians;
<i>tedoso</i> , theologian;	<i>tedosi</i> , theologians.

## EXCEPTIONS.

The following nouns,

<i>cárico</i> , charge;	<i>óbligó</i> , obligation;
<i>fóndaco</i> , warehouse;	<i>ripiego</i> , expedient;
<i>párroco</i> , parson;	<i>catálogo</i> , catalogue;
<i>stómaco</i> , stomach;	<i>impiego</i> , employment;
<i>mánico</i> , handle;	<i>gastigo</i> , punishment;
<i>tráfico</i> , trading;	<i>intrigo</i> , intrigue;

in the plural make,

<i>cárichi</i> , charges;	<i>óbligni</i> , obligations;
<i>fóndacni</i> , warehouses;	<i>ripiegni</i> , expedients;
<i>párrochni</i> , parsons;	<i>catalogni</i> , catalogues;
<i>stómachni</i> , stomachs;	<i>impiegni</i> , employments;
<i>mánichni</i> , handles;	<i>gastighni</i> , punishments;
<i>tráfichni</i> , tradings;	<i>intrighni</i> , intrigues.

Several other nouns in *co*, *go*, are indifferently written with or without the *h*; as,

<i>mendico</i> , beggar;	{ <i>mendichi</i> , } beggars;
	{ or <i>mendici</i> , }
<i>equivoco</i> , equivocate;	{ <i>equivochi</i> , } equivocates;
	{ or <i>equivoci</i> , }
<i>diálogo</i> , dialogue;	{ <i>diáloghi</i> , } dialogues;
	{ or <i>diálogoi</i> , }
<i>apólogo</i> , apologue;	{ <i>apóloghi</i> , } apologues.
	{ or <i>apólogoi</i> , }

[ For a list of Nouns ending in *co*, *go*, and making the plural in *ci*, *gi*, or *chi*, *ghi*, see APPENDIX D. (2.) ]



Nouns ending in *cia*, *gia*, and *ccia*, *ggia*, *unaccented*, form their plural by changing *a* into *e*, and suppressing the *i*; as,

<i>lánCIA</i> , lance;	<i>lánCE</i> , lances;
<i>fránGIA</i> , fringe;	<i>fránGE</i> , fringes;
<i>fréCCIA</i> , arrow;	<i>fréCCE</i> , arrows;
<i>piáGGIA</i> , strand;	<i>piáGGE</i> , strands.

Nouns ending in *cio*, *gio*, and *ccio*, *ggio*, *unaccented*, form their plural by changing *o* into *i*, and suppressing the *i* that they have in the s.ngular; or what is the same, by suppressing only the *o*; as,

<i>báCIO</i> , kiss;	<i>báCI</i> , kisses;
<i>fréGIO</i> , honor;	<i>fréGI</i> , honors;
<i>láCCIO</i> , snare;	<i>láCCI</i> , snares;
<i>rásGIO</i> , ray;	<i>rásGI</i> , rays.

But if *cia*, *gia*, and *ccia*, *ggia*, or *cio*, *gio* and *ccio*, *ggio* are *ac-cented*, the *i* is never suppressed; as,

<i>eleGIA</i> , elegy;	<i>eleGIE</i> , elegies;
<i>farmacIA</i> , pharmacy;	<i>farmacIE</i> , pharmacies;
<i>legoFO</i> , reading-desk;	<i>leggFI</i> , reading-desks.

Nouns ending in *chio*, *ghio*, *glio*, form the plural by suppressing the *o*; as,

<i>ócCHIO</i> , eye;	<i>ócCHI</i> , eyes;
<i>mággHIO</i> , bellowing;	<i>mággHI</i> , bellowings;
<i>scóELIO</i> , rock;	<i>scóELI</i> , rocks.

Nouns ending in *áio*,\* *óio*, also form their plural by suppressing the *o*; as,

<i>fornÁIO</i> , baker;	<i>fornÁI</i> , bakers;
<i>filatÍIO</i> , spinning-wheel;	<i>filatÍI</i> , spinning-wheels.

All other nouns ending in *io*, if *io* is *unaccented*,

\* Most nouns in *áio* end also in *dre*; as, *libráio* or *libráno*, for: *áio* or *fornáno*; when they take this last termination, in the plural they make *librári*, 'booksellers': *fornári*, 'bakers'; according to the general rule.

form their plural by changing *io* into *j*; but if *io* is *accented*, they form it by changing the *o* of *io* into *i*; as,

<i>stúdio</i> ,	study;	<i>stúds</i> ,	studies,
<i>benefizio</i> ,	*benefit;	<i>benefitza</i> ,	benefits;
<i>rio</i> ,	rivulet;	<i>rii</i> ,	rivulets;
<i>desio</i> ,	desire;	<i>desir</i> ,	desires.

The noun *móglie*, 'wife', forms the plural by suppressing the *e*; *mógli*, 'wives'.

## EXAMPLES.

*La contéssa Matélda fondò un nobile monastério di MÓNACHE.* (Giov. Vill. l. 4. c. 20.)

The countess Matilda founded a noble convent of nuns.

*Il dì che costéi nacque éran le stéllé—In LUÓGHI átti ed eitti.* (Petr. c. 44.)

On the day when this lady was born, the stars were in high and chosen places.

*Tra brutti rócchi piú dégni di gálle,—Che d' áltro cibo fatto in umán úso.* (Dant. Purg. 14.)

'Midst brute swine—Worthier of acorns than of other food—Created for man's use.

*I sávj si partírono, e tornársi á lóro ALBÉRGHÍ.* (Nov. ant. 6.)

The sages went away, and returned to their dwellings.

*Si suól ricórrere nē' máli. pericolósi á' MÉDICÍ eccellénti.* (Casa. lett. 49.)

In dangerous diseases we are accustomed to have recourse to excellent physicians.

*Pontédo lóro grandíssimi CÁRICHÍ di monéte.* (Stor. Fist. 170.)

Laying upon them very great imposts of money.

*Le rispóste vive, le novél' e vi érano, e gli APÓLOGÍ.* (Pros. Fior. 6.)

There were witty answers, stories, and fables.

*Spárti costóro per la piccòla càsa, párte n' andò nélla córte, e póste giò lor LÁNCE, avvénne che úno di lóro gittò la súa LÁNCIA nel fiéno.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

These having spread themselves through the small house, and having laid down their lances, it happened that one of them threw his lance into the hay.

\* Many nouns in *zio*, and also in *cio* or *gio*; as, *benefizio* or *beneficio*, *servizio* or *servitio*; but, however they may end, constantly form the plural in *j*; as, *benefitza* or *benefitza*, 'benefits'; *servitza* or *servitza*, 'services'.

*Già nella sommità de' più alti monti apparivano i raggi della surgente luce.* (Bocc. g. 5. proem.)

*Le gioconde ode, e le lascive elegie, a tutte le altre studioso arti antipongono.* (Dav. Tac. Perd. Eloq.)

*Io soléva ésser uno degli occhi del capo vostro.* (Pecor. g. 4. n. 2.)

*Mi paréa per tutto, dove che io mi volgessi, sentire mugghi, úrli, e strida di diversi e ferocissimi animali.* (Lab. 29.)

*Che giova dunque, perchè tutta spálmo—La mia barchetta, poichè infra gli scogli—E' ritenuta.* (Petr. c. 39.)

*Dónne, noi siamo giovani FORNÀI,—Dell' arte nostra buon maestri assai.* (Cant. Carn. 34.)

*Il quale, nè liberáli studj ammaestrato, sommamente i radorósi uómini onoráva.* (Bocc. Vit. Dant.)

*Apprésso costoro le siróchie e le mógli loro, tutte di brúno vestite, vénnero.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Already on the summit of the highest mountains appeared the rays of the rising light.

They prefer the merry odes and the lascivious elegies to all the other studious arts.

I used to be one of the eyes of your head.

I seemed to hear, wherever I turned, the bellowings, the howlings, and the cries of different and very ferocious animals.

What does it avail to spread all the sails of my bark, if she is impeded among the rocks.

Ladies, we are young bakers very well skilled in our art.

Who, being well skilled in liberal pursuits, greatly honored learned men.

After them came their sisters and their wives, all dressed in mourning.

#### VARIATION OF NOUNS.

Italian nouns are varied by means of certain prepositions placed before them; viz. *DI*, 'of', in the genitive, or *relation of possession*; *A*, 'to', in the dative, or *relation of attribution*; *DA*, 'from or by', in the ablative, or *relation of derivation*. The nominative, or *subjective*, and the accusative, or *objective*, are distinguished by the place they occupy in the sentence.

Proper nouns are generally varied with the *prepositions only*: common nouns with the *prepositions* and the ar-

ticles *il, lo, la*; *i* or *li, gli, le*, 'the'. When common nouns are used in an indefinite sense, they are varied with the *prepositions* and the pronouns *uno, una*, 'a' or 'an'; *alcuni, alcune*, 'some'.

### Variation of a Proper Noun.

Subjective (N.)—		<i>Césare,</i>	<i>Cæsar;</i>
Relation of	{	Possession (G.)—	<i>di Césare,</i> of <i>Cæsar;</i>
		Attribution (D.)—	<i>a Césare,</i> to <i>Cæsar;</i>
		Derivation (Ab.)—	<i>da Césare,</i> from or by <i>Cæsar;</i>
Objective (Ac.)—		<i>Césare,</i>	<i>Cæsar.</i>

Before a noun beginning with a vowel, the preposition *di* drops the *i* and takes an apostrophe in its stead; and the preposition *a* takes a *d* after it; as,

*D' ANTONIO,* } of Anthony;      *AD ANTONIO,* } to Anthony.  
(for *DI ANTONIO*),      (for *A ANTONIO*),

### Variation of Common Nouns.

Masculine Noun, beginning with a Consonant, varied with the article *il*.

	Singular.	Plural.
Subjective (N.)—	<i>il libro,</i> the book;	<i>i</i> or <i>li libri,</i> the books;
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>del libro,</i> of the book;	<i>déi libri,</i> of the books;
	Attr. (D.)— <i>al libro,</i> to the book;	<i>dai libri,</i> to the books;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>dal libro,</i> from the [book];	<i>dai libri,</i> from the [books];
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>il libro,</i> the book;	<i>i libri,</i> the books.

\* To facilitate the Variation of these and other nouns, to those who are accustomed to the *Latin Declension*, we have added to each relation the Initial of the name of the corresponding case in Latin; thus (N.) stands for *nominative*; (G.) for *genitive*; &c.

Masculine Noun, beginning with a Consonant, varied  
with the article *lo*.

	Singular.	Plural.
Subjective (N.)—	<i>lo spècchio</i> , the mirror ;	<i>gli spècchi</i> , the mirrors :
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>dèllo spècchio</i> , of [the mirror ;	<i>dègli spècchi</i> , of the [mirrors ;
	Attr. (D.)— <i>àllo spècchio</i> , to [the mirror ;	<i>àgli spècchi</i> , to the [mirrors ;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>dàllo spècchio</i> , from [the mirror ;	<i>dàgli spècchi</i> , from the [mirrors ;
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>lo spècchio</i> , the mirror ;	<i>gli spècchi</i> , the mirrors.

---

Masculine Noun, beginning with a Vowel.

	Singular.	Plural.
Subjective (N.)—	<i>l' amico</i> , the friend ;	<i>gli amici</i> , the friends :
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>dell' amico</i> , of the [friend ;	<i>dègli amici</i> , of the [friends :
	Attr. (D.)— <i>all' amico</i> , to the [friend ;	<i>àgli amici</i> , to the [friends ;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>dall' amico</i> , from [the friend ;	<i>dàgli amici</i> , from the [friends ;
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>l' amico</i> the friend ;	<i>gli amici</i> , the friends.

---

Feminine Noun, beginning with a Consonant.

	Singular.	Plural.
Subjective (N.)—	<i>la càsa</i> , the house ;	<i>le càse</i> , the houses ;
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>dèlla càsa</i> , of the [house ;	<i>dèlle càse</i> , of the houses :
	Attr. (D.)— <i>àlla càsa</i> , to the [house ;	<i>àlle càse</i> , to the houses ;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>dàlla càsa</i> , from [the house ;	<i>dàlle càse</i> , from the [houses ;
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>la càsa</i> , the house ;	<i>le càse</i> , the houses.

Feminine Noun, beginning with a Vowel.

	Singular.	Plural.
Subjective (N.)—	<i>l' ànima</i> , the soul ;	<i>le ànime</i> , the souls ;
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>dell' ànima</i> , of the [soul ;	} <i>dèlle ànime</i> ; of the souls;
	Attr. (D.)— <i>all' ànima</i> , to the [soul ;	
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>dall' ànima</i> , from [the soul ;	
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>l' ànima</i> , the soul ;	<i>le ànime</i> , the souls.

Variation of Common Nouns used in an Indefinite Sense.

Masculine Noun.

	Singular.	Plural.
Subjective (N.)—	<i>un uccèllo</i> , a bird ;	<i>alcùni uccèlli</i> , some birds ;
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>d' un uccèllo</i> , of a [bird ;	} <i>d' alcùni uccèlli</i> , of some [birds ;
	Attr. (D.)— <i>ad un uccèllo</i> , to a [bird ;	
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>da un uccèllo</i> , [from a bird ;	
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>un uccèllo</i> , a bird ;	<i>alcùni uccèlli</i> , some birds.

Feminine Noun.

	Singular.	Plural.
Subjective (N.)—	<i>una mèla</i> , an apple ;	<i>alcùne mèle</i> , some apples ;
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>d' una mèla</i> , of an [apple ;	} <i>d' alcùne mèle</i> , of some [apples ;
	Attr. (D.)— <i>ad una mèla</i> , to [an apple ;	
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>da una mèla</i> , [from an apple ;	
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>una mèla</i> , an apple ;	<i>alcùne mèle</i> , some apples.

## EXERCISE II.

[The learner will supply the article according to the Gender of the nouns, and will form their Plural and vary them, according to the preceding rules.]

The study of (the) belles lettres. The country of the  
*stúdio* *bélla lettera.* *paése*  
 Amazons. The fable of the frogs. The virtues of the  
*Amázone.* *fávola* *rána.* *virtù*  
 Romans. The hatred of the enemies. The poets of (the)  
*Románo.* *ódio* *nemico.* *poéta*  
 Latium.  
*Lázio.*

He gave praise to the valiant,\* consolation to the infirm,\*  
 — *Dáva lóde* *valénte,* *confórto* *inférmo,*  
 example to all.\* He has bought the horse of the prince for  
*esémpio* *tútto.* — *Ha compráto* *cavállo* *príncipe per*  
 a small sum of money. (The) fortune is sometimes  
*piccola sómma* *danáro.* *fortúna* *è qualche vólta*  
 unjust towards (some) | unhappy creatures, | who deserve  
*ingiústa vérsò* *alcúni* | *infelice,* | *che méritano*  
 a better fate. He proposed the model of the future  
*migliór sórte.* — *Propóse* *modéllo* *avveníre*<sup>2</sup>  
 government, avoiding all the things, which | had |  
*góverno*<sup>1</sup>, *scazzándo* *tutte* *cósa,* *che* | *éranò* |  
 lately displeased. The prince took the public  
*frescáménte* *spiaciúto.* *príncipe* *tólse* *publíco*<sup>2</sup>  
 books | from the hands | of the | questors, and  
*libro*<sup>3</sup> | *di* *máno*<sup>1</sup> | *ái*<sup>2</sup> | *questóre*<sup>2</sup>, *e*  
 | entrusted | them | to the prætors.  
 | *diéde* *cúra*<sup>2</sup> | *ne*<sup>1</sup> | *prétóre.*

The cries and (the) howlings of the savages spread (the)  
*strído* *e* *úrlo* *salvágio* *spársere*  
 terror among the Europeans. Thousands of people, who  
*teróre* *Européo.* *Migliaio* *gínte,* *che*  
 were present at the speech of Regulus to the Romans,  
*éranò preséti a* *orazíone* *Régolo* *Románo,*

\* To the valiant, to the infirm, to all, here used in the plural number.

wept; and he departed to return to Carthage, as he  
*piansero; ed egli partissi per ritornare Cartagine, come —*  
 had promised, amidst the acclamations of the multitude.  
*aveva promesso, fra acclamazione moltitudine.*

Thetis, wishing to render Achilles invulnerable, dipped him  
*Tetide, bramando di rendere Achille invulnerabile, immerse<sup>2</sup> lo<sup>1</sup>*  
 in the river Styx, holding him by one | of his | heels.  
*fiume Stige, tenendo-lo per uno | delle | calcagno.*

They conducted him to the spot, and by threats and  
 — *condussero<sup>2</sup> Lol sito, e con minaccia e*  
 promises they disposed him to ascend the walls.  
*promessa — disposero<sup>2</sup> lo<sup>1</sup> a salire muro.*

He led | into | the field twelve hundreds of buffaloes, nine  
 — *Menò | a | campo dodici centinaio di bufala, nove*  
 hundred cows, many calves, and over a thousand hogs.  
*cento vacca, assai<sup>2</sup> vitella<sup>1</sup>, e oltre a mille porco.*

She had | her | cheeks all burnt by the many tears she  
 — *aveva | le | guancia tutte arse per molte lagrima —*

had shed. Weeping, she | fell | at | his | feet,  
 — — *Piangendo, — | si lasciò cadere<sup>2</sup> | a<sup>3</sup> | gli<sup>1</sup> | piedi<sup>4</sup>,*

and humbly asked | his | pardon | for | (the) past  
*ed umilmente domandò<sup>5</sup> gli<sup>5</sup> perdonanza<sup>7</sup> di | <sup>2</sup> passata<sup>4</sup>*

injuries. | There was found | in a city of Lycia, a  
*oltraggio.<sup>3</sup> | Si trovò | in città di Licia,*

book, which had brass leaves, — (the) leaves of brass.  
*libro, che aveva — — foglio rame.*

Calandrino waited all the following evening with his  
*Calandrino stette tutta vagnente<sup>4</sup> sera<sup>1</sup> con suoi*

contrivances to catch a bat.  
*artificio per pigliare vispistréllo.*



## CHAPTER III.

## ADJECTIVE NOUNS — COMPARATIVES AND SUPERLATIVES.

ITALIAN Adjectives end with one of the vowels, *o*, *a*, *e*.

## GENDER.

Adjectives ending in *o*, are masculine, and become feminine by changing *o* into *a* ; as,

<i>virtuoso</i> , } <i>virtuosa</i> , }	virtuous ;	{ <i>uomo virtuoso</i> , m., virtuous man ; <i>fanciulla virtuosa</i> , f., virtuous [young woman :
<i>sincero</i> , } <i>sincera</i> , }	sincere, blameless ;	{ <i>amore sincero</i> , m., sincere love ; <i>natura sincera</i> , f., blameless na- [ture.

Adjectives ending in *e*, are of the common gender ; as,

<i>cortese</i> , m. & f., courteous ;	{ <i>modo cortese</i> , m., courteous [manner ; <i>anima cortese</i> , f., courteous [soul :
<i>fedele</i> , m. & f., faithful ;	{ <i>consiglio fedele</i> , m., faithful [counsel ; <i>guida fedele</i> , f., faithful guide.

## FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

Adjectives ending in *o*, *e*, form the plural by changing *o*, *e*, into *i* ; as,

<i>ameno</i> , } <i>ameni</i> , }	delightful ;	{ <i>piacere ameno</i> , s., delightful pleasure ; <i>luoghi ameni</i> , p., delightful places :
<i>prudente</i> , } <i>prudenti</i> , }	prudent ;	{ <i>gente prudente</i> , s., prudent people ; <i>uomini prudenti</i> , p. m., prudent men ; <i>vergini prudenti</i> , p. f., prudent virgins.

The adjective *bello*, 'handsome', 'beautiful', before nouns beginning with *s* followed by another consonant, *z*, or a vowel, makes *negli* in the plural; as,

<i>bÉGLI sPÉcchi,</i>	beautiful mirrors;
<i>bÉGLI zaffíri,</i>	beautiful sapphires;
<i>bÉGLI ócchi,</i>	beautiful eyes.

Adjectives ending in *a*, form the plural by changing *a* into *e*; as,

<i>preziósa,</i>	} precious;	} <i>gióia preziosa</i> , s., precious jewel;
<i>prezióse,</i>		

Adjectives ending in *co*, *go*; *ca*, *ga*; *cio*, *gio*; *cia*, *gia*; *chio*, *ghia*, *ghio*; and *io*, in the singular, follow, in the plural, the rules already given for the formation of the plural of Substantives.

## AGREEMENT OF ADJECTIVES.

Italian adjectives agree with their substantives in gender and number; as,

<i>uómo dótto ed ammaestráto,</i>	a learned and well-instructed man;
<i>buóna e virtúosa génte,</i>	good and virtuous people;
<i>valorósi uómini, belle dónne,</i>	brave men, fair women, pretty
<i>leggiastri giòvani,</i>	youths.

## EXAMPLES.

*Gránde intendiménto è quello d'un uómo virtúoso, cóme fu costúti.* (Fr. Sacch. n. 75.)

Great is the understanding of a virtuous man, as he was.

*La Sibilla è bellíssima fanciúlla, béne alleváta, e virtúosa.* (Lasc. Sibill. 11.)

The Sibyl is a very beautiful young woman, well bred, and virtuous.

*Sia manifesta la clemenza, e SINCERO AMORE, che il detto re portava al nostro comune.* (Giov. Vill. 1. 1. c. 2.)

*Questa NATURA al suo fatto è unita,—Qual fu creata, fu SINCERA e buona.* (Dant. Par. 7)

*O ANIMA CORTÉSE Mantovana.* (Dant. Inf. 2.)

*In dubbio stato sì FEDÉL CONSIGLIO.* (Petr. c. 49.)

*Prése a persuader Tiberio, ch' è rivésse fuóri di Roma, in LUOGHI AMÉNI.* (Dav. Tac. ann. 4. 95.)

*Laénde, secondo ch' io posso far conghiettura, che è quello che i PRUDÉNTI UOMINI chiamano indovinare, tu mostri d'essere innamorata agramente.* (Firenz. Asin. 150.)

*Vergine saggia, e del bel número una—Delle beate VERGINI PRUDÉNTI.* (Petr. c. 49.)

*In me movéndo dé' BÉGLI OCCHI i rai—Cria d' amor pensieri.* (Petr. s. 9.)

*E trovò in quella cassa molte PREZIOSE PIÉTRE, e legate, e sciolte.* (Bocc. g. 2 n. 4.)

*Ricchi delle prede dé' Fiorentini.* (Giov. Vill. 1. 9. c. 320.)

*Molti chérici, eziandto da LUNCHE parti, cominciarono a venire al servo di Dio.* (Vit. S. Giov. Gualb. 295.)

*D'un medesimo peccato al mondo LÉRCI.* (Dant. Inf. 15.)

*Quelle arche d'argénto,—Che stimeresti piene di tesoro,—Spóte son piene di vesciche DUGE.* (Tass. Am. 1. 2.)

Let the clemency, and sincere love, which the said king bore to our community, be manifest.

This nature with its Maker thus conjoined,—Created first was blameless, and good.

O courteous Mantuan soul.

In a doubtful condition so faithful counsel.

He undertook to persuade Tiberius, that he should live in some delightful place, out of Rome.

Therefore, as far as I can conjecture, which is what prudentmen call to guess, you appear to be greatly in love.

Wise Virgin, and one of the beautiful number of the blessed prudent virgins.

Turning the beams of her beautiful eyes to me; creates thoughts of love.

And she found in that chest many precious stones, some set, and some not set.

Enriched with the booty of the Florentines.

Many clergymen, even from distant parts, began to come to see the servant of God.

By one same sin polluted in the world.

Those chests of silver, which you would imagine to be filled with treasures, are baskets filled with empty bladders.

*Così per li gran sàvi si confessa,—Chè la Fenice muòre, e pòà rinásce.* (Dant. Inf. 24.)

So mighty sages tell, that the Phoenix dies, and springs forth with renaſcent.

UOMO DÓTTO *delle* scrittùre, ED ANMAESTRÀTO *della* fèdo di Cristo. (Add. Cavalc. Att. Apost. 113.)

A man learned in Holy Writ, and well instructed in the Christian faith.

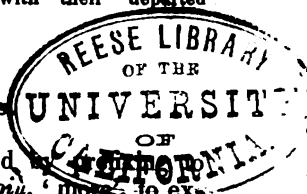
*Mia sorèlla è quèsta—Nàta di BUÓNA E VIRTUÓSA GÈNTE.* (Arios. Fur. 18. 82.)

This is my sister, born of good and virtuous people.

QUÁNTI VALÓROSI UÓMINI, QUÁNTO BÉLLE DÓNNE, QUÁNTI LEGGIÁDRI GIÓVANI, *la sera vegnènte, nell' àltro móndo cenàro-no con li lóro passàti!* (Bocc. Intr.)

How many brave men, how many fair women, how many pretty youths, the coming evening, supped in the other world with their departed friends!

COMPARATIVES



Comparatives are generally formed by adding to the *adjective* or *positive* the adverb *più*, 'more', to express a relation of *superiority*: *méno*, 'less', to express a relation of *inferiority*: and *si* or *così*; 'so', *tánto*, 'so', 'so much'; *quánto*, 'as', 'as much'; *quánto più*, 'the more'; *quánto méno*, 'the less'; *altrettánto*, 'as', 'as much'; to express a relation of *equality*, between the objects compared; as,

<i>lieto</i> ,	happy;	PIÙ LIÈTO,	more happy;
<i>altera</i> ,	proud;	MÉNO ALTERA,	less proud;
<i>bèlla</i> ,	beautiful;	SI OR COSÌ BÉLLA,	so beautiful;
<i>sàno</i> ,	healthy;	TÁNTO SÁNO,	so healthy;
<i>famóso</i> ,	famous;	QUÁNTO FAMÓSO,	as famous;
<i>altiero</i> ,	proud;	QUÁNTO PIÙ ALTIÈRO,	the more proud;
<i>nocènte</i> ,	guilty;	QUÁNTO MÉNO NOCÈNTE,	the less guilty;
<i>conténti</i> ,	pleased;	{ ALTTRETTÁNTO CON- TÉNTI, }	as much pleased.

*Comparatives of superiority and inferiority* generally require before the second of the objects compared, or, what is the same, the *second term of comparison*, the

preposition *di*, 'than', if it be a *substantive noun* or *pronoun*, or a *numeral adjective*; and the conjunction *che*, 'than', if it be any *other adjective*, a *verb*, or an *adverb*;\* as,

PIÙ <i>lieto</i> DI ME,	more happy than I;
MEN <i>bello</i> DEL VISO,	less beautiful than the face;
PIÙ DI MILLE <i>scogli</i> ,	more than a thousand rocks;
PIÙ <i>forte</i> CHE SÁVIO,	more strong than wise;
NON MÉNO <i>odorifere</i> CHE SÉNOLE <i>spézie</i> ,	} not less odoriferous than are the drugs;
PIÙ <i>bélla</i> CHE MÁI,	

Sometimes these comparatives are formed by the adverbs *méglio*, 'better', and *péggio*, 'worse'; and then they always require *di*, or *che*, before the second term of comparison; according to the general rule;\* as,

MÉGLIO D' ALTRE <i>diecimília</i> <i>dóbbre</i> ,	better than another ten thousand pistoles;
UNA <i>délla</i> PÉGGIO <i>maritáte</i> CHE SÍA,	one of the worst-married that there is.

Very often the second term of comparison is a *verb understood* or a *pronoun and a verb*, and then this second term of comparison always requires *che* before it; as,

<i>scorgévasi</i> PIÙ <i>pómpa</i> CHE [ <i>scorgévasi</i> ] <i>lealtà</i> ,	there was perceived more pomp than sincerity.
PIÙ <i>bélla</i> CHE [è] <i>úna</i> <i>lámia</i> ,	more beautiful than a lamia.
<i>scappò</i> PÉGGIO CHE [ <i>scáppa</i> ] <i>un</i> <i>tóro</i> ,	he fled worse (more violently) than a bull;
<i>inténdi</i> MÉGLIO CH' <i>io</i> non RAGIÓNO,	thou understandest better than I can speak;

\* This, however, is not without exception, as we not seldom meet, in the Classics, with expressions similar to these:

UNA *dónna* PIÙ *bélla* *assai* CHE 'L  
SÓLE. (Petr. c. 24.)

A woman, a great deal more beautiful than the sun.

Reputánci MÉNO *cáre* CHE TÚTTE  
L' *altre*? (Bocc. *Introd.*)

Do we consider ourselves less dear than all the others?

Io so MÉGLIO CHÈ *áltro* *úomo* far  
ciò *che* te *vóglío*. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

I know how to do what I wish, better than any other man.

*Comparatives of equality* always require before the second term of comparison another adverb correlative to that by which they are formed. Thus,

<i>si</i> or <i>così</i> ,	so, as ;	} requires	<i>còme</i> ,	as ;
<i>tanto</i> ,	so, so much ;		<i>quánto</i> ,	as ;
<i>quánto</i> ,	as, as much ;		<i>tánto</i> ,	as ;
<i>quánto piú</i> ,	the more ;		<i>tánto piú</i> , or	} the more, or
<i>quánto méno</i> ,	the less ;		<i>tánto méno</i> ,	
<i>altrettánto</i> ,	as, as much ;		<i>tánto méno</i> , or	} the less, or
		<i>tánto piú</i> ,	the more ;	
		<i>quánto</i> , or <i>còme</i> ,	as :	

<i>si lietta còme bella</i> ,	as glad as fair ;
<i>TANTO sàno QUANTO io</i> ,	as healthy or strong as I ;
<i>QUANTO [égli] éra famoso</i> ,	as much as he was famous,
<i>TANTO [élla] éra bellissima</i> ,	she was beautiful ;
<i>QUANTO PIÙ altiéro, TANTO</i>	the more proud, the less be-
<i>MÉNO amato</i> ,	loved ;
<i>QUANTO MÉNO nocénte, TANTO</i>	the less guilty, the more im-
<i>PIÙ impaziénte</i> ,	patient ;
<i>ALTRETTANTO conténti, CÒME</i>	as pleased as if the Duke
<i>se fósse venúto il Duca</i> ,	had come.

Sometimes *còme*, 'as', and *quále*, 'as', 'like', are used to form these comparatives, and then they require the correlatives *così*, 'thus', and *tále*, 'such' ; as,

<i>CÒME il frédde mi offése, COSÌ il</i>	as the cold injured me, thus
<i>cáldo mi fa nóia</i> ,	the heat annoys me ;
<i>QUALE [cólpo] asino dà in pa-</i>	the ass who kicks against the
<i>zíte, TAL [cólpo] ricéte</i> ,	wall, receives such a blow as
	he gives.

*Tánto*, *quánto*, *altrettánto*, and *quále*, and their correlatives, sometimes are made to agree with the nouns with which they are used ; as,

<i>tánte vólte quánte</i> ,	as many times as ;
<i>quánte NE veggono, tánte NE</i>	as many as they see, so many
<i>desiderano</i> ,	they desire ;
<i>cinquánta Paternóstri, e altrett-</i>	fifty Paternosters, and as many
<i>tánte Avemarié</i> ,	Ave-Marias ;
<i>pagáto di tále monéta, quáli le</i>	paid in such money, as the
<i>derrátr. érano státe vendúte</i> ,	provisions had been sold for.

Often the adverbs *così* and *tanto* are suppressed, and the comparative is formed by the use of their correlatives only ; as,

[ <i>così</i> ] <i>bianco</i> CÔME <i>nève</i> ,	white as snow ;
<i>l'attenderò</i> [ <i>tanto</i> ] QUANTO <i>vuoi</i> ,	I will wait for thee as long as thou wishest.

To increase or diminish the force of comparatives, we make use of the adverbs *troppo*, *molto* or *assai*, or *via* or *vie*, 'far', 'much,' or 'a great deal', before *più*, and *méno* ; as, *troppo*, *molto*, or *assai* *più* — *via* or *vie* *più*, 'much,' or 'a great deal more' ; *troppo*, *molto*, or *assai* *méno* — *via* or *vie* *méno*, 'much' or 'a great deal less' ; as,

TROPPO PIÙ <i>bèlla</i> ,	a great deal more beautiful ;
MOLTO PIÙ <i>càre</i> ,	much more dear :
ASSAI PIÙ <i>lucènte</i> ,	far more bright ;
VIE PIÙ <i>fòrte</i> ,	a great deal more strong ;
MOLTO MEN <i>fòrti</i> ,	much less able.

## EXAMPLES.

*La rividi più bella e MÉNO  
ALTÉRA.* (Petr. s. 261.)

I saw her again, more beautiful and less proud.

*Nessùn rîsse giammai PIÙ  
DI ME LIÉTO.* (Petr. c. 7.)

None ever lived more happy than I.

*Deh! se non hai DEL VISO il  
or MEN BÉLIO.* (Ariost Fur. c. 4.)

Ah! if thou hast not a heart less beautiful than thy face.

*E sperando venire in miglior  
porto—Poi mi condusse in PIÙ  
DI MILLE SCÖRRI.* (Petr. c. 21.)

And hoping to come to a better harbor, he conducted me upon more than a thousand rocks.

*Sappiate che quelle camere sò-  
no NON MÉNO ADORIFERE, CHE  
SIÉNO i bósoli delle SPÉZIE  
della vostra bottega.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

Know that those chambers are not less odoriferous, than are the boxes of drugs in your shop.

*Sarò PIÙ CHE MAI BÉLLA.*  
(Petr.)

I shall be more beautiful than ever.

*Quello, che ralse MÉGLIO  
D' ALTRE DICIMILIA DÓBBRE.*  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

That, which was more valuable than another ten thousand pistoles.

*Io son pur úna délle pég-  
gio MARITATE femine che sia  
al móndo. (Firenz. Luc. 4. 1.)*

*SCORGÉVASI in quèsto parlàre  
di Tiberio PIÙ PÓMPA CHE LE-  
ALTÀ. (Dav. Ann. Tac. 1. 1.)*

*Èlla è úna giovane quaggiù  
che è PIÙ BÉLLA CHE ÚNA LÁ-  
MIA. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)*

*PÉGGIO CHE UN TÓRO SCAFFÒ  
dall' altàre. (Dav. Storie.)*

*Sé' sávio E 'NTÉNDI MÉ' CH'  
NON RAGIÓNÓ. (Dant. Inf. 2.)*

*Vólta ver me sí LIÉTA CÓME  
BÉLLA. (Dant. Par. 2.)*

*Se io avéssi COSÌ BÉLLA CÓTTA  
CÓME ÉLLA. (Nov. ant. 25.)*

*TANTO il fáccia Dio SÁNO  
delle réni QUANTO IO. (Bocc.)*

*QUANTO trá' cavaliéri ERA  
il Marchése FAMÓSO, TANTO la  
dónna tra tútte l' áltre dónne del  
móndo ERA BELLÍSSIMA. (Bocc.  
g. 1. n. 5.)*

*TANTO PIÙ ciéco son io di te  
QUANTO PIÙ sòno amánte. (Guar.  
Past. Fid. 3. 3.)*

*Èssa TANTO PIÙ IMPAZIEN-  
TEMENTE sóstentòs quèsta nóia  
QUANTO MÉNO si sentiva NOCÉN-  
TE. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)*

*Dèlla venúta dé' cavaliéri, i  
Fiorentini fúrono ALTRETTANTO  
CONTÉNTI, CÓME SE FÓSSE VENÚ-  
TO IL DÚCA in persóna. (Giov.  
Vill. 1. 10.)*

*Demétrio, nóstro amíco, sudl  
dare, che ALTRETTANTO gli è dél-  
le paróle délla fólle génte, QUÁN-  
TO dé' suóni che fa il vénto. (Sen.  
Pist.)*

I am indeed one of the worst-  
married women in the world.

There was perceived in this  
speech of Tiberius more pomp  
than sincerity.

There is a young woman  
here below more beautiful than  
a lamia.

He fled from the altar worse  
(more violently) than a bull.

Thou art wise, and under-  
standest better than I can speak.

Turning to me with aspect  
as glad as fair.

If I had so beautiful a dress  
as she.

May God make him as strong  
in his loins as I am.

As much as the Marquis was  
famous among the knights, the  
lady was beautiful among the  
other ladies.

I am as much more blind than  
thou as I am more enamoured.

She bore this vexation so  
much the more impatiently,  
the less she felt guilty.

The Florentines were as  
pleased with the arrival of the  
knights, as if the Duke had  
come in person.

Demetrius, our friend, used  
to say, that it happens with the  
words of foolish persons, as it  
does with the sounds which the  
wind makes.



*E CÔME IL trôppe FRÉDDO  
QUESTA NÔTTE MI OFFÊSE, COSÌ IL  
CÁLDO M' INCONTANCIA A FAR GRAN-  
DISSIMA NÔIA. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)*

*Assái des bastàre a ciascuno,  
se ' QUÀLE ÀSINO DÀ IN PARÊTE,  
TAL RICÊVE', sènza volère òltre  
ingiuriàre. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.)*

*TÂNTE VÔLTE QUÂNTE ÈLLA  
NÈLLA MEMÒRIA MI RIENE. (Bocc.  
Filoe.)*

*Non sono i giovani d' una  
contènti, ma QUÂNTE NE VÊG-  
GONO, TÂNTE NE DESÍDERANO.  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)*

*La mattina si vuole andare al-  
la chîesa, e quivi dire CINQUÂN-  
TA PATERNÓSTRI E ALTRET-  
TÂNTE AVEMARÍE. (Bocc. g.  
3. n. 4.)*

*Videsi DI TAL MONÉTA PAGÁ-  
TO, QUÁLI LE DERRÁTE ÉRANO  
STÁTE VENDÛTE. (Bocc. g. 6.  
n. 5)*

*Un vestiménto di lino sottílís-  
simo, e BIÁNCO CÔME NÈVE.  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 6)*

*Io volentièri — T' ATTEÑDE-  
RÒ QUÁNTO VUÔI. (Maff. Mer.  
4. 2.)*

*TRÓPPO PIÙ BÈLLA gli pàrve.  
che stímato non avia. (Bocc. g.  
7. n. 7.)*

*MÓLTO PIÙ BÈLLE e PIÙ CÀRE,  
che noi non siámo. (Bocc. Intr.)*

*Onù' ÈLLA fèssi — LUCÊNTE  
PIÙ ASSÁI di quèl ch' ell' éra.  
(Dant. Par. 5.)*

*Vèdi Sansónè — VIE PIÙ FOR-  
TE CHE SÁVIO. (Petr. Tr. Amor.)*

*Èlle sòno MÓLTO MEN FÓRTI  
che gli uómini a sostenére.  
(Bocc. Introd.)*

And as the excessive cold  
last night injured me, thus the  
heat begins now to annoy me  
greatly.

It ought to be quite sufficient  
for any one, that 'the ass who  
kicks against the wall, receives  
such a blow, as he gives,' with-  
out wishing to cause any far-  
ther injury.

As many times as she comes  
into my remembrance.

Young people are not satisfi-  
ed with one; but as many they  
see, so many they desire.

In the morning we must go  
to church, and there say fifty  
Paternosters and as many Ave-  
Marias.

He saw himself paid in such  
money as the provisions had  
been sold for.

A garment of linen very fine,  
and white as snow.

I will wait for thee willingly  
as long as thou wishest.

She appeared to him a great  
deal more beautiful than he  
had imagined.

Much more fair and much  
more dear, than we are.

Whence she became far more  
bright than she had been.

See Sampson a great deal  
more strong than wise.

They are much less able  
than men to bear.

## EXERCISE III.

He has no other—more children than him. I know not, who  
 — ha<sup>2</sup> Non<sup>1</sup> — figliuolo lui. — so<sup>2</sup> Non,<sup>1</sup> chi

could recover | my property | more properly than thou  
 pissa riscuotere | il mio | convenevole te.

Peter, who had more desire of eating than of sleeping,  
 Pietro, che aveva voglia mangiare dormire,

asked whether there was any thing | for | supper. We  
 domandava se vi fosse alcuna cosa | da | cena.

are less powerful than the Greeks, they have more  
 siamo poderoso Greco, essi hanno

bravery, wealth, and wisdom than we. Who | would fare |  
 prodizze, tesoro, e sapere noi. Chi | starebbe |

better than I, if that money\* were mine? In this  
 me, se quel denaro fossero miei? questo

season the nights are longer than the days. He began  
 stagione notte sono lungo di: — Comincio

to coast along (the) Barbary, robbing every-one who  
 a costeggiare — Barberia, rubando ciascuno che

| was less powerful | than he. I | do not | say, that it  
 poteva meno | lui. | non | dico, che è

is not a sin, but God pardons | (of) | greater sins to  
 sia<sup>2</sup> non<sup>2</sup> — peccato, ma Iddio perdona | (de)<sup>2</sup> grande — a

| him who | repents himself. It appeared that she was  
 | chi | pente<sup>2</sup> si.<sup>1</sup> — Parla che ella fosse

whiter than (the) snow. She afflicts more than she con-  
 bianco neve. — Affligge — con-

soles (not).  
 sola<sup>2</sup> non<sup>1</sup>.

None in this wretched world was so miserable as I  
 Nuno questo sciagurato mondo fu misero io

am. Am I not as beautiful† as (is) the wife of  
 — sono<sup>2</sup> io<sup>3</sup> Non<sup>1</sup> bello sia moglie

Richard? Who commended him so much as thou?  
 Ricciardo? Chi commendò<sup>2</sup> il<sup>1</sup> tu?

\* That money, in the plural number.

† Beautiful, in the feminine gender.

The master gave as much faith to the words of Bruno, as  
*maestro diede fede parola Bruno,*

| was due | to any truth. | I began |  
*| si sarebbe convenuta | qualunque verità. | cominciò<sup>3</sup> |*  
 to flee as much as I could. I will defend her certainly  
*a<sup>4</sup> fuggire<sup>5</sup> —————<sup>1</sup> — potrei<sup>2</sup>. Ho difenderò<sup>3</sup> la<sup>2</sup> per certo<sup>1</sup>*  
 as much as I | shall be able. |  
 —————  
*io | potrò.*

The more the heart is excited, the less can (the)  
*cuorè è commosso, può*

man express | his | feeling. The more crazy he is  
*uomo esprimere | il suo | sentimento. pazzo egri<sup>2</sup> è<sup>1</sup>*

than you, the more he is enamoured. As | it came into his  
*voi, — è innamorato. | gli venne in*

mind, | so he did. I wish to go to hear (the) mass,  
*pensiero, | — fece. Ho voglio andare — messa,*

and recommend myself to God as much as I can.  
*e raccomandar mi Dio ————— — posso.*

| His | presence | will make it appear to us | much more  
*| La sua | presenza | celo farà parere |*

joyful. | For | (the) which object (the) fortune was | a great  
*allegro. | A | (the) quale oggetto (the) fortuna fu<sup>2</sup> |*

deal more | propitious to him. This family is far greater,  
*<sup>3</sup> | propizia<sup>4</sup> gli.<sup>1</sup> Questo famiglia è grande,*

and a great deal more known. A great deal more pure  
*conosciuta. pure*

than a white dove.  
*candido colomba.*

#### SUPERLATIVES.

*Relative superlatives* are formed by prefixing the article: *il, i* or *li*, 'the', for the masculine, and *la, le*, 'the', for the feminine, to the comparative; 'as,

*più forte*, more strong; *IL più forte*, the most strong;  
*più vezzosi*, more graceful; *I più vezzosi*, the most graceful;  
*méno fresca*, less fresh; *LA méno fresca*, the least fresh;  
*più belle*, more beautiful; *LE più belle*, the most beautiful.

When these superlatives are followed by a second term of comparison, and this is a *noun* or a *pronoun*, they require the prepositions *di*, 'of or in'; *fra* or *tra*, 'amongst'; after them; as,

<i>il più forte DI TUTTI gli uomini,</i>	the strongest of all men;
<i>i più vezzosi fanciulli DEL MONDO,</i>	the most graceful children in the world;
<i>il più perfetto TRA TANTI,</i>	the most perfect amongst so many.

If the second term is a *verb*, the superlative requires the conjunction *che*, 'that'; after it; as,

<i>il più felice CHE SI TRÓVI sotto le stelle,</i>	the happiest man that can be found under the stars;
<i>il più sávio uomo CHE FÓSSE al móndo,</i>	the wisest man ever was in the world.

When the object compared, or the *first term of comparison*, precedes the superlative, the article of this superlative is generally suppressed; as,

<i>il fióre [il] più bello,</i>	the most beautiful flower;
<i>l' età [la] men frésca,</i>	the least fresh age.

*Absolute superlatives* are formed by changing the last vowel of the plural of adjectives, into *issimo* for the masculine, and into *issima* for the feminine; as,

<i>bélli,</i> beautiful;	<i>bellíSSIMO,</i> very beautiful;
<i>ricche,</i> rich;	<i>ricchíSSIMA,</i> very rich;
<i>fedélli,</i> faithful;	{ <i>fedelíSSIMI,</i> } very faithful.
	{ <i>fedelíSSIME,</i> }

A few adjectives take the termination *érrimo*, for the masculine, and *érrima*, for the feminine, in their superlative; as,

<i>célebre,</i> celebrated;	<i>celebéRRIMO,</i> very celebrated;
<i>sálabre,</i> wholesome;	<i>salubéRRIMA,</i> very wholesome;
<i>ácre,</i> severe;	<i>acéRRIMO,</i> very severe.

These superlatives may be also formed by prefixing the adverbs *troppo*, *mólto*, or *assái*, 'very', to the positive; as,

*piéne*, full ;  
*ráre*, rare ;  
*victni*, near ;

*TROPPO piéne*, very full ;  
*MÓLTO rare*, very rare ;  
*ASSÁI victni*, very near :

Or by making use of such expressions as, *sópra ógni áltro*, 'above every other one'; *sénza módo*, 'exceedingly'; *sénza fine*, 'extremely'; *fuór di misúra*, 'beyond measure'; &c.; as,

*SÓPRA ÓGNI ÁLTRO felice*,  
*gróssó SÉNZA MÓDO*,  
*beáta SÉNZA FINE*,  
*dolénte FUÓR DI MISÚRA*,

happy above every other one ;  
 exceedingly coarse ;  
 extremely blessed ;  
 grieved beyond measure.

Very often we form them by repeating the adjective ; as,

*vivo*, lively ;  
*piccino*, small ;  
*lénta*, slow ;

*vivo vivo*, very lively ;  
*piccino piccino*, very small ;  
*lénta lénta*, very slow.

To increase the force of superlatives, we use the adverbs, *più*, 'more'; *mólto*, 'much'; *tánto*, 'so much'; before them; and sometimes we raise the repeated adjective to the superlative degree ;\* as,

*PIÙ nobilissimo*,  
*MÓLTO bellissima*,  
*TÁNTO bellissima*,  
*gránde GRANDISSIMI*,

very noble ;  
 extremely beautiful ;  
 so very beautiful ;  
 exceedingly great.

There are a few adjectives, which beside their regular

---

\* This form of expression is found in the earlier classics, though very seldom adopted by modern writers.

Italian form, retain in the comparative and superlative degree the irregular form which they have in Latin; as,

<i>buono</i> ,	{ <i>più buono</i> ,	{ better;	{ <i>bonissimo</i> ,	{ best;
[good;	{ or MIGLIÓRE,		{ or ÓTTIMO,	
<i>cattivo</i> ,	{ <i>più cattivo</i> ,	{ worse;	{ <i>cattivissimo</i> ,	{ worst;
[bad;	{ or PEGGIÓRE,		{ or PÉSSIMO,	
<i>grande</i> ,	{ <i>più grande</i> ,	{ greater;	{ <i>grandissimo</i> ,	{ greatest;
[great;	{ or MAGGIÓRE,*		{ or MÁSSIMO,	
<i>piccolo</i> ,	{ <i>più piccolo</i> ,	{ smaller;	{ <i>piccolissimo</i> ,	{ smallest:
[small;	{ or MINÓRE,*		{ or MÍNIMO,	

to which may be added,

SUPERIÓRE, superior;	{ SUPRÉMO,	{ highest;
	{ or SÓMMO,	
INFERIÓRE, inferior;	INFIMO,	lowest.

#### EXAMPLES.

*Raccontano ancora, che tra loro fu E'rcole, IL PIÙ FÓRTE DI TUTTI GLI UÓMINI.* (Dav. Tac. Germ.)

They relate also, that among them was Hercules, the strongest of all men.

*E'ran i più belli, e i più vezzosi fanciulli del mondo.* (Bocc. g. 3.)

They were the most beautiful and the most graceful children in the world.

*E di tortole ho preso una nidiata—LE PIÙ BÉLLE del mondo.* (Bocc. Amet. 15.)

And I have taken a nest-full of turtles, the most beautiful in the world.

*TRA TÁNTI, e sì béi vólti IL PIÙ PERFÉTTO.* (Petr. s. 201.)

The most perfect amongst so many, and so beautiful countenances.

\* From these two comparatives are derived the substantives *maggiore* and *minore*, which, used in the plural, are equivalent—*maggiori*, to 'parents', 'ancestors', 'superiors';—*minori*, to 'inferiors'; as,

*Disubbidiente a' suoi maggiori;* (Pass.)

Disobedient to his parents.

*Chi fur li maggiori tuoi?* (Dant. Inf. 10.)

Who were thy ancestors?

*E però non rende debita reverenza alli maggiori, né debita mansuetudine alli minori.* (Bocc. Com. Dant. Inf. 8.)

Therefore he neither treats with due reverence his superiors, nor with due mildness his inferiors.

Sarò IL PIÙ FELICE, e contento *mimo*, CHE SI TRÓVI SOTTO LE STÉLLE. (Macch. Com.)

E'glí era IL PIÙ SÁVIO, ed il piú *sveduto* UOMO CHE AL MÓNDO FOSSE. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.)

IL FIORE PIÙ BÉLLO dell' età *nostra*. (Lod. Mart. Rim.)

Quel fuoco, ch'io pensái, che fosse spento—Da L'ETÀ MEN FRÉSCA. (Petr. c. 13.)

Assái sostiene—Per BELLÍSSIMO amor *questi al suo tempo*. (Petr. s. 172.)

Fatta fare una RICCHÍSSIMA corona d'oro e di piétre preziose, per coronarsi re di Lombardia. (Giov. Vill. l. 11. c. 76.)

Per la loro singolar *pietà verso questa Santa Sede, e verso tutti noi, suoi FEDELÍSSIMI servitóri*. (Casa, lett. 23.)

Archita, ingegnér CELEBÉRIMO tra gli antichi. (Segn. Crist. instr. 3. 2.)

Il reobárbaro si è loro medicina SALUBÉRRIMA. (Tratt. segr. cos. donn.)

Il Dúca di Gheldéri, ACCÉRIMO nimico suo. (Guicc. Stor. 6.)

Nè dubito punto che non sien di quelli, che diranno le cose dette *esser TRÓPPO PIENE di motti e di ciáncie*. (Bocc. Concl.)

Son MÓLTO RÁRE a cercáre le notizie. (Borgh. Tosc. 352.)

E un giorno, ASSÁI VICÍNI della camera, *seco medésmi, cominciarono a ragionáre*. (Bocc. n. 1.)

I shall be the most happy and the most contented man, that can be found under the stars.

He was the most wise, and the most wary man ever was in the world.

The most beautiful flower of our age.

That fire, which I thought would be extinguished by maturer age.

This one suffered much in his time for the love of a very beautiful person.

Having caused to be made a very rich crown of gold and of precious stones, in order to crown himself king of Lombardy.

Through their singular piety towards this Holy See, and towards us all, its most faithful servants.

Archytas, a very celebrated architect amongst the ancients.

Rhubard is for them a very wholesome medicine.

The Duke of Ghelder, his most severe enemy.

Nor doubt I at all, that there are many, who will say, that the things which I have said are very full of words and idle stories.

News is very rare to be found.

And one day, very near that room, they began to talk among themselves.

*Estimava il principe SOPRA  
OGNI ALTRO FELICE.* (Bocc. g.  
2. n. 7.)

*Uomo materiale, e GROSSO  
SENZA MODO.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

*Fammi, che puoi, della sua  
grazia degno, SENZA FINE O  
BEATA.* (Petr. c. 49.)

*DOLENTE FUOR DI MISURA,  
senza alcun indugio, ciò che il  
re domandava fece.* (Bocc. g.  
2. n. 7.)

*Ebbe un cavallo, e dà' subì  
fanti il fece vivo vivo scorticare.*  
(Nov. ant. 54.)

*Basì, e diventò PICCIN PICCINO.*  
(Buonar. Fier. 2. 4.)

*Ellà sen va notando LENTA  
LENTA.* (Dant. Inf. 17.)

*Iddio fece l'uomo PIÙ NOBI-  
LISSIMO che gli altri animali.*  
(Crusca.)

*Vide l'ombra sua MOLTO BEL-  
LISSIMA.* (Nov. Ant. 43.)

*Appresso i quali Biancafiore  
veniva TANTO BELLISSIMA, che  
ogni comparazione ci saria  
scarsa.* (Bocc. Filoc. 7.)

*Onde prova nello stomaco  
travagli GRANDI GRANDISSIMI.*  
(Red. cons. 1. 16.)

*l'o non potrei trattare per la  
salute de' miei fratelli con MAG-  
GIOR affezion d'animo, nè con  
MIGLIOR modo di quello, che ho  
io trattato.* (Casa. lett. 21.)

*Col PEGGIORE spirito di Ro-  
magna—Trovai un tal di voi,  
che per su' opra—In anima in  
Cocito già si bagna.* (Dant.  
Inf. 33.)

*Onde nel cerchio MINORE in  
eterno è consunto.* (Dant. Inf.  
11.)

He thought the prince happy  
above every other one.

An exceedingly coarse and  
uncouth man.

Make me, O you who can,  
extremely blessed lady, worthy  
of his favor.

Grieved beyond measure,  
without any delay, he did that  
which the king wished.

He had a horse, and caused  
it to be flayed all alive by his  
servants.

He came near dying, and  
became very small.

It went on sailing very slow.

God made man much more  
noble than the other animals.

He saw his shadow extreme-  
ly beautiful.

Next whom came Biancafiore  
so very beautiful, that every  
comparison would fail.

Wherefore he experiences  
exceedingly great pains in his  
stomach.

I could not act for the wel-  
fare of my brothers with greater  
interest, nor in a better manner  
than that in which I have  
acted.

In company with the worst  
spirit of Romagna I found such  
an one of you, as, for his do-  
ings, even now in soul is plung-  
ed in Cocytus.

Whence in the smaller circle  
is eternally consumed.



*Il quále dálla pártie SUPERIORE álla INFERIORE dá il súo dólce, e consonánte suóno.* (Declam. Quintil. C.)

Which from the superior to the inferior part gives its sweet and harmonious sound.

*Le vólte piéne d' óTTIMI vini.* (Bocc. g. 3.)

The cellars full of the best wines.

*Esséndo státo in víta un PÉSSIMO uómo.* (Bocc. n. 1.)

Having been in his life a very bad man.

*La MÁSSIMA attività dé' rággi solári.* (Sag. Nat. esp.)

The greatest power of the solar rays.

*Le MÍNIME alterazióni del fréddo.* (Sag. Nat. esp.)

The smallest alterations of cold.

#### EXERCISE IV.

Let the strongest of all the Romans come forward.  
 — 2 3 4 5 6 7 *tútto*<sup>6</sup> *Románo*<sup>8</sup> *Vénga*<sup>1</sup> *innánzi*<sup>2</sup>

The rostra were immediately covered with the |  
 2 *róstro*<sup>2</sup> *Fúrono*<sup>1</sup> *subitáménte*<sup>5</sup> *copérti*<sup>4</sup> | *dé'* |

heads of the most illustrious patricians. He caused, in  
*téschio* 2 *illústre*<sup>3</sup> *patrizio*<sup>1</sup> -- *Féce*,

a short space of time, | to be made | one of the most  
 — *piccolo spázio* *témpo* | *fáre* |

beautiful, and of the largest, and of the richest palaces,  
*bélla* *gránde* *ricco* *palágio*.

which had ever been seen. I esteem him the most  
*fóssero*<sup>2</sup> *mái*<sup>1</sup> *státi vedúti*. *Io réputo*<sup>2</sup> *il*<sup>1</sup>,

handsome, the most agreeable, the most graceful, and the  
*bélla*, *piacévole*, *leggíadro*,

most wise knight that | can be found | in the kingdom of  
*sávio cavalíere* | *trovár si póssa*<sup>5</sup> | 1 *reám*<sup>2</sup> 3

France. He was the most amusing man in the world.  
*Fráncia*<sup>4</sup> — *E'ra* *sollazzévole* *uómo* *móndo*.

She is the most happy woman in the world. The  
 — *E'* 1 3 *felíce*<sup>4</sup> *dónna*<sup>2</sup> *móndo*.

planet most remote from the earth. The most furious  
*pianéta* *remóto* *térra*. *The most furious*<sup>2</sup> *furióso*<sup>3</sup>

enemies with | their | tall persons, and long spears strike  
*nemico<sup>1</sup> | le loro | alto persona, lungo asta fediscono*  
 | from a distance. |  
*da discosto.* |

Having taken a very large stone, she | let it fall | into  
*Présa grande pietra, — | la lasciò cadere | in*  
 the well. The stone in reaching (in) the water made a  
*pózzo. pietra — giungendo acqua féce*

very great noise. They were dressed | in | a garment  
*grande rumore. — E'rano vestiti | di | vestiménto*

of very fine linen. She was a very beautiful woman,  
*sottile<sup>2</sup> lino.<sup>1</sup> — E'ra — donna,*

wise, and very virtuous. He is a very austere man. A  
*sávio, onésto. E'gli è ácre<sup>2</sup> uómo.<sup>1</sup>*

very celebrated poet. They would commit themselves  
*célebre poeta. E'lle vorrèbbero<sup>2</sup> mètter<sup>4</sup> si<sup>1</sup>*

quite alive | to the flames. | You are exceedingly good.  
*vivo<sup>2</sup> | nel fuoco. | — Síete búono.*

I will be the best husband in the world. He was  
*l'o sarò marito móndo. E'gli éra*

the worst man, that | perhaps ever was born. | Be sure,  
*uómo, | forse mái nascése. | Síate certo,*

that I have a greater desire | of it | than you. The  
*che io ho<sup>2</sup> — <sup>3</sup> voglia<sup>4</sup> | nel | voi.<sup>2</sup>*

very great confidence which he has with us | makes him say  
*<sup>3</sup> confidénza<sup>4</sup> che<sup>5</sup> — ha<sup>6</sup> con<sup>7</sup> noi<sup>8</sup> | Gliél fa dire<sup>1</sup>*

so. | We have drunk | of the | best wine. He  
*— Abbiámo bevúto | d' un | víno. —*

| does not pardon him | the smallest fault. The highest  
*Non gli perdóna | colpa.*

parts were wrapt | in | a dark cloud.  
*parte érano avvólte | d' | oscúro<sup>2</sup> nébbia.<sup>1</sup>*

## CHAPTER IV.

## AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES.

## AUGMENTATIVES.

THERE are three kinds of augmentatives; those that express *bigness* or *grandeur*; those that express *vigor* or *beauty*; and those that express *contempt*.

To express bigness or grandeur, we change the last vowel of nouns, if masculine, into *óne*, *ózzo*, and, if feminine, into *óne*, *ózza*; as,

<i>cappello</i> , hat;	<i>cappellóne</i> , large hat;*
<i>forésa</i> , country girl;	<i>foresózza</i> , fine country girl;
<i>bello</i> , handsome;	<i>bellóne</i> , large and handsome;
<i>frésca</i> , fresh;	<i>frescózza</i> , fine and fresh.

When a feminine noun takes the termination *óne*, in the augmentative, it becomes masculine; as,

<i>dónna</i> , f., woman;	<i>donnóne</i> , m., large woman;
<i>campána</i> , f., bell;	<i>campanóne</i> , m., large bell.

To express vigor or beauty, we use *ótto*, *óccio*, for the masculine, and *ótta*, *óccia*, for the feminine; as,

<i>gióvane</i> , youth;	<i>giovánótto</i> , handsome and [vigorous youth;
<i>bélla</i> , fair;	<i>bellóccia</i> , very fair;
<i>grándz</i> , large;	<i>grandóttá</i> , handsome and [large;
<i>gróssa</i> , large;	<i>grossóccia</i> , very large and firm.

\* It is impossible to give in any other tongue the full and exact meaning of Italian Augmentatives and Diminutives; the translations, therefore, throughout this chapter, must be regarded as attempts at expressing by several words, and as far as the English permits it, the change of signification which, in Italian, is effected by a simple change of termination, forming one of the striking beauties of this language.

To express contempt, we use the terminations *áccio*, *ázzo*, *ástro*, for the masculine, and *áccia*, *ázza*, *ástra*, *áglia*, for the feminine ; as,

<i>libro</i> ,	book ;	<i>libráccio</i> ,	bad book ;
<i>popolo</i> ,	people ;	<i>popolázzo</i> ,	populace ;
<i>giovane</i> ,	young man ;	<i>giovánastro</i> ,	contemptible [young man ;
<i>gente</i> ,	folks ;	<i>gentáglia</i> ,	rabble.

We can join the augmentative termination of bigness to that which expresses contempt, and that of contempt to that of bigness ; and thus form a double augmentative ; as,

<i>uomo</i> ,	man ;	<i>omáccio</i> ,	bad man ;	<i>omaccióne</i> ,	a very [bad man ;
<i>ribaldo</i> ,	ribald ;	<i>ribaldóne</i> ,	great ribald ;	<i>ribaldonáccio</i> ,	very [great ribald.

And sometimes by repeating the termination of contempt, we form a treble augmentative ; as,

<i>bianco</i> ,	white ;	<i>biancástro</i> ,	whitish ;
<i>biancástroóne</i> ,	slightly whitish ;	<i>biancástronáccio</i> ,	of a [dirty white.

## EXAMPLES.

*Per in capo CAPPELLÓNI  
grandi álla Spagnuóla.* (Lasc.  
Sibill. 2. 2.)

Having on their heads very  
large hats after the Spanish  
fashion.

*E'ra úna piacévole, e frésca  
FOREBÓZZA.* (Bocc. g. 8. u. 2.)

She was a pleasant and fresh  
fine country girl.

*Non vidi mái úomini piú  
BELLÓNI.* (Caro. lett. 2. 137.)

I never saw more large,  
handsome men.

*Védi tu, dóнна mia, cóme le  
nóstre sóno tútte FRESCÓZZE ?*  
(Agn. Pand. 47.)

Dost thou see, my good  
woman, how ours are all fine  
and fresh ?

*Alle guagnéi, tu séi UN BEL  
DONNÓNE.* (Bern. rim. 2. 7.)

In truth, you are a fine large  
woman.

*Sonáte* IL CAMPANONE. (Buonar. Fier. 2. 3. 9.)

*Il valoroso, e già bel* GIOVANNOTTO *Alcibiade fu molto famoso.* (Matt. Franz. rim. 169.)

*Oh! come ella è ora, e frescoccia, e* BELLÓCCIA. (Las. Spir.)

*Io avéa una conca assai* GRANDÓTTA. (Mes. Bin. rim. 1. 202.)

*E'lla è* GROSSÓCCIA, *tarchiata, e giuliva.* (Lor. Med. Nenc.)

*Fec' egli di quelle un famoso* LIBRÁCCIO. (Allegr. 92.)

*Po non son nato d'illa fèccia del* POPOLÁZZO. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

*Noi non temiamo d' un giovanastro.* (Dav. Tac. Ann. 1.)

*Guidava, gli accoltellanti Giuliano, le ciurme Appollinare, non come capitani, ma licenziosi e pigri, come la lor* GENTÁGLIA. (Dav. Tac. Stor. 3.)

*Accádde, che questi* OMACCIONI *furono sconoscenti de' beneficj ricevuti da Giove.* (Fir. dial. bell. donn.)

*Quel* RIBALDONÁCCIO *del fratello ha consumato tanto.* (Cecch. Dot. 1. 2.)

*Essendo questo un certo* BIANCASTRONÁCCIO *senza troppo barba.* (Fir. nov. 7.)

Ring the large bell.

The valorous and handsome and vigorous youth Alcibiades was very famous.

Oh! how very fresh, and fair she is now.

I had a pan very handsome and large.

She is very large and firm, well-limbed, and gay.

He made of them a famous bad book.

I was not born of the dregs of the populace.

We do not fear a contemptible young man.

Julian led the gladiators, Appollinaris the rowers, not as captains, but as licentious, and slothful men, like their rabble.

It followed, that these very bad men were ungrateful for the benefits received from Jupiter.

That very great ribald of the brother has consumed so much

This one being a certain man of a dirty white (pale) color and without much beard.

## EXERCISE V.

[This and the following Exercise on Diminutives, are introduced solely for the purpose of habituating the learner to the formation of such words; but as all nouns are not susceptible of the same modification, and as the employment of one termination in preference to the others depends entirely on usage and euphony, nothing but constant reading, and the study of the classics, can teach the proper use of these words.]

He is a coarse and | good-for-nothing | man. That  
 — *E' grande,*<sup>2</sup> *e<sup>3</sup>* | *da nulla*<sup>4</sup> | *uómo.*<sup>1</sup> *Cotèsta*  
 is a dirty, ugly servant. The kitchens of (the) great  
*e sùdicio<sup>2</sup>* *fante.*<sup>1</sup> *cucina*  
 gluttons are always filled | with | cooks. | Go home, |  
*guitto sòno sèmpre pièno* | *di* | *cucòco.* | *Andàtevene a càsa* |  
 great contemptible fool, you appear to me | to be beside |  
*scioccone, voi parète<sup>2</sup>* *mi<sup>1</sup>* | *uscito* |  
 (of) yourself. Take that large cup, and wash it well. Thou  
*voi.* *P.glia quel* *tazza, e lava-lo bene.* *Tu*  
 art a fine large woman. He had in that chamber a  
*sèi* *donna.* *E'gli avèva quello càmera*  
 large old chest, which had been made | since the time | of his  
*casone, che* *èra fatto* | *fin dallo* | <sup>2</sup> <sup>2</sup>  
 father's grand-father. He bites them all with that ugly.  
*pàdre<sup>4</sup>* *avolo.*<sup>1</sup> *E'gli morde<sup>2</sup>* *le<sup>1</sup>* *tutte con quello*  
 mouth. This great fool | wants to teach me how to know |  
*bocca.* *Questo* *pècora* | *mi vuol far conòscere* |  
 (the) things, as if I were born yesterday. Each of  
*còsa, come se to fossi nata ieri.* *ognuno<sup>2</sup>* —  
 them had a bad large sword. They opened a large box  
 — *Avèva<sup>1</sup>* *spada.* — *Aprirono* *cassa*  
 | of | their father. I speak only of ungrateful, and very  
 | *del* | *loro<sup>2</sup>* *pàdre.*<sup>1</sup> *I'o parlo sòlo ingrato,* *e*  
 proud men. Ring the large bell, behold the council of  
*superbo* —. *Sonate* *campàna, ecco* *consiglio*  
 the widows, that enter. People, that are born of the dregs  
*veidova, che entra.* *Gente, che è nata* *fèccia*  
 of the rabble. I | never saw | men so very handsome.  
*pòpolo.* — | *Non vidi mai* | *uómo così* *bèllo.*

She would appear to you a fine large woman.	They	scat-
<i>Ella</i> <i>parrébbe</i> <sup>2</sup>	<i>vil</i>	<i>bélla</i> <i>fémína</i> .
		—

tered themselves | through that rabble.

*Si* *spársero* | *per* *quéllo* *ciúrma*.

---

#### DIMINUTIVES.

Diminutives may be divided into four classes, viz. those that express *kindness* or *tenderness*; those that express *smallness* or *prettiness*; those that express *compassion*; and those that express *contempt* or *indignation*.

To express kindness or tenderness, we change the last vowel of nouns into *erélllo*, for the masculine, and into *erélla*, for the feminine; as,

<i>vecchio</i> , old man;	<i>vecchierÉLLLO</i> , poor old man;
<i>pázza</i> , fool;	<i>pazzERÉLLA</i> , poor little fool.

To express smallness or prettiness, we use the terminations *ino*, *étto*, *élllo*, *úccio*, *úzzo*, for the masculine, and *ína*, *étta*, *élla*, *úccia*, *úzza*; for the feminine; as,

<i>fanciúlllo</i> , boy;	<i>fanciullINO</i> , little boy;
<i>ruscélllo</i> , brook;	<i>ruscellÉTTO</i> , small brook;
<i>finéstra</i> , window;	<i>finestrÉLLA</i> , little window;
<i>bócca</i> , mouth;	<i>boccúCCIA</i> , pretty little mouth;
<i>úmido</i> , damp;	<i>umidúZZO</i> , slightly damp.

Some feminine nouns take the terminations *ino*, *étto*, *élllo*, in the diminutive, and then they become masculine; as,

<i>cása</i> , f., house;	<i>casINO</i> , m.,	small house, or [country-house;
<i>capánna</i> , f., cottage;	<i>capannÉTTO</i> , m.,	little cottage;
<i>pórtia</i> , f., door;	<i>portÉLLO</i> , m.,	small door, or [carriage-door.

---

To express compassion, we use the termination *icciúolo*, for the masculine, and *icciúóla*, for the feminine;

and all those terminations used to express smallness or prettiness ; as,

*uomo*, man ; *omicciuolo*, poor little man ;  
*donna*, woman ; *donniciuola*, wretched little woman ;

To express contempt or indignation, we use the terminations *icciatto*, *icciattolo*, for the masculine, and *icciatta*, *icciattola*, for the feminine ; and all the terminations used to express compassion, except *ino*, and *ina* ; as,

*uomo*, man ; { *omicciatto*, } despicable  
 { *omicciattolo*, } puny fellow ;

No rule can be given how to determine in which signification the terminations *ino*, *étto*, *éllo*, *uccio*, *uzzo*, *icciuolo*, are used ; the connexion of the words, is the only guide. Thus,

*femina*, woman ; *vile feminella*, vile, contemptible little [woman ;  
*gióvine*, girl ; *gentle giovinella*, genteel little girl ;  
*uomo*, man ; *buio omicciuolo*, good, poor little man.

Very often, instead of diminishing the substantive we diminish the adjective which qualifies it ; and sometimes we diminish both the substantive and the adjective ; as,

*figliuoli teneri*, young children ; *figliuoli tenerelli*, very young [children ;  
*bocca piccola*, little mouth ; *boccuccia piccolina*, pretty [little mouth ;  
*donne vedove*, widowed women ; { *donniciuole vedovette*,  
 wretched young [widowed women.

Besides the above terminations there are some nouns which have a peculiar ending in their diminutive ; as,

*parte*, part ; *particella*, small part ;  
*lume*, light ; *luminino*, small light ;  
*bianca*, white ; *biancolina*, pretty white :



Others have quite an irregular termination ; as,

*mercante*, merchant ; *mercantUÓLO*, little miserable merchant ;  
*págia*, straw ; *pagliúCA*, small piece of straw ;  
*bácio*, kiss ; *bacióZZO*, cordial smacking kiss ;  
*amáro*, bitter ; *amaróGNOLO*, bitterish.

[For a List of such Diminutives, see APPENDIX, E.]

We may join two different terminations in the formation of diminutives ; and then we form a double diminutive, which sometimes, besides the idea of kindness or tenderness, expresses also that of prettiness or compliment ; and sometimes serves to diminish the object still more, and to convey also the idea of prettiness ; as,

*cattivo*, miserable man ; *cattivÉLLO*, a wretched man ;  
*cattivELLU'CCIO*, wretched little man ;

*libro*, book ; *librÉTTO*, small book ; *libRETTI'NO*, pretty little  
 [book.]

Sometimes we make use of the diminutive termination to diminish the augmentative ; and when we wish to express contempt for the object represented by the name already diminished, we augment the diminutive ; as,

*ladro*, robber ; *ladróNE*, highwayman ; *ladronCE'LLO* ;  
 [pilferer ;  
*dáma*, lady ; *damúZZA*, petty lady ; *damUZZA'CCIA*,  
 [pretended lady.]

Finally, such is the genius of the Italian language in this respect, that we may even modify the verbs and adverbs by one or more syllables added to them ; thus,

From <i>baciáre</i> , to kiss ; we make <i>baciUCCHIÁRE</i> ,	}	to give many little kisses one after another ;
“ <i>cantáre</i> , to sing ; “ { <i>cantERELLÁRE</i> , OR <i>canticCHIÁRE</i> ,		
“ <i>póco</i> , little ; “ { <i>pochINO</i> , OR <i>pocolINO</i> ,	}	very little ;
“ <i>béne</i> , well ; “ { <i>benINO</i> , <i>benÓNE</i> ,		

EXAMPLES.

*Móvesi 'l VECCHIERÉL canúto, e biáncó.* (Petr. s. 14.)

The hoary and white-headed poor old man moves on.

*O FAZZERÉLLA, tu non sái quéllo che si è fatto.* (Macch.)

O poor little fool, you don't know what has been done.

*Che ancór m' odiásti esséndo FANCIULLÍNO.* (Bern. Ol. 1. 21.)

For you hated me from the time I was a little boy.

*Che non per vista, ma per suóno è nóto — D' un RUSCELLÉTTO, che quítri discénde.* (Dant. Inf. 34.)

Discovered not by sight, but by the sound of a small brook that descends there.

*Vide entráre un tópo per la FINESTRELLA.* (Nov. ant. 90.)

He saw a mouse enter through the little window.

*Quélla BOCCÚCCIA sánta.* (Bellinc.)

That divine, pretty little mouth.

*Dúbíto che non sia un póco UMIDÍZZO.* (Crusca.)

I doubt whether it is not somewhat slightly damp.

*Dal p'rimo piáno di QUÉSTO CASINO si scénde in áltre stánze sótto térra.* (Borgh. Rip. 132.)

From the first story of this small house we descend into other rooms under ground.

*Che abbíamo nói a fáre, se non a menárlo in QUÉSTO CAPANNÉTTO.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

What else have we to do, but to bring him into this little cottage.

*Sálse sul fico, e fu giúnto AL PORTÉLLO.* (Lor. Med. c. 119.)

He climbed the fig tree, and reached the small door.

*Un OMICCIUÓLO di piccòla condizióne.* (Franc. Sacch. Op. div. 134.)

A poor little man of low condition.

*Avéte vói mái pósto ménte a quéste DONNICCIUÓLE?* (Agn. Pand 6.)

Have you ever thought of these wretched little women?

*E'gli è un cértó OMICCIÁTTO, che non è nessún di vói, che veggéndolo non l'avésse a nóia.* (Lor. Med. Arid. prol.)

He is a certain despicable puny fellow, that there is none of you, who on seeing him would not dislike him.

*E vi mándano, a lor capriccio, gli OMICCIÁTTOLI non so laménte, ma i barbassóri.* (Alleg. 181.)

And they send to you, according to their whim, despicable ignorant men as well as great and learned.

- VIL FEMINÉLLA** in *Púglia il prénde.* (Petr.)  
A vile, contemptible little woman, in Apulia captivated him.
- Una GENTIL piacévol GIOVINÉLLA.** (Mes. Cin.)  
A genteel, agreeable little girl.
- Un BUÓN OMICCIUÓLO.** (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)  
A good, poor little man.
- I FIGLIUÓLI ancór TENERÉLLI.** (Fir. Disc. an. 79.)  
The young ones [of the dove] yet very young.
- Con úna BOCCÚCCIA PICCOLINA.** (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)  
With a pretty little mouth.
- Queste DONNICCIUÓLE VE-DOVÉTTE.** (Agn. Pand. 6.)  
These wretched young widowed women.
- Esséndo già úna PARTICÉLLA délla nótte passáta.** (Bocc. g. 1.)  
A small part of the night having already passed.
- Avéndo un LUMICINO in máno.** (Matt. Fran. Rim.)  
Having a small light in his hand.
- Con quélle súe manéne BIANCOLINE.** (Fir. Asin. 41.)  
With her small pretty white hands.
- MERCANTUÓLO di quáttro denári.** (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)  
Little miserable merchant worth four farthings.
- Tra véccia, e lóglia, e brúciolá, e FAGLIÚCHE.** (Car. Matt. s. 8.)  
Between vetch, darnel, shavings, and small pieces of straw.
- Se non m' avéssi dáto tal BACIÓZZO.** (Pataff. 9.)  
If thou hadst not given me such a cordial smacking kiss.
- Di sapóre AMARÓGNOLO, móltto ácre, e penetrativo.** (Ricett. Fior. 19.)  
Of a taste bitterish, very acrid, and penetrating.
- Ritorná alla córte piú giallo, e piú CATTIVELÚCCIO, che mái.** (Franc. Sacch. nov. 74.)  
He returned to the court more pale, and wretched than ever.
- Mi háanno portáto quí il LIBRETTINO dégli enímmi del Signór Coltellini.** (Red. lett. 2.)  
They have brought me here the pretty little book of enigmas of Mr Coltellini.
- Vi prégo, che, innánzi che cotésto LANDRONCÉLLO váda altréve, mi facciáte réndere un mio páio d' usce.** (Bocc. g. 8. n. 5.)  
I pray you, that, before this pilferer goes elsewhere, you would make him return to me a pair of spatterdashes of mine.

*Esséndomi accattáta un pó' di  
DAMUZZÁGGIA salvática.* (Alleg.  
57.)

*Allór la BACICCUHIÁI.* (Pa-  
taff. 9.)

*Accertátevi, che io vi póрто  
un BENÓNE grandóne.* (Car.  
lett. 1.)

Having obtained somewhat  
of the character of an uncouth  
pretended lady.

Then I gave her many little  
kisses one after another.

Be assured, that I love you  
hugely.

EXERCISE VII.

The little boy took out all the flowers, that he  
*gióvine trásse tútto fióre, che égli*  
had in the little basket. With a pretty little mouth,  
*aréva canéstro. Con bécca,*

whose lips looked like two little rubies. | Dost thou  
*le cúi lábbro parévano — dúe rubini. | tu<sup>2</sup>*

think | that I will suffer that thou | shouldst pawn my |  
*Crédi<sup>1</sup> | che io sófferá che tu | m' impégni la |*

little gown? He conducted me through certain  
*gonnélla? E'gli míse<sup>2</sup> mi<sup>1</sup> per cértá*

remote narrow lanes. Like the little sheep that  
*fuór di máno,<sup>2</sup> stráda.<sup>1</sup> Cómé pécora, che*

come out | of the | fold, | first one, | then two, | then  
*éscono | dal | chiuso, | ad úna, | a dúe, | a*

three, | and the others remain a little timid, lowering  
*tre, | e áltra stánno tímida, atterán-*

down | their | eyes and | their | nose. Clothed | in |  
*do | gli | ócchio e | il | múso. Vestito | di |*

sackcloth, with a miserable little hat. She was  
*sácco, con — vil cappélló. E'lla éra*

somewhat slightly malicious. I have found him with a  
*alquánto malizióso. l'ó ho<sup>2</sup> trováto<sup>2</sup> lo<sup>1</sup> con*

little book in his hand. | Do not be sparing with  
*libro — máno. | Non vogliáte éssermi*

me | of a discreet little smile. The other was a child  
*avára | discrétó riso. áltro éra fanciúlló*

very small, who | was | not yet one year old.  
*piccolo, che | avéa<sup>3</sup> | non<sup>2</sup> ancóra<sup>1</sup> un<sup>4</sup> ánno<sup>5</sup> —*

Who is this contemptible little man, that has come | to  
*Chi è questo* | *uómo, che è venuto*<sup>3</sup> | *a dir*  
insult | us in our house? He had | on | his head  
*villania*<sup>4</sup> | *ci* 5 *nostra*<sup>7</sup> *casa* 7<sup>6</sup> — *Avéva* | *in* | — *capo*  
a torn little cap. Little boxes made | of | boards.  
*rotto* *berétta.* *cassone* *fatti* | *con* | *asse.*  
Accompany the little master. Thus the blind little  
*Accompagnate* *padrone.* *Così* *ciéco*  
child flatters (the) lovers. The poor little woman,  
*funzillo* *lusinga* *amante.* *vecchia,*  
having heard these words, said, Have a very  
— *udite* *questo* *paróla,* *dissè,* *Abbiáte*  
little (of) patience.  
*tánto* *pazienza.*

## CHAPTER V.

## NUMERALS.

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

<i>Uno,</i>	one ;	<i>vent' uno,</i>	} twenty-one ;
<i>due,</i>	two ;	or <i>ventino,</i>	
<i>tre,</i>	three ;	<i>ventidue,</i>	twenty-two ;
<i>quattro,</i>	four ;	<i>ventitré,</i>	twenty-three ;
<i>cinque,</i>	five ;	<i>ventiquattro,</i>	twenty-four ;
<i>sei,</i>	six ;	<i>venticinque,</i>	twenty-five ;
<i>sette,</i>	seven ;	<i>ventisei,</i>	twenty-six ;
<i>otto,</i>	eight ;	<i>ventisette,</i>	twenty-seven ;
<i>nove,</i>	nine ;	<i>vent' otto,</i>	} twenty-eight ;
<i>dieci,</i>	ten ;	or <i>ventotto,</i>	
<i>undici,</i>	eleven ;	<i>ventinove,</i>	twenty-nine ;
<i>dodici,</i>	twelve ;	<i>trenta,</i>	thirty ;
<i>trédici,</i>	thirteen ;	<i>trentino,</i>	thirty-one ;
<i>quattordici,</i>	fourteen ;	.	.
<i>quindici,</i>	fifteen ;	<i>trentotto,</i>	thirty-eight ;
<i>sedici,</i>	sixteen ;	.	.
<i>diciassette,</i>	seventeen ;	<i>quaranta,</i>	forty ;
<i>diciotto,</i>	eighteen ;	.	.
<i>diciannove,</i>	nineteen ;	<i>cinquanta,</i>	fifty ;
<i>venti,</i>	twenty ;	.	.

<i>sessanta,</i>	sixty ;	<i>mille,</i>	thousand ;
<i>settanta,</i>	seventy ;	<i>duemila,</i> or <i>dumila,</i>	} two thousand ;
<i>ottanta,</i>	eighty ;	<i>tremila,</i>	
<i>novanta,</i>	ninety ;	<i>millecento,</i> or <i>mille e cento,</i>	} eleven hun- [dred ;
<i>cento,</i>	hundred ;	<i>diecimila,</i>	
<i>duecento,</i> <i>duecento,</i> or <i>duecento,</i>	} two hundred ;	<i>centomila,</i>	hundred thous- [and ;
<i>trecento,</i>		three hundred ;	<i>milione,</i>
<i>quattrocento,</i>	four hundred ;		
. . . . .	. . . . .		

The numbers *ventisei*, *ventiseette*, *quarantasei*, *ottantaseette*, are sometimes contracted into *ventisei*, 'twenty-six'; *ventiseette*, 'twenty-seven'; *quarantasei*, 'forty-six'; *ottantaseette*, 'eighty-seven'.

*Cento*, when followed by *quaranta*, *cinquanta*, *sessanta*, *settanta*, loses its last syllable, and makes *cenquaranta*, 'one hundred and forty'; *centinquanta*, 'one hundred and fifty'; *centessanta*, 'one hundred and sixty'; *centsettanta*, 'one hundred and seventy.'

Cardinal numbers, except *uno* and its compounds, are generally of the common gender ; as,

<i>sette anni, m.,</i>	seven years ;
<i>quindici stelle, f.,</i>	fifteen stars.

The Italians make use of these numbers, instead of the ordinal, to indicate the days of the month ; and then they are preceded by the masculine articles *i* or *li* ; or by the words *ai*, *alli*, or *addi* ; as,

<b>LI</b> VENTIGUATTRO <i>Giugno,</i>	the 24th of June ;
<b>AI</b> DICIOOTTO <i>di Dicembre,</i>	on the 18th of December ;
<b>ALLI</b> QUATTORDICI <i>di Gennaio,</i>	on the 14th of January ;
<b>ADDI</b> DODICI <i>di Marzo,</i>	on the 12th of March.

EXCEPTION.

The first day of the month is indicated by the ordinal number *primo*, 'first,' preceded in like manner by *il*, *al*, or *addi*.

When they are used to indicate the hours of the day, they are preceded by the feminine article *la, le*; but then the word *óra*, 'hour'; *óre*, 'hours'; is either expressed or understood; as,

LE DÚE <i>óre</i> ,	two o'clock;
LE QUÁTTRO [ <i>óre</i> ],	four o'clock.

*U'no*, and its compounds *ventúno*, *trentúno*, &c., before feminine nouns, like other adjectives, change *o* into *a*; as,

<i>una</i> LÍBRA,	one pound;
<i>novantuna</i> RUÓTA,	ninety-one wheels.

When cardinal numbers are used as substantives, all but *tre* and those ending in *i*, are made to vary in the plural; as,

<i>dúe</i> <i>cinqui</i> ,	two fives;
<i>tre</i> <i>nóvi</i> ,	three nines.

*Mille* and *milióne*, in the plural make *mila* and *milióni*; as,

<i>dicióttó</i> MÍLA,	eighteen thousand;
<i>un milióne</i> di MILIÓNI,	a million millions.

## EXAMPLES.

*Vivéte ánni* VENZÉI. (Franc. Sacch. rim. 40.) He lived twenty-six years.

*Ne figliò* VENZÉTTE *délla stesso colóre*. (Red. Ins. 47.) It [a scorpion] brought forth twenty-seven [scorpions] of the same color.

*Déntro la città di Róma* vi sòno QUARANZÉI *chiése cardinale*. (Brun. Tes. 3. 3.) Within the city of Rome there are forty-six cardinal churches.

*Un milióne*, e OTTANZÉTTE *migliáia*, e *cinquecènte fiorini d'óro*. (Dav. Tac. Post. 429.) One million and eighty-seven thousand and five hundred gold florins.

*Avéndovi in quel concilio* CENQUARANTÓtto *vèscovi*. (Petr. Uom. ill. 82.) There being in that council one hundred and forty-eight bishops.

**CENCINQUÁNTA** *dé' suói cava-  
ntri mandò incóntra all' óste dé'  
Fiorentini.* (Giov. Vill. l. 9.)

**PIÙ** *di CENSETTÁNTA ánni  
cultivárono gli Déi senza ídolo.*  
(St. Agost. Citt. Dio. 4. 31.)

**LA** *vógliá e la ragión combat-  
tut' hángo—sétts, e SETT' ÁNNI.*  
(Petr. s. 80.)

**QUÍNDICI** *STÉLLE, che in di-  
vérse pláge—Lo ciélo avvisan  
di tanto seréno.* (Dant. Par.  
13.)

**DI** *Ferrára, LI VENTIQVÁTTRO  
GRÚGNO, Mille seicénte sétts.*  
(Bent. lett. I.)

**A'** *DI DICIÓTTO DI DICÉMBRE.*  
(Dav.)

**A'** *LLI QUATTÓRDICI DI GEN-  
NAIO.* (Macch.)

**IL** *détto ángo ADDI DÓDICI DI  
MÁRZO.* (Giov. Vill.)

**CHE** *óra è?—Sóno LE QUÁT-  
TRO.* (Class.)

**E'** *ccoti la nótta, écco LE DÚE  
ÓRE, écco le quáttro.* (Firenz.)

**TÓGLI** *ÚNA LÍBRA di castróns.*  
(Burchiell. p. 2. s. 1.)

**ÁLtre** *NOVANTÚNA RUÓTA.*  
(Dant. Conv.)

**E** *diciámo DUE CÍNGUI, due  
sétts, TRE NÓVI, perché quésti  
numerali, sempre che stánno per  
sustantívi, si declinano.* (Buom.  
Ling. Tosc. 2. 8. 13.)

**E'** *ran per número DICIÓTTO  
MÍLA.* (Bemb. Stor. 12. 176.)

**Al** *pádre Carrára rénda in  
méo nome UN MILIÓNE DI MILIÓ-  
NI di salutí.* (Red. lett. 2.)

He sent one hundred and fifty of his horsemen against the Florentine host.

They adored their gods, without idols, for more than one hundred and seventy years.

Inclination and reason have striven for seven after seven years.

Fifteen stars, which in different spheres enliven the skies with so much serenity.

Ferrara, 24th June, 1607.

On the 18th December.

On the 14th January.

On the 12th of March of the said year.

What o'clock is it?—It is four o'clock.

Behold night, behold two o'clock, behold four o'clock.

Take one pound of mutton.

Other ninety-one wheels.

And we say two fives, two sevens, three nines, because these numerals, when they stand as substantives, are declined.

They were eighteen thousand in number.

Give to father Carrara, in my behalf, a million millions of salutations.



## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

<i>Primo,</i>	first;	<i>*ventesimoprimo,</i>	} twenty-first :
<i>segundo,</i>	second;	<i>vige imoprimo</i> or	
<i>terzo,</i>	third;	<i>ventunesimo,</i>	} twenty-second ;
<i>quarto,</i>	fourth;	<i>*ventesimosegundo,</i>	
<i>quinto,</i>	fifth;	<i>vigesimosegundo,</i> or	} . . . . .
<i>sesto,</i>	sixth;	<i>ventiduesimo,</i>	
<i>setimo,</i>	seventh;		} thirtieth ;
<i>ottavo,</i>	eighth;	<i>*trentesimo,</i> or	
<i>nono,</i>	ninth;	<i>trigesimo,</i>	} thirty-first ;
<i>decimo,</i>	tenth;	<i>*trentesimoprimo,</i>	
<i>decimoprimo,</i>	} eleventh ;	<i>trigesimoprimo,</i> or	} . . . . .
<i>*undecimo</i> or			
<i>undicesimo,</i>	} twelfth ;	<i>trentunesimo,</i>	} fortieth ;
<i>decimosegundo,</i>			
<i>*duodécimo,</i>	} thirteenth;	<i>*quarantesimo,</i> or	} fiftieth ;
<i>dodécimo,</i>			
<i>dodicesimo,</i>	} fourteenth;	<i>quadragesimo,</i>	} . . . . .
<i>*decimotérzo,</i>			
<i>terzodécimo,</i> or	} fifteenth ;	<i>*cinqüantesimo,</i>	} sixtieth ;
<i>tredecimo,</i>			
<i>*decimoquarto,</i>	} sixteenth ;	<i>quingentesimo,</i>	} . . . . .
<i>quartodécimo,</i> or			
<i>quattordicesimo,</i>	} seventeenth ;	<i>*sessantesimo,</i> or	} seventieth ;
<i>*decimoquinto,</i>			
<i>quintodécimo,</i> or	} eighteenth ;	<i>settuagesimo,</i>	} . . . . .
<i>quindicesimo,</i>			
<i>*decimosésto,</i>	} nineteenth ;	<i>*ottantesimo,</i> or	} eightieth :
<i>sestodécimo,</i> or			
<i>sedicesimo,</i>	} twentieth ;	<i>ottagesimo,</i>	} . . . . .
<i>*decimoséttimo,</i>			
<i>settimodécimo,</i> or	} eighteenth ;	<i>*novantesimo,</i> or	} ninetieth ;
<i>diciassettesimo,</i>			
<i>*decimottavo,</i>	} nineteenth ;	<i>nonagesimo,</i>	} . . . . .
<i>ottodécimo,</i> or			
<i>diciottésimo,</i>	} twentieth ;	<i>centesimo,</i>	} hundredth ;
<i>*decimonono,</i>			
<i>nonodécimo,</i> or	} twentieth ;	<i>ducentesimo,</i> or	} two hundredth ;
<i>diciannovesimo,</i>			
<i>*ventésimo,</i> or	} twentieth ;	<i>dugentesimo,</i>	} three hundredth ;
<i>vigésimo,</i>			
		<i>trecentesimo,</i>	three hundredth ;
		<i>millésimo,</i>	thousandth :
		<i>millionesimo,</i>	millionth.

\* We mark with an asterisk those, amongst the different names of the same numbers, that are most in use.

The ordinal numbers from *primo* to *décimo*, and *ventésimo*, *trentésimo*, &c., before feminine nouns change *o* into *a*; and in the plural change *o* into *i*, for the masculine, and *a* into *e*, for the feminine; as,

<i>la prima</i> DONNA,	the first woman;
<i>le térze</i> PERCÔSSE,	the third stripes;
<i>la cinquantésima</i> LÉTTERA,	the fiftieth letter;
<i>i primî*</i> DÌ,	the first days:

And their compounds, *quartodécimo*, *decimoséttimo*, &c., change both the last vowel of the last, and the last vowel of the first of the two component numbers; as,

<i>la quartadécima</i> CONDIZIONE,	the fourteenth condition;
<i>la decimaséttima</i> STOLTÍZIA,	the seventeenth folly.

## EXAMPLES.

*Delle quâli LA PRIMA chiameremo Pampinea, la seconda Fiammetta, Filomena la térza, &c.* (Bocc. Introd.)

The first of whom we will call Pampinea, the second Fiammetta, the third Filomena, &c.

*Nessuno—Le seconde aspettâve nè LE TÉRZE* [percôsse.] (Dant. Inf. 18.)

None waited for the second, nor the third [stripes.]

*Fra Guittone, nella LÉTTERA che nel mio còdice è la CINQUANTÉSIMA.* (Red. annot. Ditir.)

Fra Guittone, in the letter which in my MS. copy is the fiftieth.

*E nè' DÌ PRIMI dentro al divin seno—Nascettnno.* (Bocc. Amet. 96.)

And in the first days we were born in the divine bosom.

*LA QUARTADÉCIMA CONDIZIONE, che deve avère la confessione, si è accelerata,* (Passav. 176.)

The fourteenth condition, which the confession ought to have, is that of being early.

*LA DECIMASÉTTIMA STOLTÍZIA, è di quelli che vogliono fuggire.* (Cavalc. Stolt. 228.)

The seventeenth folly, is that of those who desire to flee.

\* *Primi* is sometimes used as a substantive, and then has the signification of 'ancestors', 'parents'; as,

*Pieramente furo avèrsi — A me e a' miei primî, e a mia parte.* (Dant. Inf. 10.)

They were fiercely adverse to me, to my ancestors, and to my party.

**COLLECTIVE, DISTRIBUTIVE, AND PROPORTIONAL NUMBERS.**

**Collective.**

<u><i>Páio</i></u> ,	a pair ;	<u><i>quarantina</i></u> ,	two scores, or [forty :
<u><i>cinquina</i></u> ,	the number of five;	<u><i>cinquantina</i></u> ,	fifty, or two scores [and a half :
<u><i>settina</i></u> ,	the number of [seven ;	<u><i>sessantina</i></u> ,	three scores, or [sixty :
<u>          </u>	<u>          </u>	<u><i>settantina</i></u> ,	seventy, or three [scores and a half :
<u><i>decina</i></u> ,	ten, or half a [score ;	<u><i>ottantina</i></u> ,	four scores, or [eighty ;
<u><i>dodicina</i></u> or <u><i>dozzina</i></u> }	a dozen ;	<u><i>novantina</i></u> ,	ninety, or four [scores and a half :
<u><i>ventina</i></u> ,	a score, or twenty ;	<u><i>centináio</i></u> ,	a hundred ;
<u><i>trentina</i></u> ,	thirty, or a score [and a half :	<u><i>migliáio</i></u> ,	a thousand ;

**Distributive.**

<u><i>Una metà</i></u> ,	one half ;	<u><i>un sesto</i></u> ,	one sixth ;
<u><i>un terzo</i></u> ,	one third ;	<u><i>un sétimo</i></u> ,	one seventh ;
<u><i>un quarto</i></u> ,	one fourth ;	<u><i>un ottávo</i></u> ,	one eighth ;
<u><i>un quinto</i></u> ,	one fifth ;	<u><i>un nóno</i></u> ,	one ninth ; &c.

**Proportional.**

<u><i>Dóppio</i></u> ,	double ;	<u><i>quintuplo</i></u> ,	quintuple
<u><i>tríplo</i></u> ,	triple ;	<u><i>décuplo</i></u> ,	ten-fold ;
<u><i>quádruplo</i></u> ,	quadruple ;	<u><i>céntuplo</i></u> ,	a hundred-fold

Collective, distributive, and proportional numbers follow the rules of other adjectives.

---

\* *Treina*, *quattrina*, *setina*, *ottina* &c., are sometimes used by the It lians in common language, to express 'the number of thr. e', 'f four', 'of six', 'of eight', &c., but they have never been employed by good writers.

With numeral adjectives are generally classed the following words ; viz,

<i>ámbi,</i>	<i>ambidúe,</i>	<i>ambidúu,</i>	<i>ambidúo,</i>	} both, both of them.
<i>ámbe,</i>	<i>ambedúe,</i>	<i>ambedúu,</i>	<i>ambedúo,</i>	
<i>ámbo,</i>	<i>ambodúe,</i>		<i>ambodúo,</i>	
	<i>amendúe,</i>		<i>amendúo,</i>	
<i>amendúni,</i>				
<i>amendúne,</i>				
<i>entrámbi,</i>				

*A'mbi*, its compounds, and *amendúni*, are used in speaking of masculine objects : *ámbe*, its compounds, and *amendúne*, in speaking of feminine : the others may be used for both genders ; as,

<i>ámbi AMÁNTI,</i>	both lovers ;
<i>ambidúe SÁVJ,</i>	both sages ;
<i>ámbe LE LÚCI,</i>	both eyes ;
<i>ambedúe DÓNNE,</i>	both women ;
<i>ámbo CONVÉRSI,</i>	both turned ;
<i>ámbo LE BRÁCCIA,</i>	both arms ;
<i>amendúo GLI EMISPÉRI,</i>	both hemispheres ;
<i>amendúe LE SPÓNDE,</i>	both shores ;
<i>amendúni PÓRCI,</i>	both hogs ;
<i>amendúne CÔSE,</i>	both things, or both of them ;
<i>SOFRONIA ed OLÍNDO</i>	Sofronia and Olindo both of
<i>d'una cittàde entrámbi,</i>	the same city.

EXAMPLES.

<i>FILÉNO e TIRSI ÁMBI novélli AMÁNTI. (Vinc. Mart. rim. 4.)</i>	Philenus and Thyrsis both new lovers.
<i>L'ÚNO e l'ÁLTRO SÁVIO dicéa vèro, perciò ad ÁMBIDÚE donòe. (Nov. ant. 23.)</i>	Both sages told the truth, therefore he gave to both.
<i>E sién nel cuór puníte ÁMBE LE LÚCI—Ch'álla stráda d'amór mi fúron dúci. (Petr. c. 8.)</i>	And let the heart bear punishment for both eyes, which led me to the road of love.
<i>Allóra ÁMBEDÚE [dónne] entrárono nëlla fòssa. (Nov. ant. 35.)</i>	Then both [women] entered into the ditch.
<i>Al fíne ÁMBO CONVÉRSI al giústo séggio. (Petr. c. 48.)</i>	Finally both turned to the seat of justice.

Con AMRO LE BRACCIA mi  
prése. (Dant. Inf. 19.)

He seized me with both  
arms.

Il confine—D' AMENDÚO GLI  
EMISPÉRI. (Dant. Inf. 20.)

The confine of both hemi-  
spheres.

Per cui tremavano AMENDÚE  
LE SPÓNDE. (Dant. Inf. 9.)

On account of which both  
shores trembled.

AMENDÚNI [pórci] MÓRTI  
cáddero in térra. (Bocc. In-  
trod.)

Both [hogs] fell dead to the  
earth.

Nélla vostra elezióne sta, di  
tórre qual più vi piáce DÉLLE  
DÚZ [oóse], o AMENDÚNE.  
(Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

It is at your choice, to take  
which of the two [things] you  
like best, or both.

Colti SOFRÓNIA, OLÍNDÓ egli  
s'appélla—D' úna cittáde EN-  
TRÁMBI, e d'úna fède. (Tass.  
Ger. 2. 16.)

She is called Sofronia, he  
Olindo, both of the same city  
and of the same faith.

### EXERCISE VII.

He sent his brother with six cohorts, and five  
— Mandò suo fratéllo *coörte, e*  
hundred horsemen | to | Terra di Lavóro. He made him  
*cavállo* | in | — *fécce<sup>2</sup> Gli<sup>1</sup>*  
grieve for this sin forty days. He passed | from |  
*piángere* — *quésto peccáto* *di.* — *Passò* | *di* |  
Tunis | to | Apulia with more than eight hundred Spanish  
*Túnisi* | in | *Púglia* *Spagnuólo<sup>2</sup>*  
horsemen. Metellus was already in Lombardy | with |  
*cavalière.<sup>1</sup>* *Metéllo éra già* *Lombardia* | *cóllo* |  
his army of three legions, who was coming | from |  
*suo<sup>2</sup> óste<sup>1</sup>* *legióne, che veniva* | *di* |  
France. Being already about (to) thirty years old.  
*Francia.* *Esséndo già di préso<sup>2</sup> —<sup>3</sup>* *ánno<sup>5</sup> véccio.<sup>1</sup>*  
I have here two hundred livres, | with | which I intended  
*Io ho qui* *lira, di* | *cúí io voléva*  
to have bought a farm. And this was four hundred years  
*compráre podére.* *E ciò fu* *ánno*  
before (that) Rome | was begun. | He was of the age  
*ánti che Róma<sup>2</sup> | si cominciásse.<sup>1</sup> |* — *E'ra* — *età*

of twenty-six or twenty-seven (*years*). One hundred and  
*o* *anno.* — — —  
 seventy archers. He sent one hundred and fifty | of |  
*sagittàrio.* — *Mandò* — — — | *de'* |  
 his soldiers.  
*suo* *fante.*

They went to Messina the twenty-fourth of December.  
 — *Andarono* *Dicembre.*

He | was baptized | on the sixteenth, in St. John's. On  
 — | *Battezzossi* | *San Giovanni.*

the eighteenth of December, having heard of the insurrection  
*Dicembre,* — *udita* *rivolta*

of the legion, | he went out | (*of*) the palace dressed | in |  
*legione,* | *s' uscì* | — *palàgio vestito* | *di* |

black. The first of the month I will pay you. Come at  
*nèro.* *mése* — *pagherò*<sup>2</sup> *vi.*<sup>1</sup> *Venite a*

(*the*) six o'clock, and we will speak | of it. | He arrived  
 — *e* — *parleremo*<sup>2</sup> | *ne.*<sup>1</sup> | — *Giunse*

at Milan at (*the*) one o'clock | in | the night. At (*the*)  
*a Milano a* — | *di* | *notte.* *A*

twelve o'clock | I went to see | our ambassador.  
 — | *mi portai dal* | *noetro ambasciadore.*

It | was worth | thirty-one livres. Thou didst usurp one  
 — | *Valéva* | *lira.* — *Usurpasti* —

hundred and seventy-five thousand gold florins. | He came  
 — *d'oro*<sup>2</sup> *florino.*<sup>1</sup> | *Si*

to an agreement | | on | condition of paying sixty thousand  
*accordò* | | *con* | *condizione* *pagare*

ducats to the conquerors. Salute him | for me | a thousand  
*ducato* *vincitore.* *Salutate* *me*<sup>1</sup> | —

millions of times.  
*volta.*

Here begins the eleventh book. He arrived happily  
*Qui comincia* <sup>2</sup> *libro.*<sup>1</sup> — *Arrivò felicemente*

to the fortieth year | of | his life. Contradicting (*to*)  
*anno* | *della* *sua* *vita.* *Contradicendo*

himself in the fourteenth chapter. Boniface the Eighth  
*sè medesimo* <sup>2</sup> *capitolo.*<sup>1</sup> *Bonifazio*<sup>2</sup> — <sup>4</sup>

being Pope in Rome, the Abbé of Cligni came to the  
*Esséndo' pápa<sup>2</sup> 5 Róma,<sup>6</sup> 10 Abbáte<sup>11</sup> 12 13 vénné<sup>7</sup> 14*

court. | In | the time of the Emperor Frederic the First.  
*córté.<sup>9</sup> | A | témpo Imperatóre Federico —*

The twenty-first stanza.  
*stánza.*

He had tied both | his | feet. | I bit | both | my |  
*— Avéve legáti | i | píde. | Mi mórsi | le |*

hands through grief. They entered both | into | the garden.  
*máno per dólore. — Entrárono | in | giardíno.*

I gave it to both.  
*— ho<sup>2</sup> dáto<sup>2</sup> Lo.<sup>1</sup>*

## CHAPTER VI.

### SUBSTANTIVE PRONOUNS.

#### PERSONAL AND CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

THE Italian personal pronouns are the following :

	Singular.		Plural.
1st Person,	io, m. & f.,	I;	nói, m. & f., we;
2d Person,	tu, m. & f.,	thou;	vói, m. & f., you;
3d Person,	{ <i>égli,</i> or <i>éssó</i> , m., <i>élla,</i> or <i>éssa</i> , f.,	he;	{ <i>égli,</i> or <i>églíno</i> , or <i>éssi</i> , m., <i>élle,</i> or <i>élleno</i> , or <i>ésse</i> , f.,
		he or it;	
		she;	
		she or it;	
			they.

#### Singular and Plural.

3d Person, *sc*, m. & f., { one's self, himself, herself;  
 { itself, themselves.

Conjunctive pronouns are derived from the personal pronouns, and are divided into *conjunctive*, properly speaking, and *relative* conjunctive pronouns.

Personal pronouns are varied with the *prepositions* only.

VARIATION OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

*IO.*

SINGULAR.

		Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)	— <i>io,</i>			I ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)	— <i>di me,</i>			of me ;
	{ Attr. (D.)	— <i>a me,</i>	<i>mi,</i>		to me ;
Objective	{ Der. (Ab.)	— <i>da me,</i>			from me ;
	(Ac.)	— <i>me,</i>	<i>mi,</i>		me :

PLURAL.

		Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)	— <i>nói,</i>			we ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)	— <i>di nôi,</i>			of us ;
	{ Attr. (D.)	— <i>a nôi,</i>	<i>ne</i> or <i>ci,</i>		to us ;
Objective	{ Der. (Ab.)	— <i>da nôi,</i>			from us ;
	(Ac.)	— <i>nôi,</i>	<i>ne</i> or <i>ci,</i>		us.

*TU.*

SINGULAR.

		Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)	— <i>tu,</i>			thou ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)	— <i>di te,</i>			of thee ;
	{ Attr. (D.)	— <i>a te,</i>	<i>ti,</i>		to thee ;
Objective	{ Der. (Ab.)	— <i>da te,</i>			from thee ;
	(Ac.)	— <i>te,</i>	<i>ti,</i>		thee :

PLURAL.

		Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective.	(N.)	— <i>vói,</i>			ye or you ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)	— <i>di vói,</i>			of you ;
	{ Attr. (D.)	— <i>a vói,</i>	<i>vi,</i>		to you ;
Objective	{ Der. (Ab.)	— <i>da vói,</i>			from you ;
	(Ac.)	— <i>vói,</i>	<i>vi,</i>		you.

*EGLI.*

SINGULAR.

		Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)	— <i>egli,</i>			he ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)	— <i>di lui,</i>		<i>ne,</i>	of him ;
	{ Attr. (D.)	— <i>a lui,</i>	<i>gli</i> or <i>li,</i>		to him ;
Objective.	{ Der. (Ab.)	— <i>da lui,</i>		<i>ne,</i>	from him ;
	(Ac.)	— <i>lui,</i>	<i>il</i> or <i>lo,</i>		him :



## PLURAL.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>égli</i> or <i>églino</i> ,			they ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>di lóro</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	of them ;
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>a lóro</i> ,	<i>loro</i> ,		to them ;
	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da lóro</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	from them ;
Objective	(Ac.)— <i>lóro</i> .	<i>gli</i> or <i>li</i> ,		them.

## ESSO.

## SINGULAR.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>éssó</i> ,			he or it ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>d' éssó</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	of him or it ,
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>ad éssó</i> ,	<i>gli</i> ,		to him or it ,
	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da éssó</i> ,		<i>ne</i> .	from him or it .
Objective	(Ac.)— <i>éssó</i> ,	<i>lo</i> .		him or it :

## PLURAL.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>éssi</i> ,			they ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>d' éssi</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	of them ;
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>ad éssi</i> ,			to them ;
	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da éssi</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	from them ;
Objective	(Ac.)— <i>éssi</i> ,	<i>gli</i> or <i>li</i> ,		them.

## ELLA.

## SINGULAR.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>élla</i> ,			she ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>di léi</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	of her ;
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>a léi</i> ,	<i>le</i> ,		to her ;
	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da léi</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	from her ;
Objective	(Ac.)— <i>léi</i> ,	<i>la</i> ,		her :

## PLURAL.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>élle</i> or <i>élleno</i> ,			they ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>di lóro</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	of them ;
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>a lóro</i> ,	<i>lóro</i> ,		to them ;
	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da lóro</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	from them .
Objective	(Ac.)— <i>lóro</i> ,	<i>le</i> ,		them.

## ESSA.

## SINGULAR.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>éssa,</i>			she or it ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>d' éssa,</i>		<i>ne,</i>	of her or it ;
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>ad éssa,</i>	<i>le,</i>		to her or it ;
	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da éssa,</i>		<i>ne,</i>	from her or it ;
Objective	(Ac.)— <i>éssa,</i>	<i>la,</i>		her or it . . .

## PLURAL.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>éssc,</i>			they ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>d' ésse,</i>		<i>ne,</i>	of them ;
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>ad ésse,</i>			to them ;
	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da ésse,</i>		<i>ne,</i>	from them ;
Objective	(Ac.)— <i>éssc,</i>	<i>le,</i>		them.

## SÈ.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>sè,</i>			
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>di sè,</i>			of one's self ;
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>a sè,</i>	<i>si,</i>		to one's self ;
	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da sè,</i>			from one's self ;
Objective	(Ac.)— <i>sè,</i>	<i>si,</i>		one's self.

*Io, tu, egli, ella ; noi, voi, egli or églino, elle or elleno,* are applied to animate beings ; *éssò, éssa ; éssi, ésse ; sè,* may be applied both to animate and inanimate beings.

The pronouns *éssò, éssa,* are used sometimes to express the *self-same*, the very object of which we speak ; and then they are elegantly supplied by the words *déssò, déssa,* but in the *subjective* only ; as,

<i>in ÉSSA lúce,</i>	in that very light ;
<i>ÉSSO Messer Tedáldo,</i>	the same Messer Tedaldo ;
<i>tu non par DÉSSO,</i>	thou dost not seem thyself ;
<i>el' è ben DÉSSA,</i>	it is she, herself.

\* *Sè* is used to express a relation of identity with the subject, and has no *Subjunctive*.

In familiar conversation, the Italians very often employ *lui*, and *lei*, as subjectives, instead of *egli* and *ella*; but this usage, though authorized by some writers, ought never to be followed in the written language.

We find also in some classics *egli* and *ella*, used for *lui* and *lei*; and *elle* for *loro*; as, *memoria d' ELLA*, 'memory of her'; *e suon di man con ELLE*, 'and striking of hands with them': and *ello* for *egli* and for *lui*; *elli* for *eglino* and for *loro*; as, *ELLO passò per l'isola di Lénno*, 'he passed by the island of Lemnes'; *guardati da ELLO*, 'guard yourself against him'; *ELLI stavano pensierosi*, 'they were pensive'; *ch'alcuna gloria i réi avrébber d' ELLI*, 'for the guilty souls would derive no glory from them'; this license, nevertheless, must be left entirely to the Poets.

*La* for *ella*, *le* for *elleno*, and *gli* for *egli* and for *eglino*; as, *LA mi scusi*, 'excuse me'; *LE mi dicano*, 'tell me'; *GLI era qui*, 'he was here'; &c.; are contractions, which, however common they may be in Tuscany, and supported by the authority of several writers, are notwithstanding to be carefully avoided in the written language, especially in an elevated style of composition.

The pronouns *io*, *tu*, *egli*, *ella*, *esso*, are often used as mere expletives; as,

<i>s' io morissi, io,</i>	if I should die;
<i>tu di' tue parole, tu,</i>	thou mayest say what thou [pleasest;
<i>EGGI è una compassione a [vederlo,</i>	it excites pity to see him;
<i>ELLA non andrà così,</i>	it shall not be so;
<i>andiamo con ESSO lui,</i>	let us go with him.

*Io* is sometimes written *i'*; and *egli*, *eglino*, are contracted into *ei*, and often written *e'*; as,

<i>i' non so ridire,</i>	I cannot say;
<i>Ei debbe aver inteso,</i>	he must have heard;
<i>Ei si gittaro in sulla spiaggia,</i>	they leaped upon the shore;
<i>E' pensò,</i>	he thought;
<i>domandò chi E' fosserò,</i>	he asked who they were.

When the pronouns *me*, *te*, *se*, are preceded by the preposition *con*, 'with', we often transpose the preposi-

tion, make an elision of the *n*, and form of them a single word ; as,

<i>con me,</i>	MÉCO,	with me ;
<i>con te,</i>	TÉCO,	with thee ;
<i>con sè,</i>	SÉCO,	with one's self, himself, &c.

We find in the classics *nósco, vósco* ; used for *con nói*, 'with us', and *con vói*, 'with you'; but these expressions have become obsolete.

Italian personal pronouns are very often suppressed, the termination of the verb being sufficient to indicate the person ; as,

<i>andiamo</i> [nói] <i>a Róma,</i>	let us go to Rome ;
[égli] <i>domandò chi fóssero,</i>	he asked who they were.

The English reflexive pronouns *myself, thyself, ourselves, &c.*, are expressed in Italian by the *personal pronouns*, and the word *stéssso*, m., *stéssa*, f., or *medésimo*, m., *medésima*, f., for the singular ; and *stéssi*, m., *stésse*, f., or *medésimi*, m., *medésime*, f., for the plural ; as,

	Singular.		Plural.	
1st Per.	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \textit{io stéssso,} \\ \text{or medésimo, m.} \\ \textit{io stéssa,} \\ \text{or medésima, f.} \end{array} \right\}$	myself ;	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{nói stéssi,} \\ \text{or medésimi, m.} \\ \textit{nói stésse,} \\ \text{or medésime, f.} \end{array} \right\}$	ourselves ;
2d Per.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{tu stéssso, m.} \\ \textit{tu stéssa, f.} \end{array} \right\}$	thyself ;	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{vói stéssi, m.} \\ \textit{vói stésse, f.} \end{array} \right\}$	yourselves ;
3d Per.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{égli stéssso,} \\ \text{or éssso stéssso, m.} \\ \textit{élla stéssa,} \\ \text{or éssa stéssa, f.} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{himself,} \\ \text{or itself ;} \\ \text{herself,} \\ \text{or itself ;} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{églino stéssi,} \\ \text{or éssi stéssi, m.} \\ \textit{élleno stésse,} \\ \text{or ésse stésse, f.} \end{array} \right\}$	themselves.
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{sè stéssso, m.} \\ \textit{sè stéssa, f.} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{one's self,} \\ \text{himself,} \\ \text{herself,} \\ \text{or itself ;} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{sè stéssi, m.} \\ \textit{sè stésse, f.} \end{array} \right\}$	

## EXAMPLES.

*Vid' io in éssa lúce áltre  
lucérne.* (Dant. Par. 8.)

In that very light I saw  
other luminaries.

*Quantúnque il maggióre a  
diciott' ánni non aggiugnésse,  
quándo éssó Messér Tedáldo,  
ricchissimo vénne a mórté.*  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Although the eldest was not  
arrived to the age of eighteen,  
when this same Messer Tedal-  
do died very rich.

*TU NON mi PAR DÉSSO.*  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

Thou dost not seem to me  
thyself.

*ELL' È BEN DÉSSA, ancóra è  
in víta.* (Petr. s. 290.)

It is she herself, she is yet  
alive.

*Che farébbe égli s'fo moríssi,  
fo?* (Macch. Com.)

What would he do if I should  
die?

*TU DI' TÚE PARÓLE, TU; io  
per me non mi terrò mái sálva,  
se nói non la incantiámo.* (Bocc.  
g. 7. n. 1.)

Thou mayest say what thou  
pleasest; as for me I shall  
never consider myself safe, if  
we do not enchant her.

*E'GLI È ÚNA-COMPASSIÓNE A  
VÉDERLO.* (Macch. Com.)

It excites pity to see him.

*ELLA NON ANDRÀ COSÌ, ch' io  
non te ne pághi.* (Bocc. g. 9.  
n. 5.)

It shall not be so, that I will  
not pay you for it.

*ANDIÁMO CON ÉSSO LÚI A  
RÓMA.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Let us go to Rome with him.

*I' NON SO BEN RIDÍR com' i'  
v' entrái.* (Dant. Inf. 1.)

I cannot say how I entered  
it.

*E'I DÉBBE AVÉRE INTÉSO,  
che tu ragióni di lúí.* (Gell.  
Circ. 2. 39.)

He must have heard, that  
thou speakest of him.

*OND' ÉI SI GITTÁR tútti IN  
SÚLLA SPIÁGGIA.* (Dant. Purg.  
2.)

Wherefore they leaped all  
upon the shore.

*Laónde é' gli PENSÒ di volére  
la seguénte mattína ristoráre.*  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Therefore he thought to  
restore them on the following  
morning.

*Menáti i gentiluómini nel  
giardíno, cortesemente gli DO-  
MANDÒ, CHI É' FÓSSERO.* (Bocc.  
g. 10. n. 9.)

Having led the gentlemen  
in the garden, he courteously  
asked them, who they were.

*E in ségno di ciò, ne réco  
m'èco d'èlle sùe cose più càre.*  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

*Mio figlio ov' è, e perchè non  
è téco?* (Dant. Inf. 10.)

*Quél giòrno ch' io lasciái  
gràve, e pensósa—Madónna, e'l  
mio cor séco.* (Petr. s. 212.)

*I'o MEDÉSIMO non so quél  
ch' i' mi vóglío.* (Petr. s. 103.)

*E tu, tu stéssco, talóra a me  
usbérgo di mia glória tu sèmbri.*  
(Alf. Saul. 2. 1.)

*Ma com' è, che sì grán romór  
non suóne—Per àltri méssi, o  
per LÉI STÉSSA il sènta?* (Petr.  
s. 213.)

*Non cóme fiamma che per  
fórza è spénta,—Ma che per  
sè MEDÉSMA si consúme.* (Petr.  
Tri.)

And as a proof of this, I will  
take with me those things  
which are the most dear to her.

Where is my son, and why  
is he not with thee?

That day when I left my  
lady serious and pensive, and  
my heart with her.

I know not myself what I  
want.

And thou, thyself, sometimes  
seemest to me the shield of my  
glory.

But how is it, that so great a  
rumor does not sound through  
other messengers, or that she  
does not hear it herself.

Not like a flame which is  
extinguished by force, but like  
one which consumes itself.

## EXERCISE VIII.

I know, better than any other man, how to do  
so, — àltro uómo, — far  
that which I please. God never will have  
ciò che vóglío. Iddio mái non avrà  
mercy | on | me for this sin. Thou wilt ask  
misericórdia | di | me for this sin. Thou wilt ask  
dirái?  
her whether she wants any thing. You appear  
lel se vuól nùlla. paréte  
to be a man of God, how do you say such  
— uómo Dío, cóme — dítel cotésto  
words? Without expecting any reprehension from  
paróla? Senza atténdere — riprensione  
you. The magistrate begun to have pity  
Podestà cominciò ad avér compassiòne?

upon | her. She pleases me so much, that I  
 di | <sup>2</sup>. piáce<sup>2</sup> mi<sup>1</sup> tanto, che  
 could not express it. Having taken leave | of | him,  
 potrés<sup>2</sup> non<sup>1</sup> dir lo. — Présó commiato<sup>3</sup> | da<sup>1</sup> | <sup>2</sup>,  
 he | returned | to his house. They never return  
 sténe tornò | — cása. mái non rëndono<sup>2</sup>  
 it, and we return it | as soon as | we have  
 la<sup>1</sup>, e rendidmo<sup>2</sup> la<sup>1</sup> | cóme | — abbiámo<sup>2</sup>  
 used it. We are ready | to | do it, since  
 adoperáto<sup>3</sup> la<sup>1</sup>. siámo présti | di | fár lo, poichè  
 it pleases you. She would drive me out of the  
 — piáce<sup>2</sup> vil. scaccerbbe<sup>2</sup> mi<sup>1</sup> fuór —  
 house. I have spoken | to him | of you. We  
 edsa. ho<sup>2</sup> rãgionáto<sup>2</sup> | gli<sup>1</sup> | of you. We  
 make better work. You promised | to me | | to |  
 faciámo lavoro. promettéste<sup>2</sup> | mi<sup>1</sup> | | di |  
 let me speak | with | your wife. | Be  
 fár mi parláre | con la | vóstra<sup>2</sup> dóнна<sup>1</sup>. | Státe  
 joyful, | you are in your house. | Do not trust |  
 lietaménte, | sícte vóstra<sup>2</sup> cása<sup>1</sup>. | Non vi fidáte |  
 | to | them. They\* had all gone to church.  
 di | erano tútte andáte chiéssa.

It is he, himself. She | does not seem | | to |  
 — E' — non sémbra | | di |  
 he herself. Many years (they) have not passed.  
 ésser móltó<sup>2</sup> ánno<sup>2</sup> | sono<sup>3</sup> non<sup>2</sup> passáti<sup>4</sup>.  
 They went with him. Come with me. I | have  
 — Andáron : Veníte non  
 nothing | to do with thee. We have seen them  
 ho níente | a fár — abbiámo<sup>2</sup> vedúti<sup>2</sup> Gli<sup>1</sup>  
 ourselves. She herself has brought | them | to me.  
 — ha<sup>3</sup> portáto<sup>4</sup> | le<sup>2</sup> | Me<sup>1</sup>.  
 Thou hast said it thyself. They began to  
 — hái<sup>2</sup> ditto<sup>2</sup> Lo<sup>1</sup> — cominciarono<sup>2</sup> a<sup>4</sup>  
 speak amongst themselves.  
 ragionáre<sup>2</sup> Séco<sup>2</sup> <sup>2</sup>.

\* They, in the feminine gender.

*Conjunctive Pronouns.*

	Singular.		Plural.	
1st Per.	<i>mi</i> , m. & f.,	{ to me ; me ;	} <i>ne</i> or <i>ci</i> , m. & f., { to us ; us ;	
2d Per.	<i>ti</i> , m. & f.,	{ to thee ; thee ;	} <i>vi</i> , m. & f., { to you ; you ;	
3d Per.	{ <i>gli</i> or <i>li</i> ,* m., <i>il</i> or <i>lo</i> ,* m., <i>le</i> ,* f., <i>la</i> ,* f.,	{ to him or it ; him or it ; to her or it ; her or it ;	{ <i>loro</i> , m., <i>gli</i> or <i>li</i> ,* m., <i>loro</i> , f., <i>le</i> ,* f.,	{ to them ; them ; to them ; them.

Singular and Plural.

3d Per.	{ <i>si</i> , m. & f.,	{ to one's self, to himself, to herself, to itself or to themselves ;	{ <i>si</i> , m. & f.,	{ one's self, himself, herself, itself or themselves ;
	{ <i>ne</i> , m. & f.,	{ of him or it, of her or it, of them ;	{ <i>ne</i> , m. & f.,	{ from him or it, from her or it, from them.

*Mi*, *ti*, *ne* or *ci*, *vi*, are applied to animate beings only; the others may be applied both to animate and inanimate beings.

Conjunctive pronouns take the place of personal pronouns, when these pronouns are in the *objective* or *relation of attribution*, and are closely connected with a verb; as,

<i>MI</i> <i>potete</i> <i>torre</i> [for <i>potete</i> <i>torre</i> A <i>ME</i> ],	you can take away from me;
<i>non</i> <i>TI</i> <i>possono</i> <i>muovere</i> [for <i>non</i> <i>possono</i> <i>muovere</i> <i>TE</i> ],	they cannot move thee;
<i>NE</i> <i>sarebbe</i> <i>gran</i> <i>biasimo</i> [for <i>sarebbe</i> A <i>NOI</i> <i>gran</i> <i>biasimo</i> ],	it would be in us a great fault;

\* The pronouns *il*, *lo*, *la*, *li*, *gli*, *le*, appear, in orthography, to be the same words as the articles *il*, *lo*, *la*, *li*, *gli*, *le*. The learner, however, will observe, that when the words *il*, *lo*, &c., are followed by a noun, a verb in the infinitive mood, or any other word used as a noun, they are always articles; but when they are followed by a verb in a tense of the *indicativo*, the *congiuntivo*, or the *condizionale* mood, or when they are joined to a verb, they are always *conjunctive* pronouns.



CI <i>ha guidàti</i> [for <i>ha guidàti</i> <i>nòs</i> ],	it has guided us ;
GLI <i>venne a memòria</i> [for <i>ven-</i> <i>ne a memòria a lui</i> ],	there came into his mind ;
LI <i>si era mostràto</i> [for <i>si era</i> <i>mostràto a lui</i> ],	he had shown himself to him ;
LI <i>condànni</i> [for <i>condànni</i> <i>loro</i> ],	it should condemn them ;
IL <i>chiamò</i> [for <i>chiamò lui</i> ],	she called him ;
LO <i>avésse fàtto dolénte</i> [for <i>avésse fàtto lui dolénte</i> ],	it had afflicted him ;
LA <i>mandò</i> [for <i>mandò lei</i> ],	he sent her ;
LE <i>potésse tornàre</i> [for <i>potésse</i> <i>tornàre a lei</i> ],	it might cause her ;
LE <i>donerò</i> [for <i>donerò loro</i> ],	I will give them ;
<i>era paràto loro</i> [for <i>era pa-</i> <i>ràto a loro</i> ],	it had seemed to them ;
SI <i>véde davànti</i> [for <i>véde da-</i> <i>vànti a sè</i> ],	he sees before him ;
SI <i>lasciò cadére</i> [for <i>lasciò ca-</i> <i>dére sè</i> ],	she let herself fall ;
MI <i>pià:: di parlàrne</i> [for <i>pià-</i> <i>ce : me di parlàre di éssò</i> ],	it pleases me to speak of it ;
A <i>quàn'i ne giacévamo</i> [for a <i>quàn'ti di loro giacévamo</i> ],	from as many of them as were abed.

If the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, li, lo, le, la, si, ne*, are followed by a verb beginning with a *vowel*, they commonly lose the *i* and take an apostrophe in its stead ; as,

M' <i>ha ròtto</i> ,	he has bruised me ;
C' <i>immdlle</i> ,	thou suckest us ;
L' <i>offendéva</i> ,	he offended them ;
N' <i>avrémmo</i> ,	we should have from him.

When they are preceded by a verb they are joined to it so as to form one single word ; as,

<i>donàrmi</i> ,	to give me ;
<i>pàrverti</i> ,	it appeared to thee ;
<i>mandàrlo</i> ,	to send him ;

*bisognándogli,*  
*dicéndoli,*

he being in want ;  
telling him.

In using the pronouns *il, lo, li, gli, la, le,* we follow the rules already given with regard to the articles *il, lo, la,* 'the' ; as,

*IL consénti,*  
*chi LO scrisse,*  
*L' amerò,*  
*GLI aspettáva,*

thou consentest to it ;  
he who wrote it ;  
I will love him ;  
he expected them.

The pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, si, ne,* are often used as mere expletives ; as,

*io MI sòno,*  
*se tu TI hai posto mente,*  
*s'empres che tu CI viverai,*  
*ciò che vói VI dite,*  
*SI uscì del palággio,*  
*che NE fússe del buon*  
*uòmo,*

I am ;  
whether thou hast minded ;  
as long as thou livest ;  
what you say ;  
he went out the palace ;  
what had become of the good  
man.

EXAMPLES.

*Vói MI POTÉTE TÓRRE quánto*  
*téngo, e DONÁRMI, siccome vostro*  
*uòmo a chi vi piácc. (Bocc. g.*  
*3. n. 9.)*

You can take away from me  
all I have, and give me, like  
one of your men, to whomso-  
ever it pleases you.

*S'égli PARVETI il fáullo mio*  
*così gránde, che NON TI RÓSSONO*  
*MUÓVERE a pietáte alcuna le*  
*amáre lágrime, nè gli úmili*  
*priégghi, muóvati alméno quésto*  
*sólo mio ótto. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)*

If my fault appeared to thee  
so great, that neither my bitter  
tears, nor my humble prayers,  
can move thee to pity, at  
least let this single act of mine  
move thee.

*Il MANDÁRLO fuóri di càsa*  
*nóstra così inférmo NE SARÉBBE*  
*GRAN BIÁSIMO. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)*

To send him out of our house,  
so infirm as he is, would be in  
us a great fault.

*Il vostro sénno, piú che il*  
*nóstro avvediménto, CI HA GUI-*  
*DÁTI. (Bocc. Intr.)*

Your wisdom, more than our  
foresight, has guided us.

*BISOGNÁNDOLI úna búona*  
*quantità di danári, GLI VÉNNE*  
*A MEMÓRIA un ricco Giudéo.*  
*(Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)*

Being in want of a good sum  
of money, there came into his  
mind a rich Jew.

*Il seguente di apparve per visione Cristo a Ruberto, DICENDOLI, che in forma di lebbroso LI SI ERA MOSTRATO, volendo provare la sua pietà. (Giov. Vill. l. 4. e. 18.)*

*O LI CONDANNI a sempiterno piante. (Petr. s. 214.)*

*Assai volte invano IL CHIAMÒ. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 6.)*

*Se d'una cosa sola non LO AVESSE la fortuna FATTO DOLENTE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)*

*Ad una lor possessione LA NE MANDÒ. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 7.)*

*Cominciò a dubitare, non quel suo guardar così fiso movesse la sua rusticità ad alcuna cosa, che vergogna LE POTÉSSE TORNARE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)*

*S' elle vi piacciono, io LE VI DONERÒ. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)*

*Nè ERA ancora LOR PARUTO alcuna volta, tanto gaiamente cantar gli usignuoli, quanto quella mattina paréna. (Bocc. g. 7. Proem.)*

*DAVANTI SI VÉDE dúe, che verso lui com' una lanterna in mano venieno. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)*

*E'ssa sopra il seno del Conte SI LASCIÒ con la testa CADERE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)*

*E'gli MI PIACE DI PARLARNE. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)*

*E'gli, pianamente andando, A QUANTI NE GIACÉVANO, a tutti in simil maniera tagliò i capelli. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 2.)*

*M' HA con un bastone tutto RÓTTO. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)*

The following day, Christ appeared in a vision to Robert, saying to him, that he had shown himself to him in the form of a leper, to try his pity.

Or it should condemn them to eternal woe.

She called him many times in vain.

If fortune had not afflicted him in one thing alone.

He sent her to a farm of theirs.

She began to doubt, lest her looking so fixedly should move his uncouthness to do something, which might cause her shame.

If you like them, I will give them to you.

Nor had it ever seemed to them, that the nightingales had at any time sung so cheerfully, as they appeared to do that morning.

He sees before him two persons, who came towards him with a lantern in their hands.

She let her head fall on the bosom of the Count.

It pleases me to speak of it

He, walking softly, from as many of them as were abed, cut a tuft of hair in the same manner.

He has bruised me all over with a stick.

*E nell' eterna pói s' mal  
c'immólle.* (Dant. Inf. 12.)

And in the eternal [life]  
thus miserably thou suckest us.

*Dicéndo che quéllo che dovéa  
difenderlo l'offendéva.* (Fav.  
Esop. 67.)

Saying that he who ought to  
have defended them, offended  
them.

*Se égli sapésse lavorár l'órto,  
io mi créda, che nói n'avrémmo  
buón servigio.* (Bocc. g. 3. n.  
1.)

If he knew how to cultivate  
the garden, I believe that we  
should have from him good  
service.

*Nè tu il consénti, Amóre.*  
(Tass. Ger. 2. 15.)

Nor thou dost consent to it,  
O Love.

*Galeótto fu il libro, e chi lo  
scrísse.* (Dant. Inf. 5.)

The book, and he who wrote  
it, were [to us] Galeotto.

*Po ho amáto, ed ámo Guiscár-  
do, e quánto viverò l'amerò.*  
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

I have loved, and love Guis-  
cardo, and will love him as  
long as I live.

*GLI ASPETTÁVA.* (Bocc. g.  
3. n. 7.)

He expected them.

*Io mi sóno un póvero pella-  
gríno.* (Bocc. Filoc. 1. 5.)

I am a poor pilgrim.

*Po non so, se tu t'hái fósto  
ménte, cóme nói siámo tenúte  
strétte.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

I know not, whether thou  
hast minded, how close we are  
kept.

*Con tào dånno ti ricorderái,  
sémpré che tu ci viverái, del  
nóme mio.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 4.)

To thy sorrow thou wilt re-  
member my name, as long as  
thou livest.

*Andáte, gocciólóni; vói non  
sapéte ciò che vói vi díte.*  
(Bocc. g. 6. n. 6.)

Go away, fools; you do not  
know what you say.

*DEL PALÁGIO s'uscì, e fug-  
gió a càsa.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

He went out the palace,  
and fled to his house.

*La donna se ne vénne, e del  
buón uómo domandò, che ne  
fósse.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

The woman came, and asked  
what had become of the good  
man.

When the pronouns *mi, ti, gli, ne* or *ci, vi, si,* are immediately followed by the pronouns *lo, la, gli, li, le, ne,* they are generally united and form a single word; as,

*mi lo, MÉLO,* him or it to me; *ci li, CÉLI,* them to us;

*ti la, TÉLA,* her or it to thee; *vi gli, VÉGLI,* them to you.

*Union of the Pronouns MI, TI, GLI, NE or CĪ, VI, SI,  
with the Pronouns LO, LA, GLI, LI, NE.*

MI, to me ;

<i>mi lo,</i>	(inviáte) MÉLO,*	(send) him or it to me ;
<i>mi la,</i>	(mostráte) MÉLA,	(show) her or it to me ;
<i>mi gli, mi ti, mi le,</i> }	(prestáte) { MÉGLI, MÉLI, MÉLE, }	(lend) them to me ;
<i>mi ne,</i>	(dáte) MÉNE,	{ (give) to me of it, or to me of them ; some of it, [or some of them.]

TI, to thee ;

<i>ti lo,</i>	TÉLO* (invió),	(I send) him or it to thee ;
<i>ti la,</i>	TÉLA (móstro),	(I show) her or it to thee ;
<i>ti gli, ti li, ti le,</i> }	TÉGLI } TÉLI } (présto), TÉLE }	(I lend) them to thee ;
<i>ti ne,</i>	TÉNE (do),	{ (I give) to thee of it, or to [thee of them ; &c.]

GLI, to him or her ;

<i>gli lo,</i>	GLIÉLO (invia),	{ (he sends) him or it to him [or her ;
<i>gli la,</i>	GLIÉLA (móstra),	{ (he shows) him or it to him [or her ;
<i>gli li, gli le,</i> }	GLIÉLI } (présta), GLIÉLE }	{ (he lends) them to him or [her ;
<i>gli ne,</i>	{ GLIÉNE } (dà), —LÉNE }	{ (he gives) to him or her of it, or to him or her of them ; —to her of it, or to her of [them ; &c.]

\* Some writers use these pronouns, with exception of *gliúlo*, &c., separate ;—  
ME LO SE LO, NE LO or CE LO, &c.

NE OR CI, to us ;

<i>ne lo,</i> OR <i>ci lo,</i> }	(inviáte) {	NÉLO OR CÉLO, }	(send) him or it to us ;
<i>ne la,</i> OR <i>ci la,</i> }	(mostráte) {	NÉLA, OR CÉLA, }	(show) her or it to us ;
<i>ne gli,</i> OR <i>ci gli,</i> <i>ne li,</i> OR <i>ci li,</i> <i>ne le</i> OR <i>ci le,</i> }	(prestáte) {	NÉGLI, OR CÉGLI, NÉLI, OR CÉLI, NÉLE, OR CÉLE, }	(lend) them to us ;
<i>ci ne,</i>	(dáte) CÉNE,		{ (give) to us of it, or to us [of them ; &c.

VI, to you ;

<i>vi lo,</i>	VÉLO (inviámo),	(we send) him or it to you ;
<i>vi la,</i>	VÉLA (mostríamo),	(we show) her or it to you ;
<i>vi gli,</i> <i>vi li,</i> <i>vi le,</i>	VÉGLI } VÉLI } VÉLE }	(prestíamo), (we lend) them to you ;
<i>vi ne,</i>	VÉNE (diámo),	{ (we give) to you of it, or [to you of them ; &c.

SI, to one's self ;

<i>si lo,</i>	SÉLO (inviano),	{ (they send) him or it to [themselves ;
<i>si la,</i>	SÉLA (mostrano),	{ (they show) her or it to [themselves ;
<i>si gli,</i> <i>si li,</i> <i>si le,</i>	SÉGLI } SÉLI } SÉLE }	(prestano), { (they lend) them to them- [selves ;
<i>si ne,</i>	SÉNE (dánno),	{ (they give) to themselves of it, or to themselves of [them ; &c.

*Mélo, télo, gliélo, nélo or célo, vélo, sélo, &c.,* before a verb beginning with a consonant, except *s*, and *s* followed by another consonant, often drop the *o* :

and before a verb beginning with a *vowel*, drop the *e* and take an apostrophe in its stead ; as,

MEL disse,	he told it to me ;
TEL trarrò,	I will draw it for you ;
- non gliél celái,	I did not conceal it from him ;
gliél' apérsi,	I revealed it to him ;
CEL' avéte fátta,	you have deceived us ;
SEN' entrò,	she entered.

When the pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, gli, le, &c.*, are preceded by the adverb *écco*, 'behold', they form with this a single word ; as,

<i>éccomi,</i>	behold me ;
<i>éccoci,</i>	behold us ;
<i>éccole,</i>	behold them.

When the pronoun *lo* is preceded by the adverb *non*, 'no, not', it is, more elegantly, changed into *il* and joined with the adverb in a single word ; as,

<i>non il,</i>	<i>NOL véde,</i>	she does not see him ;
<i>non il,</i>	<i>NOL négo,</i>	I do not deny it.

## E X A M P L E S.

*Tu di' di fármelo vedére né' vívi.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 4.)

Thou sayest, that thou wilt make me see it amongst the living.

*MEL disse il pádre mio, ch'io mi guardássi — Di por già mái nella Messénia il piéde.* (Maff. Mer. 3. 4.)

My father told me, that I should take care never to set my foot in Messenia.

*Per vedér fáre il tómo a qué' maccheróni, e tórmené una sáttólla.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

To see those *maccaroni* falling down, and give myself a bellyful.

*Senza alcún maéstro io TEL TRARRÒ ottimaménte.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)

Without any master, I will draw it for you very well.

*Io non méne maraviglio, né TÉNE so ripigliáre.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

I do not wonder at it, nor do I know how to reprove you for it.

*Io ch'era d'ubbidir disideroso*  
—NON GLIÉL CELÁI ma tutto  
GLIÉL' APÉRSI. (Dant. Inf.  
10.)

*Gli amici nói abbiámo quáli*  
CÉGLI eleggiámo. (Bocc. g.  
10. n. 8.)

*La donna udéndo quésto, e*  
*dopo mólte riconfermazioni*  
*fátteleNE dal Zéppa, credéndolo,*  
*disse.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.)

*Vedéndo l'uómo la semplicità*  
*del fanciullo* GLIÉNE vénnac  
*pietà.* (Matt. Vill. 10. 30.)

*Vói CEL' AVÉTE FÁTTA.*  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

*Quánte CÉNE vedéte vói, le*  
*óui bellézze sicn fatte cóme le*  
*mís?* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

*Cóme quésto avvenúto mi sia,*  
*brieveménte VEL farò chiáro.*  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 4.)

*Mi piáce di fárVENE piú*  
*chiáre con úna piccòla novellétta.*  
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

*In procésso di témpo SE LE*  
*riprése.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 3.)

*SEN' ENTRÒ nélla casa del*  
*póver uómo.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

*Lo scoláre, accostátosi all'ú-*  
*scio, disse: "E'CCOMI quí, ma-*  
*dónna."* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

*E'CCOLE, che élla medésima*  
*piangéndo mel' ha riportáto.*  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

*E'lla o lo sprézza, o nol véde,*  
*e non s'arvéde.* (Tass. Ger. 2.  
16.)

*Io nol póssò negár, e nol*  
*wéco.* (Petr. s. 202.)

I, who was desirous of obey-  
ing, did not conceal it, but re-  
vealed to him all.

We have such friends as we  
choose them for us.

The lady hearing this, and  
after many confirmations of it  
made to her by Zeppa, believ-  
ing it, said.

The man seeing the sim-  
plicity of the boy, took pity up-  
on him.

You have deceived us.

How many of them do you  
see, whose beauties are such  
as mine?

How this happened to me,  
I will explain to you briefly.

It pleases me to make you  
more conscious of it, with a  
small tale.

In the progress of time he  
took them back.

She entered in the house of  
the poor man.

The scholar, coming to the  
door, said: "Behold me here,  
madam."

Behold them, which she her-  
self weeping has brought back  
to me.

She either despises him, or  
does not see him, or does not  
understand.

I cannot deny it, and do not  
deny it.



## EXERCISE IX.

But what wishest thou that I should say to her  
*Ma che vuoi che dica<sup>2</sup> I*

for you, if it happens that I should speak  
*da tua parte, se avviene che favelli<sup>2</sup>*

to her? They will rob us, and perhaps will take  
*I ? — ruberanno<sup>2</sup> I, e<sup>3</sup> forse<sup>4</sup> terranno<sup>6</sup>*

(to us) even our life. I will lodge you  
*I anche la vita. albergherò<sup>2</sup> I*

willingly, as I can. The youth told him every  
*volentieri, come potrò. giovanetto disse<sup>2</sup> ogni*

thing. I will pardon him willingly, and pardon  
*cosa. — perdonerò<sup>3</sup> Volentieri<sup>1</sup>, e<sup>4</sup> perdonerò<sup>7</sup>*

him now. He gave to him his benediction,  
*I ora<sup>5</sup>. — Diede la sua benedizione,*

holding him for a very holy man. How does  
*tenendo santo uomo. Che*

it appear to thee? Have I well kept my  
*pare<sup>2</sup> I ? ho<sup>2</sup> 3 ben<sup>4</sup> servata<sup>5</sup> la<sup>6</sup>*

promise to you? My brother writes to me, that  
*promessa<sup>7</sup> I ? mio<sup>3</sup> fratello<sup>4</sup> Scrive<sup>1</sup>, che*

without any fail, I should send to him one thousand  
*senza alcun fallo, I abbia mandati<sup>2</sup> I —*

gold florins; otherwise his head will be cut off  
*d'oro<sup>2</sup> fiorino<sup>1</sup>; se non<sup>2</sup> la<sup>7</sup> testa<sup>6</sup> sarà tagliata<sup>6</sup>*

(to him.) I have not deceived you to deprive  
*I ho<sup>2</sup> non<sup>1</sup> ingannata<sup>4</sup> 2 per tor*

you of your property. Certainly although thou  
*— il vostro. Certo quantunque*

affirmest it, I do not believe that thou believest  
*affermi<sup>2</sup> I, 3 non credo<sup>4</sup> che<sup>5</sup> 6 creda<sup>5</sup>*

it. Having turned himself to his wife, he  
*7. — Volto — la moglie, —*

asked her if she had had them. If thou dost  
*domandò<sup>2</sup> I se<sup>2</sup> — avesso<sup>6</sup> avuti<sup>4</sup> 5. Se non*

not do it, thou wilt repent thyself of it so many  
*fai<sup>2</sup> lo<sup>1</sup>, 3 pentrai<sup>3</sup> 4, 5 tante*

times, that thou wilt die of it.  
*volte, che vorrà morire<sup>2</sup> I.*

He granted it to him freely. I want to go  
 — *concedéit*<sup>3</sup>      <sup>2</sup>      *Liberaménte*<sup>1</sup>. — *Vóglío andáre*

| and | tell him, that he | should go away. | Leave  
 | *a* | *dir*      <sup>1</sup>, *che* | *séne váda.* | *LásCIA*      <sub>—</sub>

me, I beg it of thee (thee of it). That which he  
 , *prégo*<sup>3</sup> — — — |      *Quéllo che*

afterwards said to me, I do not dare to tell it to  
*póí dísse*<sup>2</sup>      <sup>1</sup>,      *non óso dir*      <sub>—</sub>

you, if first you do not pardon me. The song  
 , *se prima* — — — *non perdonáte*<sup>2</sup>      <sup>1</sup>.      <sup>2</sup> *canzón*<sup>3</sup>

being finished, the master said: "What dost thou think  
 — *Final*<sup>1</sup>,      *maestro dísse*: "*Che* — — —

of it (does it appear to thee of it)?"      You did not  
 — — — — — *páre*<sup>2</sup>      <sup>1</sup>      <sup>2</sup>      *non*

believe it, when I told it to you. Having kept  
*credeváte*<sup>3</sup>      <sup>1</sup>, *quándo*<sup>2</sup>      *dissi*<sup>3</sup>      <sup>4</sup>.      *Avéndo*      *serbáti*<sup>2</sup>

them full a year | to | return them to him, I gave  
*gli*<sup>1</sup> *ben*<sup>2</sup>      <sup>4</sup>      *ánno*<sup>6</sup> | *per*<sup>6</sup> | *réndere*<sup>7</sup>      <sup>9</sup>      <sup>8</sup>,      <sup>10</sup> *diéti*<sup>12</sup>

them away for the love of God. Behold me; what  
<sup>11</sup> — — — — — *amór*      *Dio.*      ; *che*

| do you want | of | me?      Behold one (of them),  
 | *voléte* | *da* | ?      <sup>1</sup> *úna*<sup>3</sup>      <sup>2</sup>

behold another of them.  
<sup>1</sup> *un'altra*<sup>3</sup>      <sup>2</sup>.

RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE  
 PRONOUNS.

*Relative Pronouns.*

Singular and Plural.

*Chi*, m. & f. who, he or she that, they that;

*che*, m. & f. } who, which, that;  
*cúí*, m. & f. }

Singular.

Plural.

*quále*, m. & f.      who, which,      *quáli*, m. & f.

*Chi* refers to persons only; *che*, *cúí*, *quále*, both to persons and things.

*Che* is chiefly used in the *subjective*, and *cui* in all other relations, but the *subjective*; *chi*, *quále*, are used in all their relations; as,

CHI <i>offende, ódia,</i>	he that offends, hates;
A CHI <i>non si mette navi- gándo,</i>	to him who does not set him- self navigating;
quella, CHE <i>io cerco,</i>	she, whom I seek;
gli occhi DI CHE <i>io parlai,</i>	the eyes of which I spoke;
A CUI <i>si ammógia,</i>	to which she unites herself;
DACUI <i>fósse l'ingiúria ri- cevíta,</i>	from whom the offence was received;
IL QUÁLE <i>era piacevole giovane,</i>	who was an agreeable young man;
presso ÁLLA QUÁLE <i>sta ri- pósto un dilettevole píano,</i>	near which should be situated a delightful plain;
uno DE' QUÁLI <i>era chiamá- to Panfílo,</i>	one of whom was called Pam- philus;
i nómi DELLE QUÁLI <i>rac- conteréti,</i>	whose names I would relate.

*Cui* is generally used instead of *chi*, *che*, *quále*; as,

non guardándo <i>cui</i> [or CHI]	not minding whom she jeered;
<i>motteggiásse,</i>	
coléi, <i>cui</i> [or CHE] <i>égli amá- va,</i>	she, whom he loved;
coléi, <i>cui</i> [or IL QUÁLE]	he, whom I killed.
<i>to uccísi,</i>	

*Che* is sometimes used instead of *quále*; as,

un cavalíer, CHE [or IL QUÁ- LE] <i>Itália onóra,</i>	a knight, whom Italy honors;
la miséria ìn CHE [or NÉL- LA QUÁLE] <i>era venúta,</i>	the misfortune into which she had fallen:

Sometimes it is used with the article *il*, in the signifi-  
cation of *la quál cosa*, 'which thing'; as,

IL CHE [or LA QUÁL <i>cósa</i> ]	which thing displeased them;
<i>dispiacque loro,</i>	
BEL CHE <i>avvedútosí,</i>	which thing he having ob- served.

Sometimes it is used in the signification of *cósa*, 'thing'; *che cósa*, 'what thing'; as,

<i>un bel CHE</i> [or <i>una bella cósa</i> ],	a fine thing;
<i>senzà saper CHE</i> [or <i>CHE cósa</i> ] <i>speràre</i> ,	without knowing what thing to hope:

And sometimes it is equivalent to the English pronoun 'what' only; as,

<i>CHE dolore io sento</i> ,	what pain I feel;
<i>CHE ciànce tu dì</i> ,	what stories thou tellest.

*Che* before a vowel drops the *e*, and takes an apostrophe in its stead; as,

<i>CH' ègli è usàto</i> ,	which is wont;
<i>dì CH' io parlài</i> .	of which I spoke.

*Quàle* is sometimes used instead of *chi*; as,

<i>fòlle è QUÀLE</i> [or <i>CHI</i> ] <i>créde</i> ,	foolish is he who believes;
<i>QUÀLE</i> [or <i>CHI</i> ] <i>più possiède</i> ,	he who [possesses] has more:

And sometimes it is equivalent to the English pronoun 'what'; as,

<i>QUÀLE fòsse la cagione</i> ,	what the cause was;
<i>QUÀLE fòsse l' ànimo di léi</i> ,	what her mind was.

*Quàle*, unless followed by *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant, in the singular drops the *e*; and in the plural makes *quái*, and *quá'*, as,

<i>QUÁL amore</i> ,	what love;
<i>la QUÁL cósa</i> ,	which thing;
<i>i QUÁI vizi</i> ,	which vices;
<i>dalle QUÁ' lettere</i> ,	to which letters.

To avoid the ambiguity, which would arise in Italian, from the inversion of the different words of a sen-

tence, when the pronouns *che*, *quale*, refer to the *object* of the proposition, they are changed for the pronoun *cui*. Thus the phrase, 'the city which the wood conceals', if 'city' is the *subject* of the proposition, is rendered *la città CHE* or *la QU'LE il bosco ascónde*, 'the city which conceals the wood'; but if 'city' is the *object* of the proposition, then it is rendered *la città CUI il bosco ascónde*, 'the city which the wood conceals';

as,

<i>l'uomo CHE Dio non teme,</i>	the man who does not fear God;
<i>l'uomo CUI sonno piglia,</i>	a man who is seized by sleep.

Instead of *di cui*, *del* or *della quale*, *dai* or *delle quali*; *da cui*, *dál quale*; *con cui*, *col quale*; *per cui*, *per lo quale*, &c., we often find used the adverb *onde*, which then assumes the nature of a relative pronoun; as,

<i>queli sospiri ONDE [or DI CUI] lo nutriva il cuore,</i>	those sighs with which I nourished my heart;
<i>nella prigione ONDE [or DALLA QU'ALE] è sciolta,</i>	in the prison from which she is released;
<i>ogni laccio ONDE [or COL QU'ALE] il mio core è avvinto,</i>	every tie with which my heart is bound;
<i>quello usciuolo ONDE [or PER LO QU'ALE] era entrato,</i>	that little door through which he had entered.

Before a vowel, *onde* drops the *e*, and takes an apostrophe instead of it; as,

<i>OND' io,</i>	of which I;
<i>OND' era,</i>	through which he [was] had.

*Chi*, *che*, *cui*, are varied with the *prepositions only*; *quale* is varied both with the *prepositions* and the *article il* or *la*, 'the', according to the gender of the object it refers to.

The prepositions *di*, *a*, are often elegantly suppressed before *cú*; as,

*in casa [di] cú era mórtó,* in whose house he had died ;  
*vó* [a] *cú fortuna ha pósto* you, into whose hands fortune  
*in máno il fréno,* has put the reins.

## E X A M P L E S.

CHI OFFÉNDE, ÓDIA, e non diméntica. (Dav. Vit. Agr.)

He that offends, hates, and does not forget.

Quél piacere, CH' ÉGLI È USÁTO di dáre a CHI tróppo NON SI MÉTTE nē súbi pélaghi NAVIGÁNDO. (Bocc. Proem.)

That pleasure, which it is wont to give to him who does not set himself navigating too much through its seas.

QUÉLLA, CH'FO CÉRCO e non ritróvo in térra. (Petr. s. 34.)

She whom I seek, and do not find on earth.

GLI ÓCCHI DI CH'FO PARLÁI sí caldaménte. (Petr. s. 251.)

The eyes of which I spoke so warmly.

Mólti son gli animáli a CÚI SI ANNÓGLIA. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

Many are the animals to which she unites herself.

Nélla ménte ritornándosi chi égli éra, e qual FÓSSE L'INGIÚRIA RICEVÚTA, e perché, e DA CUI. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Revolving in his mind, who he was, and what the offence received was, and why, and from whom received.

Dionéo, IL QUÁLE, óltre ad ógni áltro, ÉRA PIACÉVOL GIÓVANE. (Bocc. Introd.)

Dionéo, who was agreeable beyond every óther young man.

Una montágná áspra ed értá, PRÉSSO ÁLLA QUÁLE UN BELSÍSSIMO píano e dílettévole sta ripósto. (Bocc. Introd.)

A mountain rough and steep, near which is situated a very beautiful and delightful plain.

DÉ' QUÁLI ÚNO ÉRA chia-  
máto PAMFÍLO. (Bocc. Introd.)

One of whom was called Pamphilus.

Sétte giòvani dónná, I NÓMI DÉLLE QUÁLI to in própria fórma racconteréi. (Bocc. Introd.)

Seven young women, whose names I would relate in their true form.

NON GUARDÁNDO CÚI NOTTEGGIÁSSE, credéndo vincere fu rínta. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 10.)

Not minding whom she jeered, believing to conquer she was conquered.

COLÉI marítándo, CÚI EGLI AMÁVA. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)

Marrying her, whom he loved.

COLÙI, CÙI IO UCCISI.  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

*Sopra il monte Tarpéo, can-  
zón, vedrài—UN CAVALIÉR, CH'  
ITALIA TUTTA ONÓRA.* (Petr. c.  
6.)

*Diana, che conoscerà LA MI-  
SÉRIA IN CHE Biancafióre ERA  
VENUTA, temperò le sùe ire con  
giusto fréno.* (Bocc. Filoc. l.  
4.)

*Avévan sentito perché présa  
la Ninétta fósse; IL CHE fórte  
DISPIACQUE LÓRO.* (Bocc. g. 4.  
n. 3.)

*DEL CHE AVVEDÚTOSI Mar-  
cello, disse.* (Dav. Stor. l. 4.)

*Mi paréva UN BEL CHE l'és-  
serne fuóra.* (Bern. rim. l. 74.)

*La giovane présa buono augú-  
rio d' avér quéstò nóme. udíto,  
e cominciò a SPERAR SÉNZA  
SAPÉR CHE.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

*Dio il sa, CHE DOLÓRE IO  
SÉNTO.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

*Po non so che Andreuccio, né  
CHE CIANCE SON quelle, che TU  
dí.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

*FÓLLE È QUÁL CRÉDE, che  
per súi consigli muóver pòssa  
l'órdine del ciélo.* (Dittam.)

*QUÁL PIÙ gÉnte POSSIÉDE—  
Colúì è piú da' súi nemici av-  
vólto.* (Petr. c. 29.)

*Laónde fátto chiamáre il  
Siniscalco, e domandáto QUÁL  
FÓSSE del romóre LA CAGIÓNE.*  
(Bocc. g. 6. Proem.)

*La dóna, conoscéndo QUÁL  
FÓSSE L'ÁNIMO DI LÉI, lasciò  
stáre la paróle.* (Bocc. g. 2. n.  
8.)

*QUÁL AMÓRE avrébbe i sospiri  
di Tito fátti a Gisippo nel cuór  
sentire, se non costéi?* (Bocc.  
g. 10. n. 5.)

He, whom I killed.

On the Tarpeian mountain,  
O Song, thou wilt see a knight,  
whom all Italy honors.

Diana, who knew the mis-  
fortune into which Biancafiore  
had fallen, moderated her anger  
with a proper restraint.

They had heard why Ninetta  
had been taken; which thing  
displeased them much.

Which thing Marcellus hav-  
ing observed, said.

It appeared to me a fine thing  
to be out of it.

The girl took it as a good  
omen, to have heard this name,  
and began to hope, without  
knowing what [thing] to hope.

God knows [it] what pain I  
feel.

I know not what Andreuccio,  
or what stories these are which  
thou tellest.

Foolish is he who believes,  
that he can change the decrees  
of heaven by his deliberations.

He who has more subjects,  
is surrounded by more enemies.

Having, therefore, caused the  
seneschal to be called, and hav-  
ing asked what the cause of the  
noise was.

The woman, knowing what  
her mind was, abandoned the  
conversation.

What love could the sighs  
of Titus, have caused Gisippus  
to feel in his heart, if not that of  
her.

LA QUÀL CÒSA veggèndò An-  
dreuccio. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

Which thing Andreuccio  
seeing.

I QUÀI VÍEJ procedono da  
questa velenòsa radice. (Amm.  
Ant. 317.)

Which vices proceed from  
this venomous root.

A' LLE QUÀ' LÉTTERE io mi  
rimétto. (Casa. lett. 18.)

To which letters I refer.

Che attende ciascun UOM CHE  
DIO NON TÈME. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Which waits for every man  
who does not fear God.

E caddi còme L' UOM CUI  
SÓNKO FIGLIA. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

And I dropped down, like a  
man who is seized by sleep.

Vói che ascoltate in rime  
spàrse il suono—Di QUÉI sospi-  
RI OND' FO NUDRIVA IL CUORE.  
(Petr. s. 1.)

You who hear in scattered  
rhymes the sound of those sighs  
with which I nourished my  
heart.

NÉLLA BÉLLA FRIGIÓNE OND'  
ÓRA È SCIÓLTA—Pòco éra stàta  
ancòr l' àlma gentile. (Petr. c.  
44.)

The gentle soul had been but  
a short time in the beautiful  
prison from which she is now  
released.

F ággio in ódio la spème, e i  
deléri—Ed ÓGNI LÁCCIO ÓNDE' L  
MÍO CÒR È AVVÍNTO. (Petr. s.  
75.)

I hold in hatred the hope,  
the ravings, and every tie with  
which my heart is bound.

PER QUÉLLO USCIUÓLO, OND'  
ÉRA ÉNTRATO, il mise fuóri.  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

She put him out of that little  
door through which he had  
entered.

Il buon uómo, IN CÀSA CUI  
MÓRTO ÉRA, disse. (Bocc. g. 4.  
n. 8.)

The good man, in whose  
house he had died, said.

VÓI, CUI FORTÚNA HA PÓSTO  
IN MÀNO il frèno—Délle bélle  
contràde. (Petr. c. 29.)

You, into whose hands for-  
tune has put the reins of the  
beautiful countries.

## EXERCISE X.

He determined		to find		who had done this.
— Pensò		di volér trováre		avéss <sup>2</sup> fáto <sup>3</sup> quèsto <sup>1</sup> .
This wretched little man who is here,				I saw there
Quèsto cattivo —		è <sup>2</sup> qui <sup>1</sup> ,		5 vidí <sup>4</sup> '23
(that   was) sleeping,		whilst		I was dividing   the
si dormiva,		méntré		dividéva <sup>3</sup>



things stolen with him whom afterwards I killed. Render  
*furto*<sup>2</sup> *colui* ——— *uccisi.* *Rendi*  
 me at least the clothes | (of mine) | (the) which I have  
*almeno* *panno* | *miei* | *ho*<sup>2</sup>  
 left there. (The) Fiammèta, whose hair\* was curly,  
*lasciati*<sup>1</sup> *vi*<sup>2</sup>. *(The)* *Fiammèta*, whose *hair*\* was curly,  
*capello* *erano* *crispo*,  
 long, and of the color of gold. This is the ring,  
*lungo*, e — — — *oro.* *Questo* *è* *anello*,  
 which she already carried | to | France the first  
*già*<sup>2</sup> *portò*<sup>1</sup> | *in* | *Francia* *primo*  
 time that she made that journey | with her |  
*vólta* *che* — *fèce* *quel* *cammino* | *col* |  
 brother. Neither I, nor the one from whom I  
*fratello.* ———, *nè* *colui*  
 received her, | ever knew | whose daughter | she  
*ebbi*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> | *non* *sapèmmo* *mái*<sup>2</sup> | <sup>4</sup> *figliuola*<sup>4</sup> | *si*  
 was. | She, who knew well, that which she had  
*fòsse.*<sup>3</sup> | *che*, *sapèva* *bene*, *ciò* — *aveva*<sup>3</sup>  
 to do. Having turned herself to Pamphilus, who  
*a*<sup>1</sup> *fèce*<sup>2</sup>. ——— *Rivólta* ——— *Panfilo*,  
 sat | at | her right, pleasantly said to him. The  
*sedeva*<sup>4</sup> | *dalla*<sup>1</sup> | *sua*<sup>2</sup> *déstra*,<sup>3</sup> *piacevolmente*<sup>5</sup> *dissè*<sup>6</sup> <sup>6</sup>. <sup>2</sup>  
 first (of whom), to whom the queen gave | such a |  
*primo*<sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>7</sup> *regina*<sup>8</sup> *impòse*<sup>11</sup> | *tal*<sup>9</sup> |  
 charge, was Philostratus, who began in this way.  
*cárico*<sup>10</sup>, *fu* *Filòstrato*, — *cominciò* *questo* *maniera*.  
 Are you that woman, who must come to speak  
*Sièta* *quello* *donna*, *dovètea* *venire*<sup>2</sup> *a*<sup>4</sup> *parlare*<sup>5</sup>  
 to him? The young man is the son of Landolphus  
<sup>1</sup> ? *giovane* *è* — *figliuolo* *Landólfo*  
 of Prócida, by (the) whose means thou art a king;  
*per* <sup>2</sup> *òpera*<sup>1</sup> *sé*<sup>2</sup> — *re*;  
 the young woman is the daughter of Marin Bólgaro,  
*giovane* *è* — *figliuola*  
 (the) whose power causes that thou art not now | sent  
*poténza* *fa* <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> *sia*<sup>4</sup> *non*<sup>4</sup> *oggi*<sup>3</sup> | *scac-*  
 away | from | I'schia.  
*città*<sup>6</sup> | *di* |

\* Hair. in the plural number.

The woman, hearing him speak whom she held  
*donna, udendo costui parlare tenéta*  
 for a dumb man, | was quite amazed. | | She went  
 — — *mùtolo* — —, | *tùtta stordì.* | | *sen' uscì*<sup>8</sup>  
 out | of the church, by that way through which he had  
 | *chiésa,*<sup>10</sup> *Per* *quéllo*<sup>2</sup> *via*<sup>3</sup> | | — *crà*<sup>8</sup>  
 come. Now, | determine | without any other delay,  
*venùto.*<sup>7</sup> | *Or,* | *ti consiglia* | *sénza àltro indùgia,*  
 and | take | that man whom you wish most. To  
*e* | *ti piglia*<sup>4</sup> | — — | *ruó*<sup>3</sup> *più.*<sup>1</sup>  
 (the) which, I could not resist, for any thing in  
 , *potrés*<sup>7</sup> *non*<sup>6</sup> *resistere,*<sup>9</sup> | — *cósa*<sup>2</sup>  
 the world. By the hundred steps by which  
<sup>3</sup> *móndo.*<sup>4</sup> *Per* *scaglióne per*  
 | one ascends | to the Tarpeian rock. | At | (the)  
 | *si sàle* | *Tarpéo* — —. | *Di* |  
 which thing, all the others frightened began to  
*cósa, tutto àltro spaventàti rominciarono*<sup>3</sup> *a*<sup>1</sup>  
 flee. He saw the lady, who loves my brother.  
*faggire.*<sup>2</sup> *vide donna, àma mio fratéllo.*  
 Behold the young man, whom his daughter loves.  
*E'cco giòvane, sua*<sup>2</sup> *figlia*<sup>2</sup> *àma.*<sup>1</sup>

### Interrogative Pronouns.

The relative pronouns *chi*, *che*, and *quále* or *quáli*, when used to ask a question, become *interrogative* pronouns.

*Chi* always denotes a person: *che* denotes things, or the quality of persons and things: *quále* or *quáli* denotes both persons and things, or the qualities of persons and things; as,

CHI *síte* vói?  
 CHI *è* *QUESTI*?  
 CHE [*cósa*] *hái*?  
 CHE *uómo* *è*?  
 CHE *ORAZIÓNE*?

Who are you?  
 Who is this one?  
 What ails thee?  
 What man is he?  
 What prayer?

QUÁL DIÁVOLO?

What demon?

QUÁL PAÚRA?

What fear?

QUÁLI LÉGGI?

What conditions?

Although both *che* and *quále* denote things or the qualities of persons and things, it is nevertheless to be observed, that, when we inquire of an object without reference to its intrinsic merit, *quále* is generally used; but if our inquiry refers to the intrinsic merit of the object, we use *che* in preference; as,

QUÁL fu la cagione?

What was the cause?

QUÁL dūce fia dēgno?

What leader would be worthy?

CHE gente è?

What [kind of] people are they?

CHE peccati hāi fatto?

What [kind of] sins hast thou com-  
mitted?

*Cui* is often used as an interrogative pronoun, instead of *chi*; as,

Con cūi [or con chi] sēi  
stāto?

With whom hast thou been?

The pronouns *che*, and *quále* or *quáli*, are used also in *exclamations*; as,

CHE veduta amāra!

What a sad sight!

QUÁL polvere!

What dust!

QUÁI martiri!

What torments!

Interrogative pronouns are varied with the *prepositions* only.

## EXAMPLES.

De' quāi nē io, nē 'l duca mio  
s'accōrse—Se non quāndo gri-  
dār: "CHISIESTE voi?" (Dant.  
Inf. 25.)

Of whom neither I nor my  
leader was aware until they  
exclaimed: "Who are you?"

CHI È QUESTI che così starnu-  
tisce? (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

Who is this that sneezes  
thus?

CHE HAI TU, Bocca? (Dant.  
Inf. 32.)

What ails thee, Bocca?

CHE UOMO È costui? (Bocc.  
g. 1. n. 1.)

What man is this?

*E voi CHE ORAZIONE usate di dire, camminando?* (Bocc.)

And what prayer are you wont to say, when you travel?

*QUÁL DIÁVOL ti tòcca?* (Dant.)

What demon touches thee?

*QUÁLI LÉGGI? quáli minacce? QUÁLI PAÚRA?* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

What conditions? what threats? what fear?

*Ma dítemi, QUÁL FU LA CAGIONE per la quále voi con lui vi turbaste?* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

But tell me, what was the cause that you were displeased with him?

*QUÁL DÚCE FIA DÉGNO di loro?* (Tass. Ger. I. 52.)

What leader will be worthy of them?

*CHE GENTE È, che par nel duól et vinta?* (Dant. Inf. 3.)

What people are these, who seem so overcome with woe?

*CHE PECCÁTI HÁI tu FÁTTO?* (Bocc.)

What sins hast thou committed?

*CON CÚI ti CRÉDI tu ÉSSERE STÁTO?* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

With whom dost thou think to have been?

*Ah! CHE VEDÚTA AMÁRA e trista!* (Tass. Ger. 19. 105.)

Ah! what a bitter and sad sight!

*QUÁL per l'aria stésa—PÓLVERE i' véggio!* (Tass. Ger. 3. 10.)

What dust do I see spread through the air!

*QUÁI MARTÍRI!* (Crusca.)

What torments!

*E se non piangi, DI che pianger súbli?* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

And if at this, thou dost not weep, at what art thou accustomed to weep!

EXERCISE XI.

Who knocks	below?	What fear	have you?	Who
<i>picchia</i>	<i>laggiù?</i>	<i>paúra avéte</i>	<i>?</i>	<i>?</i>
chastised you	thus?	What do we	do?	What do
<i>castigó<sup>2</sup></i>	<i>vi<sup>1</sup> così?</i>	<i>—<sup>2</sup> facciámo<sup>1</sup>?</i>	<i>—</i>	<i>—</i>
we wait for?	What do we	dream of?	What sleep,	
<i>— attendiámo?</i>	<i>—</i>	<i>sogniámo?</i>	<i>sónno,</i>	
or what lethargy	has lulled	thy	virtue?	What
<i>o letárgo</i>	<i>ha sopíto<sup>2</sup> così<sup>1</sup>?</i>	<i>la tua</i>	<i>virtú?</i>	<i>What</i>
chains, what prison,	what crosses	would be	sufficient?	
<i>caténa,</i>	<i>cárcere,</i>	<i>cróce</i>	<i>ci basterébbéro?</i>	

Who does not know that without money\* (the) idleness  
 — non sa senza denaro poltroneria

cannot subsist? "Woman, what dost thou do?" to  
 non può durare? "Donna, — tu<sup>2</sup> fai?"

whom the woman replied: "Dost thou not see it?"  
 donna rispose: " — tu<sup>4</sup> Non vedi lo<sup>2</sup>?"

What is this secret? And what is this supposition?  
 è cotesto segreto? E è questa supposizione?

What thing is that which you have made me eat?  
 cosa è questo — avete<sup>2</sup> fatto<sup>3</sup> mangiàre?

"Sir, | I must | ask | your | pardon | for |  
 "Signóre, | a me conviene | domandár | vi | perdóno | di |  
 a great fault." The master said: "And | for | what?"  
 gran fallo." <sup>2</sup> maéstro<sup>3</sup> Disse: <sup>1</sup> "E | di | ?"

What | wilt thou pay | me | for? | What couldst  
<sup>2</sup> | pagherai tu<sup>4</sup> | <sup>3</sup> | Di? | potré: <sup>1</sup>?

thou do me? If thou doest so, what | shall we  
 — fare<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup>? Se fai così, <sup>2</sup> | vorrà

live | on? | Alas! and in what manner? The admiral  
 vivér | di<sup>1</sup>? Oimè! e módo? <sup>4</sup> ammiraglio<sup>5</sup>

asked him then, what thing had brought him to  
 Domandó<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> allora<sup>3</sup>, <sup>4</sup> cosa<sup>2</sup> avésse<sup>2</sup> condotto<sup>10</sup> him<sup>2</sup> <sup>11</sup>

that. Dost thou know who those are, (the) whom  
 quello. <sup>12</sup> — <sup>2</sup> Conosci<sup>1</sup> color síeno,

thou wishest (that) | should be burnt? | The king replied | in  
 vuoi | s'ardano? | re rispose | di

the negative. | What sins hast thou committed, that thou  
 nó. | peccáto hai fatto, —

wishest to confess thyself. | In | what have these  
 vuoi<sup>2</sup> confessáre<sup>2</sup> ti<sup>1</sup>. | Di | hanno<sup>2</sup> questo<sup>4</sup>

two young men offended thee? But what? they are  
<sup>3</sup> giovanc<sup>4</sup> offésa<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup>? Ma <sup>2</sup> — son

human faults, and usual faults.  
 umána<sup>2</sup> colpa<sup>1</sup> e usáta<sup>2</sup> colpa<sup>1</sup>

Oh, what a bitter sight! What glorious triumphs!  
 O, — amára<sup>2</sup> vedúta!<sup>1</sup> gloriose<sup>2</sup> triúfó!<sup>1</sup>

What splendid spoils! O, my son, what flame  
 supérba spógia! O, mio<sup>2</sup> figliuó!<sup>1</sup> fámma

is kindled for thee!  
 è accésa<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup>!

## CHAPTER VII.

## ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

## POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

THE Italian possessive pronouns are the following :

Singular.		Plural.	
<i>Mio</i> , m.	<i>mia</i> , f.	my or mine,	<i>miei</i> m. <i>mie</i> , f.
<i>tuo</i> , m.	<i>tua</i> , f.	thy or thine,	<i>tuei</i> ,* m. <i>tue</i> , f.
<i>suo</i> , m.	<i>sua</i> , f.	his, her, hers or its,	<i>suei</i> ,* m. <i>sue</i> , f.
<i>nostro</i> , m.	<i>nostra</i> , f.	our or ours,	<i>nostri</i> , m. <i>nostre</i> , f.
<i>vostro</i> , m.	<i>vostra</i> , f.	your or yours,	<i>vostri</i> , m. <i>vostre</i> , f.
<i>suo</i> , m.	<i>sua</i> , f. }	their or theirs,	{ <i>suei</i> ,* m. <i>sue</i> , f. <i>loro</i> , m. & f.
<i>loro</i> , m. & f. }			

*il mio léno*,  
*la tua figliolétta*,  
*i suoi avversarj*,  
*le nostre pompe*,  
*il loro andàre*,  
*le loro parole*,

my bark ;  
thy little daughter ;  
their adversaries ;  
our pomps ;  
their deportment ;  
their words.

*Mio*, *tuo*, *suo*, *nostro*, *vostro*, and *loro*, are sometimes used with the article substantively, — *il mio*, *il tuo*, *il suo*, &c. ; and then the word *avére*, 'property', is understood ; and they are equivalent to 'my property', 'thy property', &c. ; as,

*mangi DEL SUO*,                                    let him eat of his own [proper-  
*non mangerà DEL NOSTRO*,                    he will not eat of ours. [ty ;]

\* Poets for the sake of Rhyme, often use *nai*, *vai*, instead of *nói*, 'we' ; *vói*, 'you'. This license is extended also to *tuei*, *suei*, which in poetry are often changed into *tái*, 'thy or thine' ; *sái*, 'his, her, hers or its' ; their or theirs' ; as,

" *Di rade—Incontra*," mi rispóse,  
" *che, di tu'* — *Fúccia* 'i cammine alcun,  
*per qual te vado*. — *Fer'* è, ch' *ai'tra*  
*stata quaggiù tu'*, — *Congiarato da*  
*quella Erichon crada*, — *Che richiamava*  
*l'ombra d' corpi tu'*." (Dant. Inf. 9.)

*Túto ch' al piè della sua tomba tu'*,  
— *Guardómni un póco*, e *pói quai*  
*adagnáre* — *Mi dimandò* : " *Chi fur* ñ  
*maggior tu'*." (Dant. Inf. 10.)

*Nói udíremo e parleremo a tu'*.  
(Dant. Inf. 5.)

"Seldom happens," replied he to me, "that any one of us goes through the way, which I am going. But I was there below once before, conjured by that cruel Erichtho, who recalled the shades to their bodies."

As soon as I reached the foot of his tomb, he looked at me awhile, and then, almost with contempt, he asked me : "Who were thy ancestors."

We will hear and speak to you.

*Mièi, tuói, nóstri*, and *lòro*, are also used substantively,—*i mièi*, *i tuói*, *i suói*, *i nóstri*, *i lòro*; and then the word *parenti*, 'relations'; *amici*, 'friends'; *compàgni*, 'companions'; *familiári*, 'domestics'; *soldáti*, 'soldiers'; or *seguáci*, 'followers', is understood; and they are equivalent to 'my relations', 'thy friends', 'his companions', 'our domestics', 'your soldiers', 'their followers'; as,

<i>incóntra á' mièi,</i>	against my relations;
<i>pregáto dá' suói,</i>	requested by his friends.

Possessive pronouns are sometimes expressed by the conjunctive pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *gli*, *le*, &c., and we say '*ME'lo prendo in bráccia*, instead of *lo prendo nelle MI'E bráccia*, 'I take him in my arms'; *LE si gittò ái piédi*, instead of *si gittò ái suói piédi*, 'he threw himself at her feet'; &c.; as,

<i>MI si strugge il cuore,</i>	my heart melts;
<i>GLI si gittò al collo,</i>	she threw herself on his neck;
<i>SI lasciò cascar l'uncino,</i>	he let his hook fall.

To avoid the ambiguity which in many instances would arise, in Italian, from the indiscriminate use of the possessive pronouns *suo*, *sua*, *suoi*, *sue*; when these pronouns do not relate to the *subject* of the proposition, they are changed for the personal pronouns *di lui*, *di lei*, 'of him,' 'of her'. Thus in the phrase 'John loves Peter and his children,' if the pronoun *his* relates to *John*, the *subject* of the proposition, it is expressed by *i suói*; as, *Giovánni áma Piétro e i suói figliuóli*, 'John loves Peter and his [John's] children'; but if *his* does not relate to John, but to *Peter*, the *object* of the proposition, then it is expressed by *i di lui*; as, *Giovánni áma Piétro e i di lui figliuóli*, 'John loves Peter and his [Peter's] children':

<i>mandò ad uccidere suo padre,</i>	he sent to kill his father [the father of him who sent];
<i>sua sorella e i figli di lei,</i>	her sister and her children [the children of her sister].

The pronouns *suo, sua, suoi, sue*, are very often expressed by *di lui, di lei*, even in cases when no ambiguity would arise; as,

*la ingratitude di LUI,* his ingratitude;  
*alla casa di LEI,* to her house.

Possessive pronouns are generally varied with the *prepositions* and *articles*.

## EXAMPLES.

*Diétro al mio LÉGO, che can-  
tando várea.* (Dant. Par. 2.)

Behind my bark, which singing  
cuts its way.

*Se tu ti contéti di lasciáre ap-  
préso di me quéstá TÚA FIGLIO-  
LÉTTA, io la prenderò volentieri.*  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

If thou art willing to leave with  
me this little daughter of thine, I  
will take her with pleasure.

*A lli tribúni páve luógo e tém-  
po d'assáire i SUÓI AVVERSÁRIJ.*  
(Liv. dec. 3.)

This appeared to the tribunes a  
proper place and time to assail their  
adversaries.

*Pássan vóstri triónti, e VÓSTRE  
PÓMPE.* (Petr. cap. 11.)

Your triumphs and your pomps  
pass away.

*Non umán veraménte ma divi-  
no—LOR ANDÁR éra, e LOR sán-  
te PARÓLE.* (Petr. Trionf.)

Their deportment and their holy  
words truly were not human, but  
divine.

*Or MANGI DEL SÚO, s'égli ne ha,  
ché DEL NÓSTRO NON MANGERÀ  
égli.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Let him eat of his own property,  
if he has any, for he will not eat  
of ours.

*Perchè quel pópolo è sí émpio—  
Incóntra l' MIÉI in ciascúna súa  
légge.* (Dant. Inf. c. 10.)

Why is that people so fell against  
my kin in all their laws.

*Vássene, pregáto DÁ' SUÓI, a  
Chiássi.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 8.)

He goes to Chiassi at the re-  
quest of his friends.

*Nel pensárló MI SI STRÚGGE IL  
CÓRE.* (Maff. Mer. 4. 7.)

In thinking of it my heart melts.

*Piangéndo GLI SI GITTÒ AL  
CÓLLO.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Weeping, she threw herself on  
his neck.

*SI LASCIÒ CASCÁR L' UNCÍNO  
á' piédi.* (Dant. Inf. 21.)

He let the hook fall at his feet.

*Égli lo MANDÒ AD UCCÍDERE  
SÚO PÁDRE.* (Class.)

He sent him to kill his father,  
[the father of him who sent.]



*Mia madre ama egualmente  
sua sorella, e i figli di lei.*  
(Crusca.)

My mother loves equally her  
sister, and her children, [the chil-  
dren of her sister.]

*Avendo riguardo alla ingra-  
titudine di lui verso mia madre  
mostrata.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

Considering his ingratitude  
shown towards my mother.

*Cominciò a ripararsi vicino alla  
casa di lei.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

He began to resort near her  
house.

## EXERCISE XII.

He loved more (the) my life than (the) your  
*amò più vita*

benevolence. Fearing that he | should be | reprehended,  
*benevolenza. Temendo — — non fosse ripreso,*

he kept (the) his love concealed as much as he  
*— tenéva<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> amóre<sup>5</sup> nascóso<sup>7</sup> — — <sup>1</sup> —*

could. Since thou art my friend, I will show it  
*potéva.<sup>2</sup> Perché séi amico, insegnerò<sup>2</sup> la<sup>1</sup>*

to thee. (The) thy virtue is great, and known  
*<sup>2</sup> virtù è mólto, e conosciuto*

| every where. | In coming out (from) the church  
*per tutto. — Uscendo chiesa*

he saw this count, and (the) his little children, who  
*— vide questo cónte, e figliuólo,*

asked alms. She refused to be familiar with  
*addomandavano<sup>2</sup> limósina<sup>1</sup>. rifiutáva — — —*

him—(the) (his familiarity.) The holy Friar, who had  
*— dimestichezza. sánto Fráte, avéa<sup>2</sup>*

confessed him, having ascended | (on) | the pulpit,  
*confessató<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> — — salíto | in sú | púlgano*

began to preach wonderful things of him, and  
*cominciò<sup>2</sup> a<sup>20</sup> predicáre<sup>21</sup> maravigliósa<sup>18</sup> cósas<sup>19</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> e<sup>4</sup>*

of (the) his life, of (the) his fastings, of (the) his  
*<sup>6</sup> <sup>6</sup> víta<sup>7</sup>, <sup>6</sup> <sup>6</sup> digiúno<sup>10</sup>, <sup>11</sup> <sup>12</sup>*

simplicity, and of (the) his innocence. I often observed  
*semplicitá<sup>12</sup>, e<sup>14</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>16</sup> innocénza.<sup>17</sup> spésso miráva*

how much the sun had run of (the) his luminous  
*quánto* <sup>2</sup> *sòle*<sup>3</sup> *avésse*<sup>1</sup> *trascórso*<sup>4</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>6</sup> *luminóso*<sup>8</sup>

journey. But what | shall we say | to those who  
*viággio*<sup>7</sup> *Ma* | *dirémo nói* | *colóro*

feel so much pity | for | (the) my hunger? The  
*háanno*<sup>5</sup> *cotánto*<sup>6</sup> *compassióne*<sup>7</sup> | *di*<sup>1</sup> | <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> *fáme*<sup>4</sup>?

public places of Rome are full of ancient likenesses  
*púbbllico*<sup>2</sup> *luógo*<sup>1</sup> *Róma* *son piéno* *antica* *immáginé*

of (the) my ancestors. It is not my intention | to |  
*maggióre.* — *è*<sup>2</sup> *Non*<sup>1</sup> *intenzióne* | *di* |

explain | at | present, that which the laws of (the)  
*spiegáre* | *al* | *présente, quéllo* *légge*

friendship demand. I | did not seek | | to | attach  
*amicizia* *vógliono.* *I* | *non cercái* | | *di* | *impórré*

any blemish to the honesty, and to the purity of  
*alcúno mácola* *onestà,* *e* *chiarézza*

(the) your blood. Who could reply to (the) your  
*sángue.* *Who* *could* *reply* *to* *(the)* *your*  
*saprèbbe rispóndere*

wise words? In (the) happiness they are unhappy,  
*sávio paróla?* *In* *(the)* *happines* *they* *are* *unhappy,*  
*felicità* — *sóno misero,*

in (the) riches poor, and in (the) their adventures  
*ricchézza méndico,* *e* *ventúra*

unfortunate.  
*sciaguráto.*

The lady then said to that one: "Come, and  
*dónna allóra*<sup>4</sup> *dísse*<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> *colúí*<sup>3</sup> : " *Viéni,* *e*

ask thy property—(the) (thine). I have not deceived you  
*dománda* — — — — — *ho*<sup>3</sup> *non*<sup>1</sup> *ingannáto*<sup>4</sup> <sup>2</sup>

| to | rob you of your property—(the) (yours). Not only  
*per* | *tór* — — — — — *Non solaménte*

hast thou gambled my property—(the) (mine), but thou hast  
*m'hái* — — — — — *giuocáto* — — — — — , *ma* — — — — — *hái*<sup>3</sup>

also prevented (the) my going. He | astonished |  
*sópra*<sup>1</sup> *ciò*<sup>2</sup> *impedúto* *andáta.* — | *Féce maravigliáre* |

| his | father, and all (the) his relations, and every  
*il* | *pádre,* *e* *tútti* *his* *relations,* *and* *every*  
 — — — — — , *e* *cias-*

one else who knew him. Minghino with (the) his com-  
*cùn áltro conoscéva<sup>2</sup> 1.*

panions concealed himself in the house of a friend  
*ripóse<sup>2</sup> sí — cása amíco<sup>2</sup>*

of his. Cimon, who had already descended with  
*— 1. Cimóne, éra<sup>4</sup> già<sup>1</sup> discéso<sup>2</sup>*

(the) his troops, | had determined | | to | flee | into |  
*2 3 —, | avéa présó consíglío | | di | fuggíre | in |*

some neighbouring wood.  
*alcúno vicíno<sup>2</sup> sélva<sup>1</sup>.*

| Feigning | not | to | know him, | she  
*Fátto sembíante | non<sup>2</sup> | di<sup>1</sup> | conoscer —, | sí póse a*  
 sat | at his—(to him at the) feet. I set in  
*sedére<sup>2</sup> | — — | 1 3 piéde. | pósi<sup>2</sup> —*

my—(to me in the) heart | to | give thee that which  
*— 1 3 — | cuóre | di | dár — | quéllo*

thou wentest seeking, and I have given it to thee.  
*andávi cercándo, e — diédi — 2 — 1.*

Peróto recognised him, and weeping threw himself  
*riconóbbe<sup>2</sup> 1, e piangéndo gittó<sup>2</sup> sí<sup>2</sup>*

at his—(to him at the) feet, and embraced him, saying :  
*— — | 1 4 piéde, e abbracciò llo, dicéndo :*

“My father!” Tedáldo speaks with the woman, and  
*“mio<sup>2</sup> Pádre !” 1 párla | dónna, e*

frees her husband—(the husband of her) from death.  
*libera — — | maríto | mórté.*

He sent him to kill his father—(the father of him  
*mandó<sup>2</sup> 1 ad uccédera | pádre — — — —*

who sent). My father loves his brother, and his  
*— — | pádre | áma | fratéllo, e —*

children—(the children of him—his brother).  
*— — | figlío — — — —*

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Singular.

<i>Quésto</i> , m.	<i>quésta</i> , f.	this;	
<i>quéllo</i> , m.	<i>quélla</i> , f.	that;	
<i>cotésto</i> , m.	<i>cotésta</i> , f.	} that near you;	
or <i>codésto</i> , m.	or <i>codésta</i> , f.		
<i>costúi</i> , m.	he, this man;	<i>costéi</i> , f.	she, this woman.
<i>colúi</i> , m.	he, that man;	<i>coléi</i> , f.	she, that woman.
<i>cotestúi</i> , or	{ he, the or that } { man near you. }	<i>cotestéi</i> , or	{ she, the or that wo- } { man near you. }
<i>codestúi</i> , m.		<i>codestéi</i> , f.	

Plural.

<i>Quésti</i> , m.	<i>quéste</i> , f.	these.
<i>quélli</i> , m.	<i>quélle</i> , f.	those.
<i>cotésti</i> , m.	<i>cotéste</i> , f.	} those near you.
or <i>codésti</i> , m.	or <i>codéste</i> , f.	
<i>costóro</i> , m. & f.		they, these men, these women.
<i>colóro</i> , m. & f.		they, those men, those women.
<i>cotestóro</i> , or		{ they, the or those men near you, } { those women near you. }
<i>codestóro</i> , m. & f.		

*E'sto*, *ésta*, for *quésto*, *quésta*, 'this,' have become obsolete.

*Quésto*, *quéllo*, and *cotésto* or *codésto*, may be used in speaking of both persons and things; *costúi*, *colúi*, and *cotestúi* or *codestúi*, denote persons only.

*Quésto* and *costúi* are employed to point out an object near the person speaking; *cotésto* or *codésto*, and *cotestúi* or *codestúi*, to point out an object near the person spoken to; and *quéllo* and *colúi*, to point out an object at a distance from both the person speaking and the person spoken to; \* as,

\* From the pronouns *quésto*, *quéllo*, and *cotésto* or *codésto*, some derive the adverbs *quí* or *quá*, *colí* or *colá*, *costí* or *costá*, which are used to designate a place, according to the rule already given for the use of the pronouns; saying, *quí* or *quá*, 'there,' in pointing out a place near the person speaking; *costí* or *costá*, 'there near you,' in pointing out a place near the person spoken to; and *colí* or *colá*, 'there,' in pointing out a place at a distance both from the person speaking and the person spoken to.—(The rule is correct; but as to the derivation, it appears to us, that the pronoun *quésto* is derived from the adverb *quí* and the pronoun *ésto*, *qu(i)ésto*, and the pronoun *quéllo* from the adverb *quí* and the pronoun *éllo*, *qu(i)éllo*; rather than that *quí* is derived from *quésto* or *quéllo*.)

QUÉSTO <i>denáro,</i>	this money ;
QUÉLLA [ <i>dónna,</i> ]	that lady ;
COTÉSTI <i>pánni,</i>	those clothes ;
COSTÉI* <i>è un sóle,</i>	this woman is like a sun.
COLÚI <i>che ne invia,</i>	that man who sends us.
<i>battéte</i> COTESTÓRO,*	beat those [boys].

This rule is equally observed, when the pronouns *quésto*, *quéllo*, and *cotésto* or *codésto*, point out an abstract substance, or a thing which is in the person speaking, the person spoken to, or the person spoken of ; as,

QUÉSTI <i>sospíri,</i>	these sighs ;
QUÉLLA <i>allegrezza,</i>	that merriment ;
COTÉSTE <i>paróle,</i>	those words.

*Quéllo*, followed by a noun beginning with a vowel drops the *o* and takes an apostrophe in its stead ; and followed by a noun beginning with any consonant but *x*, or *s* followed by another consonant, drops its last syllable. Followed by a noun beginning with a vowel, *x*, or *s* followed by another consonant, in the plural it makes *quégli* ; as,

QUÉL <i>rossénte è Ercole,</i>	that powerful one is Hercules ;
QUELL' <i>áltro è Demofónte,</i>	the other is Demophoön ;
QUÉGLI <i>ángeli,</i>	those angels ;
QUÉGLI <i>spíriti,</i>	those spirits.

*Quélki*, followed by a word beginning with a consonant, is contracted into *quéi*, and often written *qué'* ; as,

QUÉI <i>dólcí lúmi,</i>	those sweet lights ;
QUÉ' <i>compágni,</i>	those companions.

*Quésta*, followed by the nouns *matína* or *máne*, 'morning' ; *séra*, 'evening' ; *nótte*, 'night' ; often drops the first syllable, and forms with them a single word ; as,

<i>quésta matína,</i>	STAMÁTTINA,	} this morning ;
or <i>quésta máne,</i>	STAMÁNE,	
<i>quésta séra,</i>	STASÉRA,	this evening ;
<i>quésta nótte,</i>	STANÓTTE,	to-night, or last night.

\* Observe, that after the pronouns *costúí*, *colúí*, *cotastúí* or *codestúí*, &c. we never use the substantive *úómo*, 'man', or *dónna*, 'woman', in the feminine ; and do not say *costúí úómo*, *colúí dónna* ; but simply *costúí*, for 'this man' ; *colúí*, for 'that woman' ; &c. : *costúí*, *colúí*, *cotastúí*, &c., containing in themselves both the adjective pronouns *quésto*, *quéllo*, *codésto*, &c., and the substantive pronoun *léi*, or *léí* in the feminine, &c.—*costúí* or *quésto léi*, 'this man' ; *colúí* or *quéllo léí*, 'that woman' ; &c.

*Quésto*, *quéllo*, and *cotésto* or *codésto*, are often used substantively, and then they are equivalent to *quésta cosa*, 'this thing'; *quéllo cosa*, 'that thing'; &c. as,

*udito QUE'STO* (or *quésta cosa*) having heard this (or this thing);

*COTE'STO* (or *cotésta cosa*) that (or that thing) ought not to  
*non si vorrébbe fare,* be done.

We say sometimes *in quésto*, *in quésta*, *in quello*, *in quéllo*, and then the words *istánte*, 'instant'; *momento stéssso*, 'very moment'; *óra stéssa*, 'very hour'; *occasione stéssa*, 'very occasion'; are understood; and *in quésto*, *in quéllo*, are equivalent to 'in this very moment,' 'in that very hour'; &c. as,

*IN QUÉSTO sopravvenne la* at this very instant came the  
*fénte,* servant;

*vidi IN QUE'LLA úna náve* I saw at that very moment a  
*piccioléttá,* rather small bark.

*Quéllo*, in speaking of a city, territory, country, &c., is equivalent to *città*, *território*, *paése*, &c.; as,

*QUÉL di Pérugia,* the territory of Perugia;

*QUÉL di Bérgamo,* the country of Bergamo.

We very often use *quésti*, *quégli*, and *cotésti* or *codésti*, in the singular, in speaking of persons, but in the subjective only; and then *quésti* is equivalent to *quest' uómo*, 'this man'; *quégli*, to *quell' uómo*, 'that man'; *cotésti*, to *cotest' uómo*, 'that man near you'; as,

*QUÉSTI è il mio Signóre,* this is my master;

*QUÉGLI è Cáo,* that is Cacus;

*COTÉSTI, che ancór vive,* that one who is yet alive.

When *quégli* is so used, in the plural, it makes *quégliino* (*quégli uómini*), 'those men.'

*Quégli* followed by a word beginning with a *consonant* is, like *quéllo*, contracted into *quéi*, and often written *qué*; as,

*QUÉI che fu presénte,* he who was present;

*QUÉ' rispóse,* that one answered.

*Questo* and *quello*, and *questi* and *quegli*, sometimes serve to denote two objects already spoken of; *questo* and *questi* being used for the near, and *quello* and *quegli* for the distant object; and then they correspond to the English expressions *the latter* and *the former*; as,

QUÉSTI <i>si credono aver dagli iddii il ministero</i>	the latter think to derive their ministry from the gods, the former, their secret;
QUÉLLI <i>il segreto,</i>	
QUÉGLI <i>vuole, che io ti perdoni, e QUESTI, che in te in-crudelisca,</i>	the former demands that I should pardon thee, the latter that I should be cruel with thee.

To the above demonstrative pronouns may be added *ciò*, 'this or that'; which is equivalent to *questo*, *quello*, and *cotesto* or *codesto*; in the signification of *questa*, *quella*, or *cotesta* or *codesta cosa*, 'this, that, or that thing near you'; but it never refers to a person; as,

<i>ciò ch' io ne sento,</i>	that which I think of it;
<i>ch' è ciò che tu di?</i>	what is that which thou sayest?
<i>ciò udito,</i>	having heard this [thing.]

The Italian expressions, *ciò che*, *questo che*, *quello che*, generally correspond to the English pronoun *what*, used in the signification of 'this which' or 'that which'; as,

<i>CIÒ CHE tu hai a fare,</i>	what thou hast to do;
<i>QUÉLLO CHE diceva Adriano,</i>	what Adrian said.

Demonstrative pronouns are varied with the *prepositions only*.

Sometimes the preposition *di*, 'of,' is suppressed before the pronouns *costui*, *colui*, and *cotestui* or *codestui*, and the pronouns are put before the noun with which they are connected; as,

<i>al COSTUÍ témpo</i> (for <i>al témpo</i>	in the time of this one;
<i>DI costúí),</i>	

- per lo COLÚI consìglio* (for per  
lo consìglio DI COLÚI), by the counsel of that one ;
- per le COSTÓRO ópere* (for per  
le ópere DI COSTÓRO), for the deeds of those.

## EXAMPLES.

- Signóra, tenéte QUÉSTO DENÁ-RO.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 1.) Madam, take this money.
- Le mie nótti fa triste, e i giòrni oscúri—QUÉLLA, che n'ha portáto i pensíer miéi.* (Petr. s. 250.) That lady who has taken away my thoughts makes my nights sad, and my days gloomy.
- Veggéndovi COTÉSTI PÁNNI, vi ho credúto lúí.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.) Seeing you with those clothes, I took you for him.
- Così COSTÉI ch' è tra le dónne UN SÓLE.* (Petr. s. 9.) Thus this woman, who is like a sun amongst the other women.
- La dónna, che COLÚI CHE a te NE INVÍA—Spésso dal sónno lagrimándo désta.* (Petr. s. 8.) The lady, who often wakens from his sleep, weeping, him who sends us to thee.
- Perchè BATTÉTE VÓI COTESTÓRO?* (Nov. ant. 45.) Why do you beat those boys ?
- Che fánno méco omái QUÉSTI SOSPÍRI,—Che nascéan di dolóre?* (Petr. c. 33.) What do these sighs which sprung from grief do now with me?
- Io giudicheréi ottimaménte fáto, che quélla fésta, QUÉLLA ALLEGRÉZZA, che nói potéssimo, prendéssimo.* (Bocc. Introd.) I should think it very well done that we should take that enjoyment—that merriment, which we could.
- Vói mi paréte úomo di Dío, cóme díte vói COTÉSTE PARÓLE?* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.) You appear to me to be a man of God, how do you say those words ?
- Colúí ch' è séco è QUÉL POSSÉNTE e fórte ÉRCOLE, QUELL' ÁLTRO DEMOFÓNTE.* (Petr. Tr. Am.) That one who is with him, is that powerful and strong Hercules, the other is Demophoön.
- QUÉGLI ÁNGELI, e QUÉGLI SPÍRITI.* (Cinod. t. 4.) Those angels and those spirits.
- QUÉI DÓLCI LÚMI—S'acquistan per ventúra, e non per árté.* (Petr. s. 224.) Those sweet lights are acquired by good luck and not by art.
- E così la portò a QUÉ' suói COMPÁGNI.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 2.) And thus he carried her to those companions of his.



- Di quèsto di STAMATTINA sarò  
lo tenuto a vói.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)  
Of this of this morning I am indebted to you.
- STAMANE éra un fanciúullo, e or  
son véccchio.* (Petr. c. 11.)  
This morning I was a boy, and now I am an old man.
- Égli ci è STASÉRA venúto un dé'  
suói fratélli.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)  
There came this evening one of her brothers.
- Ubbriáco, fastidióso, tu non c'  
entrerái STANÓTTE.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)  
Drunkard, troublesome man, thou wilt not enter there to-night.
- UDÍTO QUÉSTO.* (Petr. Tr. Tem.)  
Having heard this.
- Figliuóla mia, cotésto non  
si vorrébbe fáre.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)  
My daughter, that ought not to be done.
- IN QUÉSTO LA FÁNTE di léi  
SOPRAVVÉNNE.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)  
At this very instant her servant came in.
- Com'í' vídi úna NÁVE PICCIO-  
LÉTTA—Venir per l' ácqua vérsó  
nói IN QUÉLLA.* (Dant. Inf. 8.)  
As I saw at that very moment coming through the water towards us a rather small bark.
- Passándo per QUÉLLO DI PE-  
RÚGIA.* (Stor. Pist. 50.)  
Passing through the territory of Perugia.
- QUÉSTI È IL MÍO SIGNÓRE,  
quésti veraménte è Messér Torélló.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)  
This is my master, this is truly Master Torello.
- QUÉGLI È CÁCO—Che sótto il  
sásso di mónte Aventino,—Di sán-  
gue féce spésse vólte láco.* (Dant. Inf. 25.)  
That is Cacus, who oftentimes shed lakes of blood under the rock of Mount Aventine.
- COTÉSTI, CHE ANCÓR VÍVE, e  
non si nóma,—Guardaré' ío per  
vedér, s' il conóscó.* (Dant. Par. 11.)  
I should like to look at that one, who is still alive and does not tell who he is, to see whether I know him.
- QUÉGLINO rivoléano i lóro strá-  
ci.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 2.)  
Those ones wanted again their rags.
- E dásse cóse—Incredíbili a QUÉI,  
CHE FU PRESÉNTE.* (Dant. Par. 17.)  
And said things incredible to him who was present.
- QUÉ' RISPÓSE: "Io sóno cadú-  
to in úna fósso."* (Nov. ant. 36.)  
That one answered: "I have fallen into a ditch."
- Non solaménte il pópolo, ma i  
nóbili, e i sacerdoti: QUÉSTI SI  
CRÉDONO AVÉR DÁGLI IDDÍI IL  
MINISTÉRO, QUÉLLI IL SEGRÉTO.* (Dav. Germ.)  
Not only the people, but the noblemen, and the priests: the latter think to derive their ministry from the gods, the former, their secret.

QUÉGLI VUÓLE, CHE ÍO TI PER-  
DÓNI, E QUÉSTI CHE, CÓNTRÓ A MÍA  
NÁTURA, IN TE INCRUDELÍSCA.—  
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

The former demands that I  
should pardon thee, and the latter  
that, against my nature, I should  
be cruel with thee.

A volérvene dñre CIÒ CH' ÍO NE  
SÉNTO. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

To tell you that which I think  
of it.

Va via, figliuólo, CH' È CIÒ,  
CHE TU DI' ? (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

Away with thee, my son, what  
is that which thou sayest ?

CIÒ UDÍTO SI ADDOLORÁVANO GLI  
AIÚTI, E FREMÉVANO I NÓSTRI. (Dav.  
Stor. l. 2.)

Having heard this the auxiliary  
troops were grieved, and our own  
were in a rage.

Tu sái ben CIÒ CHE TU HÁI A  
FÁRE. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

Thou knowest well what thou  
hast to do.

L' óste udéndo quéllo che la  
dónna dicéva, e QUÉLLO CHE DI-  
CÉVA ADRIÁNO; cominciò a cré-  
dère, che Pinuccio sognásse.—  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)

The host hearing what the lady  
said, and what Adrian said, began  
to believe that Pinuccio was  
dreaming.

AL COSTÚI TÉMPO. (Giov. Vill.)

In the time of this one.

PER LO COLÚI CONSÍGLIO.  
(Bocc.)

By the counsel of that one.

PER LE COSTÓRO ÓPERE. (Bocc.  
g. 5. n. 1.)

For the deeds of those.

EXERCISE XIII.

This sin is that which (the) divine justice has  
*peccáto è* *divíno giustízia ha<sup>2</sup>*

not wished to leave unpunished. May God grant  
*non<sup>1</sup> volúto lasciáre impuníto.* — *Dio díá<sup>2</sup>*

you that joy, and that good which you desire.  
*allegrézza, e* *béne* *desideráte.*

What is that secret of which you speak? At this  
*è* *sekrétó* — *parláte?* *A*

none dared | to | answer. That was a trifling  
*niúno ardi* | *di* | *rispóndere.* *fu* — *picciolo*

thing, and thou didst well to do with it what thou  
*cósa, e — facésti béne a fár, ne —*  
 didst (with it). There was in that court this usage.  
*facésti<sup>2</sup> ne<sup>1</sup>. — Éra córte usánza.*

Passing by the cell of this one, he heard the  
*Passándo davánti cétla , — sentì*  
 noise which they—(these ones) made together. He  
*schiamázzo — facévano<sup>2</sup> insiéme<sup>1</sup>.*

| did not work | at all, but a thousand times | a |  
*| non lavoráva | púnto, ma - vólta | il |*  
 day, he would run to the window | to | see this  
*di, — corréva finéstra | per | vedére*  
 woman. It appeared to him to be safe, and out  
*— párv<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> éssere sicúro, e fuór*  
 of the hands of those who had taken him.  
*máno avévano<sup>2</sup> prés<sup>1</sup>*

Those ones make me enter here | to | deceive  
*fánno<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> entráre<sup>4</sup> ci<sup>2</sup> | per | ingannár*  
 me. Having departed from that one with (the) whom  
*Partítosi*

he had been so long, | he came | | to | England.  
*— éra<sup>2</sup> státo<sup>3</sup> lungaménte<sup>1</sup> | séne vénne | | in | Inghiltérra.*

I will pay thee | for | this time, and | for |  
*pagherò<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> | di | this vólta, e | di |*  
 that. I have heard what you have spoken of me.  
*ho intéso — avéte<sup>4</sup> ragionáto<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup>*

And on this occasion | he perceived | | that he had |  
*Ed — s' accórs<sup>e</sup> | | avére |*

a very beautiful woman for a wife. | Dost thou  
*bélla dónna - móglie. | Non ódi*

not hear | what he says? This one is the arch-  
*tu | díce? arc-*

bishop Ruggéri. That one is Brutus. Conceiving  
*véscovo . é Brúto. Prendéno*

a sudden hope of being able to return once more  
*- súbita speránza potére ritornáre<sup>2</sup> ancóra<sup>1</sup>*

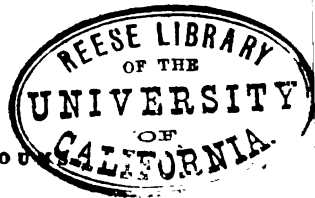
in the royal state, | by | the counsel of that one.  
*reale stato<sup>2</sup>, | per | consiglier<sup>2</sup> —*

All those who believe so are deceived. In Cyprus  
*Tutti credono<sup>2</sup> così sono ingannati. Cipri*

and in Rhodes the rumors and the disturbances  
*e Rodi rumóre e turbamento<sup>2</sup>*

were great, and lasted a long time | through | the  
*furono grande<sup>2</sup>, e — lungo tempo | per |*

deeds of these ones.  
*opere<sup>2</sup> —*



## INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

Of indefinite pronouns, the following are used only in the singular, and cannot be put before nouns in the plural number :

<i>qualche</i> , m. & f.	some, any ;
<i>ogni</i> , m. & f.	all, every ;
<i>chiunque</i> , m. & f.	} whoever, whosoever ;
<i>chisivoglia</i> , m. & f.	
<i>chi che</i> , m. & f.	
<i>chicchessia</i> , m. & f.	} whatever, whatsoever ;
<i>che che</i> , m. & f.	
<i>checchessia</i> , m. & f.	} whosoever, whatsoever ;
<i>qualunque</i> , m. & f.	
<i>qualsivoglia</i> , m. & f.	
<i>qualsisia</i> , m. & f.	} nothing.
<i>nulla</i> , m. & f.	
<i>niénte</i> , m. & f.	

<i>uno</i> , m.	<i>una</i> , f.	one ;
<i>unaltro</i> , m.	<i>un'altra</i> , f.	another ;
<i>qualcuno</i> , m.	<i>qualcuna</i> , f.	} some, some one, some body ;
<i>qualcheduno</i> , m.	<i>qualcheduna</i> , f.	

<i>ognino</i> , m.	<i>ognina</i> , f.	} every one, every body ;
<i>ciascuno</i> , m.	<i>ciascuna</i> , f.	
<i>ciascheduno</i> , m.	<i>ciascheduna</i> , f.	
<i>veruno</i> , m.	<i>veruna</i> , f.	} no one, nobody.
<i>nessuno</i> , m.	<i>nessuna</i> , f.	
OR <i>nissuno</i> , m.	<i>nissuna</i> , f.	
<i>neuno</i> , m.	<i>neuna</i> , f.	
OR <i>niuno</i> , m.	<i>niuna</i> , f.	
<i>nullo</i> , m.	<i>nulla</i> , f.	

## EXCEPTIONS.

*Ogni*, before numeral adjectives, as in the phrases *ogni due mesi*, 'every two months'; *ogni sei pagine*, 'every six pages'; *ogni dieci soldati*, 'every ten soldiers'; and in the word *ognissanti*, 'the day of All-saints'; is used with nouns in the plural.

*Qualche* has been used, by some writers, with nouns in the plural, as, *qualche verdi boschi*, 'some green woods'; but such examples are not to be imitated.

The following are used in both numbers :

Singular.		Plural.	
<i>tale</i> , m. & f.	such ;	<i>tali</i> , m. & f.	such ;
<i>totale</i> , m. & f.	{ such, such one ;	a	<i>totali</i> , m. & f. { such, such ones ;
<i>alcuno</i> , m.	{ some, some one, some body.	<i>alcuni</i> , m.	{ some, some ones ;
<i>alcuna</i> , f.		<i>alcune</i> , f.	
<i>taluno</i> , m.		<i>taluni</i> , m.	
<i>taluna</i> , f.		<i>talune</i> , f.	
<i>certo</i> , m.	{ certain ;	<i>certi</i> , m.	{ certain ;
<i>certa</i> , f.		<i>certe</i> , f.	
<i>stesso</i> , m.	{ same ;	<i>stessi</i> , m.	{ same ;
<i>stessa</i> , f.		<i>stesse</i> , f.	
<i>medesimo</i> , m.		<i>medesimi</i> , m.	
<i>medesima</i> , f.		<i>medesime</i> , f.	

<i>áltro</i> , m.	} other ;	<i>áltri</i> , m.	} others ;
<i>áltra</i> , f.		<i>áltre</i> , f.	
<i>túllo</i> , m.	} all ;	<i>títtri</i> , m.	} all, every one, every body ;
<i>títta</i> , f.		<i>títte</i> , f.	
<i>alquánto</i> , m.	} a little, somewhat ;	<i>alquánti</i> , m.	} a few, not many ;
<i>alquánta</i> , f.		<i>alquánte</i> , f.	
<i>tánto</i> , m.	} so much ;	<i>tánti</i> , m.	} as many ;
<i>tánta</i> , f.		<i>tánte</i> , f.	
<i>colánto</i> , m.		<i>colánti</i> , m.	
<i>colánta</i> , f.		<i>colánte</i> , f.	
<i>altrettánto</i> , m.	} as much, as much more ;	<i>altrettánti</i> , m.	} as many, as many more ;
<i>altrettánta</i> , f.		<i>altrettánte</i> , f.	
<i>póco</i> , m.	} a little, a few ;	<i>póchi</i> , m.	} few ;
<i>póca</i> , f.		<i>póche</i> , f.	
<i>mólto</i> , m.	} much ;	<i>mólti</i> , m.	} many ;
<i>mólta</i> , f.		<i>mólte</i> , f.	
<i>tróppo</i> , m.	} too much ;	<i>tróppi</i> , m.	} too many.
<i>tróppa</i> , f.		<i>tróppe</i> , f.	

*Chiúnque*, *chisivógliá*, *chi che*, *chicchessía*, *qualcúno*, *qualchedúno*, *ognúno*, *talúno*, are applied to persons only ; the others may be applied both to persons and things.

*Núlla*, *niénte*, 'nothing,' mean also 'some or any thing,' and *nessúno* or *nissúno*, *neúno* or *niúno*, *verúno*, 'nothing, no one, nobody,' mean also 'some or any thing, any one, any body' ; as,

<i>s' élla vúol NÚLLA</i> ,	if she wants any thing ;
<i>se égli si sentísse NIÉNTE</i> ,	if he felt any thing ;
<i>non rimarrébbe a sostenér</i> <i>péna NESSÚNA</i> ,	there would not remain any pun- ishment to suffer ;
<i>se va in NIÚN luógo</i> ,	if he goes to any place ;
<i>s' égli ha bonátate VERÚNA</i> ,	if he has any good quality.

*Alcuno*, 'some,' is sometimes used instead of *niuno*, 'nothing, no one'; as,

*chè ALCUNA gloria avrèbbero*, for they would derive no glory ;  
*che ALCUNA via darèbbe*, which would afford no way.

*Altro* is sometimes used instead of *altra cosa*, 'some or any thing else'; as,

*avrèsti detto ALTRO* ; thou wouldst have said some-  
 thing else ;  
*hai fatto ALTRO ?* hast thou done any thing else ?

*Altro* is often used in the singular, in speaking of persons ; and then it is equivalent to *altr' uomo*, 'another man,' or 'another person,' 'others'; as,

*nè voi, nè ALTRI potrà dire ch'* neither you nor any other man  
*io non l'abbia veduta,* can say that I have not seen  
 it ;  
*per non fidármene ad ALTRI,* not to trust to other persons.

When *altri* is thus used, in any other *relation*, than the subjective or the objective, it is changed into *altrúi*; as,

*ho detto male d' ALTRÚI,* I have spoken ill of another ;  
*le presterei ad ALTRÚI,* I would lend them to others ;  
*che io da ALTRÚI non sia* that I should not be heard by  
*udito,* any other person.

*Altro* is also used in a distributive sense, and then it corresponds to the English pronouns *one* — *another* ; *the one* — *the other* ; *some* — *others* ; as,

*ALTRI fa rémi, ed ALTRI vol-* the one makes oars, the other  
*ge sarte,* twists ropes ;  
*ALTRI sen váda errándo, AL-* let some go wandering, let  
*TRI rimánga ucciso, ALTRI* some be killed, let others  
*idol si fáccia un dolce* place their happiness in a  
*squárdo,* sweet look.

*Altrúi* is sometimes used with the article, and then the words *avére, sostánza*, 'property', 'patrimony', are understood, and *l' altrúi* is equivalent to 'another's property', 'patrimony', &c.; as,

<i>domandár l' ALTRÚI,</i>	to demand another's property
<i>logorár DELL' ALTRÚI,</i>	to use the property of others.

*U'no* and *áltro* are sometimes used with the article, *l' úno, l' áltro*; and then *l' úno* corresponds to *the one, the former*, and *l' áltro* to *the other, the latter*. *U'no* and *áltro*, when so used, in the plural make *gli úni, gli áltri*, for the masculine; and *le úne, le áltre*, for the feminine; as,

<i>l' età l' úno, e l' áltra avéa trasformáti,</i>	age had changed the one and the other;
<i>e DELL' ÚNE, e DELL' ÁLTRA fácci quello che crédi,</i>	and with the one and with the other do what thou thinkest.
<i>GLI ÚNI teméti Anníbale, GLI ÁLTRI Filippo,</i>	the former fearing Annibal, the latter Philip.

The expressions *l' úno e l' áltro, l' úna e l' áltra; gli úni e gli áltri, le úne e le áltre*, correspond to the English pronouns *both, both of them*; as,

<i>l' ÚNO E l' ÁLTRO córno,</i>	both horns;
<i>l' ÚNA E l' ÁLTRA stélla,</i>	both stars.

*L'un l' áltro, l' úna l' áltra; gli úni gli áltri, le úne le áltre*, are equivalent to the English pronouns *one another, each other*; as,

<i>SI AMÁVANO l' UN l' ÁLTRO,</i>	they loved one another;
<i>l' UN l' ÁLTRO intéti a ri-guardársi,</i>	intent to look at each other.

*In úno*, is equivalent to the English expression *at the same time*; as,

<i>Mésta mi véde, ma IN UN fug- gir dal sío cospétto,</i>	he sees me sad, but at the same time to flee from his presence.
---	---





and sometimes instead of *nessuno*; as,

*quivi non è CHI legga, nè CHI scriva,* there is no one there who reads,  
and none who writes.

*Chi* is also used in a distributive sense, and then it is equivalent to the English pronouns *one — another*; *the one — the other*; *some — others*; as,

*port' indo, CHI fiori, CHI erbe odorifere, e CHI diverse maniere di spezierie,* carrying, some flowers, some, sweet herbs, and others, different kinds of spices.

*Quale* is used in a distributive sense, and corresponds to *one — another*; as,

*QUÁL se n' andò in contádo, e QUÁL quà, e QUÁL là,* one went into the country, and another here, and another there.

*Più* and *parécchi, parécchie*, as indefinite pronouns, are equivalent to the English pronoun *several*; as,

*PIÙ giòrni,* several days;  
*PARÉCCHI àltri,* several others;  
*PARÉCCHIE óre,* several hours.

*Più* and *méno* sometimes take the article, — *il più, il méno*; *i più* or *le più, i méno* or *le méno*; and then *il più, i più* or *le più*, are equivalent to *the most, the greater part*; and *il méno, i méno* or *le méno*, to *the least, the smaller part*; as,

*IL PIÙ del témpo,* the greater part of the time;  
*I PIÙ mortivano,* the most of them died;  
*LE PIÙ si trovavano in Berlinzone,* the greater number of them were found in Berlinzone;  
*il Paradiso è DÉI MÉNO,* Paradise is for the smaller number.

*Si* is used for both genders and both numbers in the objective only, and corresponds to the English words *one, we, people, they, &c.*; as,

SI <i>vede</i> ,	one sees ;
SI <i>è detto</i> ,	we have said ;
SI <i>videro</i> ,	people saw ;
SI <i>promettono</i> [ <i>mólte</i> ] <i>cóse</i> ,	they promise many things.

Si and the verb, in these and similar expressions, hold the place of a *passive proposition*, and may be equally well rendered in English by the verb *to be* ; as,

SI <i>rendessero gli onóri a Gálba</i> , e SI <i>celebrásse la memoria di Pisone</i> ,	honors should be rendered to Galba, and the memory of Piso should be celebrated.
--	--

When *si* is followed by the particle *ne*, we change the *i* of *si* into *e* ; as,

NON SE NE <i>troverebbe uno</i> ,	they would not find one.
-----------------------------------	--------------------------

## EXAMPLES.

Tu le *dirái*, s' *élla vuól núlla*. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)      Thou wilt ask her, whether she wants any thing.

Il *domandò se égli si sentísse niénte*. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)      He asked him whether he felt any thing.

Che NON *rimarrébbe a sostenér péna nessúna nel purgatorio per gli peccáti*, (Pass.)      That there would not remain in purgatory any punishment to suffer for sins.

SE *Filippo va óggi in niún luógo*. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)      If Philip goes to-day to any place.

Per le *tentazioni si próva l' uómo*, s' *égli ha bontate verúna*. (Pass. p. 47.)      By temptations it is proved whether a man has any good quality.

CH' *alcúna glória i réi avrébber d' élli*. (Dant. Inf. 3.)      For the guilty would derive no glory from them.

Ch' *alcúna vía darébbe a chi su fosse*. (Dant. Inf. 12.)      Which would afford no way to him who should be above.

ÁLTRO *avrésti détto, se tu m' avéssi vedúto a Bológnna*.— (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)      Thou wouldst have said another thing, if thou hadst seen me in Bologna.

O, ÀLTRO HÁITU FÁTTO? (Bocc. n. 1.)

Oh, hast thou done any thing else?

NÈ VÓI, NÈ ÀLTRI *con ragione mi potrà più díre ch' ío non l' ábbia vedúta.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

Neither you, nor others can any longer say rightly that I have not seen it.

PER NON FIDÁRMENE *ad ÀLTRI, ío medésima tel son venúta a significáre.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

Not to trust to others, I myself have come to inform thee of it.

Io ho DÉTTO MAL D' ÀLTRÚI. (Bocc.)

I have spoken ill of others.

CHE ÍO DA ÀLTRÚI *che da léi udíto non sía.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

That I should be heard by no other, but by her.

ÀLTRI FA RÉMI, ED ÀLTRI VÓLGE SÁRTE. (Dant. Inf.)

Some make oars, and others twist ropes.

ÀLTRI *disperso* — SEN VÁDA ERRÁNDÓ: ÀLTRI RIMÁNGA UCÍSO: — ÀLTRI, *in cùre d' amór soáve immérso,* — ÍDOL SI FÁC-CIA, UN DÓLCE SGUÁRDO, *un ríso.* (Tass. Ger. 4. 18.)

Let some of them go dispersed, and wandering: let some be killed: let others, plunged in the cares of pleasing love, place their happiness in a sweet look, a smile.

Con le vóci úmili, e mansuète nel DOMANDÁR L' ÀLTRÚI. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

With humble and mild words in demanding the property of others.

Si dispóse a volér LOGORÁR DELL' ÀLTRÚI. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

She disposed herself to use the property of others.

Tánto L' ETÀ L' ÚNO E L' ÀLTRO, *da quéllo che ésser solháno,* glí AVÉA TRASFORMÁTI. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

So much had age changed the one and the other from what they were used to be.

Che le mie cose ed élla ti síeno raccomandáte, E QUÉLLO DELL' ÚNE E DELL' ÀLTRA FÁCCI, CHE CRÉDI, *che síeno consolazíone dell' ánima mía.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Let my things and her be recommended to thee, and with the one and with the other do what thou thinkest would be of any consolation to my soul.

Immagináí di volér fáre, sic-cóme fecero i Saguntíni, o glí Abidécí, GLI ÚNI TEMÉNTI ANNIBALE Cartaginése, E GLI ÀLTRI FILÍPPO Macedónico. (Bocc. Flamm. 5. 53.)

I thought of doing as the Saguntines and the Abydeans did, the former fearing Annibal the Carthaginian, the latter Philip the Macedonian.

Scaldáva il sol già L' ÚNO E L' ÀLTRO CÓRNO — *Del Táuro.* (Petr. cap. 1.)

The sun was already warming both the horns of Taurus,

*Ov' è 'l bel ciglio, e l' ūna e l' āltra stēlla — Ch' al cōrso del mio viver lūme dēmo? (Petr. s. 258.)*

Where is the beautiful brow and both those stars which gave light to my life?

*L' ūn l' āltro di eguāle amore si amāvāno. (Bocc.)*

They loved one another with an equal love.

*L' un l' āltro a riguardār-si intēnti. (Tass. Ger.)*

Intent to look at each other.

*Mēsta ognōr mi vēde, mēsta è vērō, ma in un dal sūo cos-fētto fuggīr mi vēde. (Alf. Filip. 1. 1.)*

He sees me always sad, sad it is true, but at the same time he sees me flee from his presence.

*Ēgli senz' āltro sarà col re. (Maff. Mer. 2. 3.)*

He without doubt is with the king.

*Rīcco, e sāvio, e avvedūto per āltro, ma avarīssimo. — (Bocc. g. 6. d. 2.)*

Rich, and wise, and prudent otherwise, but very avaricious.

*Le piāghe altrūi. (Petr. s. 6.)*

The wounds of others.

*Ricōrdati che ūna vōlta senza piū, suble avvenīre, che la for-tūna si fa altrūi incōntro col viso liēto, e col grēmo apērto. (Bocc. g. 6. d. 10.)*

Remember that once and no more, it is wont to happen, that fortune goes to meet others with joyful countenance, and open bosom.

*Nell' altrūi sāngue gid bagnāto e fīnto. (Petr. s. 29.)*

Already bathed and stained with another's blood.

*Tal fu mīa stēlla, e tal mīa crūda sōrte. (Petr. s. 182.)*

Such was my star, and such my cruel fate.

*Quēste tāi dolorōse dimōstra-zioni son trōppo vedūte, e cono-sciūte. (Castigl. Cort. 1. 3.)*

Such painful demonstrations are too often seen and known.

*E fēcer tā' palāgi, e tā' ma-raviglie, che non si potrēbbe dēre. (Fr. Gior.)*

And they made such palaces, and such wonderful things, that cannot be described.

*In quēsto lōco di leggiēr può arrivār chi ti frastōrni. — (Maff. Mer. 3. 4.)*

In this place may easily arrive one who will disturb thee.

*Quīvi non è chi ragiōni — Di Cristo, ne chi lēgga, nè chi scrīva. (Dant. Par. 12.)*

There is no one there who talks of Christ, no one who reads, no one who writes.

*Molti andavano attorno, portando nelle mani, chi fiori, chi erbe odorifere, e chi diverse maniere di spezierie.* (Bocc. Introd.)

Many went about carrying in their hands, some, flowers, some, sweet herbs, and others, different kinds of spices.

*E le lor donne, e i figliuoli picciolotti, qual se n' andò in contado, e qual quà, e qual là, poveramente in arnese.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

And of their wives, and young children, one went into the country, and one here, and another there, poorly provided.

*Più giorni felicemente navigarono.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

They sailed happily several days.

*Con parecchi altri.* (Petr.)

With several others.

*Durò per lo spazio di parecchie ore.* (Giov. Vill.)

It lasted for the space of several hours.

*Il più del tempo, si stanno a mangiare, e poltrire.* (Dav. Germ.)

The greater part of the time they pass in eating and dozing.

*I più senza alcuna febbre, o altro accidente morivano.* (Bocc. Introd.)

The most of them died without any fever, or any other symptom.

*Maso rispose, che le più si trovavano in Berlinzone.* — (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

Maso replied, that the greater number of them were found in Berlinzone.

*Il paradiso è dei meno, e non dei più.* (Segn. Mann. Marz. 31.)

Paradise is for the smaller number, and not for the larger.

*Come si vede.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

As one sees.

*Come s' è detto.* (Dav. Ann.)

As we have said.

*Vidersi in quello esercito soldati vecchi, che non avevano fatto mai guardia.* (Dav.)

People saw in that army old soldiers, who had never been on guard.

*Quanto cose gli si promettono tutto 'l dì.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

How many things they promise him the whole day.

*Propose, che si rendessero gli onori a Galba: che anche si celebrasse la memoria di Pisone.* (Dav. Stor. l. 4.)

He proposed, that honors should be rendered to Galba, and that the memory of Piso should also be celebrated.

*Non se ne troverebbe un maggior mai.* (Bocc. g. 2. fin.)

They would never find one greater.

## EXERCISE XIV.

Whoever does otherwise sins. There must be  
*fa<sup>2</sup> altrimenti<sup>1</sup> pécca. Vi deve essere*  
 some deception. Let us give this bread to eat to  
*inganno. Diámo páne a mangiáre*  
 some one. He commanded that every one should  
 — *Comandò andás-*  
 go to rest himself. That we | might not cause |  
*sc<sup>2</sup> a<sup>4</sup> riposáre<sup>5</sup> sí<sup>1</sup>. Acciocchè non déssimo* |  
 (to) any one | to | think of us. Each  
*3 4 da<sup>1</sup> pensáre<sup>2</sup> — —* |  
 one\* of us knows, that the greater part of (the)  
*sa, 4 5 parte<sup>6</sup> of (the)<sup>1</sup>*  
 her friends — (hers) are dead. You will receive a  
 — — *2 sóno<sup>3</sup> móto.<sup>7</sup> riceveréte* —  
 hundred for every one. Every mother is a nurse  
*madre è — bábia*  
 of her children. Without any delay, he did what  
*figliuólo. Senza indúgio, — féce*  
 the king ordered. No † body perceived | it. |  
*re commandáva. persóna accórse<sup>2</sup> | séne.<sup>1</sup> |*  
 Here it seemed to me that I saw — (to see) no † sanctity, no †  
*Quivi — páve<sup>14</sup> 13 — — veder<sup>13</sup> 1 santità,<sup>2</sup> 3*  
 devotion, no † good deed, or example of life.  
*divozióné<sup>4</sup>, 5 búno<sup>6</sup> ópera<sup>7</sup>, 8 esémpio<sup>9</sup> 10 víta<sup>11</sup>.*  
 Where every word, every phrase, every mode of  
*O've paróla, fráse, módo —*  
 expression is explained with clearness. To-morrow I  
 — *vién spiegáto<sup>3</sup> con<sup>1</sup> chiarézza<sup>2</sup>. dománi<sup>2</sup> —*  
 shall dine with some friends. Some companies of  
*Pranzerò<sup>1</sup> con amíco. compagnía*  
 Belgians collected in haste, and a band of Vitellians.  
*Bélgi fatto fúria, e máno of Vitelliani.*

\* Each one, in the feminine gender.

† No, here in the signification of not one, none.

‡ No, in the signification of not any.

Now I have nothing more | to | fear. Who — (to  
*Omái - ho²* | *più²* | *da* | *temére.* —  
 (the) whom)\* | had been obliged to live | for several  
*era convenuto vivere?* | —  
 years | like | a deaf and dumb person. I never  
*anno²* | *a guisa di²* | — *sórdo² e²* *mutolo².* *non*  
 | should come | | to the end | of it | for | several  
*verría²* | | *a capo²* | *ne¹* | *in* |  
 days.  
*di.*

Said the barterer: | "Must I say | more — (any  
*Disse* *barattière:* | "*Ho io a dir* | —  
 other thing)." Not | being able | to be seen by  
*Non* | *poténdo* | *esser² veduto²*  
 any other, he threw himself | on his knees | before  
*gittò²* *si²* | *ginocchione²* | *davanti²*  
 her, and said. I determined (myself) | to | tell  
*le², e disse.* — *Deliberái* — *mi* | *di* | *dir*  
 it rather to you than to others. With (the) humble,  
*piuttósto* | *umile²,*  
 and mild words in (the) asking the property of  
*e² mansueto² voce²* | *(the) domandare* — *property of*  
 others — (the others²). He will be with him without  
*sard²* | *sensa¹*  
 doubt — (any other thing to the contrary). He sees  
*vede²*  
 me | at the | (one) same time fly from his presence.  
*in* | — — *fuggire* *cospétto.*

Some make oars, and others twist ropes. Suppose  
*fa rémo, e* *vólge sárta.* *Fingéte*  
 | on | the contrary, that that be not a comedy, but  
*a* | *contrário,* *sia² non¹* *commédia, ma*  
 a tragedy, and that of the actors some should speak  
*tragédia, e* *recitante* *favéllí*  
 Bolognese, others Venetian, that one Bergamasque, this  
*Veneziano,* *Bergamasco,*

\* Whom, in the feminine gender.



one Neapolitan, and that one Milanese. (The) one \*  
*Napolitano,*

of them had a beautiful and large mattress of  
 — — *avea bello<sup>a</sup> e<sup>b</sup> grande<sup>a</sup> materasso<sup>1</sup>*

cotton | on | her head, and the other \* a very  
*bambagia<sup>2</sup> in — capo, e*

large basket full of things. Some went | into |  
*grande paniero pieno cosa. sen' andò in*

the country, and some here, and some there.  
 — *contado, e quà, e là.*

## CHAPTER VIII.

OF THE PARTICLES *NE, CI, VI*

WITH pronouns are generally classed the particles *ne, ci, vi,* † which never vary, and always refer to some person, thing, or place, which has been spoken of before.

*Ne* may refer to one person or thing, or to more than one, according to the number of the objects, which have been mentioned; and then it is rendered in English by — *of him, of her, of it; of them; with him, with her, &c.; at him, &c.; some of it, some of them; as,*

*NE pare innamorato,* he seems enamoured of her;  
*a quanti NE giacevano tagliò* he cut off the hair of as many  
*i capelli,* of them as slept;

\* *The one, the other,* in the feminine gender.

† These particles, in orthography, appear to be the same words as the conjunctive pronouns *ne, ci, vi;* their difference in signification, however, is easily ascertained by the meaning of the sentence in which they are used.

<i>non NE potéva pagáre i calzári,</i>	I could not pay for my shoes with it;
<i>se NE maravigliò,</i>	he wondered at it;
<i>NE ho présò,</i>	I have taken some of it, or some of them.

*Ne* may also refer to the place, which one comes from, or goes to; and then it corresponds to the English adverbs — *hence, thence*; as,

<i>mÉNE vénni,</i>	I came thence;
<i>quándo NE andréte?</i>	when shall you go hence?

and sometimes to an indeterminate place; as,

<i>NE è portáta dal vénto,</i>	it is thence carried away by the wind.
--------------------------------	--

*Ci, vi,* refer to a place, and correspond to the English adverbs — *here, there; hither, thither*; as,

<i>CI tra venúto,</i>	I had come hither;
<i>non VI poté entráre,</i>	he could not enter thither.

*Ci,* properly, refers to a place near the person speaking, and *vi,* to a place at a distance; as,

<i>CI sóno státo áltre vólte,</i>	I have been here formerly;
<i>se tu mái VI tórni,</i>	if thou shalt ever return there.

This distinction, however, is not observed when the particles *ci, vi,* and the conjunctive pronouns *ci, vi,* would be brought together, as in *io VI VI condurrò, — voi CI CI avéte condótti*; in which case, to avoid the harsh sound produced by the repetition of the same word, \* we say, without regard to the distance of the place,

<i>io VI CI condurrò,</i>	I will conduct you thither;
<i>voi VI CI avéte condótti,</i>	you have conducted us hither.

\* An instance nevertheless, is met with in Boccaccio, in which *ci* is used instead of *vi*, without the occurrence of the repetition of the word on account of the conjunctive pronoun:

*Non ci sóno in nún luógo abitánze si présso, che tu di giòrno VI potéssi arriváre.* (G. 5. n. 3.)

There are nowhere dwellings so near, that you could arrive there before sunset.

*Ci, vi*, may refer also to persons or things, and then they take the signification of the persons or things, which they refer to ; as,

*-pensaste a me ? — ci pensái,* did you think of me ? — I thought of you.

*baderete a ciò, or a questo ? — sì, vi baderò,* will you attend to this ? — yes, I will attend to it.

*Ci, vi*, are used sometimes instead of *questo, quello, tale, &c.* in the signification of — *to it, in it, from it, &c.* ; as,

*ci troveremo buona compenso,* we shall find in it a good compensation ;

*ascoltai queste parole senza rispondervi,* I listened to these words without replying to them ;

*to non vi consentii,* I did not consent to it.

When the particles *ci, vi*, are followed by the pronouns *lo, la, li, gli, le*, they are generally united to them so as to form a single word ; as,

*VELO aveva condotto,* he had conducted him there ;  
*ingegnati di ritenercelo,* contrive to keep him there.

The particles *ne, ci, vi*, are often used as expletives ; as,

*NE andò per la camera,* he went through the room ;  
*ciascun che CI nasce,* every one who is born ;  
*dove VI morì,* where [there] died.

#### EXAMPLES.

*Egli, pianamente andando, A QUANTI in quella casa NE GIACÉVANO TAGLIO I CAPÉLLI.* (Bocc. g. 3. d. 2.) He, walking softly, cut off the hair of as many of them as slept in that house.

*Mi davon sì poco salario, che io NON NE POTÉVA appéna PAGÁRE I CALZÁRI.* (Bocc. g. 2. d. 1.) They gave me so small a salary, that I could hardly pay for my shoes with it.

*Quand' io MÉNE VÉNNI.* —  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

When I came thence.

*La cénere pósta in álto, NE È  
PORTÁTA DAL VÉNTO.* (Pass. tr.  
Hu. c. 4.)

The ashes placed on high, is  
thence carried away by the wind.

*A'nzi CI ÉRA VENÚTO per do-  
térgli ammoníre.* (Bocc. g. 1. n.  
1.)

Nay, I had come hither in order  
to admonish him.

*Sì tárdisi vi giúanse, che, esséndo  
le pórtte serrate; e i pónti leváti,  
ENTRÁR NON VI POTÉ DÉNTRO.* —  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

He arrived there so late, that,  
the gates being shut, and the  
bridges raised, he could not enter  
thither.

*Veraménte CI SÓNO IO ÁLTRE  
VÓLTE STÁTO; ma sì m' avéa la  
paúra di me trátto, che cosí come  
se mái non ci fóssi, d' ésserci  
státo mi ricordáva.* (Lab.)

Truly I have been here former-  
ly; but fear had in such a manner  
deprived me of my senses, that I  
recollected as little of having been  
here, as if I never had been here.

*Se égli avviené, che TU MÁI VI  
TÓRNI, fa che tu non sii mái piú  
gelóso.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)

If it happens that thou shalt ever  
return there, take care that thou  
be no more jealous.

*VÓI VI CI AVÉTE CONDÓTTI.*  
(Fr. Sacch.)

You have conducted us hither.

*PENSÁSTE A ME? — sì CI PEN-  
SÁI.* (Beimb.)

Did you think of me? — yes, I  
thought of you.

*Per avventúra l' ópera nóstra  
potrà éssere andáta di módo, che  
NOI CI TROVERÉMO, coll' aiúto di  
Dio, BUÓN COMPÉNSO.* (Bocc. g.  
2. n. 7.)

Perchance our business may  
take such a turn, that we shall  
find in it, with the assistance of  
God, some compensation.

*QUÉSTE PARÓLE, non úna vól-  
ta, e SÉNZÁ RISPÓNDERVI alcú-  
na cósa, ASCOLTÁI con gráve á-  
nimo.* (Bocc. Fiam. l. 5.)

To these words, more than once,  
and without replying to them any  
thing, I listened with a serious  
mind.

*Ringraziándo Iddio, CHE  
CONDÓTTO VEL' AVÉA.* (Bocc. g.  
2. n. 4.)

Thanking God that had con-  
ducted him there.

*Sáppi se égli sa lavoráre, ed  
INGÉGNATI DI RITENÉRCELO.* —  
(Bocc.)

Learn whether he knows how  
to work, and contrive to keep him  
there.

*Chetaménte NE ANDÒ PER LA  
CÁMERA infino álla finéstra.* —  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Gently he went through the  
room as far as the window.

*Natural ragione è di CIASCUN CHE CI NASCE, la sua vita, quanto può, aiutare, e conservare, e difendere.* (Bocc. Introd.)

It is a natural thing to every one who is born to help, preserve, and defend his life, as much as he can.

*Costui distrusse Jerusalem, dove vi morì, tra d' arme e di fame, centinaia di migliaia di Giudei.* (Petr. Uom. ill. 28.)

This one destroyed Jerusalem, where there died, both by arms and of hunger, hundreds of thousands of Jews.

## EXERCISE XV.

The miserable Landolfo, although the day before  
*miserico* , *ancorachè* <sup>2</sup> *di* <sup>4</sup> *davanti* <sup>2</sup>  
 had called (the) death many times, seeing it near,  
*avésse* <sup>2</sup> *chiamato* <sup>2</sup> <sup>2</sup> *morte* <sup>7</sup> *mólto* <sup>1</sup> *vólta*, <sup>2</sup> *vedéndo* <sup>2</sup> *présta*,  
 was afraid of it. He wished that I should see  
*ebbe* <sup>2</sup> *paúra* <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> . — *Vólle* <sup>2</sup> *vedéssi*  
 all the holy relics, and they were so many, that,  
*sánto* *reliquia*, *e* — *fúron* *tánto*,  
 if I wished to relate them to you, I never should  
*se* *voléssi* <sup>2</sup> *contáre* <sup>2</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> , *non* <sup>2</sup> *ver-*  
 come to an end (of them). “Oh, my master!”  
*rés* <sup>2</sup> <sup>2</sup> — *cápo* <sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup> . “Oh, mio maestro!”<sup>1</sup>,  
 said Bruno, “I do not wonder (myself) at it.  
*dicéva* , “ *non* | *maraviglio* <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> at <sup>2</sup> ,  
 for I have heard say, that they say nothing —  
*chè* *ho* *udíto* *díre*, *—* *—* *—* *—* *—*  
 [(do not | say anything) of it.” But yet coming  
*non* | *díceno* <sup>2</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> . *Ma* *piú* *uscíto* <sup>2</sup>  
 out thence, he began to wonder (himself) | more  
*—* *incominciò* <sup>2</sup> <sup>4</sup> *maravigliáre* <sup>2</sup> <sup>2</sup> | *an-*  
 and more. |  
*córa* *piú*. <sup>1</sup> |

Cause (the) generosity | to be painted | here.  
*Fáto* <sup>1</sup> <sup>4</sup> *cortésia* <sup>2</sup> | *dipíngere* <sup>2</sup> | <sup>2</sup>.

Pretending <i>Semiante facendo</i>	to   <i>di</i>	have   <i>essere</i> <sup>1</sup>	returned there   <i>tornato</i> <sup>2</sup>
---------------------------------------	-------------------	--------------------------------------	---

  
 with a great deal more merchandise than before.  
*con*                      *mercanzia*                      *prima*.

I   cannot	well relate how I entered there.	The
<i>non so</i>	<i>bén ridire come entrái</i> <sup>2</sup>	

church is so full of people, that no \* person can  
*chiésa è sì piena gente*,                      *persóna può*<sup>2</sup>.

any more enter there.      Andreuccio, fearing, entered  
*più*<sup>1</sup>                      *entrare*<sup>4</sup>                      <sup>2</sup>.                      *temendo, entrò*<sup>2</sup>

there, and entering there he thought within himself.  
<sup>1</sup>, *e* *entrando* —                      *pensò*                      *con*<sup>2</sup>                      *se*<sup>1</sup>.

If I   can affect	to	be dumb,	I shall be
<i>Se</i>	<i>so far vista</i>	<i>di</i>	<i>esser muto, sarò</i> <sup>4</sup>

received there surely.  
*ricevuto*<sup>5</sup>                      <sup>2</sup> *per certo*<sup>1</sup>.

They † replied: "It is | very | true; since thou  
*risposero: " — è*<sup>2</sup> | *Bene*<sup>1</sup> | *véro, perché*

art the one who makes us stay here.      Alas! Zéppa,  
*séi*                      *fai*<sup>2</sup>                      <sup>2</sup> *stare*<sup>4</sup>                      <sup>1</sup>.                      *Ohimè!*

what does this mean?      Have you then made me  
*vuól*                      <sup>2</sup> *dir?*<sup>1</sup>                      *avete*<sup>4</sup>                      <sup>2</sup>                      *Dunque fatto*<sup>6</sup>                      <sup>2</sup>.

come here for this?      I will cause it \* | to be  
*venir*<sup>7</sup>                      <sup>2</sup>                      ?                      *farò*<sup>2</sup>                      <sup>2</sup>                      | *dipin-*

painted   here,	in such a manner,	that neither
<i>gere</i> <sup>4</sup>	<i>di</i> <i>maniera,</i>	<i>nè</i>

you nor any other one | will be able | to tell me  
*nè* —                      —                      | *potrà*<sup>2</sup> |                      *dire*<sup>4</sup>                      <sup>1</sup>.

any longer, that I have not seen it. † These persons §  
*più*<sup>2</sup>,                      <sup>2</sup>                      <sup>6</sup> *abbia*<sup>9</sup> *non veduta*<sup>10</sup> <sup>2</sup>.

make me enter here | to | deceive me.      We wish  
*fanno*<sup>2</sup>                      <sup>1</sup> *entrare*<sup>4</sup>                      <sup>2</sup>.                      | *per* | *ingannár* —                      *vogliámo*

\* *Nb*, here in the signification of no one.      † *They*, in the feminine gender.

‡ *E* [the generosity — *la cortesia*], in the feminine gender.

§ *These persons*, for *these men near me*.

to go	and	see this holy man; but I, for myself,
andare	a	vedere                      santo;      ma      ,      me,
do not	see how we can get there.	
non	védo come —	possiamo <sup>2</sup> pervenire <sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> .

## CHAPTER IX.

## VERBS.

ALL Italian verbs are classed in *three* different *conjugations*, which are distinguished by the termination of their infinitive.

The *first conjugation* comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in *áre*; as, *amÁRE*, 'to love.'

The *second* comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in *ére*; as *temÉRE*, 'to fear.'

The *third* comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in *íre*; as, *sentÍRE*, 'to hear,' or 'to feel.'

All the verbs of these three different conjugations, whether *regular* or *irregular*, are conjugated or *varied* with one of the *auxiliary* verbs, *avére*, 'to have,' or *éssere*, 'to be'.

## VARIATION OF VERBS.

Verbs may be varied in four different ways; viz. *affirmatively*, *negatively*, *interrogatively*, and *interrogative-negatively*.

In the variation of Italian verbs, the personal pronouns are generally suppressed, the persons being sufficiently

indicated by the different terminations ; but when different *persons* have the *same termination*, the pronouns are *expressed*, to avoid the confusion which might thence arise.

The pronouns are also *expressed* in the *imperative mood* ; and also when verbs are varied in the *interrogative form*, since then the *transposition of the pronoun* distinguishes, in conversation, that form from the affirmative.

In varying the following verbs, we have given, between parentheses, the *poetical forms*, or the peculiar inflexions to which poets have submitted some of the persons of certain tenses of these verbs. Some of these are elegantly *used even in prose*, and some are entirely *confined to verse* ; in order to distinguish the latter from the former, the latter are printed in Roman characters.

---

AUXILIARY VERBS.

*Variation of the Verb Avère affirmatively.*

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.	Compound Tenses.
1. — <i>Present.</i>	2. — <i>Past.</i>
<i>Avère,</i> to have.	<i>avère avúto,</i> to have had.

3. — *Future.*

<i>avère ad avère,</i> <i>èssere per avère,</i> <i>dovère avère,</i>	} to have to have, or to be about to have.
--	---

GERUND.

4. — <i>Present.</i>	5. — <i>Past.</i>
<i>avéndo,</i> having.	<i>avéndo avúto,</i> having had.



## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

*avénte, s.*  
*avénti, p.\** } having.

7. — *Past.*

|| *avúto, m. s., avúti, p.* } had.  
|| *avúta, f. s., avúte, p.\** }

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ho</i> or <i>ò</i> I have;	<i>abbiamo</i> ( <i>avémo</i> ),	we have ;
[( <i>ággto</i> ),		
2d p. <i>háí</i> or <i>ái</i> , thou hast;	<i>avéte</i> ,	you have ;
3d p. <i>ha</i> or <i>à</i> ( <i>áve</i> ), he, she, or it has;	<i>hánno</i> , or <i>ánno</i> ,	they have.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío avéva</i> I had, or did	<i>avevamo</i> ,	we had ;
[or <i>avéa</i> ,†	[have ;	
2d p. <i>avévi</i> , thou hadst;	<i>avevate</i> ,	you had ;
3d p. <i>égli</i> or <i>élla</i> he or she had ;	<i>avevano</i> or <i>avé-</i>	they had.
[ <i>avéva</i> or <i>a-</i>	[ <i>avó</i> ( <i>avieno</i> ),	
[ <i>véa</i> ( <i>avía</i> ),		

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>ébbi</i> ,	I had ;	<i>avémmo</i> ,	we had ;
2d p. <i>avésti</i> ,	thou hadst ;	<i>avéste</i> ,	you had ;
3d p. <i>ébbe</i> ,	he or she had ;	<i>ébbéro</i> ,	they had.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>avrò</i> ,	I shall or will	<i>avrémo</i> ,	we shall have ;
	[have ;		
2d p. <i>avrái</i> ,	thou wilt have ;	<i>avréte</i> ,	you will have ;
3d p. <i>avrà</i> ,	he or she will	<i>avránno</i> ,	they will have.
	[have ;		

\* The present participle of the verb *avére* agrees with the subject of the proposition in gender and number. The past participle agrees, sometimes, with the object in gender and number.

† Some say *avéro*, *éro*, *améro*, &c. instead of *avéva*, 'I had'; *éva*, 'I was'; *améva*, 'I loved'; &c., but this usage which, indeed, presents the advantage of distinguishing the first from the third person of the imperfect of verbs, is contrary to the authority of the best classics.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

5. — *Compound of the Present, or — Second Perfect.*

1st p. <i>ho avúto,</i>	I have had ;		<i>abbiamo avúto,</i>	we have had ;
2d p. <i>hái avúto,</i>	thou hast had ;		<i>avéte avúto,</i>	you have had ;
3d p. <i>ha avúto,</i>	he or she has		<i>hánno avúto,</i>	they have had.
	[had ;			

6. — *Compound of the Imperfect, or — Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>io avéva avúto,</i>	I had had ,		<i>avévamo avúto,</i>	we had had.
-------------------------------	-------------	--	-----------------------	-------------

7. — *Compound of the Perfect, or — Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>ébbi avúto,</i>	I had had.
---------------------------	------------

8. — *Compound of the Future, or — Future Anterior.*

1st p. <i>avrò avúto,</i>	I shall or will have had.
---------------------------	---------------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io ábbia</i>	that I have, or		<i>abbiamo,</i>	that we have ;
( <i>ággia</i> ),	[may have ;			
2d p. <i>tu ábbia</i> or	that thou have ;		<i>abbiate,</i>	that you have ;
[ <i>ábbi</i> ( <i>ággi</i> ),				
3d p. <i>egli</i> or <i>él-</i>	that he or she		<i>abbiano,</i>	( <i>ággia-</i> that they have.
[ <i>la ábbia</i>	[have ;			[ <i>no</i> ),
[( <i>ággia</i> ),				

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io avéssi,</i>	if I had, or should		<i>avéssimo,</i>	if we had ;
	[have ;			
2d p. <i>tu avéssi,</i>	if thou hadst ;		<i>avéste,</i>	if you had ;
3d p. <i>avésse,</i>	if he or she had ;		<i>avéssero</i> ( <i>avés-</i>	if they had.
			[ <i>sino</i> ),	

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Compound of the Present, or — Perfect.*

1st p. <i>io ábbia</i>	that I have had,		<i>abbiamo avúto,</i>	that we have had.
[ <i>avúto,</i>	[or may have			
	[had ;			

4. — *Compound of the Imperfect, or — Pluperfect.*1st p. *lo avéssi avúto*, | if I had had, or should have had.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>avrí</i> (a- [vria),	I should, would, [or could have ; [or might have ;	<i>avrémmo</i> ,	we should or [would have ;
2d p. <i>avrísti</i> ,	thou wouldst [have ;	<i>avréste</i> ,	you would have ;
3d p. <i>avrébbe</i> [(avria),	he or she would [have ;	<i>avrébbéro</i> ( <i>avrí- [ano or avrí- [eno)</i> ,	they would have.

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Compound of the Present, or — Past.*

1st p. <i>avrí avú-</i> [to,	I should, would, [or could have ; [had ; or might [have had ;	<i>avrémmo avúto</i> ,	we should or [would have had.
---------------------------------	--	------------------------	----------------------------------

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . . *	<i>abbiamo nò</i> ,	let us have ;
2d p. <i>àbbi</i> (àg- [gi) tu,	have thou ;	<i>abbiate vò</i> ,	have ye ;
3d p. <i>àbbia</i> (àg- [gia) <i>églí</i> or [élla,	let him or her [have ;	<i>abbiano</i> (àggia- [no) <i>églino</i> or [élleno,	let them have.

\* The first person of the imperative in all verbs is wanting.

*Variation of the Verb Avère, negatively.*

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

2. — *Past.*

*Non avère* | not to have. || *non avère avúto,* | not to have had.

3. — *Future.*

*non avère ad avère,* } to be not to have, or  
*non avère per avère,* } [not to be about to have.  
*non dovère avère,* }

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

5. — *Past.*

*non avéndo,* | not having. || *non avéndo* · | not having had.  
 [ *avúto,* |

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. [io] <i>non ho,</i>	I have not ;	<i>non abbiamo,</i>	we have not ;
2d p. <i>non hai,</i>	thou hast not ;	<i>non avete,</i>	you have not ;
3d p. <i>non ha,</i>	he or she has not ;	<i>non hanno,</i>	they have not.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io non</i>	I had not, or did	<i>non avevamo,</i>	we had not ;
[ <i>avéva,</i>	[ not have ;		
2d p. <i>non avévi,</i>	thou hadst not ;	<i>non avevate,</i>	you had not ;
3d p. <i>egli or ella</i>	he or she had not ;	<i>non avévano,</i>	they had not.
[ <i>non avéva,</i>			

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>non ébbi,</i>	I had not ;	<i>non avémmo,</i>	we had not ;
2d p. <i>non avésti,</i>	thou hadst not ;	<i>non avéste,</i>	you had not ;
3d p. <i>non ebbe,</i>	he or she had not ;	<i>non ebbero,</i>	they had not.

Singular.

Plural.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>non avrò,</i>	I shall or will not	<i>non avrèmo,</i>	we shall or will
	[have ;		[not have ;
2d p. <i>non avrái,</i>	thou wilt not	<i>non avréte,</i>	you will not have ;
	[have ;		
3d p. <i>non avrà,</i>	he or she will	<i>non avránno,</i>	they will not
	[not have ;		[have.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*1st p. [*io*] *non ho avúto,* | I have not had.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io non</i>	that I have not, or	<i>non abbíamo,</i>	that we have not ;
	[ <i>ábbia,</i>		
	[may not have ;		
2d p. <i>tu non</i>	that thou have	<i>non abbíate,</i>	that you have
	[ <i>ábbia,</i>		[not ;
	[not ;		
3d p. <i>égli or élla</i>	that he or she	<i>non abbiano,</i>	that they have
	[ <i>non ábbia,</i>		[not.
	[have not ;		

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io non</i>	if I had not, or	<i>non avéssimo,</i>	if we had not ;
	[ <i>avéssi,</i>		
	[should not have ;		
2d p. <i>tu non</i>	if thou hadst not ;	<i>non avéste,</i>	if you had not ;
	[ <i>avéssi,</i>		
	[not ;		
3d p. <i>non avés-</i>	if he or she had	<i>non avéssero,</i>	if they had not.
	[ <i>se,</i>		
	[not ;		

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>non avréi,</i>	I should, would,	<i>non avrémmo,</i>	we should or
	[or could not		[would not have ;
	[have ; or might		
	[not have ;		
2d p. <i>non avré-</i>	thou wouldst not	<i>non avréste,</i>	you would not
	[ <i>sti,</i>		[have ;
	[have ;		
3d p. <i>non avréb-</i>	he or she would	<i>non avrébbero,</i>	they would not
	[ <i>be,</i>		[have ;
	[not have ;		

Singular.

Plural.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>non abbiamo</i>	let us not have ;
2d p. <i>non avère*</i>	have not thou ;	<i>non abbiate</i> [noi,	have not ye ;
[ <i>tu,</i>		<i>non abbiano</i>	let them not
3d p. <i>non abbia</i>	let him or let her	[ <i>eglino or elleno,</i>	[have.
[ <i>egli or ella,</i>	[not have ;		

Variation of *Avère*, interrogatively.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

1st p. <i>ho io ?</i>	have I ?	<i>abbiamo noi ?</i>	have we ?
2d p. <i>hai tu ?</i>	hast thou ?	<i>avete voi ?</i>	have you ?
3d p. <i>ha egli or</i>	has he or she ?	<i>hanno eglino or</i>	have they ?
[ <i>ella ?</i>		[ <i>elleno ?</i>	

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. <i>aveva io ?</i>	had I ?	<i>avevamo noi ?</i>	had we ?
2d p. <i>avevi tu ?</i>	hadst thou ?	<i>avevate voi ?</i>	had you ?
3d p. <i>aveva egli</i>	had he or she ?	<i>avevano eglino</i>	had they ?
[ <i>or ella ?</i>		[ <i>or elleno ?</i>	

3. — Perfect.

1st p. <i>ebbi io ?</i>	had I ?	<i>avemmo noi ?</i>	had we ?
2d p. <i>avesti tu ?</i>	hadst thou ?	<i>aveste voi ?</i>	had you ?
3d p. <i>ebbe egli</i>	had he or she ?	<i>ebbero eglino or</i>	had they ?
[ <i>or ella ?</i>		[ <i>elleno ?</i>	

\* The second person of the imperative of Italian verbs, preceded by the negative particle *non*, is changed for the present of the infinitive of the same verbs: as, *non avère* (instead of *non abbi*), 'have not [thou].' Poets, however, and Ariosto and Alfieri in particular, have used both forms indiscriminately.

Singular.

Plural.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>avrò io?</i>	shall or will I	<i>avrèmo nòí?</i>	shall or will we
	[have?]		[have?]
2d p. <i>avráí tu?</i>	wilt thou have?	<i>avréte vói?</i>	will you have?
3d p. <i>avrà égli?</i>	will he or she	<i>avránno églino?</i>	will they have?
[or <i>élla?</i> ]	[have?]	[or <i>élleno?</i> ]	

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. <i>ho ío avúto,</i> or	have I had?
[ <i>ho avúto ío?</i> ]	

## III. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>avréi io?</i>	should, would, or	<i>avrémno nòí?</i>	should or would
	[could I have?]		[we have?]
2d p. <i>avrésti tu?</i>	wouldst thou	<i>avréste vói?</i>	would you have?
	[have?]		
3d p. <i>avrèbbe</i>	would he or she	<i>avrèbbero églino?</i>	would they have?
[ <i>égli</i> or <i>élla?</i> ]	[have?]	[or <i>élleno?</i> ]	

*Variation of Avère, interrogative-negatively.*

## I. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>non ho ío?</i>	have I not?	<i>non abbíamo nòí?</i>	have we not?
2d p. <i>non háí</i>	hast thou not?	<i>non avéte vói?</i>	have you not?
[ <i>tu?</i> ]			
3d p. <i>non há</i>	has he or she	<i>non hánno égli.</i>	have they not?
[ <i>égli</i> or <i>élla?</i> ]	[not?]	[ <i>no</i> or <i>élleno?</i> ]	

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>non avéva</i>	had I not?	<i>non avevámno</i>	had we not?
[ <i>ío?</i> ]		[ <i>nòí?</i> ]	

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>non ébbi ío?</i>	had I not?
----------------------------	------------

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *non avrò io ?* | shall or will I not have ?

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *non ho io avúto,* | have I not had ?  
[or *non ho avúto io ?*]

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *non avréi io ?* | should, would, or  
[could I not have ?]

*Variation of the Verb Éssere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

2. — *Past.*

*Éssere,*

| to be.

|| *éssere státo, m. s.* }  
          [*státi, p.*] } to have been.  
|| *essére státa, f. s.* }  
          [*státe, p.\**]

3. — *Future.*

*éssere per éssere,* } to be about to be, or  
*avére ad éssere,* } to have to be.  
*dovére éssere,*

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

5. — *Past.*

*esséndo(séndot),* | being.

|| *esséndo státo, m.* }  
          [*státa, f.*] } having been.

\* The *past participle* of the verb *éssere*, always agrees with the *subject*, in gender and number; thus we say, *to sono státo*, if the subject is masculine singular; *to sono státa*, if feminine singular; and *noi siamo státi*, if the subject is masculine plural; *noi siamo státe*, if feminine plural, and so on.

† Some authors, and Machiavelli in particular, have used this form constantly in prose.



## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

(*essénte, s.,*  
*essénti, p.,\**) } being;

7. — *Past.*

{ *státo, m. s.*  
[*státi, p.*  
*státa, f. s.*  
[*státe, p.*] } been.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io sóno,</i>	I am ;	<i>siámo (sémo),</i>	we are ;
2d p. <i>seí or se',</i>	thou art ;	<i>siéte (séte),</i>	you are ;
3d p. <i>è,</i>	he is ;	<i>églino sóno,</i>	they are.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io éra,</i>	I was ;	<i>eravámo</i> (éra-	we were ;
		[mo),†	
2d p. <i>éri,</i>	thou wast ;	<i>eraváte,</i>	you were ;
3d p. <i>églí éra,</i>	he was ;	<i>éranó,</i>	they were.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>fúí,</i>	I was ;	<i>fúmmo,</i>	we were ;
2d p. <i>fósti,</i>	thou wast ;	<i>fóste,</i>	you were ;
3d p. <i>fu (fúe),</i>	he was ;	<i>fúrono</i> (fúnno,	they were.
		[fúrnó, fúro, fur,	
		[or fóro),	

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>sarò (fia),</i>	I shall or will be ;	<i>sarémo,</i>	we shall or will
			[be ;
2d p. <i>sarái,</i>	thou wilt be ;	<i>saréte,</i>	you will be ;
3d p. <i>sarà (fia),</i>	he will be ;	<i>saránno (fiano,</i>	they will be.
	[fie),	[fieno),	

\* These forms are obsolete.

† Old writers have used *eramo* even in prose, and Alfieri has followed their usage in his *Vite*.

Singular.

Flural.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p.	<i>io sono</i>	I have been ;		<i>siámo státi, m.</i>		we have been ;
	[ <i>státo, m.,</i>			[ <i>státe, f.</i>		
	[ <i>státa, f.,</i>					
2d p.	<i>sei státo,</i>	thou hast been ;		<i>siéte státi, -e,</i>		you have been ;
	[ <i>-a,</i>					
3d p.	<i>è státo, -a,</i>	he or she has		<i>églino sóno státi,</i>		they have been.
		[been ;		[ <i>or élleno státe,</i>		

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p.	<i>io éra stá-</i>	I had been ;		<i>eravámo státi, -e,</i>		we had been.
	[ <i>to, -a,</i>					

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p.	<i>fui státo,</i>	I had been ;		<i>fimmo státi, -e,</i>		we had been.
	[ <i>-a,</i>					

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p.	<i>sarò státo,</i>	I shall or will		<i>sarémo státi, -e,</i>		we shall or will
	[ <i>-a,</i>	[have been ;				[have been.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p.	<i>io sia,</i>	that I be, or		<i>siámo,</i>		that we be ;
		[may be ;				
2d p.	<i>tu sia</i> or	that thou be ;		<i>siáte,</i>		that you be ;
	[ <i>sii,</i>					
3d p.	<i>egli sia,</i>	that he be ;		<i>siano or sieno,</i>		that they be.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p.	<i>io fossi</i>	if I were ; or		<i>fóssimo,</i>		if we were ;
	[ <i>(fússi),*</i>	[should be ;				
2d p.	<i>tu fossi,</i>	if thou wert ;		<i>fóste,</i>		if you were ;
3d p.	<i>fosse,</i>	if he were ;		<i>fóssero (fóssino),</i>		if they were.

\* This form, as well as *fússi*, and *fússero* used by Villani, Machiavelli, Guicciardini, even in prose, has become obsolete.

Singular.

Plural.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *io sia stá* that I have been, *siámo státi, -e,* that we have  
 [to, -a, [or may have [been.
 [been;

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *io fõssi* if I had been; || *fõssimo státi, -e,* if we had been.  
 [státo, -a,

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *saréi (sa-ria, fóra),* I should, would, *sarémmo,* we should *or*  
 [or could be; [or might be; [would be;  
 2d p. *sarésti,* thou wouldst be; *saréste,* you would be;  
 3d p. *sarébbe* he would be; *sarébbéro (sarí-ano or saríeno,* they would be.  
 [(saria, fóra), [órano),

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. *sar.í stá* I should, would, *sarémmo státi,* we should,  
 [to, -a, [or could have [been; *or might* [-e, [would, *or* could  
 [have been; [have been.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . | . . . . . | *siámo nói,* | let us be;  
 2d p. *stá* or *stí* be thou; | *siáte vói,* | be ye;  
 [tu, | *siano* or *sieno* | let them be.  
 3d p. *stá égli,* | let him be; | [églino,

## REGULAR VERBS.

*Variation of Active Verbs.*

Active verbs, in the compound tenses, are varied with the auxiliary verb *avére*, 'to have.'

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

*Variation of the Verb Amáre.*

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *áre*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.		Compound Tenses.	
1. — <i>Present.</i>		2. — <i>Past.</i>	
<i>Am-áre</i>	to love.	<i>avére amáto,</i>	to have loved.

3. — *Future.*

*avére ad amáre,*  
*éssere per amáre,*  
*dovére amáre,* } to have to love, or  
to be about to love.

## GERUND.

4. — <i>Present.</i>		5. — <i>Past.</i>	
<i>am-ándo,</i>	loving.	<i>avéndo amáto,</i>	having loved.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — <i>Present.</i>		7. — <i>Past.</i>
<i>am-ánte, s., am-</i> <i>[-ánti, p.*]</i> } loving.		<i>am-áto, m. s.,</i> <i>[am-áti, p.]</i> <i>am-áta, f. s.,</i> <i>[am-áte, p.]*</i> } loved.

\* The present participle of active verbs, like that of *avére*, agrees with the subject of the proposition in gender and number. The past participle agrees, sometimes, with the object in gender and number.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ám-o,</i>	I love, or do [love, or am [loving;	<i>am-íamo,</i>	we love;
2d p. <i>ám-i,</i>	thou lovest;	<i>am-áte,</i>	you love;
3d p. <i>ám-a,</i>	he loves;	<i>ám-ano,</i>	they love.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío am-áva,</i>	I loved, or did [love, or was [loving;	<i>am-avámo,</i>	we loved;
2d p. <i>am-ávi,</i>	thou lovedst;	<i>am-aváte,</i>	you loved;
3d p. <i>égi am- [-áva,</i>	he loved;	<i>am-ávano,</i>	they loved;

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>am-ái,</i>	I loved, or did [love;	<i>am-ámno,</i>	we loved;
2d p. <i>am-ásti,</i>	thou lovedst;	<i>am-áste,</i>	you loved;
3d p. <i>am-ò,</i>	he loved;	<i>am-árono (am- [-áro or am-ár),</i>	they loved.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>am-erò,*</i>	I shall or will [love;	<i>am-erémo,</i>	we shall or will [love;
2d p. <i>am-erái,</i>	thou wilt love;	<i>am-eréte,</i>	you will love;
3d p. <i>am-erà,</i>	he will love;	<i>am-eránno,</i>	they will love;

\* The verbs of this conjugation in the *future* and the *conditional*, change the *s* of their terminations for *e*, and make *am-erò*, &c.; *am-eréi*, &c.; instead of *am-erò*, &c.; *am-eréi*, &c.

Singular.

Plural.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. <i>ho amáto,</i>	I have loved ;	<i>abbiamo amáto,</i>	we have loved ;
2d p. <i>háí amáto,</i>	thou hast loved ;	<i>avéte amáto,</i>	you have loved ;
3d p. <i>ha amáto,</i>	he, she, or it has [loved ;	<i>hanno amáto,</i>	they have loved.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>io avéva</i> [ <i>amáto,</i>	I had loved ;	<i>avevamo amáto,</i>	we had loved.
---	---------------	-----------------------	---------------

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*1st p. *ébbi amáto,* | I had loved.8. — *Future Anterior.*1st p. *avrò amáto,* | I shall or will have loved.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io am-i</i> [( <i>am-e</i> ),	that I love, or [may love ;	<i>am-iámo,</i>	that we love ;
2d p. <i>tu am-i,</i>	that thou lovest ;	<i>am-iáte,</i>	that you love ;
3d p. <i>egli am-i</i> [( <i>am-e</i> ),	that he loves ;	<i>am-ino,</i>	that they love.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io am-ássi,</i>	if I loved, or [should love ;	<i>am-ássimo,</i>	if we loved ;
2d p. <i>tu am-ássi,</i>	if thou lovedst ;	<i>am-áste,</i>	if you loved ;
3d p. <i>am-ásse,</i>	if he loved ;	<i>am-ássero</i> ( <i>am-</i> [ <i>-ássino</i> ),	if they loved.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>io ábbia amáto,</i>	that I have loved, or [may have loved ;
-------------------------------	--

4. -- *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi amáto*, | if I had loved.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>am-eréi</i> , [( <i>am-ería</i> )],	I should, would, [or could love, [or might love ;	<i>am-erémmo</i> ,	we should, would [or could love ;
2d p. <i>am-erésti</i> ,	thou wouldst [love ;	<i>am-eréste</i> ,	you would love ;
3d p. <i>am-erébbe</i> [( <i>am-ería</i> )],	he would love ;	<i>am-erébbero</i> ( <i>am-</i> [- <i>eriano</i> , <i>am-</i> [- <i>erieno</i> ),	they would love.

## [COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. <i>avréi amáto</i> ,	I should, would, or could have [loved ; or might have loved.
-----------------------------	---

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>am-íamo ní</i> ,	let us love ;
2d p. <i>ám-a tu</i> ,	love thou ;	<i>ám áte vó</i> ,	love ye ;
3d p. <i>ám-i é ; li</i> ,	et him love ;	<i>ám-ino églino</i> ,	let them love.

Besides the foregoing changes of termination, there are some verbs of the first conjugation, which undergo in some persons and tenses a change of orthography : Thus, verbs ending in *cáre*, *gáre*, in order to preserve the hard sound of *c*, *g*, in all their inflections, take an *h* after those consonants whenever they are followed by *e*, *i* ; as, *cercáre*, ' to search ' ; *pregáre*, ' to entreat.'

*Variation of the Verb Cercare.*(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *càre*.)

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>cerc-o,</i>	I search, or do [search, or am searching;	<i>cerc-iamo,</i>	we search;
2d p. <i>cerc-i,</i>	thou searchest;	<i>cerc-ate,</i>	you search;
3d p. <i>cerc-a,</i>	he searches;	<i>cerc-ano,</i>	they search.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>cerc-erò,</i>	I shall or will [search;	<i>cerc-eremo,</i>	we shall or will [search;
2d p. <i>cerc-erai,</i>	thou wilt search;	<i>cerc-erete,</i>	you will search;
3d p. <i>cerc-erà,</i>	he will search;	<i>cerc-eranno,</i>	they will search.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io cerc-i</i>	that I search, or [( <i>cerc-e</i> ), [may search;	<i>cerc-iamo,</i>	that we search;
2d p. <i>tu cerc-i</i>	that thou search;	<i>cerc-iate,</i>	that you search;
3d p. <i>egli cerc-i</i>	that he search;	<i>cerc-ino,</i>	that they search.
	[( <i>cerc-e</i> ),		

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>cerc-erei</i>	I should, would, [( <i>cerc-eria</i> ), [or could [search; or [might search;	<i>cerc-eremmo,</i>	we should, would, [or could search;
2d p. <i>cerc-eresti</i>	thou wouldst [sti, [search;	<i>cerc-ereste,</i>	you would search;
3d p. <i>cerc-erebbe</i>	he would search;	<i>cerc-erebbero</i>	they would search.
	[( <i>cerc-eria</i> ),	[( <i>cerc-eriano,</i> [ <i>cerc-erieno</i> ),	



## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular. )		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>cercн-і́мо</i> <i>нѡи</i> ,	let us search ;
2d p. <i>cѣrc-a</i> <i>tu</i> ,	search thou ;	<i>cerc-і́те</i> <i>вѡи</i> ,	search ye ;
3d p. <i>cѣrcн-i</i>	let him, her, or it	<i>cѣrcн-і́мо</i> <i>ѣгѡи</i> -	let them search.
	[ <i>ѣгѡи</i> ],	[search ;	[ <i>нѡ</i> ],

*Variation of the Verb Pregäre.*(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *gäre.*)

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>prѣg-o</i> ,	I entreat, or do	<i>prѣgн-і́мо</i> ,	we entreat ;
	[entreat, or am		
	[entreating ;		
2d p. <i>prѣgн-i</i> ,	thou entreatest ;	<i>prѣg-і́те</i> ,	you entreat ;
3d p. <i>prѣg-a</i> ,	he entreats ;	<i>prѣg-ано</i> ,	they entreat.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>prѣgн-ерѡ</i> ,	I shall or will en-	<i>prѣgн-ерѣмо</i> ,	we shall or will
	[treat ;		[entreat ;
2d p. <i>prѣgн-ерѡи</i> ,	thou wilt entreat ;	<i>prѣgн-ерѣте</i> ,	you will entreat ;
3d p. <i>prѣgн-ерѡ</i> ,	he will entreat ;	<i>prѣgн-ерѡнно</i> ,	they will entreat.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>іѡ prѣgн-i</i>	that I entreat, or	<i>prѣgн-і́мо</i> ,	that we entreat ;
	[( <i>prѣgн-e</i> ),		
	[may entreat ;		
2d p. <i>tu prѣgн-i</i> ,	that thou entreat ;	<i>prѣgн-і́те</i> ,	that you entreat ;
3d p. <i>ѣгѡи prѣgн-i</i>	that he entreat.	<i>prѣgн-і́но</i> ,	that they entreat.
	[( <i>prѣgн-e</i> ),		

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>pregn-eréi</i> [( <i>pregn-ería</i> ),	I should, would, [or could en- treat; or might entreat;	<i>pregn-erémmo</i> ,	we should, would, [or could en- treat;
2d p. <i>pregn-eré-</i> [ <i>sti</i> ,	thou wouldst en- [treat;	<i>pregn-eréste</i> ,	you would en- [treat;
3d p. <i>pregn-eréb-</i> [ <i>be</i> ( <i>pregn-</i> [ <i>-ería</i> ),	he would en- [treat;	<i>pregn-erébbero</i> [( <i>pregn-eríano</i> , [ <i>pregn-eríano</i> ),	they would en- [treat.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	[ . . . . .	<i>pregn-íamo nbi</i> ,	let us entreat;
2d p. <i>prég-a tu</i> ,	entreat thou;	<i>prég-áte vói</i> ,	entreat ye;
3d p. <i>prég-u-i</i> [ <i>égli</i> ,	let him, her, or it [entreat;	<i>prég-ino égli-</i> [ <i>no</i> ,	let them entreat.

Verbs ending in *ciäre*, *giäre*, drop the *i*, which follows *c*, *g*, whenever *ci*, *gi*, precede *e*, *i*; as, *baciäre*, 'to kiss'; *fregiäre*, 'to adorn.'

*Variation of the Verb Baciäre.*(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ciäre*.)

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>báci-o</i> ,	I kiss or do kiss, [or am kissing;	<i>bac-támo</i> ,	we kiss;
2d p. <i>bác-i</i> ,	thou kissest;	<i>baci-áte</i> ,	you kiss;
3d p. <i>báci-a</i>	he kisses;	<i>báci-ano</i> ,	they kiss.

Singular.

Plural.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>bac-erò</i> ,	I shall, or will	<i>bac-erémo</i> ,	we shall, or will
	[kiss ;		[kiss ;
2d p. <i>bac-erái</i> ,	thou wilt kiss ;	<i>bac-eréte</i> ,	you will kiss ;
3d p. <i>bac-erà</i> ,	he will kiss ;	<i>bac-eránno</i> ,	they will kiss.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>to báci-i</i>	that I kiss, or	<i>bac-íámo</i> ,	that we kiss ;
[( <i>bác-e</i> ),	[may kiss ;		
2d p. <i>tu báci-i</i> ,	that thou kiss ;	<i>bac-íáte</i> ,	that you kiss ;
3d p. <i>éghí báci-i</i>	that he kiss ;	<i>bac-íno</i> ,	that they kiss.
[( <i>bác-e</i> ),			

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>bac-eréi</i>	I should, would,	<i>bac-erémmo</i> ,	we should, would,
[( <i>bac-ería</i> ),	[or could kiss ;		[or could kiss ;
	[or might kiss ;		
2d p. <i>bac-erésti</i> ,	thou wouldst	<i>bac-eréste</i> ,	you would kiss ;
	[kiss ;		
3d p. <i>bac-erébbe</i>	he would kiss ;	<i>bac-erébbero</i>	they would kiss.
[( <i>bac-ería</i> ),		[( <i>bac-eríano</i> ,	
		[( <i>bac-eríeno</i> ),	

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>bac-támo ní</i> ,	let us kiss ;
2d p. <i>báci-a tu</i> ,	kiss thou ;	<i>báci-áte ví</i> ,	kiss ye ;
3d p. <i>bác-i éghí</i> ,	let him kiss ;	<i>bác-ino éghíno</i> ,	let them kiss.

Variation of the Verb *Fregiäre.*(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *giäre.*)

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>fregi-o,</i>	I adorn, do adorn, [or am adorning;	<i>freg-iämo,</i>	we adorn;
2d p. <i>freg-i,</i>	thou adorest;	<i>freg-iäte,</i>	you adorn;
3d p. <i>fregi-a,</i>	he adorns;	<i>fregi-äno,</i>	they adorn.

## 4. — Future.

1st p. <i>freg-erü,</i>	I shall or will [adorn;	<i>freg-erämo,</i>	we shall or will [adorn;
2d p. <i>freg-eräi,</i>	thou wilt adorn;	<i>freg-eräte,</i>	you will adorn;
3d p. <i>freg-erä,</i>	he will adorn;	<i>freg-eränno,</i>	they will adorn.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>io freg-i</i> [( <i>freg-e</i> ),	that I adorn, or [may adorn;	<i>freg-iämo,</i>	that we adorn;
2d p. <i>tu freg-i,</i>	that thou adorn;	<i>freg-iäte,</i>	that you adorn;
3d p. <i>egli freg-i</i> [( <i>freg-e</i> ),	that he adorn;	<i>freg-ino,</i>	that they adorn.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>freg-erät</i> [( <i>freg-erä</i> ),	I should, would, [or could adorn; [or might adorn;	<i>freg-erämno,</i>	we should, would, [or could adorn;
2d p. <i>freg-erästi,</i>	thou wouldst a- [dorn;	<i>freg-eräste,</i>	you would adorn;
3d p. <i>freg-eräbbe</i> [( <i>freg-erä</i> ),	he would adorn;	<i>freg-eräbbero,</i> [( <i>freg-eränno</i> ), [ <i>freg-eräno</i> ),	they would adorn.

Singular.

Plural.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>frec-támo nbi,</i>	let us adorn ;
2d p. <i>freci-a tu,</i>	adorn thou ;	<i>freci-dte vbi,</i>	adorn ye ;
3d p. <i>frec-i égi,</i>	let him adorn ;	<i>frec-ino égiño,</i>	let them adorn.

Verbs ending in *iáre*, in which *ia* form one syllable, drop the *i* whenever it is followed by another *i* ; as,

*Noiáre*, 'to annoy.'

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *iáre*.)

## II. INDICATIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>nó-i-o,</i>	I annoy, do an-	<i>no-támo,</i>	we annoy ;
	[noy, or am		
	[annoying ;		
2d p. <i>nó-i,</i>	thou annoiest ;	<i>noi-dte,</i>	you annoy ;
3d p. <i>nó-i-a,</i>	he annoys ;	<i>nó-i-ano,</i>	they annoy.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>io nó-i</i>	that I annoy or	<i>no-támo,</i>	that we annoy ;
	[( <i>nó-i-e</i> ),	[may annoy ;	
2d p. <i>tu nó-i,</i>	that thou annoy ;	<i>no-táte,</i>	that you annoy ;
3d p. <i>égi nó-i</i>	that he annoy ;	<i>nó-ino,</i>	that they annoy.
	[( <i>nó-i-e</i> ),		

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>no-támo,</i>	let us annoy ;
2d p. <i>nó-i-a tu,</i>	annoy thou ;	<i>noi-áte,</i>	annoy ye ;
3d p. <i>nó-i égi,</i>	let him annoy ;	<i>nó-ino,</i>	let them annoy.

Verbs ending in *iäre*, in which *ia* form two syllables, drop the *i*, only when it would be followed by the vowels *ia*; as,

*Inviäre*, 'to send.'

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

### 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>inví-o</i> ,	I send, do send,   <i>inv-támo</i> ,   [or am sending;     thou sendest;   <i>inv-áte</i> ,   he sends;   <i>inv-amo</i> ,	we send ;   you send ;   they send.
2d p. <i>inví-i</i> ,		
3d p. <i>inví-a</i> ,		

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

The verbs of this conjugation are commonly divided into two classes, those ending in *ēre* (*long*), and those ending in *ĕre* (*short*): both of these in the *perfect* have two terminations, *ĕi* and *ĕtti*; except a few which have the termination *ĕi* only.

### *Variation of the Verb Temére.*

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ēre* (*long*); and of those which in the *perfect* end in *ĕi* and *ĕtti*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

### 1. — Present.

### 2. — Past.

*Tem-ĕre*, |to fear.      || *avĕre temúto*, |to have feared.

3. — *Future.*

*avere a temére,*  
*essere per temére,*  
*dovère temére,* } to have to fear, or  
 to be about to fear.

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

*tem-endo,* } fearing;

5. — *Past.*

|| *avendo temúto,* | having feared.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

*tem-ente, s.,*  
*tem-énti, p.,* } fearing;

7. — *Past.*

|| *tem-úto, m. s.,*  
 || [*tem-úti, p.,* } feared.  
 || *tem-úta, f. s.,*  
 || [*tem-úte, p.,* }

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>tém-o,</i>	I fear, or do [fear, or am [fearing;	<i>tem-iámo</i> ( <i>tem-</i> [ <i>-émo</i> ),	we fear;
2d p. <i>tém-i,</i>	thou fearest;	<i>tem-éte,</i>	you fear;
3d p. <i>tém-e,</i>	he fears;	<i>tém-ono,</i>	they fear.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>fo tem-éva</i> [or <i>tem-éa,</i>	I feared, or did [fear, or was [fearing;	<i>tem-evámo,</i>	we feared;
2d p. <i>tem-évi,</i>	thou fearedst;	<i>tem-eváte,</i>	you feared;
3d p. <i>égli tem-</i> [ <i>-éva</i> or <i>tem-éa,</i>	he feared;	<i>tem-évano</i> or [ <i>tem-éano,</i> [( <i>tem-iéno</i> ),	they feared.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>tem-ēi</i> or [ <i>tem-ētti</i> , (( <i>tem-ē'</i> )), 2d p. <i>tem-ēsti</i> , 3d p. <i>tem-ē</i> or [ <i>tem-ētte</i> (( <i>tem-éo</i> )),	I feared, or did [fear; thou fearedst; he feared;	<i>tem-émmo</i> ,  <i>tem-ēste</i> , <i>tem-érono</i> or [ <i>tem-ēttero</i> (( <i>tem-éro</i> , <i>tem-ér</i> ))	we feared;  you feared; they feared.
---	--	--	---

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>tem-erò</i> , 2d p. <i>tem-erāi</i> , 3d p. <i>tem-erā</i> ,	I shall or will [fear; thou wilt fear; he will fear;	<i>tem-erémo</i> ,  <i>tem-eréte</i> , <i>tem-eránnno</i> ,	we shall or will [fear; you will fear; they will fear.
--	---	--	---

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *ho temúto*, | I have feared; || *abbidmo temúto*, | we have feared.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *io avéva temúto*, | I had feared.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. *ébbi temúto*, | I had feared.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. *avrò temúto*, | I shall or will have feared.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io tém-a</i> , 2d p. <i>tu tém-a</i> or [ <i>tém-i</i> , 3d p. <i>égkì tém-a</i> ,	that I fear, or [may fear; that thou fear; that he fear;	<i>tem-idmo</i> ,  <i>tem-idte</i> ,  <i>tém-ano</i> ,	that we fear; that you fear; that they fear.
---	---	--	--



Singular.

Plural.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io tem-essi</i> ,	if I feared, or [should fear ;	<i>tem-essimo</i> ,	if we feared ;
2d p. <i>tu tem-essi</i> ,	if thou fearest ;	<i>tem-este</i> ,	if you feared ;
3d p. <i>tem-esse</i> ,	if he feared ;	<i>tem-essero</i> ( <i>tem-</i> [ <i>-essino</i> ),	if they feared.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>io abbia temuto</i> ,	that I have feared, or [may have feared.
---------------------------------	---

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>io avessi temuto</i> ,	if I had feared.
----------------------------------	------------------

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>tem-eréi</i> [( <i>tem-ería</i> ),	I should, would, [or could fear ; [or might fear ;	<i>tem-erémmo</i> ,	we should, would, [or could fear ;
2d p. <i>tem-erésti</i> ,	thou wouldst [fear ;	<i>tem-eréste</i> ,	you would fear ;
3d p. <i>tem-erébbe</i> [( <i>tem-ería</i> ),	he would fear ;	<i>tem-erébbéro</i> [( <i>tem-eríamo</i> , [ <i>tem-eríeno</i> ),	they would fear.

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. <i>avrei temuto</i> ,	I should, would, or could have [feared ; or might have feared.
------------------------------	---

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>tem-iamó noi</i> ,	let us fear ;
2d p. <i>tem-i tu</i>	fear thou ;	<i>tem-éte vói</i> ,	fear ye ;
3d p. <i>tem-a egli</i> ,	let him fear ;	<i>tem-ano églino</i> ,	let them fear.

*Variation of the Verb Tessere.*

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ĕre* (*short*); and of those which in the *perfect* end in *ĕi* only.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.*

*Tess-ere,* |to weave. || *avĕre tessuto,* |to have woven.

3. — *Future.*

*avĕre a tessere,*  
*ĕssere per tessere,*  
*doĕre tessere,* } to have to weave, or  
to be about to weave.

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*5. — *Past.*

*tess-ĕndo,* |weaving. || *avĕndo tessuto,* |having woven.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*7. — *Past.*

*tess-ĕnte, s.,*  
*tess-ĕnti, p.,* } weaving. || *tess-uto, m. s.,*  
[*tess-uti, p.,* } woven.  
*tess-uta, f. s.,*  
[*tess-ute, p.,*

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *tĕss-o,* | I weave, or do | *tĕss-ĭmo* (tĕss- | we weave.  
[weave, or am | [-ĕmo),  
[weaving; |

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío tess-éva* or *tess-éa*, | I wove, or did weave, or  
[was weaving.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>tess-éi</i> ,	I wove, or did	<i>tess-émmo</i> ,	we wove ;
	[weave ;		
2d p. <i>tess-ésti</i> ,	thou wovest ;	<i>tess-éste</i> ,	you wove ;
3d p. <i>tess-é</i> ( <i>tess-</i>	he wove ;	<i>tess-ékrono</i> ( <i>tess-</i>	they wove.
[ <i>-éto</i> ),		[ <i>-éro</i> ),	

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *tess-erò*, | I shall or will weave.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *ho tessúto*, | I have woven.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *ío avéva tessúto*, | I had woven.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. *ébbi tessúto*, | I had woven.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. *avò tessúto*, | I shall or will have woven.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *ío téss-a*, | that I weave, or may weave.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío tess-éssi*, | if I wove, or should weave.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *ío ábbia tessúto*, | if I wove, or should weave.

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *io avéssi tessúto*, | if I had woven.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *tess-eréi* (*tess-erís*), | I should, would, or could weave ;  
| [or might weave.]

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. *avréi tessúto*, | I should, would, or could have  
| [woven ; or might have woven.]

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . |  
2d p. *téss-i tu*, | weave thou.

[For a list of Verbs of the Second Conjugation, that in the *perfect* end in *éi*, or in *éi* and *étti*, see APPENDIX, F.]

Verbs ending in *cēre* (*long*), in order to preserve the soft sound of *c* in all their inflections, take an *i* after that consonant, whenever it is followed by *a*, *o*, *u* ; as,

*Tacére*, ' to be silent.'

(Paradigm of verbs ending in *cēre* (*long*)\*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

7. — *Past.*

*taci-úto*, m. s., *taci-úti*, p., }  
*taci-úta*, f. s., *taci-úte*, p., } been silent.

\* These verbs are subject, also, to some *irregularities*, which will be noticed in treating of *Irregular Verbs*.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.			Plural.
1. — <i>Present.</i>			
1st p. <i>táci-o*</i> (tác- [ci-o]),	I am silent ;	<i>tac-íamo,</i>	we are silent ;
2d p. <i>tác-i,</i>	thou art silent ;	<i>tac-éte,</i>	you are silent ;
3d p. <i>tác-e,</i>	he is silent ;	<i>táci-ono</i> (táci- [-ono]),	they are silent.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io táci-a</i>	that I be silent, or [(táci-a), [may be silent ;	<i>tac-íamo,</i>	that we be silent ;
2d p. <i>tu táci-a</i>	that thou be si- [lent ;	<i>tac-íate,</i>	that you be si- [lent ;
[or <i>tác-i</i> (táci- [-a,)			
3d p. <i>egli táci-a</i>	that he be silent ;	<i>táci-ano</i> (táci- [-ano]),	that they be si- [lent.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .		<i>tac-íamo noi,</i>	let us be silent ;
2d p. <i>tác-i tu,</i>	be thou silent ;	<i>tac-éte voi,</i>	be ye silent ;
3d p. <i>táci-a</i> (tác- [ci-a) <i>egli,</i>	let him be silent ;	<i>táci-ano</i> (táci- [-ano) <i>églino,</i>	let them be si- [lent

Verbs ending in *cere* (*short*) take an *i* after *c*, in the *past participle* only ; as, I. *pásc-ere*, 'to feed' ; 7. — *pasci-úto*, m. s., *pasci-úti*, p. ; *pasci-úta*, f. s. ; *pasci-úte*, p., 'fed.'

Verbs ending in *iere* drop the *i*, whenever it is followed by another *i* ; as,

*Émpiere*, 'to fill.'

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *iere*.)

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>émpi-o,</i>	I fill, or do fill, or [am filling ;	<i>emp-íamo</i> (emp- [-íemo]),	we fill ;
-----------------------	---	------------------------------------	-----------

\* *Táció*, pronounce both the Romans and Florentines, following the orthography of the best prose writers (and not *táccie*, as poets have, sometimes, been obliged to say), to distinguish this from *táccie*, a form of the verb *tacciare*, 'to blame.'

Singular.		Plural.	
2d p. <i>émp-i,</i>	thou fillest;	<i>émp-i-éte,</i>	you fill;
3d p. <i>émp-i-e,</i>	he fills,	<i>émp-i-ono,</i>	they fill.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io émp-i-a</i>	that I fill, or	<i>émp-támo,</i>	that we fill;
[( <i>émp-i-e</i> ),	[may fill;		
2d p. <i>tu émp-i-a</i>	that thou fill;	<i>émp-táte,</i>	that you fill;
[or <i>émp-i,</i>			
3d p. <i>égli émp-i-a</i>	that he fill;	<i>émp-i-ano,</i>	that they fill.
[( <i>émp-i-e</i> ),			

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>émp-támo,</i>	let us fill;
2d p. <i>émp-i tu,</i>	fill thou;	<i>émp-i-éte,</i>	fill ye;
3d p. <i>émp-i-a</i>	let him fill;	<i>émp-i-ano,</i>	let them fill.
[ <i>égli,</i>			

THIRD CONJUGATION.

The verbs of this conjugation are divided into three classes, those which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, end in *o*; those which end in *isco*; and those which have *both* of these terminations.

*Variation of the Verb Sentire.*

(Paradigm of the verbs of the third conjugation which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, end in *o* only.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.		Compound Tenses.	
1. — <i>Present.</i>		2. — <i>Past.</i>	
<i>Sent-ire,</i>	to hear.	<i>avére sentíto,</i>	to have heard.

3. — *Future.*

*avere a sentire,*  
*essere per sentire,*  
*dovere sentire,* } to have to hear, or  
 to be about to hear.

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

*sent-endo,* | hearing.

5. — *Past.*

|| *avendo sentito,* | having heard.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

(*sent-ente, s.,*  
*sent-enti, p.,*) } hearing.

7. — *Past.*

|| *sent-ito, m. s.,*  
 [*sent-iti, p.,*  
*sent-ita, f. s.,*  
 [*sent-ite, p.,*] } heard.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>sent-o,</i>	I hear, or do	<i>sent-iamo,</i>	we hear ;
	[hear, or am		
	[hearing ;		
2d p. <i>sent-i,</i>	thou hearest ;	<i>sent-ite,</i>	you hear ;
3d p. <i>sent-e,</i>	he hears ;	<i>sent-ono,</i>	they hear.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io sent-eva</i>	I heard, or did	<i>sent-evamo,</i>	we heard ;
[or <i>sent-ia,</i>	[hear, or was		
	[hearing ;		
2d p. <i>sent-evi,</i>	thou heardest ;	<i>sent-evate,</i>	you heard ;
3d p. <i>egli sent-</i>	he heard ;	<i>sent-evano</i> or	they heard.
[ <i>-eva</i> or <i>sent-ia,</i>		[ <i>sent-evano</i>	
		( <i>sent-ivano</i> ),	

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>sent-ii,</i>	I heard, or did	<i>sent-immo,</i>	we heard ;
	[hear ;		
2d p. <i>sent-isti,</i>	thou heardest ;	<i>sent-iste,</i>	you heard ;
3d p. <i>sent-i</i> ( <i>sent-</i>	he heard ;	<i>sent-irono</i> ( <i>sent-</i>	they heard.
[ <i>-io</i> ),		[ <i>-iro, sent-iti</i> ),	

Singular.

Plural.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>sent-irò,</i>	I shall or will	<i>sent-irémo,</i>	we will hear ;
	[hear ;		
2d p. <i>sent-irai,</i>	thou wilt hear ;	<i>sent-iréte,</i>	you will hear ;
3d p. <i>sent-irà,</i>	he will hear ;	<i>sent-iranno,</i>	they will hear.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. <i>ho sentito,</i>	I have heard.
---------------------------	---------------

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>io aveva sentito,</i>	I had heard.
---------------------------------	--------------

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>ebbi sentito,</i>	I had heard.
-----------------------------	--------------

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. <i>avrò sentito,</i>	I shall or will have heard.
-----------------------------	-----------------------------

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io sent-A,</i>	that I hear, or	<i>sent-iamo,</i>	that we hear ;
	[may hear ;		
2d p. <i>tu sent-A</i>	that thou hear ;	<i>sent-iate,</i>	that you hear ;
[or <i>sent-I,</i>			
3d p. <i>egli sent-A,</i>	that he hear ;	<i>sent-ano,</i>	that they hear.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io sent-issi,</i>	if I heard, or	<i>sent-issimo,</i>	if we heard ;
	[should hear ;		
2d p. <i>tu sent-issi,</i>	if thou heardst ;	<i>sent-iste,</i>	if you heard ;
3d p. <i>sent-isse,</i>	if he heard ;	<i>sent-issero</i> ( <i>sent-</i>	if they heard.
		<i>-issimo),</i>	

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>io abbia sentito,</i>	that I have heard, or
	[may have heard.



4. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi sentíto,* | if I had heard.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>sent-iréi</i> [( <i>sent-iría</i> ),	I should, would, [or could hear ; [or might hear ;	<i>sent-irémmo,</i>	we should, would, [or could hear ;
2d p. <i>sent-irésti,</i>	thou wouldst [hear ;	<i>sent-iréste,</i>	you would hear ;
3d p. <i>sent-irébbe</i> [( <i>sent-iría</i> ),	he would hear ;	<i>sent-irébbéro</i> [( <i>sent-iríano</i> ),	they would hear.

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*1st p. *avéi sentíto,* | I should, would, or could have  
[heard; or might have heard.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>sent-íamo nói,</i>	let us hear ;
2d p. <i>sent-i tu,</i>	hear thou ;	<i>sent-íte vói,</i>	hear ye ;
3d p. <i>sent-a égli,</i>	let him hear ;	<i>sent-áno égliño,</i>	let them hear.

*Variation of the Verb Esibire.*

(Paradigm of those verbs of the third conjugation, which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, have the termination *isco* only.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.**Esib-íre,* | to offer.|| *avére esibíto,* | to have offered.

3. — *Future.*

*avere ad esibere,*  
*essere per esibere,*  
*debere esibere,* } to have to offer, or  
to be about to offer.

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

*esib-endo,* | offering.

5. — *Past.*

|| *avendo esibito,* | having offered.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

*esib-ente, s.,*  
*esib-enti, p.,* } offering.

7. — *Past.*

|| *esib-ito, m. s.,*  
[*esib-iti, p.,*  
*esib-ita, f. s.,*  
[*esib-ite, p.,* } offered.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>esib-isco,</i>	I offer, or do	<i>esib-iāmo,</i>	we offer ;
	[offer, or am		
	[offering ;		
2d p. <i>esib-isci,</i>	thou offerest ;	<i>esib-ite,</i>	you offer ;
3d p. <i>esib-iscit,</i>	he offers ;	<i>esib-iscōno,</i>	they offer.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *eo esib-ivis* or *esib-ia,* | I offered, or did offer, or  
[was offering.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *esib-ii,* | I offered, or did offer.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *esib-irō,* | I shall or will offer.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *ho esibito,* | I have offered.

6. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéva esibíto*, | I had offered.7. — *Second Pluperfect.*1st p. *ébbi esibíto*, | I had offered.8. — *Future Anterior.*1st p. *avrò esibíto*, | I shall or will have offered.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io esib-</i>	that I offer, or [may offer;	<i>esib-íamo</i> ,	that we offer ;
<i>[-íSCA,</i>			
2d p. <i>tu esib-</i>			
<i>[-íSCA, or esib-</i>			
<i>[-íSCHÍ,</i>	that he offer ;	<i>esib-íscano</i> ,	that they offer.
3d p. <i>églí esib-</i>			
<i>[-íSCA,</i>			

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *io esib-íssi*, | if I offered, or should offer.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*1st p. *io ábbia esibíto*, | that I have offered, or  
[may have offered.4. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi esibíto*, | if I had offered.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *esib-iréi* (*esib-iría*), | I should, would, or could offer ;  
[or might offer.

Singular.

Plural.

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. *avéi esibíto*, | I should, would, or could have  
| [offered; or might have offered.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>esib-íamo</i> ,	let us offer ;
2d p. <i>esib-ísci</i> ,	offer thou ;	<i>esib-íte</i> ,	offer ye ;
3d p. <i>esib-íscA</i> ,	let him offer ;	<i>esib-íscano</i> ,	let them offer.

*Variation of the Verb Abborrire.*

(Paradigm of those verbs of the third conjugation, which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, end both in *o* and *isco*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.*

*abbor-rire*, | to abhor. || *avére abborrito*, | to have abhorred.

3. — *Future.*

*avére ad abborrire*,  
*éssere per abborrire*,  
*dovére abborrire*, } to have to abhor, or  
} to be about to abhor.

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*5. — *Past.*

*abbor-éndo*, | abhorring. || *avéndo abborrito*, | having abhorred.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*7. — *Past.*

<i>abbor-énte</i> , s.,	} abhorring.		<i>abbor-íto</i> , m. s.,	} abhorred.
<i>abbor-énte</i> , p.,			[ <i>abbor-íti</i> , p.,	
	<i>abbor-íta</i> , f. s.,			
	[ <i>abbor-íte</i> , p.,			

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>abbórr-o</i> , or [ <i>abbórr-isco</i> ,	I abhor, or do [abhor, or am [abhorring;	<i>abbórr-iámo</i> ,	we abhor;
2d p. <i>abbórr-i</i> , or [ <i>abbórr-isci</i> ,	thou abhorrest;	<i>abbórr-ite</i> ,	you abhor;
3d p. <i>abbórr-e</i> , or [ <i>abbórr-isce</i> ,	he abhors;	<i>abbórr-ono</i> , or [ <i>abbórr-iscono</i> ,	they abhor.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *to abbórr-íva* or *abbórr-ía*, | I abhorred, or did abhor, or  
[was abhorring.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *abbórr-íi*, | I abhorred, or did abhor.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *abbórr-írd*, | I shall or will abhor.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *ho abbórr-íto*, | I have abhorred.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *to avéva abbórr-íto*, | I had abhorred.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. *ébbi abbórr-íto*, | I had abhorred.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. *avrò abbórr-íto*, | I shall or will have abhorred.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io</i> <i>abbórr-A</i> , [or <i>abbórr-fsCA</i> ,	that I abhor, or [may abhor ;	<i>abbórr-iámo</i> ,	that we abhor ;
2d p. <i>tu</i> <i>abbórr-A</i> , [or <i>abbórr-I</i> ; or <i>abbórr-fsCA</i> , or <i>abbórr-fsCHI</i> ,	that thou abhor ;	<i>abbórr-iáte</i> ,	that you abhor ;
3d p. <i>egli</i> <i>abbórr-</i> [ <i>-A</i> , or <i>abbórr-</i> [ <i>-fsCA</i> ,	that he abhor ;	<i>abbórr-ANO</i> , or <i>ab-</i> [ <i>bórr-fsCANO</i> ,	that they abhor.

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *io* *abbórr-íssi*, | if I abhorred, or should abhor.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*1st p. *io* *ábbia abbórríto*, | that I have abhorred, or  
[may have abhorred.4. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io* *avéssi abbórríto*, | if I had abhorred.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *abbórr-iréi* (*abbórr-iría*), | I should, would, or could abhor ;  
[or might abhor.

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*1st p. *avréi abbórríto*, | I should, would, or could have ab-  
[horred ; or might have abhorred.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>abborr-ísamo nói,</i>	let us abhor ;
2d p. <i>abbórr-i,</i> or	abhor thou ;	<i>abbórr-íts víi,</i>	abhor ye ;
[ <i>abbórr-ísaci tu,</i>			
3d p. <i>abbórr-a,</i> or	let him abhor ;	<i>abbórr-ano,</i> or	let them abhor.
[ <i>abbórr-ísca</i>		[ <i>abbórr-íscano</i>	
[ <i>égli,</i>		[ <i>égli,</i>	

[For a list of Verbs of the Third Conjugation, that in the present of the indicative end in *e*, in *íscce*, or in *e* and *íscce*, see APPENDIX, G.]

Verbs ending in *círe*, in order to preserve the soft sound of the *c* in all their inflections, take an *i* after that consonant, whenever it is followed by *a*, *o* ; as,

*Cucíre*, ' to sew.'

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *círe*.)

## II. INDICATIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>cúc-i-o,</i>	I sew, do sew, or	<i>cuc-ísamo</i> ( <i>cuc-</i> we sew ;	
	[am sewing ;	[ <i>-ímo</i> ),	
2d p. <i>cúc-i,</i>	thou sewest ;	<i>cuc-íte,</i>	you sew ;
3d p. <i>cúc-e,</i>	he sews ;	<i>cúc-i-ono,</i>	they sew.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>íó cúc-i-a,</i>	that I sew, or	<i>cuc-ísamo,</i>	that we sew ;
	[may sew ;		
2d p. <i>tu cúc-i-a</i>	that thou sew ;	<i>cuc-íte,</i>	that you sew ;
[or <i>cúc-i,</i>			
3d p. <i>égli cúc-i-a,</i>	that he sew ;	<i>cúc-i-ano,</i>	that they sew.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1st p. . . . .		<i>cuc-ámo nbi,</i>	let us sow ;
2d p. <i>cúc-i tá,</i>	sew thou ;	<i>cuc-íte vói,</i>	sew ye ;
3d p. <i>cúci-a égli,</i>	let him sew ;	<i>cúci-ano églino,</i>	let them sew.

## REMARKS ON THE FOREGOING VERBS.

There are some verbs of the *third* conjugation that belong also to the *second* ; having two terminations in the *infinitive*, one in *ire*, the other in *ěre* ; as,

<i>appetire,</i>	<i>appetere,</i>	to desire ;
<i>inghiottire,</i>	<i>inghiottire,</i>	to swallow :

some, that belong also to the *first* conjugation ; having the two terminations *ire* and *are* ; as,

<i>impazzire,</i>	<i>impazzare,</i>	to grow mad ;
<i>incoraggiare,</i>	<i>incoraggiare,</i>	to encourage :

and some others, that belong to *all three* of the conjugations ; as,

<i>ruggire,</i>	<i>ruggere,</i>	<i>ruggiare,</i>	to roar ;
<i>olire,</i>	<i>olere,</i>	<i>olezzare,</i>	to be fragrant.

These verbs are differently varied, according to the conjugation to which their different terminations respectively belong.

The verbs of the *second* and *third* conjugation, in the *first*, *second*, and *third* persons singular of the *present* of the *indicative* and *conjunctive*, and in the *second* and *third* persons singular of the *imperative*, have constantly the *accent* on the *penultimate syllable* ; as, *témo, témi, téme, — téma ; sénto, sénti, sénte, — sénta, &c.* Of those of the *first* conjugation, some have the *accent* on the *penultimate syllable* ; as, *ámo, ámi, áma, — ámi* ; and others, on the *antepenultimate* ;



as, *mórmoro* ('I murmur'), *mórmori*, *mórmora*, — *mórmori*, &c.

[For rules for determining when the verbs of the first conjugation, in the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, have the accent on the penultimate or the antepenultimate syllable, see APPENDIX, H.]

*Ambire*, 'to crave,' in the *first person plural* of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative; — and in the *second person plural* of the present of the conjunctive, makes *abbiamo ambizione*, — *abbiate ambizione*, to distinguish these persons from the corresponding ones of the verb *ambiare*, 'to amble.'

*Ardire*, 'to dare,' in the *first person plural* of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative; — in the *second person plural* of the present of the conjunctive, — and in the gerund makes, *abbiamo ardire* or *ardimento*, — *abbiate ardire*, &c., — *avendo ardire*; and not *ardiamo*, — *ardiate*, — *ardendo*, which come from *ardere*, 'to burn.'

*Bollire*, 'to boil,' in the *first person plural* of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, — and in the *second person plural* of the present of the conjunctive, changes *ll* into *gl*, and makes *bogliamo*, — *bogliate*, to distinguish these persons from the corresponding ones of the verb *bollare*, 'to stamp,' 'to set a seal.'

*Gioire*, 'to rejoice,' in the *first person plural* of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, — in the *second person plural* of the present of the conjunctive, — and in the *past participle*, borrows the corresponding forms of the verb *godere*, and makes *godiamo*, — *godiate*, — *goduto*.

*Smaltire*, 'to digest,' in the *first person plural* of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, — and in the *second person plural* of the present of the conjunctive, makes *procuriamo di smaltire*, — *procuriate di smaltire*; and not *smaltiamo*, — *smaltiate*, which come from *smaltare*, 'to enamel.'

*Suggere*, 'to suck,' in the *past participle* borrows that of *succhiare*, and makes *succhiato*, 'sucked.'

Many regular verbs, in some tenses, have also an irregular formation, which will be noticed in treating of *Irregular Verbs*.

## EXAMPLES.

*Egli è il véro, ch' io ho AMATO, ed AMO Guiscárdo, e. quánto viverò io l' AMERÒ; e se apprésso la mórtè s' AMA, non mi rimarrò d' AMARLO.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

It is true, that I have loved, and do love Guiscard, and I will love him as long as I live; and if we love after death, I will not cease to love him.

*Quell che noi CERCHIAMO di fuggire.* (Bocc. Introd.)

That which we endeavour to avoid.

*Chè noi non PREGHIAMO cose vólze, e non le lasciamo PREGARE.* (Albert. 2. 10.)

For we do not ask for vulgar things, nor let others ask for them.

*BACERÉTE il piè a Nostro Signore a nóme mio.* (Bemb. Lett.)

You will kiss the feet of Our Lord [the Pope] for me.

*Bontà non è che sua memòria VRÉGI.* (Dant. Inf. 8.)

No virtue lends its lustre to his memory.

*Guardáte, che 'l ventr su non vi NÓI.* (Dant. Purg. 9.)

Take heed that your coming upward does not harm you.

*TEMÉTTE di non dovervi essere ricevúto.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

He feared he should not be received there.

*Essi rúpperò le úova degli áspidi, e TESSÉRONO le tele dé' rágnoli.* (Mor. S. Gregor.)

They broke the eggs of the asps, and wove spider's webs.

*Le léggi, costè le divíne come le umáne, TÁCIONO.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)

The laws, divine as well as human, are silent.

*Essa, che la sera davanti cenato non avèa, da fame costretta, a pascere l'erbe si diède, e PASCIUTA come potè, piangèndo, a varj pensieri della sua futura vita si diède.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

*Sostien persona tu di capitano, — E di mia lontananza EMPY il difetto.* (Tass. Ger. 11., 56.)

*Esser non può, che quell'angelic' alma, — Non senta 'l suon dell'amorose note.* (Petr. c. 38.)

*Vasi per tanto a Giacobbe, e si esibiscono le soddisfazioni maggiori, che darsi possano a uomini forestieri.* (Segn. Pred. 25.)

*E lo svegliato ciò che vede* **ABBORRE.** (Dant. Par. 26.)

*Abborrente, [ciò] che* **ABBORRISCE.** (Crusca.)

*Con tal cura viene, — Che la piaga da sezzo si ricucia.* (Dant. Purg. 25.)

*Tu ancora non sei ben temperato in questa virtù di* **APPETIRE** *gli onori.* (Casa, lett. 70.)

*La meditazione le mostrava, che ella dovesse* **APPETERE,** *e domandare.* (Scal. S. Agost.)

*E non par mica vergogna, — Tra i bicchieri* **IMPAZZIR** *tre volte l'anno.* (Red. Ditir. 37.)

*La donna sentiva sì fatto dolore, che quasi n'era per* **IMPAZZARE.** (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

*E 'n sul cor quasi fero leon* **RUGGE,** *— La notte allor, quand' to posar dovrei.* (Petr. s. 223.)

She, that the evening before had not supped, compelled by hunger, began to feed herself on herbs, and after she had fed herself as well as she could, weeping abandoned herself to the various thoughts of her future life.

Do thou support the office of captain, and supply the want of my absence.

It cannot be possible, that that angelic soul does not hear the sound of the amorous notes.

They go therefore to Jacob, and offer him the greatest satisfaction, which could be given to strangers.

And the upstartled abhors what he sees.

Abhorring, [that is to say] that abhors.

It is with such care, that the wound finally heals.

Thou hast not yet moderated thyself in the virtue of desiring honor.

Meditation taught her what she ought to desire and ask.

And it does not seem to be a shame to get crazy among glasses three times a year.

The woman was so much afflicted, that she came near being crazy.

And in my heart, like a fierce lion, it roars in the night when I ought to repose.

*Va come liono, che ruggisce,* It goes, like a lion that roars,  
*cercando cisi possa divorare.* seeking whom he may devour.  
 (Cavalc. Med. cuor.)

*Posciachè 'l fuoco alquanto ebbe* After that the fire had roared  
*ruggiato.* (Dant. Inf. 27.) awhile.

## EXERCISE XVI.

[Let the learner change the terminations *are, ère, tre*, of the infinitive mood of the following Italian verbs, for the particular terminations they respectively take in the person and tense indicated by the English, according to the foregoing Paradigms.]

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

I. 1.\* — To love. 4. — loving. 7. — loved. — II.  
*Amare. am-àre. am-àre.*

1. — I love, thou speakest, he sings, we play, you dance,  
*am-àre, parl-àre, cant-àre, son-àre, ball-àre,*

they study. 2. — I walked, thou passedst, he called,  
*studi-àre, cammin-àre, pass-àre, chiam-àre,*

we prattled, you confessed, they ordered. 3. — I  
*ciarl-àre, confess-àre, ordin-àre.*

confirmed, thou didst deliver, he considered, we preserved,  
*conferm-àre, consegn-àre, consider-àre, conserv-àre,*

you advised, they disputed. 4. — I will expect, thou  
*consigli-àre, contrast-àre. aspett-àre,*

wilt imagine, he will assault, we will dedicate, you will  
*immagin-àre, assalt-àre, dedic-àre,*

assure, they will seek. 5. — I have praised.† — III.  
*assicur-àre, cerc-àre. lod-àre.*

1. — I may fast, thou mayest besiege, he may ride, we  
*digiun-àre, assedi-àre, cavalc-àre,*

may punish, you may provo, they may practise. 2. —  
*castig-àre, prov-àre, pratic-àre.*

\* To facilitate reference, we use, in this and the following exercises on verbs, the numbers, which we have affixed to the moods and tenses in the Paradigms.

† The learner can form the compound tenses of any of these verbs by joining their past participle to the simple tenses of the auxiliary verb *avere*, 'to have.'

I might refuse, thou mightest invent, he might accept, we  
*rifut-âre,* *invent-âre,* *accett-âre,*  
 might accompany, you might experience, they might ad-  
*accompagn-âre,* *speriment-âre,* *amministr-*  
 minister. — IV. 1.—I would prolong, thou wouldst ven-  
*-âre.* *prolung-âre,* *arrisic-*  
 ture, he would eat, we would pray, you would envy,  
*-âre,* *mangi-âre,* *preg-âre,* *invidi-âre,*  
 they would tire. — V. — ask thou, let him judge, let  
*annoi-âre.* *domand-âre,* *giudic-âre,*  
 us change, carry ye back, let them wait.  
*cambi-âre,* *riport-âre,* *aspett-âre.*

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

I. 1. — To fear. 4. — fearing. 7. — feared. — II.  
*Temere.* *tem-êre.* *tem-êre.*  
 1. — I believe, thou receivest, he sells, we repeat, you  
*créd-ere,* *ricôv-ere,* *vënd-ere,* *ripét-ere;*  
 enjoy, they depend. 2. — I wove, thou didst beat down,  
*god-ere,* *dipénd-ere.* *téss-ere,* *abbátt-ere,*  
 he rivaled, we debated, you exacted, they consented.  
*compét-ere,* *dibátt-ere,* *esig-ere,* *acced-ere.*  
 3. — I mowed, thou didst beat, he groaned, we sheared,  
*miét-ere,* *bátt-ere,* *gém-ere,* *tónd-ere,*  
 you reflected, they turned. 4. — I will provide, thou  
*riflétt-ere,* *intéss-ere.* *provved-êre,*  
 wilt fill, he will rage, we will feed, you will lose, they  
*émpi-ere,* *frém-ere,* *pásc-ere,* *pérd-ere,*  
 will press. — III. 1. — I may cleave, thou mayest render,  
*prém-ers.* *fénd-ere,* *rénd-ere,*  
 he may resolve, we may re-enjoy, you may unweave,  
*risólv-ere,* *rigod-ers,* *stéss-ere,*  
 they may succeed. 2. — I might yield, thou mightest  
*succéd-ere.* *céd-ere,* *assólv-*  
 absolve, he might grant, we might dissolve, you might fill  
*-ere,* *concéd-ere,* *dissólv-ere,* *riémpi-*

again, they might suck. — IV. 1. — I would combat,  
*-ere,* *súgg-ere.* *combátt-ere,*

thou wouldst precede, he would hang up, we would sell  
*precéd-ere,* *appénd-ere,* *riénd-*

over again, you would proceed, they would succumb. —  
*-ere,* *procéd-ere,* *soccómb-ere.*

V. — desist thou, let him drink, let us accomplish, recede  
*desist-ere,* *bév-ere,* *cómpi-ere,* *ricéd-ere,*

ye, let them pour out.\*  
*mésc-ere.*

## THIRD CONJUGATION.

I. 1. — To hear. 4. — hearing. 7. — heard. — II.  
*Sent-ire.* *sent-ire.* *sent-ire.*

1. — I sleep, thou consentest, he understands, we rejoice,  
*dorm-ire,* *consent-ire,* *cap-ire,* *gio-ire,*

you transfer, they serve. 2. — I fled, thou embellishedst,  
*trasfer-ire,* *serv-ire.* *fugg-ire,* *abell-ire,*

he animated, we weakened, you attacked, they admonished.  
*anim-ire,* *indebbol-ire,* *assal-ire,* *ammon-ire.*

3. — I constructed, thou conceivedst, he banished, we  
*costru-ire,* *concep-ire,* *band-ire,*

assisted, you supplied, they finished. 4. — I will favor,  
*accud-ire,* *suppl-ire,* *fin-ire.* *favor-ire,*

thou wilt differ, he will cure, we will hinder, you will  
*differ-ire,* *guar-ire,* *imped-ire,*

infer, they will grow proud. — III. 1. — I may assent,  
*infer-ire,* *insuperb-ire.* *assent-ire,*

thou mayest furnish, he may chide, we may boil,  
*forn-ire,* *garr-ire,* *boil-ire,*

you may crave, they may establish. 2. — I might  
*amb-ire,* *stabil-ire.* *un-*

unite, thou mightest betray, he might nourish, we  
*-ire,* *trad-ire,* *nutr-ire,*

\* The number of Italian regular verbs in *ère* is so small, that, having already employed them all in this Exercise, we have been obliged to make use of some verbs which, in some of their tenses, are subject to certain irregularities, which will be noticed under *Irregular Verbs*.

might warrant, you might encourage, they might plead.  
*garant-ire,* *incoragg-ire,* *piat-ire.*

— IV. 1. — I would restore, thou wouldst quench, he  
*restitu-ire,* *sop-ire,*

would exhaust, we would define, you would ascertain,  
*esaur-ire,* *defin-ire,* *chiar-ire,*

they would season. — V. — act thou, let him hear, let  
*cond-ire.* *ag-ire,* *sent-ire,*

us dare, obey ye, let them punish.  
*ard-ire,* *obbed-ire,* *pun-ire.*

#### VARIATION OF PASSIVE VERBS.

Passive verbs are formed by joining the verb *essere*, 'to be,' to the *past participle* of active verbs.

Passive verbs, therefore, through all their tenses, are varied with the auxiliary verb *essere*.

#### *Variation of the Verb Essere Amato.*

(Paradigm of the *passive verbs*.)

##### I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

##### 1. — Present.

<i>Essere</i>	}	<i>amato</i> , m. s.,	}	to be		<i>esse-</i>	{	<i>stato amato</i> , m. s.,	}	to have
		[-i, p.],						re		
		<i>amato</i> , f. s.,		loved.				<i>stata amata</i> , f. s.,		loved.
		[-e, p.],						<i>state amate</i> , p.,		

Compound Tenses.

##### 2. — Past.

##### 3. — Future.

<i>avere ad essere</i>	}	<i>amato</i> , m. s., -i, p. }	to have to be loved, or		
<i>essere per essere</i>				<i>amata</i> , f. s., -e, p. }	to be about to be loved.
<i>dovere essere</i>					

\* The *past participle* of passive verbs, like that of *essere*, agrees with the subject of the verb in *gender* and *number*.

4. — *Present.*

5. — *Past.*

essendo	{	<i>amato</i> , m. s.,	}	being		es-	{	<i>stato amato</i> , m. s.,	}	having
		[-i, p.,						stati amati, p.,		
		<i>amata</i> , f. s.,		loved.		-sén-		<i>stata amata</i> , f. s.,		loved.
		[-e, p.,					do.		<i>state amate</i> , p.,	

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io sono</i>	I am loved ;		<i>siamo amati</i> , m.,	we are loved ;
{			[	
<i>amato</i> , m.,			<i>amate</i> , f.,	
}			]	
<i>amata</i> , f.,				
2d p. <i>sei amato</i> ,	thou art loved ;		<i>siate amati</i> , -e,	you are loved ;
[-a,				
3d p. <i>è amato</i> ,	he is loved, she		<i>eglino sono amati</i>	they are loved.
[-a,	[is loved ;		[	
			<i>ti, elleno</i> -e,	

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io era amato</i>	I was loved ;		<i>eravamo amati</i> ,	we were loved ;
[			[-e,	
<i>to, -a,</i>			<i>eravate amati</i> ,	you were loved ;
}			[-e,	
<i>amato</i> ,			<i>erano amati</i> , -e,	they were loved.
2d p. <i>eri amato</i> ,	thou wast loved ;			
[-a,				
3d p. <i>egli era amato</i> ,	he was loved, she			
[	[was loved ;			
<i>amato, ella -a,</i>				

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>fui amato</i> ,	I was loved ;		<i>fuiamo amati</i> , -e,	we were loved ;
[-a,				
2d p. <i>fosti amato</i> ,	thou wast loved ;		<i>foste amati</i> , -e,	you were loved ;
[				
<i>to, -a,</i>				
}				
<i>amato</i> ,				
3d p. <i>fu amato</i> ,	he was loved, she		<i>furono amati</i> , -e,	they were loved.
[-a,	[was loved ;			

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>sarò amato</i>	I shall or will be		<i>saremo amati</i> , -e,	we shall or will
[	[loved ;			[be loved ;
<i>to, -a,</i>				
}				
<i>amato</i> ,				
2d p. <i>sarai amato</i> ,	thou wilt be lov-		<i>sarete amati</i> , -e,	you will be lov-
[	[ed ;			[ed ;
<i>to, -a,</i>				
}				
<i>amato</i> ,				
3d p. <i>sarà amato</i> ,	he will be loved,		<i>saranno amati</i> ,	they will be lov-
[	[she will be		[-e,	[ed.
<i>to, -a,</i>	[loved ;			



## COMPOUND TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. <i>io sóno stá-</i> [ <i>to amáto,</i> [ <i>státa amáta,</i>	I have been lov- [ed ;	<i>siámo státi amá-</i> [ <i>ti, státe amáte,</i>	we have been [loved.
---	---------------------------	--	-------------------------

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>io éra státo amáto, stá-</i> [ <i>ta amáta,</i>	I had been loved.
--	-------------------

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>fui státo amáto, státa</i> [ <i>amáta,</i>	I had been loved.
---	-------------------

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. <i>sarò státo amáto, státa</i> [ <i>amáta,</i>	I shall or will have been loved.
--	----------------------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io sia amá-</i> [ <i>to, -a,</i>	that I be loved, [or may be lov- [ed ;	<i>siámo amáti, -e,</i>	that we be loved ;
2d p. <i>tu sia amá-</i> [ <i>to, -a,</i>	that thou be lov- [ed ;	<i>siáte amáti, -e,</i>	that you be lov- [ed ;
3d p. <i>égli sia</i> [ <i>amáto, élla -a,</i>	that he be loved ; [she be loved ;	<i>siáno amáti, -e,</i>	that they be lov- [ed.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io fòssi</i> [ <i>amáto, -a,</i>	if I were loved, [or should be [loved ;	<i>fòssimo amáti, -e,</i>	if we were loved ;
2d p. <i>tu fòssi</i> [ <i>amáto, -a,</i>	if thou wert lov- [ed ;	<i>fòste amáti, -e,</i>	if you were lov- [ed ;
3d p. <i>fòsse amá-</i> [ <i>to, -a,</i>	if he were loved, [she were loved ;	<i>fòssero amáti, -e,</i>	if they were lov- [ed.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *io sia stato amato, stata* | that I have been loved, or  
 [amata, | [may have been loved.

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *io fossi stato amato, stata* | if I had been loved.  
 [amata, |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>sarèi amato</i> [to, -a,	I should, would, [or could be lov- [ed; or might be [loved;		<i>sarèmmo amati</i> , [-e,	we should, would, [or could be [loved;
2d p. <i>sarèsti</i> [amato, -a,	thou wouldst be [loved;		<i>sarèste amati</i> , -e,	you would be [loved;
3d p. <i>sarèbbe</i> [amato, -a,	he would be lov- [ed, she would [be loved;		<i>sarèbbero amati</i> , [-e,	they would be [loved.

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. *sarèi stato amato, stata* | I should, would, or could have  
 [amata, | [been loved; or might have been  
 [loved.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .		<i>siàmo amati</i> , -e, [nói,	let us be loved;	
2d p. <i>sii amato</i> , [-a, tu,	be thou loved;		<i>siàte amati</i> , -e, [vói,	be ye loved;
3d p. <i>sia amato</i> , [égli, -a élla,	let him be loved; [her be loved;		<i>siano amati égli</i> , [no, -e élleno,	let them be lov- [ed.

Many *active* verbs become *passive* by taking the particle *si*: — *domandársi*, 'to be asked'; but then they are used in the *third person only*, — as, *si domanda*, 'it is asked'; *si è domandato*, 'it has been asked'; &c.

### VARIATION OF NEUTER VERBS.

Neuter verbs are generally varied with the auxiliary verb *essere*, 'to be,' according to the conjugation to which they belong.

#### *Variation of the Verb Partire.*

(Paradigm of the *neuter verbs*.)

#### I. INFINITIVE.

##### Simple Tenses.

##### 1. — Present.

*Partire*, |to depart.

##### Compound Tenses.

##### 2. — Past.

|| *essere partito*, m. s. -i, p., |to have de-  
[*partita*, f. s. -e, p.,\*] [parted.

##### 3. — Future.

*avere a partire*, }  
*essere per partire*, } to have to depart, or  
*dovere partire*, } to be about to depart.

#### GERUND.

##### 4. — Present.

*partendo*, |departing.

##### 5. — Past.

|| *essendo partito*, |having departed.

\* The past participles of the *neuter verbs* that are varied with *essere*, agree with the *subject* of the verb in *gender* and *number*.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

*parténte*, m. s., } departing.  
*parténti*, p., }

7. — *Past.*

*partíto*, m. s., }  
*partíti*, p., } departed.  
*partíta*, f. s., }  
*partíte*, p. }

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *parto*, | I depart, or do depart, or  
 [am departing.]

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío partíva*, | I departed, or did depart, or  
 [was departing.]

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *partí*, | I departed, or did depart.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *partirò*, | I shall or will depart.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *ío sóno partíto*, -a, | I have departed.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *ío éra partíto*, -a, | I had departed.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. *físi partíto*, -a, | I had departed.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. *sarò partíto*, -a, | I shall or will have departed.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io pàrta,* | that I depart, *or* may depart.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io partissi,* | if I departed, *or* should depart.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *io sia partito, -a,* | that I have departed, *or*  
[may have departed.]

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *io fossi partito, -a,* | if I had departed.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *partirei,* | I should, would, *or* could depart;  
[*or* might depart.]

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. *sarei partito, -a,* | I should, would, *or* could have de-  
[parted; *or* might have departed.]

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . | . . . . .  
2d p. *pàrti tu,* | depart thou.

---

There are some neuter verbs which require to be varied with *avére*; as, *vivere*, 'to live'; *dormire*, 'to sleep'; *tacére*, 'to keep silent'; *parláre*, 'to speak'; *gridáre*, 'to cry out'; *ridere*, 'to laugh'; *scherzáre*, 'to sport'; *pranzáre*, 'to dine'; *cenáre*, 'to sup'; *passeggiáre*, 'to walk'; *cavalcáre*, 'to ride'; *navigáre*, 'to sail'; *tardáre*, 'to retard'; *indugiáre*, 'to delay'; &c.:—*ho vivúto*, 'I have lived'; *ho dormúto*, 'I have slept'; *ho taciúto*, 'I have kept silent'; &c.

Others are indifferently varied with the auxiliary *avére*, or *éssere*; as, *duráre*, 'to last'; *succómbere*, 'to sink under'; *ammutíre*, 'to become dumb'; *impallidíre*, 'to grow pale'; &c.:—*è duráto* or *ha duráto*, 'it has lasted'; &c.

Others may be varied with either *avére*, or *éssere*; as, *morire*, *guaríre*; but the change of the auxiliary alters their signification:—*avére mórtó*, 'to have killed'; *éssere mórtó*, 'to be killed,' or 'to be dead'; *avére guaríto*, 'to have cured'; *éssere guaríto*, 'to be cured,' or 'to have recovered.'

---

*Dovére*, 'to be obliged'; *potére*, 'to be able'; *volére*, 'to be willing,' 'to will,' 'to wish'; when joined to a pronominal verb; as, *arréndersi*, 'to surrender one's self'; *frenársi*, 'to restrain one's self'; *pérdersi*, 'to lose one's self'; require to be varied with *éssere*:—*si è dovúto arréndere*, 'he has been obliged to surrender himself'; *non mi son potúto frenáre*, 'I have not been able to restrain myself'; *ti séi volúto pérdere*, 'thou wishedst to lose thyself.'\*

---

\* Many of the foregoing verbs are irregular, as will be shown in their proper place.

## VARIATION OF PRONOMINAL VERBS.

Pronominal verbs are varied with the auxiliary *essere*, 'to be,' according to the conjugation to which their termination belongs.

*Variation of the Verb Pentirsi.*

(Paradigm of the *pronominal verbs*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.*

*Pentir-si,* | to repent one's || *ésser-si pentito,* | to have repented  
[self.] || [one's self.]

3. — *Future.*

*avér-si a pentire,*  
*ésser-si per pentire,*  
*dovér-si pentire,* } to have to repent one's self, or  
to be about to repent one's self.

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*5. — *Past.*

*penténdo-si,* | repenting one's || *esséndo-si penti-* | having repented  
[self.] || [to,] [one's self.]

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*7. — *Past.*

*penténte-si, s.,* } repenting one's  
*penténti-si, p.,* } self. || *pentito-si, m. s.,* }  
|| *[pentiti-si, p.,* } [having] repent-  
*pentita-si, f. s.,* } ed one's self.  
|| *[pentíte-si, p.,* }

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io mi pén-</i>	I repent myself;	<i>nói ci pentídmo,</i>	we repent our-
	[to,		[selves;
2d p. <i>ti pénti,</i>	thou repentest	<i>vi pentíte,</i>	you repent your-
	[thyself;		[selves;
3d p. <i>si pénte,</i>	he repents him-	<i>si péntono,</i>	they repent them-
	[self;		[selves.

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *mi pentíva,* | I repented myself.3. — *Perfect.*1st p. *mi pentíi,* | I repented myself.4. — *Future.*1st p. *mi pentirò,* | I shall or will repent myself.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*1st p. *mi sóno pentíto, -a,* | I have repented myself.6. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *mi éra pentíto, -a,* | I had repented myself.7. — *Second Pluperfect.*1st p. *mi fúi pentíto, -a,* | I had repented myself.8. — *Future Anterior.*1st p. *mi sarò pentíto, -a,* | I shall or will have repented  
[myself.



## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>mi penta,</i>	that I repent myself, or may [repent myself.
-------------------------	---

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>mi pentissi,</i>	if I repented myself, or should [repent myself.
----------------------------	--

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>mi sia pentito, -a,</i>	that I have repented myself, or [may have repented myself.
-----------------------------------	---

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>mi fossi pentito, -a,</i>	if I had repented myself.
-------------------------------------	---------------------------

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>mi pentirei,</i>	I should, would, or could repent [myself; or might repent myself.
----------------------------	--

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. <i>mi sarei pentito, -a,</i>	I should, would, or could have re- [pented myself; or might have [repented myself.
-------------------------------------	--

## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>pentiamo-ci noi,</i>	let us repent our-
2d p. <i>pentì-ti tu,</i>	repent thyself ;	<i>pentite-vi voi,</i>	repent [selves ; your-
3d p. <i>si penta,</i> or	let him repent	<i>si pentano</i> or	[selves ; let them repent
[ <i>pentà-si égli,</i>	[himself ;	[ <i>pentan-si</i>	[themselves.
		[ <i>églino,</i>	

A great number of active and neuter verbs may become pronominal by the addition of the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si, &c.* either in the *objective* or in the *relation of attribution* ; and then these verbs are varied with the auxiliary *essere*, 'to be' ; as, *lodare*, 'to praise' ; *dare*, 'to give' ; *tacere*, 'to keep silent' :

<i>mi sono dato un colpo,</i>	I have given [to] myself a blow ;
<i>ti sei dato per vinto,</i>	thou hast given thyself up as conquered ;
<i>si è lodato,</i>	he has praised himself ;
<i>ci siamo taciuti,</i>	we have kept ourselves silent.

Usage, however, in some instances allows us also to employ the auxiliary *avere*, 'to have' ; but then the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si, &c.* are always in the *relation of attribution* ; as,

<i>mélo sono</i> or <i>mél' ho goduto,</i>	I have enjoyed it ;
<i>télo séi</i> or <i>tel' hai creduto,</i>	thou hast believed it ;
<i>sel' è</i> or <i>sel' ha bevuto,</i>	he has drunk it.

## VARIATION OF UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

Unipersonal verbs are generally varied with the auxiliary *avére*, 'to have,' according to the conjugation to which they belong.

*Variation of the Verb Pióvere.*

(Paradigm of the unipersonal verbs.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.**Pióvere,*

|to rain.

|| *avére pióvúto,* |to have rained.3. — *Future.*

*avére a pióvere,* } to have to rain, or  
*éssere per pióvere,* } to be about to rain.

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*5. — *Past.**pióvendo,*

|raining.

|| *avéndo pióvúto,* |having rained.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*7. — *Past.**pióvénte,*

|raining.

|| *pióvúto,*

|rained.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*3d p. *pióve,*| it rains, it does rain, or it is rain-  
[ing.

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *piovéa*, or *piovéa*, | it rained, it did rain, or it was  
[raining.]

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *piovè*, *piovéte*, or *piovve* | it rained, or it did rain.  
[(*piobbe*),

4. — *Future.*

3d p. *pioverà*, | it will rain.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

3d p. *ha piovúto*, | it has rained.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

3d p. *aveva piovúto*, | it had rained.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

3d p. *ebbe piovúto*, | it had rained.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

3d p. *avrà piovúto*, | it will have rained.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *piova*, | that it rains, or may rain.

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *piovésse*, | if it rained, or should rain.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *abbia piovúto*, | that it has rained, or may have  
[rained.]

4. — *Pluperfect.*3d p. *avésse piovúto,* | if it had rained.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*3d p. *pioverébbe* (piovería), | it would or could rain, or might  
[rain.]

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*3d p. *avrébbe piovúto,* | it would or could have rained, or  
[might have rained.]

## V. IMPERATIVE.

3d p. *piova,* | let it rain.

The following are the *unipersonal verbs* most in use :

<i>aggiornáre,</i>	to be day ;	<i>geláre</i>	} to freeze ;
<i>annottáre,</i>	to grow night ;	<i>ghiacciáre,</i>	
<i>balenáre</i>	} to lighten ;	<i>dighiacciáre</i>	} to thaw ;
<i>lampeggiáre,</i>			
<i>tuonáre,</i>	to thunder ;	<i>dimotiáre,</i>	
<i>piovere,</i>	to rain ;	<i>far frédde,</i>	to be cold ;
<i>diluviáre,</i>	} to rain very hard ;	<i>far chiáro,</i>	to be light ;
		<i>far búio,</i>	to be dark ;
<i>nevicáre,</i>	} to deluge ;	<i>far cálde,</i>	to be hot ;
		<i>far vénto,</i>	to be windy ;
<i>grandináre</i>	} to hail ;	<i>far buon témpo,</i>	to be good weather ;
<i>tempestáre,</i>		<i>far cattivo témpo,</i>	to be bad weather.

The following verbs, though not *unipersonal in themselves*, are often used *unipersonally*, and may have the third person plural, as well as singular ; and are varied with the auxiliary *éssere*, ' to be ' :

<i>accadére,</i>	} to happen ;	<i>incréscere,</i>	} to displease ;
<i>avvenire,</i>		<i>dispiacére,</i>	
<i>occurrere,</i>	} to please ;	<i>spiacére,</i>	} to seem ;
<i>aggradáre,</i>		<i>parére,</i>	
<i>piacére,</i>	} to belong ;	<i>sembráre,</i>	} to belong ;
<i>appartenére,</i>		<i>spettáre,</i>	
<i>bastáre,</i>	} to be enough ;	<i>toccáre,</i>	} to be necessary.
<i>bisognáre</i>		<i>far úpo,</i>	
<i>convenire,</i>	} to be needful ;	<i>far d' úpo,</i>	}
<i>importáre,</i>		<i>far mestieri,</i>	
<i>dipéndere,</i>	} to depend ;	<i>far di mestieri,</i>	}

To these may be added all verbs which become passive by taking the particle *si*, either before or after them ; which are varied in the third person both singular and plural, and with the auxiliary *éssere* ; as, *vedérsi*, 'to be seen' :— *si véde*, 'it is seen' ; *si sóno vedúti*, 'they have been seen' ; *biasimársi*, 'to be blamed' ; *si sóno biasimáti*, 'they have been blamed' ; &c.

*E'ssere*, 'to be,' is also used unipersonally, both in the singular and plural, when it is joined to the particles *ci* or *vi* ; as, *ésserci* or *ésservi*, 'to be here,' or 'to be there.' It is varied as follows :

### Variation of the Verb *E'ssere*, unipersonally used.

#### I. INFINITIVE.

##### Simple Tenses.

##### 1. — Present.

*ésser-ci* or *ésser-* | to be here or  
[-vi, | [to be there.]

##### Compound Tenses.

##### 2. — Past.

*ésser-ci* { *státo*, m. s., }  
or *ésser-* { *státi*, p., } to have  
-vi, { *státa*, f. s., } been there.  
          { *státe*, p., }

##### 3. — Future.

*ésser-ci* or *ésser-vi per éssere,* } to have to be there, or  
*avér-ci* or *avér-vi ad éssere,* } to be about to be there.  
*dovér-ci* or *dovér-vi éssere,*

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

*esséndo-ci* or } there being.  
*esséndo-vi,* }

5. — *Past.*

|| *esséndo-ci* or } *státo*, m. s., { there  
*esséndo-vi,* } [ *státi*, p., { having  
[ *státa*, f. s., { been.  
[ *státe*, p., }

## PARTICIPLE.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *c' è* or *v' e,* here is, or there || *ci sòno* or *vi sòno,* | there are.  
[is; ||

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *c' éra* or *v' i,* there was; || *c' érano* or *v' i,* | there were.  
[*éra,* | [ *éranó,* |

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *ci fu* or *vi i,* there was; || *ci fúrono* or *vi i,* | there were.  
[*fu,* | [ *fúronó,* |

4. — *Future.*

3d p. *ci sarà* or there shall or will || *ci saránno* or *vi i,* | there shall or will  
[ *vi sarà,* | [be; | [ *saránno,* | [be.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

3d p. *c' è* or *v' è* | there has been; || *ci sòno* or *vi sòno* | there have been.  
[ *státo*, m., -a, f., | [ *státi*, m., -e, f., |

Singular.

Plural.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

3d p. *e' éra* or *v'* | there had been ; || *e' érano* or *v' éra-* | there had been.  
 [*éra státo, -a,*] | | [*no státi, -e,*]

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

3d p. *ci fu* or *vi* | there had been ; || *ci fúrono* or *vi* | there had been.  
 [*fu státo, -a,*] | | [*fúrono státi, -e,*]

8. — *Future Anterior.*

3d p. *ci sarà* or *vi* | there will have | | *ci saránno* or *vi* | there will have  
 [*sarà státo, -a,*] | | [*been ; saránno státi,*] | | [*been.*  
 | | [*-e,*]

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *ci sia* or *vi* | that there be, or | | *ci siano, vi sia-* | that there be, or  
 [*sia,*] | | [*may be ; no, or ci siano,*] | | [*may be.*  
 | | [*vi siano,*]

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *ci fósse* or | if there were ; or | | *ci fóssero* or *vi* | if there were ; or  
 [*vi fósse,*] | | [*should be ; fóssero,*] | | [*should be.*

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *ci sia* or *vi* | that there has | | *ci siano* or *vi sia-* | that there have  
 [*sia státo, -a,*] | | [*been ; no státi, -e,*] | | [*been, or may*  
 | | [*have been.*

4. — *Pluperfect.*

3d p. *ci fósse* or | if there had been ; | | *ci fóssero* or *vi* | if there had been.  
 [*vi fósse státo,*] | | [*fóssero státi,*]  
 [*-a,*] | | [*-e,*]



## IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Plural.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

## 1. — Present.

3d p. <i>ci sarébbe</i>	there should,	<i>ci sarébbéro</i> or <i>vi</i>	there should,
[or <i>vi sarébbe</i> ,	[would, or could	[ <i>sarébbéro</i> ,	[would, or could
[be ; or might	[be ;	[be ; or might	[be ; or might
[be ;		[be.	[be.

## COMPOUND TENSE.

## 2. — Past.

3d p. <i>ci sarébbe</i>	there should,	<i>ci sarébbéro</i> or <i>vi</i>	there should,
[or <i>vi sarébbe</i>	[would, or could	[ <i>sarébbéro stá-</i>	[would, or could
[ <i>státo, -a,</i>	[have been ; or	[ <i>ti, -e,</i>	[have been ; or
[might have	[been ;	[might have	[been.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

3d p. <i>ci sia, vi</i>	let there be ;	<i>ci siano, vi sia-</i>	let there be.
[ <i>sia, or sia-ci,</i>		[ <i>no, or sian-ci,</i>	
[ <i>sia-vi,</i>		[ <i>sien-vi,</i>	

The verb *avére*, 'to have,' is often substituted for the verb *éssere* when unipersonally used, and then it is varied after the same manner ; as, *avérci* or *avérvi*, 'to be here' or 'to be there' ; *ci ha* or *vi ha*, 'here is' or 'there is' ; *ci hánno* or *vi hánno*, 'there are' ; &c.

The verb *avére*, not only may be used with propriety for the verb *éssere*, but is also elegantly used in the singular, although the noun to which it is joined is in the plural ; as, *quánte miglia ci ha ?* 'how many miles is it ?' *ébbévi mólti uómini*, 'there were a great many men there' ; &c.

To express in Italian *here* or *there is some of it*, *here* or *there are some of them*, we join the particle *ne*, 'of it, of them,' to *ci* or *vi*, and say, *éssercene* or *ésservene*,

*avércene* or *avérvene*; as, *cen' è* or *ven' è*, *cen' ha* or *ven' ha*, 'here is some of it,' or 'there is some of it'; *céne sóno* or *véne sóno*, *cen' hánno* or *ven' hánno*, 'there are some of them'; &c.

## EXAMPLES.

*Per certo chi non v' áma, da  
vói non desidera d' ÉSSERE AMÁ-  
TO.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Surely he who does not love  
you, does not desire to be loved  
by you.

*Nóí ERAVÁM PARTÍTI già da  
éllo.* (Dant. Inf. 32.)

We had already departed from  
him.

*DORMÍTO HAI, bélla dónna, un  
bréve sónno.* (Petr. s. 284.)

Thou hast slept, beautiful wo-  
man, a short sleep.

*Fu accusáto falsaménte che  
dovéa AVÉR MÓRTO un úomo, cól-  
la móglie, e con tútta la famíglia.*  
(Vit. S. Franc)

He was falsely accused to have  
killed a man, with his wife, and  
all his family.

*Tarquínio álla fine FU MÓRTO  
per gli figliúbbi del sopradétto  
Márco Márzio.* (Giov. Vill. l. 1.  
c. 2.)

Tarquin at length was killed by  
the sons of the above mentioned  
Marcus Martius.

*Lasciáte costúí álle mie múse  
che LO GUARÍSCANO.* (Varch.  
Boez. 1. 1.)

Let him be cured by my muses.

*Mío fratéllo per méra grázia di  
Dio È GUARÍTO.* (Red. lett. 1.)

My brother has recovered through  
the mere mercy of God.

*E 'l PENTÍRSI, e 'l conóscer  
chiaraménte, — Che quánto pícce  
al móndo è un bréve sónno.*  
(Petr. s. 1.)

And to repent and to know  
clearly, that what pleases the  
world is a short dream.

*Dálle quáli facilménte tu TI  
SARÉSTI POTÚTO ASTENÉRE.*  
(Mach. Com.)

From which thou wouldst have  
easily abstained.

*Se ío dálla verità del fáto MI  
FÓSSI SCOSTÁRE VOLÚTA, avréi  
ben sapúto sólto áltri nómi rac-  
contárla.* (Bocc.)

If I had wished to depart from  
the truth of the fact, I should have  
known how to relate it under dif-  
ferent names.

- Acciocchè mále e scándalo non  
no nascésse, ME NE SÓNO TACIÚTA.*  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)      That no evil or scandal should  
arise from it, I have kept silent.
- Élla fu sávia certo, e di grand'  
ánimo, — Un' áltra SI SARÉ'*  
[sarébbe] *DÁTA sul piángere.*  
(Cecch. Inc. 1. 1.)      She was wise surely, and of a  
great mind; for another would  
have given herself to weeping.
- Égli è nótte búia, e piovígina,  
e par che sia per PIÓVER piú fór-  
te.* (Sacch. nov. 28.)      It is a very dark night, and it  
drizzles, and seems as if it would  
rain harder.
- CI SÓNO délle áltre dónne assái.*  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)      Here are many other ladies.
- Caválca, e quándo ANNÓTTA e  
quándo AGGIÓRNA.* (Ariost. Fur.  
27. 12.)      He rides both when it grows  
night, and when it is day.
- Non altramenti a lúi AVVÉNNE,  
che al Dúca AVVENÚTO ÉRA.*  
(Bocc. 9. 2. n. 7.)      It happened to him not other-  
wise than it had happened to the  
Duke.
- E che i vísj débbero da tútti  
SIASIMÁRSI.* (Pass.)      And that vices ought to be  
blamed by all.
- QUÁNTE MÍGLIA CI HA? —  
HÁCCENE piú di millánta.* (Bocc.  
g. 8. n. 3.)      How many miles is it? It is  
an infinite number.
- Là dove CER' è úna, che è  
mólto córta.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 4.)      Where there is one [way] which  
is very short.

## EXERCISE XVII.

[The learner, in the following exercise, will put the past participle of passive verbs, and of such neuter and pronominal verbs as are varied with the verb *essere*, both in the masculine and feminine gender, by alternating the gender at each tense, as is here done in the English with the third person singular.]

## PASSIVE VERBS.

1. 1. — To be loved.      2. — to have been feared.  
*Èssere umáto.*      *Èssere státo temúto.*
4. — being believed.      5. — having been heard. —  
*Èssere credúto.*      *Èssere státo sentúto.*

II. 1. — I am praised, thou art invited, he is expected,  
*lodáto,* *invitáto,* *aspettáto,*

we are called, you are assured, they are punished. 2. —  
*chiamáto,* *assicuráto,* *castigáto.*

I was sought, thou wast advised, she was prayed, we  
*cercáto,* *consigliáto,* *pregáto,*

were accompanied, you were envied, they were assured.  
*accompagnáto,* *invidiáto,* *assicuráto.*

3. — I was assailed, thou wast besieged, he was ordered,  
*assalláto,* *assediató,* *ordináto,*

we were confirmed, you were delivered, they were  
*confirmáto,* *consegnáto,*

accepted. 4. — I shall be proved, thou wilt be asked,  
*accettáto.* *prováto,* *domandáto,*

she will be admired, we shall be paid, you will be  
*ammiráto,* *pagáto,*

honored, they will be blamed. 5. — I have been  
*onoráto,* *biasimáto.*

robbed.\* — III. 1. — I may be believed, thou mayest  
*rubbáto.* *credúto,*

be received, he may be beaten, we may be preceded,  
*ricevúto,* *battúto,* *precedúto,*

you may be provided, they may be sold. 2. — I  
*provvedúto,* *vendúto.*

might be punished, thou mightest be furnished, she  
*punúto,* *fornúto,*

might be hindered, we might be attacked, you might  
*impeditó,* *assallíto,*

be betrayed, they might be supplied. — IV. 1. —  
*tradúto,* *supplúto.*

I should be admonished, thou wouldst be wounded, he  
*ammonúto,* *ferúto,*

would be banished, we would be encouraged, you would  
*bandúto,* *incoraggúto,*

---

\* The learner can form the compound tenses of any of these verbs by joining the past participles to the compound tenses of the verb *essere*.

be obeyed, they would be invested. — V. — Be thou  
*obbedito*, *investito*.  
 allured, let her be listened to, let us be employed, be  
*allettato*, *ascoltato*, *impiegato*,  
 ye trusted, let them be saved.  
*fidato*, *salvato*.

## NEUTER AND PRONOMINAL VERBS.

I. 2. — To have departed. 5. — having repented  
*partito*. <sup>1</sup> *pentito*<sup>2</sup>  
 one's self. II. 5. — I have delayed, thou hast kept  
<sup>si</sup><sup>2</sup> *indugiato*, <sup>2</sup> *taciù-*  
 silent (*thyself*), he has gone out, we have cured, you  
<sup>to</sup><sup>2</sup> *uscito*, *guarito*,  
 have praised yourselves, they have lived. 6. — I had  
<sup>2</sup> *lodato*<sup>3</sup> *vi*,<sup>1</sup> *vivuto*.<sup>2</sup>  
 wounded myself, thou hadst become dumb, she had  
*ferito*<sup>3</sup> *mi*,<sup>1</sup> *ammutato*,<sup>2</sup>  
 corrected herself, you had grown childish, they had  
*ricreduto*<sup>3</sup> *si*,<sup>1</sup> *rimbambito*,<sup>2</sup>  
 seized (*themselves*). 7. — I had dined, thou hadst soiled  
*impadronito*<sup>3</sup> *si*,<sup>1</sup> *pranzato*, <sup>2</sup> *imbrattato*<sup>3</sup>  
 thyself, he had grown mad, we had lost ourselves, you  
<sup>ti</sup>,<sup>1</sup> *impazzito*, <sup>2</sup> *smarrito*<sup>3</sup> *ci*,<sup>1</sup>  
 had spoken, they were dismayed (*themselves*). 8. —  
*parlato*, <sup>2</sup> *sbigottito*<sup>3</sup> *si*.  
 I shall have sailed, thou wilt have complained (*thyself*),  
*navigato*, <sup>2</sup> *lamentato*<sup>3</sup> *ti*,<sup>1</sup>  
 she will have recovered, we will have taken leave  
*guarito*, <sup>2</sup> *licenziato*<sup>3</sup>  
 (*ourselves*), you will have walked, they will have married  
<sup>ci</sup>, *passeggiato*, <sup>2</sup> *maritato*<sup>3</sup>  
 (*themselves*). — III. 3. — I may have rejoiced (*myself*),  
<sup>si</sup>. <sup>2</sup> *rallegrato* <sup>su</sup>,<sup>1</sup>  
 thou mayest have sported, he may have colored himself,  
*scherzato*, <sup>2</sup> *incolorito*<sup>3</sup> *si*,<sup>1</sup>

we may have gone near, you may have risen (*yourselves*),  
*avvicinato*, <sup>2</sup> *alzato*<sup>2</sup> *vi*<sup>1</sup>,

they may have arrived. 4. — I might have enriched  
*arrivato*. <sup>2</sup> *arricchito*<sup>2</sup>

myself, thou mightest have slept, she might have  
<sup>1</sup> *mi*<sup>1</sup>, *dormito*, <sup>2</sup>

instructed herself, we might have sunk under, you  
*istruito*<sup>2</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup>, *succombuto*,

might have assembled yourselves, they might have  
<sup>2</sup> *riunito*<sup>2</sup> *vi*<sup>1</sup>,

grown pale. — IV. 2. — I should have married myself,  
*impallidito*. <sup>2</sup> *ammogliato*<sup>2</sup> *mi*<sup>1</sup>,

thou shouldst have grown proud, he would have rejoiced  
*insuperbito*, <sup>2</sup> *rallegrato*<sup>2</sup>

himself, we would have cried out, you would have  
<sup>1</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup>, *gridato*, <sup>2</sup>

enamoured yourselves, they would have become cruel.  
*innamorato*<sup>2</sup> *vi*<sup>1</sup>, *inferocito*.

— V. — Defend thyself, let her imagine herself,  
*difendere* *ti*, *immaginare*<sup>2</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup>, or *immaginare* *—*

let us help ourselves, ennoble yourselves, let them  
<sup>1</sup> *si*, *aiutare* *ci*, *annobilire* *vi*, *rispet-*

respect themselves.  
*tare*<sup>2</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup>, or *rispettare* *si*.

UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

I. 1. — To rain. 4. — raining. 7. — rained. To  
*Piovere.* *piovere.* *piovere.*

have rained. — II. 1. — It is day. 2. — it grew  
*piovuto.* *aggiornare.* *annot-*

night. 3. — it lightened. 4. — it will thunder. 5. —  
*tare.* *balenare.* *tuonare.*

it has snowed. 6. — it had happened. 7. — it had  
*nevicato.* *avvenuto.*

frozen. 8. — it will have seemed. — III. 1. — it  
*gelato.* *sembrato.*

- may freeze. *gelàre.* 2. — it might thaw. *dimoidàre.* 3. — it may have been cold. *fatto caldo.* 4. — it might have displeased. — IV. 1. — *dispiaciuto.*
- it would be important. *importàre.* 2. — it would have belonged. *appartenuto.*
- V. — let it be sufficient. *bastàre.*

ÉSSERCI OR ÉSSERVI, AVÉRCI OR AVÉRVI.

- I. 4. — There being. — II. 1. — here is, or there is, *ci<sup>2</sup> Ésser<sup>1</sup>.* *ci éssere, or vi avérc,*
- there are. 2. — there was, there were. 3. — *ci éssere or avére.* *vi éssere, ci avére.*
- there was, there were. 4. — there will be, *sing.*, there *vi éssere, ci éssere.* *vi avére, ci*
- will be, *plur.* 5. — there has been some of it, *sing.*, *avére.* *vi éssere<sup>2</sup> ne<sup>1</sup>,*
- there has been some of them, *plur.* — III. 1. — that there *ci avére<sup>2</sup> ne<sup>1</sup>* *vi*
- may be, *sing.*, that there may be, *plur.* 2. — if there *avére,* *ci éssere.* *vi*
- were some of it, *sing.*, if there were some of them, *plur.* *avére<sup>2</sup> ne<sup>1</sup>,* *ci éssere<sup>2</sup> ne<sup>1</sup>.*
- IV. 1. — there should be, *sing.*, there should be *vi éssere,* *ci avére<sup>2</sup>*
- some of them, *plur.* — V. — let there be, *sing.*, *ci avére, or éssere, ci,*
- let there be some of them, *plur.* *vi éssere<sup>2</sup> ne<sup>1</sup>, or avére, vi, ne.*

## CHAPTER X.

## IRREGULAR VERBS.

THE irregularities of Italian Verbs are chiefly confined to the *perfect* tense of the *indicative* mood, and the *past participle*.

Some verbs, however, are also irregular in the *present* of the *indicative*; and then they are irregular likewise in the *present* of the *conjunctive* and in the *imperative*.

When verbs are contracted in the *infinitive* mood, they are contracted also in the *future* tense, and in the *conditional* mood.

---

In those tenses in which verbs are irregular, the irregularity, generally, does not extend to all the persons: thus, with very few exceptions, in the *perfect* of the *indicative*, the *second person singular* and the *first* and *second persons plural*;—and in the *present* of the *indicative* and *conjunctive*, and in the *imperative*, the *first* and *second persons plural*,—are *regular*.

---

In the variation of these verbs, we will give only those tenses in which they depart from the paradigms already given, to which we must refer for the formation of the other tenses. The *persons* which are *irregular* are here printed in *small capitals*.

For the assistance of learners, we have added to each verb, the *auxiliary* with which it is varied in its compound tenses.

---



VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST  
CONJUGATION.

There are but *four* simple verbs in the first conjugation, which are not varied like *amare*, viz.

<i>Andáre,</i>	to go ;		<i>fáre,</i>	to do or to make ;
<i>dáre,</i>	to give ;		<i>stáre,</i>	to be, to dwell, to stand, [or to stay.

*Andáre.*

(Varied with *essere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

*Andáre,* | to go.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

*andándo,* |going ; || *andáto,* |gone.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>vo,</i> or <i>vá-</i>	I go, or am go-		<i>andíamo,</i>		we go ;
[ <i>do,</i> *	[ing ;		<i>andáte,</i>		you go ;
2d p. <i>vái,</i>	thou goest ;		<i>vánno,</i>		they go.
3d p. <i>va,</i>	he goes ;				

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *andrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will go.  
[*anderò*],

\* *Andáre* is also a defective verb, and borrows these forms from the Latin verb *cadere*.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io</i> VÁDA,	that I go <i>or</i> may	<i>andíamo,</i>	that we go ;
	[go ;		
2d p. <i>tu</i> VÁDA	that thou go ;	<i>andiáte,</i>	that you go ;
	[( <i>vádi</i> ),		
3d p. <i>egli</i> VÁDA,	that he go ;	VÁDANO,	that they go.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>andréi</i> ( <i>andría</i> )	[hy contrac-	I should, would, <i>or</i> could go ;	<i>or</i>
	[tion for <i>anderéi</i> ( <i>andería</i> )],		[might go.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>andiámo nói,</i>	let us go ;
2d p. <i>va</i> ( <i>vd'</i> ) <i>tu,</i>	go thou ;	<i>andáte vói,</i>	go ye ;
3d p. VÁDA <i>egli,</i>	let him go ;	VÁDANO <i>églino,</i>	let them go.

*Andáre* is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si, ci, vi, si*, and the particle *ne* ; thus, **ME NE** *vo*, ' I go hence ' ; **TE NE** *vái*, ' thou goest hence ' ; &c. *Me, te*, &c. are then mere expletives.

The compounds of *andáre*, as *riandáre*, signifying ' to go again ' , &c. have the same irregularities.

EXCEPTIONS.

*Riandáre*, signifying ' to examine ' or ' to go over again ' ; and *trasandáre*, ' to go beyond ' ; are *regular* and varied like *amáre*.

The verbs *mandáre*, ' to send ' ; *rimandáre*, ' to send back again ' ; *tramandáre*, ' to transmit ' ; *comandáre*, ' to command ' ; *dimandáre*, ' to ask ' ; &c. are not derivatives of *andáre*, and are varied like *amáre*.

*Däre.*(Varied with *avére.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Däre,* | to give.

## GERÜND.

*dándo,* | giving.

## PARTICIPLE.

| *dáto,* | given.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>do,</i>	I give, or am [giving];	<i>diámo,</i>	we give ;
2d p. <i>dái,</i>	thou givest ;	<i>dáte,</i>	you give ;
3d p. <i>dá,</i>	he gives ;	<i>dámo,</i>	they give.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>DÉTTL,</i> or [DIÉDI (diéi),	I gave ; or did [give];	<i>DÉMMO,</i>	we gave ;
2d p. <i>DÉSTI,</i>	thou gavest ;	<i>DÉSTE,</i>	you gave ;
3d p. <i>DÉTTE,</i> or [DIÉDE (dié),	he gave ;	<i>DÉTTERO,</i> or <i>DIÉ-</i> [DÉRO (diérono, [diéro, diér, dé- [no, diénno, dén- [no),	they gave.

4. — *Future.*1st p. *DARò,* | I shall, or will give.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>to dá,</i>	that I give, or [may give];	<i>diámo,</i>	that we give ;
2d p. <i>tu dá,</i> or [dái,	that thou give ;	<i>dáte,</i>	that you give ;
3d p. <i>égli dá,</i>	that he give ;	<i>dámo,</i> or <i>dékno,</i>	that they give.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io d'essi,* | if I gave or should give.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *DARÉI* (*darfa*), | I should, would, or could  
[give ; or might give.

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>diámo noi,</i>   let us give ;
2d p. <i>dà</i> ( <i>dá</i> ) <i>tu,</i>	give thou ;	<i>dáte vói,</i>   give ye ;
3d p. <i>día églá,</i>	let him give ;	<i>DÍANO, or D'ENO</i>   let them give.
		[ <i>églino,</i>

The compounds of *dáre*, as *ridáre*, 'to give again'; *addársi*, 'to devote one's self'; &c., have the same irregularities.

The verbs *abbondáre*, 'to abound'; *accommodáre*, 'to mend'; *badáre*, 'to mind'; *accordáre*, 'to grant'; *circondáre*, 'to surround'; *fidáre*, 'to trust'; *freddáre*, 'to cool'; *gridáre*, 'to cry out'; *guardáre*, 'to look'; *guidáre*, 'to guide'; *lodáre*, 'to praise'; *predáre*, 'to prey'; *ricordáre*, 'to remember'; *rimediáre*, 'to remedy'; *scaldáre*, 'to warm'; *secondáre*, 'to second'; &c., are not derivatives of *dáre*, and are varied like *amáre*.

*Fāre.*(Varied with *avére.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

FĀRE (fācere),\* | to do, or to make.

## GERUND.

## PARTICIPLE.

*facēdo,* | doing. | || FĀTTO, | done.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>fo</i> ( <i>fācio</i> ),	I do or am do-	FACCĪAMO,	we do ;
2d p. <i>fāi</i> ( <i>fāci</i> ),	thou doest ;	<sup>[ing ;</sup> <i>fāte,</i>	you do ;
3d p. <i>fa</i> ( <i>fāce</i> ),	he does ;	FĀNNO ( <i>fān</i> ),	they do.

## 2. — Imperfect.

1st p. *io facēva* or *facēa* (*fēa*), | I did or was doing.

## 3. — Perfect.

1st p. <i>fēci</i> ( <i>fēi</i> ),	I did ;	<i>facēmmo</i> ( <i>fēm-</i>	we did ;
2d p. <i>facēsti</i>	thou didst ;	<sup>[mo).</sup> <i>facēste</i> ( <i>fēste</i> ),	you did ;
3d p. <i>fēce</i> ( <i>fē'</i> ,	he did ;	FĒCERO ( <i>fērono</i> ,	they did.
<sup>[(fēsti)</sup> <i>fēo</i> ),		<sup>[fēno, fēro, fer,</sup> <i>fēnno, fēn</i> ),	

## 4. — Future.

1st p. *fārò*, | I shall or will do.\* This verb belongs properly to the second conjugation, it being but a contraction of *fācere*, now become *obsolete*, of which it retains many of the forms.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io FÁCCIA,</i>	that I do, or may		FACCIÁMO,		that we do;
	[do];				
2d p. <i>tu FÁCCIA,</i>	that thou do;		FACCIÁTE,		that you do;
3d p. <i>egli FÁC-</i>	that he do;		FÁCCIANO,		that they do.
	[CIA,				

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io faceffi (fèssi),* | if I did or should do.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *FARÉI (faría, faré'),* | I should, would, or could  
[do; or might do.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .		FACCIÁMO,		let us do;
2d p. <i>fa (fá') tu,</i>	do thou;		fáte,		do ye;
3d p. <i>FÁCCIA</i>	let him do;		FÁCCIANO,		let them do.
	[égli,				

The compounds of *färe*, as *assuefäre*, 'to accustom'; *confäre*, 'to suit,' 'to agree'; *contraffäre*, 'to mimic,' 'to imitate'; *disfäre*, 'to undo'; *misfäre*, 'to do wrong'; *liquefäre*, 'to melt'; *sopraffäre*, 'to overpower'; *stupéfäre*, 'to stupefy,' 'to astonish'; &c., have the same irregularities.

*Sodisfäre* or *soddisfäre*, 'to satisfy,' is both *regular* and *irregular*.

The verbs *olfäre*, 'to smell'; *schifäre*, 'to shun'; *trionfäre*, 'to triumph,' are not derivatives of *färe*, and are varied like *amäre*.

*Stáre.*(Varied with *éssere.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

1. — *Present.*

<i>Stáre,</i>	to stand, to stay, to dwell, or to be.
---------------	---

## GERUND.

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>stándo,</i>	standing.	<i>státo,</i>	stood.
----------------	-----------	---------------	--------

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>sto,</i>	I stand or am [standing;	<i>stíamo,</i>	we stand ;
2d p. <i>stái,</i>	thou standest ;	<i>státe,</i>	you stand ;
3d p. <i>sta,</i>	he stands ;	<i>stáno,</i>	they stand.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>stétti</i> [( <i>stéi</i> ),	I stood ;	<i>stémmo,</i>	we stood ;
2d p. <i>stésti,</i>	thou stoodst ;	<i>stéste,</i>	you stood ;
3d p. <i>stétte</i> [( <i>stè</i> ),	he stood ;	<i>stéttero</i> ( <i>stéro</i> , [ <i>stér</i> , <i>stíero</i> , [ <i>stíér</i> ),	they stood.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>starò,</i>	I shall or will stand.
----------------------	------------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io stía,</i>	that I stand or [may stand ;	<i>stíamo,</i>	that we stand ;
2d p. <i>tu stía,</i> or	that thou stand ;	<i>stíate,</i>	that you stand ;
3d p. <i>egli stía,</i>	that he stand ;	<i>stíano,</i> or <i>stíe-</i> [no,	that they stand.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io stéssi*, | If I stood or should stand.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *staréi* (*staría*), | I should, would, or could  
[stand; or might stand.

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>stíamo,</i>	let us stand;
2d p. <i>sta</i> ( <i>stá'</i> )	stand thou;	<i>státe,</i>	stand ye;
3d p. <i>stía égli,</i>	[tu, let him stand;	<i>stíano, or stíe-</i>	let them stand.
		[no <i>églino,</i>	

*Stáre*, is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns, *mi, ti, si, &c.*, and the particle *ne*: thus, *ME NE sto*, 'I remain here'; *TE NE stái*, 'thou remainest here'; &c. — *Me, te, &c.* are then mere expletives.

The compounds of *stáre*, as *contrastáre*, signifying 'to stand against'; *distáre*, 'to be distant'; *instáre*, 'to entreat'; *ristáre*, 'to stop'; *soprastáre* or *sovrastáre*, signifying 'to delay,' 'to differ'; &c. have the same irregularities.

EXCEPTIONS.

*Contrastáre*, signifying 'to deny,' 'to dispute'; *soprastáre* or *sovrastáre*, signifying 'to stand over,' 'to threaten'; *ostáre*, 'to oppose'; *restáre*, 'to remain'; are *regular*, and are varied like *amáre*.

The verbs *accostáre*, 'to approach'; *acquistáre*, 'to acquire'; *costáre*, 'to cost'; *manifestáre*, 'to manifest'; *pestáre*, 'to pound,' are not derivatives of *stáre*, and are varied like *amáre*.



The foregoing verbs, *andàre*, *dàre*, *fàre*, and *stàre*, in all those forms in which, when they are simple, they form but one syllable, have in their compounds the accent on the last syllable; as, *vo*, *da*, *fe'*, *sta*:—*riòvò*, 'I go again'; *ridà*, 'he gives back again'; *disfè'*, 'he destroyed'; *instà*, 'entreat thou'; &c.

## EXAMPLES.

*VA il cavál per Giò, — Per* The horse goes by Giò, the ox  
*Ánda va il bò, — E l' ásino per* by *Ánda*, and the ass by *Árri*.<sup>\*</sup>  
*Árri.* (Fran. Sacch., rime, 9.)

*Or vá', ch' un sol volére è* Now go, for one only will is in  
*d' amendúe.* (Dant. Inf. 2.) both of us.

*Quésto udíto dal sánto véccchio* Having heard this he went to  
*SE NE ANDÒ mólto consoláto.* the holy man quite consoled.  
(Vit. S. Ant.)

*Príma ch' áltri dinánzi li ri-* Ere any one repassed before  
*váda.* (Dant. Inf. 28.) him.

*RIÁnda le cose, che tu gli háa* Examine the things, which thou  
*détte di me.* (Salv. Granch. 2., 5.) hast said to him of me.

*Sóno mólti di sì liève fantasía,* There are many of so light a  
*che in tutte le lóro ragióni TRA-* mind, that in all their reasonings  
*SÁNDANO.†* (Dant. Conv. 179.) they [go beyond the question]  
wander from the subject of them.

*La senténza la quále San Pié-* The sentence which saint Peter  
*tro DÉTTE cóntro Anania.* (Ca- gave against Ananias.  
valc. Pungill. 97.)

*Al cónte piáque mólto quésta* This request pleased the count  
*dománda, e prestaménte rispóse* much, and he immediately replied  
*di sí, e gliéle DIÉDE.* (Bocc. g. that he would, and gave them to  
2. n. 8.) him.

\* Different interjections used by the Italians in driving those animals.

† We are aware that some copies of the *Convivio* have *trasóndano*; *trasóndano*, however, is the better reading.

*E il buon maestro del parlar  
próprio [Dante] disse: io mi  
féci al mostráto innánzi un póco;  
e Ver me si féce, ed io ver lúi  
mi féi. (Dep. Decam. 99.)*

And the good master of correct  
speaking [Dante] said: I [made  
myself] drew a little nearer to  
him who had been shown me;  
and He drew near me, and I drew  
near him.

*All inférno non sodísfano  
eziandio le preziose cose. (Fr.  
Giord.)*

In hell even precious things  
give no satisfaction.

*E qui convièn, ch' i' questo  
péso pórti — Per léi, tánto ch' a  
Dio si soddisfáccia. (Dant.  
Pur. 11.)*

And here I must bear for it this  
weight, till satisfaction be made to  
God.

*Veggéndo che da niún cono-  
sciúto v' éra, si stétte. (Bocc.  
g. 5. n. 6.)*

Seeing that he was known by  
none, he stayed there.

*Póssio favelláre, s' io vóglío; e  
se nó, sí me ne póssio stáre.  
(Fr. Giord. S. Pred. 82.)*

I can speak, if I wish; if not, I  
can refrain from it.

*Ma paura e pietáde contra-  
stétte — Al mio crudél ardire.  
(Ovid. Pist.)*

But fear and pity stood against  
my fierce desire.

*Ráde vólte addivièn, che all' ál-  
te imprése — Fortúna ingiuri-  
ósa non contrásti. (Petr.  
c. 11.)*

Seldom it happens that Fortune  
does not oppose great undertak-  
ings.

*Martúccio, veggéndo la gió-  
vane, maravigliándosi, sopra-  
stétte. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)*

Martuccio, seeing the lass, won-  
dering at it, tarried.

*Sánza montáre al dóssio —  
Dell' arco, óve lo scóglio piú so-  
vrásta. (Dant. Inf. 18.)*

Without ascending on the top  
of the arch where the rock is more  
jutting.

## EXERCISE XVIII.

[In this and the following exercises on *Irregular Verbs*, have been introduced many of those verbs, which, although they are, or, from the similarity of their terminations, seem to be, derived from the simple irregular verbs here given, are yet *regular*. This has been done with a view of early accustoming the learner to make the necessary discrimination.]

- I. 1.—To go. *Andäre.* 4.—giving. *däre.* 7.—made. *färe.* — II. 1.—I stay, *stäre,*  
 thou sendest, *mandäre,* he gives again, *riidäre,* we melt, *liquefäre,* you entreat, *instäre,*  
 they go over again. *riandäre.* 2.—I gave, *däre,* thou accustomedst, *assuefäre,*  
 he stood against, *contrastäre,* we asked, *dimandäre,* you granted, *accordäre,* they triumphed. *trionfäre.*  
 3.—I stayed, *stäre,* thou sendedst back, *rimandäre,* he devoted himself, *addäre*<sup>2</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup>, *con-*  
 imitated, *traffäre,* you delayed, *soprastäre,* they transmitted. *tramandäre.* 4.—I will make, *färe,*  
 thou wilt oppose, *ostäre,* he will go again, *riandäre,* we will trust, *fidäre,* you will  
 stand over, *vrastäre,* they will praise. *lodäre.* 5.—I have gone, *andäto,*  
 hast made over again, *rifätto,* he has remained, *restäto,* we have given, *däto,*  
 you have commanded, *comandäto,* they have manifested. *manifestäto.* III. 1.—  
 that I deny, *contrastäre,* that thou mayest go beyond, *trasandäre,* that he may  
 satisfy, *färe,* that we may pound, *pestäre,* that you may attend, *badäre,*  
 they may cost. *costäre.* 2.—I might astonish, *stupefäre,* thou mightest *pre-*  
 pray, *däre,* he might approach, *accostäre,* we might disdain, *schifäre,* you might *scal-*  
 warm, they might abound. *abbondäre.* — IV. 1.—I would do wrong, *misfäre,*

thou wouldst acquire, he would command, we would scold,  
*acquistàre,* *comandàre,* *gridàre,*  
 you would smell, they would cost. — V. — go thou, let  
*olfàre,* *costàre.* *andàre,*  
 him give, let us make, stay ye, let them dispute.  
*dàre,* *fàre,* *stàre,* *contestàre.*

VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

*Variation of the Irregular Verbs in ère (long).*

The simple irregular verbs in *ère* (*long*) are the following ; viz.

<i>cadère,</i>	to fall ;	<i>rimanère,</i>	to remain ;
<i>dissuadère,</i>	to dissuade ;	<i>sapère,</i>	to know ;
<i>dolère,</i>	to grieve ;	<i>sedère,</i>	to sit down ;
<i>dovère,</i>	to owe ;	<i>tacère,</i>	to be or keep si-
<i>giacère,</i>	to lie down ;	<i>tenère,</i>	to hold ; [lent ;
<i>parère,</i>	to seem ;	<i>valère,</i>	to be worth ;
<i>persuadère,</i>	to persuade ;	<i>vedère,</i>	to see ;
<i>piacère,</i>	to please ;	<i>volère,</i>	to wish, to will,
<i>potère,</i>	to be able ;		[or to be willing.

*Cadère.*

(Varied with *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Cadère,* |to fall. || *cadúta,* |fallen.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>cádo</i> ( <i>cág</i> -I fall; [gio],)		<i>cadámo</i> ( <i>caggiá</i> -we fall; [mo, cadémo],)
2d p. <i>cadí</i> ,	thou fallest;	<i>cadéte</i> , you fall;
3d p. <i>cade</i> ,	he falls;	<i>cadomo</i> ( <i>caggiá</i> -they fall. [no],)

## 3. — Perfect.

1st p. <i>CÁDDI</i> ( <i>ca</i> -I fell; [déi, cadétti],)		<i>cadámo</i> ,	we fell;
2d p. <i>cadésti</i> ,	thou fellest;	<i>cadéste</i> ,	you fell;
3d p. <i>CÁDDE</i> ( <i>ca</i> -he fell; [déo, cadétte, cadè],)		<i>CÁDDERO</i> ( <i>cadéro</i> , they fell. [cadér; cadéro- [no, cadéttere],)	

## 4. — Future.

1st p. *caderò* (*cadrò*), | I shall or will fall.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>io cáda</i>   that I fall or [( <i>caggia</i> ),]   [may fall;	<i>cadámo</i> ( <i>caggiá</i> -that we fall; [mo],)
2d p. <i>tu cáda</i>   that thou fall;	<i>cadáte</i> ( <i>caggia</i> -that you fall; [te],)
3d p. <i>egli cáda</i>   that he fall;	<i>cadano</i> ( <i>caggia</i> -that they fall. [no],)

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. *caderéi* (*cadréi*, *cadería*, | I should, would, or could fall; or  
[*cadría*],) | [might fall.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . |  
2d p. *cadí tu*, | fall thou.

The compounds of *cadére*, as *accadére*, 'to happen'; *decadére*, 'to decline'; *ricadére*, 'to fall again'; &c., have the same irregularities. The poetical forms, however, *aggio*, *aggia*, *aggiàmo*, *aggiono*, *aggiano*, are peculiar to *cadére* and not met with in its compounds.\*

---

*Dissuadére.*

(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Dissuadére*, |to dissuade.      || DISSUÁSO,      |dissuaded.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. DISSUÁSI,	I dissuaded ;	<i>dissuadémmo</i> ,	we dissuaded ;
2d p. <i>dissuadésti</i> ,	thou dissuadest ;	<i>dissuadéste</i> ,	you dissuaded ;
3d p. DISSUÁSE,	he dissuaded ;	DISSUÁZERO,	they dissuaded.

---

*Dissuadére*, properly speaking, is a compound of the Latin verb *suadere*, as well as *persuadére*, 'to persuade,' which has the same irregularities.

---

*Dolére.*

(Varied with *éssere*, and the conjunctive pronouns, *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Dolér-si*,      to grieve.      || *dolúto-si*,      |grieved.

---

\* Of *ricadére*, Galileo has used *ricaggia*.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>mi DÓLGO</i>   I grieve ;		<i>ci DOGLIÁMO</i> ( <i>do-</i>   we grieve ;
[( <i>dóglia</i> ),		[ <i>lémo</i> ),
2d p. <i>tí DUÓLI</i> ,   thou grieveest ;		<i>vi doléte</i> ,   you grieve ;
3d p. <i>si DUÓLE</i>   he grieves ;		<i>si DÓLGONO</i> ( <i>dó-</i>   they grieve.
[( <i>dóle</i> ),		[ <i>gliano</i> ),

## 3. — Perfect.

1st p. <i>mi DÓLSI</i> ,   I grieved ;		<i>ci dolémmo</i> ,   we grieved ;
2d p. <i>tí dolésti</i> ,   thou grievedst ;		<i>vi doléste</i> ,   you grieved ;
3d p. <i>si DÓLSÉ</i> ,   he grieved ;		<i>si DÓLSERO</i> ,   they grieved.

## 4. — Future.

1st p. *dorrò* [by contraction for *I shall or will grieve.*  
[*dolerò\**],

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>mi DÓLGA</i>   that I grieve or		<i>ci DOGLIÁMO</i> ,   that we grieve ;
[( <i>dóglia</i> ),	[ <i>may grieve ;</i>	
2d p. <i>tí DÓLGA</i>   that thou grieve ;		<i>vi DOGLIÁTE</i> ,   that you grieve ;
3d p. <i>si DÓLGA</i>   that he grieve ;		<i>si DÓLGANO</i> ( <i>dó-</i>   that they grieve.
[( <i>dóglia</i> ),		[ <i>gliano</i> ),

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. *dorréi* (*dorría*) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could grieve ;  
tion for *doleréi* (*dolería*)†], | [or might grieve.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .		<i>DOGLIÁMO-ci</i> ,   let us grieve ;
2d p. <i>DUÓLI-tí</i> ,   grieve thou ;		<i>doléte-vi</i> ,   grieve ye ;
3d p. <i>si DÓLGA</i>   let him grieve ;		<i>si DÓLGANO</i> ( <i>dó-</i>   let them grieve.
[( <i>dóglia</i> ),		[ <i>gliano</i> ),

\* To distinguish it from *dolerò*, future of the verb *dolere*, 'to defraud.'

† To distinguish them from *doleréi* (*dolería*), forms of the conditional of the verb *dolare*, 'to defraud.'

The compounds of *dolere*, as *condolere*, 'to condole'; &c. have the same irregularities.

*Dovere.*

(Varied with *avere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Dovere* (deveré\*), |to owe. || *dovúto*, |owed.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>dévo</i> , or [DÉBBO ( <i>dég-</i> [ <i>gio</i> ),	I owe ;	DOBBIÁMO ( <i>deb-</i> -[ <i>biámo</i> , <i>deggia-</i> [ <i>mo</i> , <i>devémo</i> ),	we owe ;
2d p. <i>dévi</i> ( <i>déi</i> ),	thou owest ;	<i>dovéte</i> ,	you owe ;
3d p. <i>déve</i> , or [DÉBBE ( <i>dée</i> , [ <i>dé'</i> ),	he owes ;	<i>dévono</i> , or DÉB- [BONO ( <i>déggio-</i> [ <i>no</i> , <i>déono</i> , <i>dén-</i> [ <i>no</i> ),	they owe.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *dovéi* or *dovétti*, | I owed.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *doverò* or *dovrò*, | I shall or will owe.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io</i> DÉBBA [( <i>déggia</i> ),	that I owe, or [may owe ;	DOBBIÁMO ( <i>dég-</i> [( <i>giámo</i> ),	that we owe ;
2d p. <i>tu</i> DÉBBA [( <i>déggia</i> ),	that thou owe ;	DOBBIÁTE ( <i>dég-</i> [ <i>giáte</i> ),	that you owe ;
3d p. <i>egli</i> DÉBBA [( <i>déggia</i> ),	that he owe ;	DÉBBANO ( <i>dég-</i> [ <i>giano</i> ),	that they owe.

\* The Latin *debere*, from which *dovers* derives some of its forms.



## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *doveréi* or *dovréi* (dovería | I should, would, or could owe ; or  
[or dovería), | [might owe.

## V. IMPERATIVE.\*

*Giacére.*

(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Giacére,* | to lie down. || *giaciúto,* | lain down.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>giáccio,</i>	I lie down ;	<i>GIACCÍAMO,</i>	we lie down ;
2d p. <i>giáci,</i>	thou liest down ;	<i>giacéte,</i>	you lie down ;
3d p. <i>giáce,</i>	he lies down ;	<i>GIACCÍONO,</i>	they lie down.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>giácuí,</i>	I lay down ;	<i>giacémmo,</i>	we lay down ;
2d p. <i>giacésti,</i>	thou layest down ;	<i>giacéste,</i>	you lay down ;
3d p. <i>giácuze,</i>	he lay down ;	<i>giácuzeo,</i>	they lay down.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>fo giáccia,</i>	that I lie down or	<i>GIACCÍAMO,</i>	that we lie down ;
	[may lie down ;		
2d p. <i>tu giáccia,</i>	that thou lie	<i>giacéte,</i>	that you lie
	[down ;		[down ;
3d p. <i>égli giác-</i>	that he lie down ;	<i>GIACCÍANO,</i>	that they lie
<i>[cia,</i>			[down.

\* "Strictly is wanting." — *Teor. Verb. Ital., Part. II., §. 48.*

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	GIACCIAMO <i>nói</i> ,	let us lie down ;
2d p. <i>giáci tu</i> ,	lie thou down ;	<i>giacéte vói</i> ,	lie ye down ;
3d p. <i>GIACCIA</i>	let him lie down ;	GIACCIANO <i>égli-</i>	let them lie
	[ <i>égli</i> ]	[ <i>no</i> ]	[down.]

The compounds of *giacére*, as *soggiacére*, ‘to be subject’; &c., as well as *piacére*, and its compounds *compiacére*, ‘to please’; *dispiacére*, ‘to displease’; &c. have the same irregularities.

*Piacére* and its compounds *compiacére*, &c., in the *second person plural* of the *present* of the *conjunctive*, and in the *second person plural* of the *imperative mood*, make *PIACCIÁTE*, &c.

*Parére.*

(Varied with *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Parére*, |to seem. || *parúto (párso)*, |seemed.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>PÁIO</i> ,	I seem ;	<i>pariámo</i> ,	we seem ;
2d p. <i>pári</i> ,	thou seemest ;	<i>paréte</i> ,	you seem ;
3d p. <i>páre (pár)</i> ,	he seems ;	<i>párono</i> , or <i>PÁIO-</i>	they seem.
		[ <i>no</i> ]	

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>PÁRVI</i>	I seemed ;	<i>parémmo</i> ,	we seemed ;
[ <i>(pársi)</i> ]		<i>paréste</i> ,	you seemed ;
2d p. <i>parésti</i> ,	thou seemedst ;	<i>PÁRVERO (párs-</i>	they seemed.
3d p. <i>PÁRVE</i>	he seemed ;	- [ <i>ro</i> ]	
[ <i>(párs)</i> ]			

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *parrò* [by contraction for *[parerò\*]*, | I shall or will seem.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío PÁIA,</i>	that I seem or	<i>pariámo,</i>	that we seem ;
	[may seem ;		
2d p. <i>tu PÁIA,</i>	that thou seem ;	<i>PAIÁTE,</i>	that you seem ;
3d p. <i>égkí PÁIA,</i>	that he seem ;	<i>PÁIANO,</i>	that they seem.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *parréi* (*parría*) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could seem ; or  
[tion for *pareréi* (*parería*)†], | [might seem.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>pariámo nói,</i>	let us seem ;
2d p. <i>pári tu,</i>	seem thou ;	<i>paréte vói,</i>	seem ye ;
3d p. <i>PÁIA égkí,</i>	let him seem ;	<i>PÁIANO égkiso,</i>	let them seem.

*Persuadére.*

(See *dissuadére*, p. 251.)

*Piacére.*

(See *giactre*, pp. 254 and 255.)

\* To distinguish it from *parerò*, future of the verb *parérs*, 'to parry,' 'to adorn.'

† To distinguish them from *pareréi* (*parería*), corresponding forms of the verb *parérs*, 'to parry'; &c.

*Potére.*

(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Potére,* | to be able. || *potúto,* | been able.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>póssó,</i>	I am able ;		<i>POSSIÁMO</i> ( <i>poté-</i>	we are able ;
2d p. <i>puói</i>	thou art able ;		<i>potéte,</i>	you are able ;
3d p. <i>puó</i> [ <i>(puó')</i> ],	he is able ;		<i>póssonó</i> ( <i>pónno,</i>	they are able.
	[ <i>póte</i> ],		[ <i>pón</i> ],	

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *potrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will be able.  
[*poterò\**],

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *póssa,* | that I be able or may  
| [be able.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *potréi* (*potría*) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could be able ;  
tion for *poteréi* (*potería,†*) | [or might be able.  
[*poría*],

\* To distinguish it from *poterò*, future of the verb *potére*, 'to prune.'

† To distinguish them from *potréi* (*potería*), corresponding forms of the verb *potére*, 'to prune.'

## V. IMPERATIVE.\*

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .		POSSIÁMO <i>nóis</i> ,	let us be able ;
2d p. PÓSSA <i>tu</i> ,	be thou able ;	POSSIÁTE <i>vói</i> ,	be ye able ;
3d p. PÓSSA <i>égli</i> ,	let him be able ;	PÓSSANO <i>églino</i> ,	let them be able.

*Rimanére.*(Varied with *éssere*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Rimanére*, |to remain. ||RIMÁSTO (*rimáso*),|remained.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. RIMÁNGO	I remain ;	<i>rimaniámo</i> ,	we remain ;
[( <i>rimángo</i> ),			
2d p. <i>rimáni</i> ,	thou remainest ;	<i>rimanéte</i> ,	you remain ;
3d p. <i>rimáne</i> ,	he remains ;	RIMÁNGONO,	they remain.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. RIMÁSI,	I remained ;	<i>rimanémmo</i> ,	we remained ;
2d p. <i>rimanésti</i> ,	thou remainedst ;	<i>rimanéste</i> ,	you remained ;
3d p. RIMÁSE,	he remained ;	RIMÁSERO,	they remained.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *rimarrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will remain.  
[*rimanerò*], |

\* "Observe that grammarians believe that this verb has no imperative ; because, they say, we cannot command any one to have a power which he has not. But they have not reflected that one can give power, when he is able to do so ; as in the case with God in relation to all things ; and as, to a smaller extent, may be the case with man and certain relations of man. Which ideas being susceptible of being expressed also in the imperative mood, reason requires that this verb should not be so easily deprived of it." — *Teor. Verb. Ital.*, Part. II., §. 190.

Besides, the verb *potére* does not mean only "*avér póssa e virtù, una volontà accóra, e satisfazióne, e contentó ; ché non è sempre il verbo déi portatóci, e dégli huini.*" — *Dep. Decam.*, 104.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>fo RIMÁNGA</i>   that I remain <i>or</i>   <i>rimaniámo,</i>   that we remain ;
[[ <i>rimánga</i> ],   [may remain ;
2d p. <i>tu RIMÁNGA</i>   that thou remain ;   <i>rimaniáte,</i>   that you remain ;
[[ <i>rimánga</i> ],
3d p. <i>égli RIMÁN-</i>   that he remain ;   <i>RIMÁNGANO,</i>   that they remain.
[ <i>GA,</i>

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

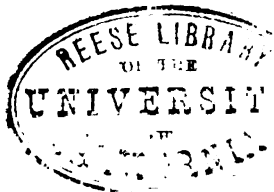
1st p. <i>rimarréi</i> ( <i>rimarría</i> ) [by con-   I should, would, <i>or</i> could remain ;
[traction for <i>rimaneréi</i> ( <i>rimane-</i>     <i>[or might remain.</i>
[ <i>ría</i> ]],

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .   . . . . .   <i>rimaniámo nói,</i>   let us remain ;
2d p. <i>rimáni tu,</i>   remain thou ;   <i>rimanéte vói,</i>   remain ye ;
3d p. <i>RIMÁNGA</i>   let him remain ;   <i>RIMÁNGANO</i>   let them remain.
[ <i>égli,</i>       <i>[églino,</i>

*Sapére.*

(Varied with *avére.*)



I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

<i>Sapére</i> ( <i>savére*</i> ),   to know.     <i>sapúto,</i>     known.
--

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>so,</i>   I know ;     <i>SAPPIÁMO,</i>   we know ;
2d p. <i>sái,</i>   thou knowest ;     <i>sapéte,</i>   you know ;
3d p. <i>sa</i> ( <i>sápe</i> ),   he knows ;     <i>sánno,</i>   they know.

\* This form, met with in Dante, Alamanni, and other poets, has become obsolete.

Singular.	3. — <i>Perfect.</i>		Plural.
1st p. <i>séppi</i> ,	I knew ;   thou knewest ;   he knew ;	<i>sapémmo</i> ,   <i>sapéste</i> ,   <i>séppero</i> ,	we knew ;   you knew ;   they knew.
2d p. <i>sapésti</i> ,			
3d p. <i>séppe</i> ,			

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *saprò* [by contraction for | I shall or will know.  
[*saperò*], |

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io sáppia*, | that I know, or may know.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *saprèi* (*sapría*) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could know ;  
[tion for *saperèi* (*sapería*)], | [or might know.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>SAPPIAMO</i> <i>vóí</i> ,	let us know ;		
2d p. <i>sáppi tu</i> ,				<i>SAPPIATE</i> <i>vóí</i> ,	know ye ;
3d p. <i>sáppia égli</i> ,					

The compounds of *sapère*, as *risapère*, 'to learn,' or 'to come to know'; follow the same irregularities.

*Sedère.*

(Varied with *avère*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Sedère* (*séggere*\*), | to sit down.

\* This verb, now become *obsolete*, is still used in many of the forms of the modern verb *sedère*.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

*sedéndo* (*seggéndo*), | sitting. || *sedúto*, | seated.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>siÉDO</i> , or [ <i>sÉGO</i> ( <i>séggi</i> )],	I sit ;	<i>sedíamo</i> or <i>seg-</i>	we sit ;
		[ <i>GIAMO</i> ( <i>sedé-</i>	
		[ <i>ino</i> ),	
2d p. <i>siÉDI</i> ,	thou sittest ;	<i>sedéte</i> ,	you sit ;
3d p. <i>siÉDE</i> ( <i>sé-</i>	he sits ;	<i>siÉDANO</i> , or <i>ség-</i>	they sit.
[ <i>de</i> ),		[ <i>GONO</i> ( <i>séggi-</i>	
		[ <i>no</i> ),	

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *sedéti* or *sedétti*, | I sat.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *sederò\** (*sedrò*), | I shall or will sit.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io siÉDA</i> , or [ <i>sÉGGA</i> ( <i>séggia</i> )],	that I sit, or may [may sit ;	<i>sedíamo</i> or <i>seg-</i>	that we sit ;
		[ <i>GIAMO</i> ,	
		<i>sedíate</i> ( <i>seggia-</i>	that you sit ;
		[ <i>te</i> ),	
2d p. <i>tu siÉDA</i> , or [ <i>sÉGGA</i> ( <i>séggia</i> [or <i>séggi</i> )],	that thou sit ;		
3d p. <i>egli siÉDA</i> , [or <i>sÉGGA</i> ],	that he sit ;	<i>siÉDANO</i> , or <i>ség-</i>	that they sit.
		[ <i>GANO</i> ( <i>séggia-</i>	
		[ <i>no</i> ),	

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *sederéti* (*sedréti*, *sedería*), | I should, would, or could sit ; or  
[might sit.

\* Mastrofini proposes *siederò*, and in the conditional *siederéti*; but this, which indeed would present the advantage of distinguishing these forms from the corresponding ones of the verb *sedare*, 'to appease,' has not been adopted by the generality of Italian writers.



## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>sedíamo</i> ( <i>seggiá-</i> [mo] <i>nóí,</i>	let us sit ;
2d p. <i>siÉDI tu,</i>	·it thou ;	<i>sedéte vóí,</i>	sit ye ;
3d p. <i>siÉDA,</i> or [ <i>sÉGGA égli,</i>	let him sit ;	<i>siÉDANO,</i> or <i>sÉG-</i> [ <i>GANO églino,</i>	let them sit.

*Sedére* is sometimes varied with the pronouns *mí,* *tí,* *si,* &c., and then it requires the auxiliary *éssere* ; as *mí siÉdo,* ‘ I sit (myself) ’ ; *tí séi sedúto,* ‘ thou hast sat (thyself) ’ ; &c.

The compounds of *sedére,* as *possedére,* ‘ to possess ’ ; *risedére,* ‘ to reside ’ ; *soprassedére,* ‘ to supersede ’ ; have the same irregularities.

*Tacére.*(Varied with *avére.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>Tacére,</i>	to be, or keep si- [lent.]	<i>taciúto,</i>	been silent.
----------------	-------------------------------	-----------------	--------------

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>tácio</i> ( <i>táccio</i> ),	I am silent.
--	--------------

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>tÁCQUI,</i>	I was silent ;	<i>tacémmo,</i>	we were silent ;
2d p. <i>tacésti,</i>	thou wast silent ;	<i>tacéste,</i>	you were silent ;
3d p. <i>tÁCQUE,</i>	he was silent ;	<i>tÁCQUERO,</i>	they were silent.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io tácia* (táccia), | that I be silent or may be silent.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . |  
2d p. *táci tu,* | be thou silent.

*Tacere* is sometimes varied with the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c., and then it requires the auxiliary *essere*; *mi tácio*, 'I keep silent'; *si è taciúto*, 'he has kept silent'; &c.

The compound of *tacere*, — *ritacere*, 'to become once more silent'; follows the same irregularities.

*Tenere.*

(Varied with *avere.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Tenere,* |to hold. || *tenúto,* |holden.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <b>TÉNGO</b>	I hold;	<i>tenjámo</i> (tegná-	we hold;
[(téno),		[mo),	
2d p. <b>TIÉNI</b> (té-	thou holdest;	<i>tenéte,</i>	you hold;
[gni),		<b>TÉNGONO,</b>	they hold.
3d p. <b>TIÉNE,</b>	he holds;		

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. ΤΈΝΝΙ,	I held ;	<i>tenémmo,</i>	we held ;
2d p. <i>tenésti,</i>	thou heldest ;	<i>tenéste,</i>	you held ;
3d p. ΤΈΝΝΕ,	he held ;	ΤΈΝΝΕΡΟ,	they held.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>terrò</i> [by contraction for [ <i>tenerò</i> ],	I shall or will hold.
---	-----------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío TÉΝΓΑ</i> [(téna),	that I hold or [may hold ;	<i>teníamo</i> (tegná- [no),	that we hold ;
2d p. <i>tu TÉΝΓΑ</i> ,	that thou hold ;	<i>teníate</i> (tegnáte),	that you hold ;
3d p. <i>égkí TÉΝΓΑ</i> [(téna),	that he hold ;	ΤΈΝΓΑΝΟ (tegná- [no),	that they hold.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>terréi</i> ( <i>terría</i> ) [by contrac- [tion for <i>teneréi</i> ( <i>tenería</i> )],	I should, would, or could hold ; or [might hold.
--	---

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . .	. . . .	<i>teníamo</i> (tegná- [no) <i>nói,</i>	let us hold ;
2d p. ΤΙΈΝΙ (té') [tu,	hold thou ;	<i>tenéte</i> <i>vói,</i>	hold ye ;
3d p. ΤΈΝΓΑ [(téna) <i>égkí,</i>	let him hold ;	ΤΈΝΓΑΝΟ (tegná- [no) <i>égkíno,</i>	let them hold.

*Tenére* is sometimes varied with the pronouns *mi, ti, si, &c.*, and then it requires the auxiliary *éssere*; as, *mi sóno tenáto*, 'I have holden or restrained myself'; &c.

The compounds of *tenere*, as *appartenere*, 'to belong'; *astenere*, 'to abstain'; *attenere*, 'to attain'; *contenere*, 'to contain,' 'to refrain'; *detenere*, 'to detain'; *mantenere*, 'to maintain'; *ottenere*, 'to obtain'; *rattenere*, 'to stop,' 'to restrain'; *sostenere*, 'to support,' 'to sustain'; &c. have the same irregularities.

*Valere.*

(Varied with either *avere* or *essere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Valere*, | to be worth, or | *valuto* (*valso*), | been worth.  
 [to avail.]

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>válgo</i> [( <i>váglio</i> ),	I am worth ;	<i>valiámo</i> ,	we are worth ;
2d p. <i>váli</i> ,	thou art worth ;	<i>valéte</i> ,	you are worth ;
3d p. <i>vále</i> ( <i>vál</i> ),	he is worth ;	<i>válgono</i> , or <i>vá-</i> [ <i>glióno</i> ],	they are worth.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>válsti</i> ,	I was worth ;	<i>valémmo</i> ,	we were worth ;
2d p. <i>valésti</i> ,	thou wast worth ;	<i>valéste</i> ,	you were worth ;
3d p. <i>válse</i> ,	he was worth ;	<i>válséro</i> ,	they were worth.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *varò* [by contraction for | I shall or will be worth.  
 [*valerò*],

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>so</i> VÁLGA,	that I be worth	<i>valiámo,</i>	that we be
[or VÁGLIA,	[or may be		[worth;
	[worth;		
2d p. <i>tu</i> VÁLGA,	that thou be	<i>valiáte,</i>	that you be
[or VÁGLIA,	[worth;		[worth;
3d p. <i>églé</i> VÁLGA,	that he be worth;	VÁLGANO, or VÁ-	that they be
[or VÁGLIA,		[GLIANO,	[worth.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>varréi</i> ( <i>varría</i> )	[by contrac-	I should, would, or could be worth;
[tion for <i>valeréi</i> ( <i>valería</i> ),		[or might be worth.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>valiámo nói,</i>	let us be worth;
2d p. <i>vák tu,</i>	be thou worth;	<i>valéte vói,</i>	be ye worth;
3d p. VÁLGA	let him be worth;	VÁLGANO, or VÁ-	let them be
[( <i>vágliá</i> ) <i>églé,</i>		[GLIANO <i>églíno,</i>	[worth.

The compounds of *valére*, as *disvalére*, 'to hurt'; *equiválére*, 'to be equivalent'; *invalére*, 'to lose worth or strength'; *preválére*, 'to prevail'; *rivalére*, 'to recover worth or strength'; have the same irregularities. Of the two forms of the *present*, however, that in *álgo* is better adapted to them; and *disválgo*, 'I hurt'; *equiválga*, 'let it be equivalent'; *inválgano*, 'that they lose strength'; &c., are oftener met with in books than *disváglio*, &c.

The poetical form *preválso*, 'prevailed,' of the *past participle* of *preválére*, has been used by good writers even in prose. *Invalére*, in the same *participle* has *inválso*, '[having] lost strength'; only.

*Vedere.*

(Varied with *avere.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

*Vedere,* | to see.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

*vedendo,* or *VEG-* | seeing. || *veduto (visto),* | seen.  
 [GÉNDÓ,]

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Flural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>vedo,</i> <i>VEG-</i>   I see ;	<i>vediamo,</i> or <i>VEG-</i>   we see ;
[GO, or <i>VÉGGIO,</i>	[GIAMO,
2d p. <i>vedi (vé'),</i>   thou seest ;	<i>vedete,</i>   you see ;
3d p. <i>vede,</i>   he sees ;	<i>vedono,</i> <i>VEGGO-</i>   they see.
	[NO, or <i>VÉG-</i>
	[GIONO,

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>vidi (vid-</i>   I saw ;	<i>vedemmo,</i>   we saw ;
[di),	
2d p. <i>vedesti,</i>   thou sawest ;	<i>vedeste,</i>   you saw ;
3d p. <i>vide,</i>   he saw ;	<i>videro (vider),</i>   they saw.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *vedrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will see.  
 [vederò],

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io veda,</i>   that I see or may	<i>vediamo,</i> or <i>VEG-</i>   that we see ;
[ <i>VÉGGA,</i> or   [see ;	[GIAMO,
[ <i>VÉGGIA,</i>	
2d p. <i>tu veda,</i>   that thou see ;	<i>vediate,</i> or <i>VEG-</i>   that you see ;
[ <i>VÉGGA,</i> or	[GIATE,
[ <i>VÉGGIA,</i>	
3d p. <i>egli veda,</i>   that he see ;	<i>vedano,</i> <i>VEGGA-</i>   that they see.
[ <i>VÉGGA,</i> or	[NO, or <i>VÉG-</i>
[ <i>VÉGGIA,</i>	[GIANO,

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Plural.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. *vedréi* (*vedría*) [by contraction for *vederéi* (*vedería*)], | I should, would, or could see; or [might see.]

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>vediamo</i> , or <i>vég-</i>	let us see;
		[GIAMO <i>nói</i> ,	
2d p. <i>vedi</i> ( <i>vé</i> ) <i>tu</i> ,	see thou;	<i>vedete vói</i> ,	see ye;
3d p. <i>véda</i> , <i>vég-</i>	let him see;	<i>védano</i> , <i>végga-</i>	let them see.
[ <i>ga</i> , or <i>véggia</i>		[ <i>no</i> , or <i>vég-</i>	
[ <i>égi</i> ,		[ <i>giano églino</i> ,	

The compounds of *vedere*, as *antivedere*, 'to foresee'; *avvedere*, 'to perceive'; *divedere*, 'to be sensible of'; *prevedere*, 'to foresee'; *provvedere*, 'to provide'; *ravvedere*, 'to amend'; *rivedere*, 'to see again'; *travedere*, 'to see one thing for another'; &c., have the same irregularities.

*Antivedere*, *avvedere*, *divedere*, *travedere*, in the past participle make only *antivedúto*, 'foreseen'; *avvedúto*, 'perceived'; *divedúto*, 'been sensible of'; *travedúto*, '[having] seen one thing for another'; and *divedere*, *prevedere*, *provvedere*, *ravvedere*, *travedere*, in the future and conditional are never contracted, and make *divederò*, 'I will be sensible of'; *prevederéi*, 'I would foresee'; &c.

*Volére.*(Varied with *avére.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>Volére</i> ,	(to wish, to will,	<i>volúto</i> ,	been willing.
	[or to be willing.]		

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. VÓGLIO, or [vó',	I am willing;	VOGLIÁMO (volé- [mo),	we are willing;
2d p. VUÓI (vuó- [li, vuó'),	thou art willing;	voléte,	you are willing;
3d p. VUÓLE (vó- [le),	he is willing;	VÓGLIONO (vón- [no, von),	they are willing.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. VÓLLI [(vólsi*),	I was willing;	volémmo,	we were willing;
2d p. volésti,	thou wast wil- [ling;	voléste,	you were wil- [ling;
3d p. VÓLLE,	he was willing;	VÓLLERO,	they were wil- [ling.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. vorrò {by contraction for  
[volerò], | I shall or will be willing.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. io VÓGLIA, | that I be willing or may  
[be willing.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. vorréi (vorría) [by contrac-  
[tion for voleréi (volería)†], | I should, would, or could be wil-  
[ling; or might be willing.

\* *Vólsi*, as well as *vólse* and *vólsero*, has become obsolete; and the few examples we find in Dante, Ariosto, Berni, and Tasso, ought not to authorize the use of these forms, which properly belong to the perfect of *vólgere*, 'to turn'; and not of *vólere*, 'to be willing.'

† To distinguish it from the future of the verb *vólare*, 'to fly.'

‡ To distinguish them from the corresponding forms of *vólare*, 'to fly.'



## V. IMPERATIVE.\*

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	VOGLIAMO noi,	let us be willing ;
2d p. VOGLI tu,	be thou willing ;	VOGLIATE voi,	be ye willing ;
3d p. VOGLIA	let him be wil-	VOGLIANO	let them be wil-
[égli,]	[ling ;]	[églino,]	[ling.]

The compounds of *volere*, as *disvolere*, 'to desire the contrary of what one has wished'; *rivolere*, 'to wish again,' or 'to be once more willing'; have the same irregularities.

## EXAMPLES.

*E CADDI, còme còrpo mòrto* And I fell, as a dead body falls.  
*CÀDE.* (Dant. Inf. 5.)

*Il timòre, mòlto più che la fòr-* Fear dissuaded him a great deal  
*za dèlle ragióni, lo DISSUÀSE.* more than the power of reason.  
 (Fra. Gior.)

*Là dòve più MI DÓLSE [dólsi]* Others grieve for what I most  
*àltri SI DUÓLE, e DOLÉNDO addol-* grieved, and grieving they assuage  
*cisce il mío dolóre.* (Petr. c. 22.) my grief.

*Di niúna còsa duràr DOBBIÀ-* We ought to endure nothing  
*MO, la quále àbbia fòrza d' offèn-* that has the power of offending.  
*dere.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

*Quèsti è colui, che GIÀCQUE* This one is he, who lay upon  
*sòpra 'l pètto — Del nòstro Pelli-* the bosom of our Pelican.  
*cáno.* (Dant. Par. 25.)

\* It has been asserted that *volere* has no imperative, but the slightest acquaintance with our classic writers might convince any one to the contrary :

VOGLITENS ventr con mèco. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 10.) Be thou willing to come with me.

VOGLI avère carità. (Gr. S. Glr. 12.) Have charity.

*Or ti PIACCIA gradír la súa  
venúta. (Dant. Purg. 1.)*

Now may his coming please thee.

*Non so, se a vói quéllo se ne  
FARRÀ, che a me ne FARRÉBBE.  
(Bocc. Introd.)*

I do not know, whether it will appear to you so as it would appear to me.

*Così velóci séguono i subí vó-  
mi, — Per simigliársi al Púnto  
quánto PÓNNO, — E PÓSSON,  
quánto a vedér son sublími.  
(Dant. Par. 28.)*

Thus swift follow their hoops, approaching in likeness to the Point as near as they can; and they can the more, the loftier their vision is.

*Io non morí', e non RIMÁSI  
vívó. (Dant. Inf. 34.)*

I did not die, neither remained I alive.

*O'nde, ben SÉPPE che dírsi  
Dánte, quándo, nel Cánto Décimo  
dell' Infèrno, indússe Farináta  
a dírgli quélle paróle. (Salviat.  
Avvert. 1. 2. 12.)*

Therefore, Dante knew well what he said, when, in the Tenth Canto of the Inferno, he induced Farinata to say to him those words.

*Chè SEGGÉNDÓ in píume in  
fáma non si vién, nè sótto cóltre.  
(Dant. Inf. 24.)*

For neither by reposing on feathers, nor under a coverlet, is fame won.

*E giammái pói la mía língua  
non TÁCQUE, — Méntre potéo.  
(Petr. c. 4.)*

And never afterwards was my tongue silent, whilst it could [speak].

*Mórto che ébbero Costantíno  
lóro fratéllo, lóro dúe TÈNNERO  
l' impèrio. (Petr. Uom. ill.)*

After they had killed Constantine their brother, both of them held the empire for themselves.

*Nè l' un mi VARRÉBBE, nè  
P' áltro VÓGLIO che mi VÁGLIA.  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)*

Neither the one could, nor I wish that the other should, avail me.

*Nói eravám partíti già da éllo  
— Ch' i' vídi dúo ghiacciáti in  
úna búca. (Dant. Inf. 32.)*

We had now left him, when I saw two spirits by the ice pent in one hollow.

*Iddío VÓLLE, in quéstá víta,  
priváre nói dí quéstá lícce.  
(Dant. Conv. 114.)*

God wished to deprive us, in this life, of this light.

## EXERCISE XIX.

- I. 1.— To fall. *Cadére.* 4.— lying down. *giacére.* 7.— remained. *rimanére.*
- II. 1.— I grieve, thou art able, he sits, we seem,  
*dolére,* *potére,* *sedére,* *parére,*  
 you owe, they know. 2.— I dissuaded, thou heldest,  
*dovére,* *sapére.* *dissuadére,* *tenére,*  
 he wished, we pleased, you saw, they were worth.  
*volére,* *piacére,* *vedére,* *valére.*
- 3.— I fell again, thou pleasedst, he was subject, we  
*ricadére,* *compiacére,* *soggiacére,* *ri-*  
 learned, they sustained. — I prevailed, thou maintainedst,  
*sapére,* *sostenére.* *prevalére,* *mantenére,*  
 he was silent again, we declined, you foresaw, they  
*ritacére,* *decadére,* *antivedére,* *ri-*  
 wished again. — I condoled, thou possessedst, he ab-  
*volére.* *condolére,* *possedére,* *aste-*  
 stained, we provided, you hurt, they super-  
*nére,* *provedére,* *disvalére,* *soprasse-*  
 seded. 4.— I will grieve, thou wilt seem, he will be  
*dére.* *dolére,* *parére,* *poté-*  
 able, we will remain, you will know, they will hold.  
*re,* *rimanére,* *sapére,* *tenére.*
- III. 1.— I may entertain, thou mayest lose strength, he  
*trattenére,* *ivalére,* *ra-*  
 may amend, we may displease, you may reside, they  
*vedére,* *dispiacére,* *risedére,* *con-*  
 may contain. 2.— I might foresee, thou mightest please  
*tenére.* *antivedére,* *ripiac-*  
 again, he might see again, we might preside, you might  
*re,* *rivedére,* *presedére,* *appar-*  
 belong, they might hate. — IV. 1.— I should grieve  
*tenére,* *malvedére.* *ridolé-*  
 again, thou wouldst come to know, he would attain,  
*re,* *risapére,* *attenére,*

we would be sensible of, you would provide, they would  
*divedére,* *provedére,* *ra-*  
*vedére.* — V. — Know thou, let him seem, let us see,  
*sapére,* *parére,* *vedére,*  
 please ye, let them be able.  
*piactére,* *potére.*

*Variation of the Irregular Verbs in ěre (short).*

There are about four hundred verbs in ěre (*short*), that are irregular; but, as their irregularity, generally, depends on the letters which precede that termination, they may be reduced to the following *forty-one*; viz.

Verbs ending in

<i>ěre,</i> preceded by a vowel; as, <i>trÁERE,</i>	to draw.	(Class 4th.*)
<i>běre,</i>	“ <i>assórbERE,</i>	to absorb. (2d.)
<i>cěre,</i> preceded by	{ <i>ó;</i> “ <i>cuócERE,</i>	to cook.
	{ <i>ú;</i> “ <i>addúCERE,</i>	to allege. (4th.)
	{ <i>n;</i> “ <i>víncERE,</i>	to conquer. (2d.)
	{ <i>r;</i> “ <i>tórcERE,</i>	to twist. (2d.)
<i>děre,</i> preceded by	{ <i>á;</i> “ <i>invÁDERE,</i>	to invade.
	{ <i>é;</i> “ <i>lédERE,</i>	to offend.
	{ <i>í;</i> “ <i>rídERE,</i>	to laugh.
	{ <i>ó;</i> “ <i>róDERE,</i>	to gnaw.
	{ <i>ú;</i> “ <i>allúDERE,</i>	to allude.
	{ <i>r;</i> “ <i>árdERE,</i>	to burn. (1st.)
	{ <i>én;</i> “ <i>accéndERE,</i>	to kindle.
	{ <i>ín;</i> “ <i>scíndERE,</i>	to cut asunder. (3d.)
	{ <i>ón;</i> “ <i>rispóndERE,</i>	to answer. (5th.)
	{ <i>iú;</i> “ <i>chiúDERE,</i>	to shut. (1st.)
	{ <i>ié;</i> “ <i>chiédERE,</i>	to ask. (5th.)
{ <i>cé;</i> “ <i>concédERE,</i>	to grant. (3d.)	
<i>gěre,</i> preceded by	{ <i>í;</i> “ <i>dirígERE,</i>	to direct. (4th.)
	{ <i>g;</i> “ <i>léggERE,</i>	to read. (2d.)
	{ <i>l;</i> “ <i>vólgERE,</i>	to turn. (2d.)
	{ <i>n;</i> “ <i>giúngERE,</i>	to arrive. (1st.)
	{ <i>ár;</i> “ <i>spárgERE,</i>	to spread. (1st.)
	{ <i>ér;</i> “ <i>mérgERE,</i>	to dive. (2d.)
{ <i>ór;</i> “ <i>púrgERE,</i>	to offer. (2d.)	
{ <i>úg;</i> “ <i>distrúggERE,</i>	to destroy. (4th.)	

\* For the convenience of learners, and the purpose of rendering more simple the variation of these verbs, they have been arranged in *classes*. To facilitate reference, we here indicate the *class* in which they will be found.

<i>glière,</i>	as, <i>cógliERE,</i>	to gather.	} (2d.)
<i>gnère,</i>	" <i>spégnERE,</i>	to extinguish.	
<i>guère,</i>	" <i>distínguERE,</i>	to distinguish.	
<i>lère,</i>	" <i>svèllERE,</i>	to root up.	} (3d.)
<i>mère,</i> preceded by { <i>í;</i>	" <i>esprímERE,</i>	to express.	
	{ <i>ú;</i>	" <i>assúMERE,</i>	to assume. (2d.)
<i>nère,</i>	" <i>pónERE,</i>	to put. (5th.)	
<i>rère,</i>	" <i>córrERE,</i>	to run. (1st.)	
<i>lère,</i> preceded by { <i>ó;</i>	" <i>scuóTERE,</i>	to shake. } (3d.)	
	{ <i>ú;</i>	" <i>discúTERE,</i>	to discuss. } (1st.)
	{ <i>r;</i>	" <i>riçÉRTERE,</i>	to return. (3d.)
	{ <i>t;</i>	" <i>connÉTTERE,</i>	to connect. (4th.)
<i>sère,</i> preceded by { <i>í;</i>	" <i>scríVERE,</i>	to write. (3d.)	
	{ <i>ó;</i>	" <i>muóVERE,</i>	to move. (2d.)
	{ <i>l;</i>	" <i>vóLVERE,</i>	to turn.

These verbs are chiefly irregular in the *perfect* of the *indicative*, which ends in *si* or *ssi*; and in the *past participle*, which ends in *so* or *sso*, in *to* or *tto*, or in *sto*. We shall, therefore, first classify them according to the termination of their *perfect* and *participle*, and then we shall vary one of each class, and such of the same class as may be otherwise irregular, and note, by way of exceptions, those verbs which depart in any respect from their paradigm.

[The letters *a, e, ae*, between parentheses, prefixed to the following verbs, denote the auxiliary with which they are varied:—(a), *avere*; (e), *essere*; (ae), *either avere or essere*.]

## FIRST CLASS.

Infinitive.	Perfect.	Participle.	Infinitive.	Perfect.	Participle.
<i>á -dere,</i>	} ...-si, ...-so; ... as,	}	(a) <i>invÁ-DERE,</i>	<i>invá-si,</i>	<i>invá-so.</i>
<i>é -dere,</i>			(a) <i>lé-DERE,</i>	<i>lé-si,</i>	<i>lé-so.</i>
<i>í -dere,</i>			(a) <i>rí-DERE,</i>	<i>rí-si,</i>	<i>rí-so.</i>
<i>ó -dere,</i>			(a) <i>ró-DERE,</i>	<i>ró-si,</i>	<i>ró-so.</i>
<i>ú -dere,</i>			(a) <i>allú-DERE,</i>	<i>allú-si,</i>	<i>allú-so.</i>
<i>r -dere,</i>			(ae) <i>ár-DERE,</i>	<i>ár-si,</i>	<i>ár-so.</i>
<i>én -dere,</i>			(a) <i>accén-DERE,</i>	<i>accé-si,</i>	<i>accé-so.</i>
<i>iú -dere,</i>			(a) <i>chiú-DERE,</i>	<i>chiú-si,</i>	<i>chiú-so.</i>
<i>ár -gere,</i>			(a) <i>spár-GERE,</i>	<i>spár-si,</i>	<i>spár-so.</i>
<i>ér -gere,</i>			(ae) <i>mér-GERE,</i>	<i>mér-si,</i>	<i>mér-so.</i>
<i>-rere,</i>	(ae) <i>cór-RERE,</i>	<i>cór-si,</i>	<i>cór-so.</i>		
<i>r -tere,</i>	(e) <i>riçÉR-TERE,</i>	<i>riçér-si,</i>	<i>riçér-so.</i>		

SECOND CLASS.

Infinitive.	Perfect.	Participle.	Infinitive.	Perfect.	Participle.
-bere,			(ae) <i>assór-BERE,</i>	<i>assór-SI,</i>	<i>assór-TO.</i>
n -cere,	} ...-si, ...-to; ...as,	}	(a) <i>vin-CERE,</i>	<i>vin-SI,</i>	<i>vin-TO.</i>
r -cere,			(a) <i>tór-CERE,</i>	<i>tór-SI,</i>	<i>tór-TO.</i>
l -gere,			(a) <i>vól-GERE,</i>	<i>vól-SI,</i>	<i>vól-TO.</i>
n -gere,			(e) <i>giún-GERE,</i>	<i>giún-SI,</i>	<i>giún-TO.</i>
ör -gere,			(a) <i>pór-GERE,</i>	<i>pór-SI,</i>	<i>pór-TO.</i>
-gliere,			(a) <i>có-GLIERE,</i>	<i>cól-SI,</i>	<i>cól-TO.</i>
-gnere,			(a) <i>spé-GNERE,</i>	<i>spén-SI,</i>	<i>spén-TO.</i>
-guere,			(ae) <i>distín-GUERE,</i>	<i>distín-SI,</i>	<i>distín-TO.</i>
-lere,			(a) <i>svél-LERE,</i>	<i>svél-SI,</i>	<i>svél-TO.</i>
ú -mere,			(a) <i>assú-MERE,</i>	<i>assún-SI,</i>	<i>assún-TO.</i>
l -vere,			(a) <i>vól-VERE,</i>	<i>vól-SI,</i>	<i>vól-TO.</i>

THIRD CLASS.

<i>cé-dere,</i>	} ...-ssi, ...-sso; ...as,	}	(a) <i>concé-DERE,</i>	<i>concé-SSI,</i>	<i>concé-SSO.</i>
<i>ín-dere,</i>			(a) <i>scín-DERE,</i>	<i>scí-SSI,</i>	<i>scí-SSO.</i>
i -mere,			(a) <i>esprí-MERE,</i>	<i>espré-SSI,</i>	<i>espré-SSO.</i>
ó -lere,			(a) <i>scuó-TERE,</i>	<i>scó-SSI,</i>	<i>scó-SSO.</i>
ú -lere,			(a) <i>discú-TERE,</i>	<i>discú-SSI,</i>	<i>discú-SSO.</i>
t -lere,			(a) <i>connét-TERE,</i>	<i>conné-SSI,</i>	<i>conné-SSO.</i>
ó -vere,			(a) <i>muó-VERE,</i>	<i>mó-SSI,</i>	<i>mó-SSO.</i>

FOURTH CLASS.

ó -cere,	} ...-ssi, ...-tto; ...as,	}	(a) <i>cuó-CERE,</i>	<i>có-SSI,</i>	<i>có-TTO.</i>
ú -cere,			(a) <i>addú-CERE,</i>	<i>addú-SSI,</i>	<i>addú-TTO.</i>
i -gere,			(a) <i>diri-GERE,</i>	<i>diré-SSI,</i>	<i>diré-TTO.</i>
g -gere,			(a) <i>lég-GERE,</i>	<i>lé-SSI,</i>	<i>lé-TTO.</i>
ug -gere,			(a) <i>distrú-G-GERE,</i>	<i>distrú-SSI,</i>	<i>distrú-TTO.</i>
i -vere,			(a) <i>scrí-VERE,</i>	<i>scrí-SSI,</i>	<i>scrí-TTO.</i>
-cre,			(a) <i>trá-ERE,</i>	<i>trá-SSI,</i>	<i>trá-TTO.</i>

FIFTH CLASS.

<i>ón-dere,</i>	} ...-si, ...-sto; ...as,	}	(a) <i>rispón-DERE,</i>	<i>rispó-SI,</i>	<i>rispó-STO.</i>
<i>ít-dere,</i>			(a) <i>chié-DERE,</i>	<i>chié-SI,</i>	<i>chié-STO.</i>
-nere,			(a) <i>pó-NERE,</i>	<i>pó-SI,</i>	<i>pó-STO.</i>

*Variation of the Verb Invádere.*

(Paradigm of the *First Class* of the verbs in  
*ěre* (short).)

I. INFINITIVE.		PARTICIPLE.	
<i>Invá-DVRE,</i>	to invade.	<i>invá-so,</i>	invaded.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>invá-si,</i>	I invaded;	<i>invadémmo,</i>	we invaded;
2d p. <i>inváděsti,</i>	thou invadedst;	<i>inváděste,</i>	you invaded;
3d p. <i>invá-se,</i>	he invaded;	<i>invá-sero,</i>	they invaded.

The verbs *evádere*, ‘to evade’; — *lédere*, ‘to offend’; — *ridere*, ‘to laugh’; *divídere*, ‘to divide’; *conquídere*, ‘to conquer’; *intradere*, ‘to temper’; *uccídere*, ‘to kill’; — *ródere*, ‘to gnaw’; — *allúdere*, ‘to allude’; *delúdere*, ‘to delude’; *illúdere*, ‘to illude’; — *árdere*, ‘to burn’; *mórdere*, ‘to bite’; — *accéndere*, ‘to kindle’; *incéndere*, ‘to set on fire’; *offéndere*, ‘to offend’; *scéndere*, ‘to descend’; *spéndere*, ‘to spend’; *téndere*, ‘to stretch’; *vilipéndere*, ‘to vilify’; — *chiúdere*, ‘to shut’; — *spárgere*, ‘to spread’; — *mérgere*, ‘to sink’; *térgere*, ‘to wipe’; *aspérgere*, ‘to sprinkle’; — *córrere*, ‘to run’; — *ruértere*, ‘to turn’; and their compounds, have the same irregularities.

The compounds of *córrere*, — *occórrere*, ‘to occur’; *soccórrere*, ‘to succour’; in the *future* and the *conditional* are often contracted; and make *accorrá*, ‘it will occur’; *soccorrébbe*, ‘he would succour.’

*Diféndere*, ‘to defend’; *pérdere*, ‘to lose’; and *réndere*, ‘to render,’ are both *regular* and *irregular*; and make in the *perfect*, *difenděbi* or *difěsi*, ‘I defended’; and in the *participle*, *difendúto* or *difěso*, ‘defended’; &c.

*Féndere*, 'to cleave'; is both *regular* and *irregular*; and makes, in the *perfect*, *fendéi* or *féssi*, 'I cleaved'; and in the *participle*, *fendúto* and *féssu*, 'cleaved.'

*Préndere*, 'to take'; and *ródere*, 'to shave'; are both *regular* and *irregular* in the *perfect*; but in the *participle* are *irregular* only, and make *présu*, 'taken'; and *rásu*, 'shaven.'

The verbs *péndere*, 'to hang'; *spléndere*, 'to glitter'; *véndere*, 'to sell'; *stridere*,\* 'to shriek'; and their compounds, are *regular*, and are varied like *téssere*.

### Variation of the Verb Assórbere.

(Paradigm of the *Second Class* of the verbs in *ère* (*short*).)

#### I. INFINITIVE.

#### PARTICIPLE.

*Assór-BERE*, |to absorb. || *assór-TO*, |absorbed.

#### II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

#### 3. — Perfect.

1st p. <i>assór-si</i> ,	I absorbed;	<i>assorbémmo</i> ,	we absorbed;
2d p. <i>assorbésti</i> ,	thou absorbedst;	<i>assorbéste</i> ,	you absorbed;
3d p. <i>assór-se</i> ,	he absorbed;	<i>assór-sero</i> ,	they absorbed.

Verbs ending in *glière*, *gnère*, and *lère*, besides the above, have also other irregularities, as will be seen by the following Paradigms:

\* Alfonso Varano has written *strées*, 'he shrieked'; and *strésere*, 'they shrieked.'



*Cogliere.*(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *glière.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>CÓGLIERE</i> , or [ <i>CÓRRE</i> (cor),	to gather.	<i>CÓLTO</i> ,	[gathered.
---	------------	----------------	------------

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>cóglio</i> , or [ <i>CÓLGO</i> ,	I gather or am [gathering ;	<i>cogliámo</i> ,	[we gather ;
2d p. <i>cógli</i> ,	thou gatherest ;	<i>cogliéte</i> ,	[you gather ;
3d p. <i>cóglie</i> ,	he gathers ;	<i>cógliono</i> , or <i>CÓL-</i> [ <i>GONO</i> ,	[they gather.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>CÓLSI</i> (co- [ <i>gliéi</i> ),	I gathered ;	<i>cogliémmo</i> ,	[we gathered ;
2d p. <i>cogliésti</i> ,	thou gatheredst ;	<i>cogliéste</i> ,	[you gathered ;
3d p. <i>CÓLSÈ</i> (co- [ <i>gliè</i> , <i>cogliéte</i> ),	he gathered ;	<i>CÓLSERO</i> (coglié- [ <i>rono</i> , <i>cogliéte-</i> [ <i>ro</i> ),	[they gathered.

4. — *Future.*1st p. *COGLIERÒ*, or *CORRÒ*, | I shall or will gather.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>to cógliá</i> , [or <i>CÓLGA</i> ,	that I gather or [may gather ;	<i>cogliámo</i> ,	[that we gather ;
2d p. <i>tu cógliá</i> , [or <i>CÓLGA</i> (cogli [or <i>cólghi</i> ),	that thou gather ;	<i>cogliáte</i> ,	[that you gather ;
3d p. <i>égli cógliá</i> , [or <i>CÓLGA</i> ,	that he gather ;	<i>cógliono</i> , or <i>CÓL-</i> [ <i>GANO</i> ,	[that they gather.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *COGLIEREÍ*, or *CORRÉI* (co- | I should, would, or could gather ;  
[gliería, or corría), | [or might gather.

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1st p.	<i>cógli</i> ( <i>có'</i> )	gather thou ;	<i>coglitámo</i> <i>nóí</i> ,	let us gather ;
2d p.	<i>cógli</i> [ <i>tu</i> ,		<i>cogliéte</i> <i>vóí</i> ,	gather ye ;
3d p.	<i>cógliá</i> , [ <i>or</i>	let him gather ;	<i>cógliano</i> , or <i>cól-</i>	let them gather.
	[ <i>CÓLGA</i> <i>égli</i> ,		[ <i>GANÓ</i> <i>églino</i> ,	

*Spégnere.*

(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *gnère.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*SPÉGNERE*, or | to extinguish. || *spénto*, | extinguished.  
[*spégnere*,

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p.	<i>spégnó</i> , or   I extinguish or [ <i>spéngo</i> .   [am extinguish-	<i>spégnitámo</i> ,	we extinguish ;
2d p.	<i>spégni</i> ,   thou extinguish-	<i>spégnéte</i> ,	you extinguish ;
3d p.	<i>spégne</i> ,   he extinguishes ;	<i>spégnono</i> , or [ <i>spéngono</i> ,	they extinguish.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *spégnst*, | I extinguished.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>io spégna</i> , [or <i>spénga</i> ,	that I extinguish, [or may extin- guish ;	<i>spégnámo</i> ,	that we extin- [guish ;
2d p. <i>tu spégna</i> , [or <i>spénga</i> [( <i>spégui</i> ),	that thou extin- [guish ;	<i>spégnáte</i> ,	that you extin- [guish ;
3d p. <i>egli spégna</i> , [or <i>spénga</i> ,	that he extin- [guish ;	<i>spégnano</i> or [ <i>spéngano</i> ,	that they extin- [guish.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>spégnámo vói</i> ,	let us extinguish ;
2d p. <i>spégni tu</i> ,	extinguish thou ;	<i>spégnéte vói</i> ,	extinguish ye ;
3d p. <i>spégna</i> , or [ <i>spénga egli</i> ,	let him extin- [guish ;	<i>spégnano</i> , or [ <i>spéngano</i> [ <i>églino</i> ,	let them extin- [guish.

*Svellere.*(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *lère.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Svellere*, [to root up. || *svéiro*, [rooted up.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>svéilo</i> , or [ <i>svéilo</i> ,	I root up ;	<i>svéllámo</i> ,	we root up ;
2d p. <i>svélli</i> ,	thou rootest up ;	<i>svélléte</i> ,	you root up ;
3d p. <i>svéllé</i> ,	he roots up ;	<i>svéllono</i> , or <i>svél-</i> [ <i>gono</i> ,	they root up.

## 3. — Perfect.

1st p. *svélsz*, | I rooted up.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. <i>io svella</i> ,	that I root up, or	<i>svelliámo</i> ,	that we root up ;
[or <i>svéla</i> Δ,	[may root up ;		
2d p. <i>tu svella</i> , or	that thou root up ;	<i>svellidte</i> ,	that you root up ;
[ <i>svéla</i> Δ ( <i>svélli</i> ,			
[or <i>svélgghi</i> ),			
3d p. <i>egli svella</i> ,	that he root up ;	<i>svéllano</i> , or <i>svél-</i>	that they root up.
[or <i>svélgA</i> ),		[ <i>GA</i> NO,	

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .		<i>svelliámo nói</i> ,	let us root up ;
2d p. <i>svélli tu</i> ,	root up thou ;	<i>svelléte vói</i> ,	root ye up ;
3d p. <i>svélla</i> , or	let him root up ;	<i>svéllano</i> , or <i>svél-</i>	let them root up.
[ <i>svélgA églí</i> ,		[ <i>GA</i> NO <i>églino</i> ,	

The compounds of *assórbere*, 'to absorb'; *cógliere*, 'to gather'; and the verbs *víncere*, 'to conquer'; — *tórcere*, 'to twist'; — *vólgere*, 'to turn'; *rifúlgere*, 'to shine'; — *giúngere*, 'to arrive'; *múngere*, 'to milk'; *púngere*, 'to prick'; *úngere*, 'to anoint'; — *piángere*, 'to weep'; *frángere*, 'to break'; — *cingere*, 'to gird'; *figgere*, 'to fain'; *pingere*, 'to paint'; *spingere*, 'to push'; *tingere*, 'to tinge'; — *pórgere*, 'to offer'; *accórgere*, 'to perceive'; *sórgere*, 'to rise'; — *scégliere*, 'to choose'; *sciógliere*, 'to untie'; *tógliere*, 'to take away'; — *distíngere*, 'to distinguish'; *estíngere*, 'to extinguish'; — *avéllere*, 'to pull by force'; *divéllere*, 'to pluck up'; — *assúmere*, 'to assume'; — *vólvere*, 'to turn'; and their compounds, have the same irregularities.

*Rifúlgere* has no participle.

*Sórgere* has been by poets changed into *súrgere*, and so throughout its inflexions: — *súrsi*, 'I rose'; *súrto*, 'risen'; &c.

*Stríngere*, 'to bind'; and its compounds, as *astríngere*, 'to constrain'; &c., in the participle makes *strétto*, 'bound'; *astrétto*, 'constrained'; &c.

*Espellere*, 'to expel'; *impellere*, 'to impel'; *repellere*, 'to repel'; in the *perfect* make *espúlsi*, 'I expelled'; *impúlsi*, 'I impelled'; *repúlsi*, 'I repelled'; and in the *participle*, *espúlso*, 'expelled'; *impúlso*, 'impelled'; *repúlso*, 'repelled.'

*Involvere*, 'to involve'; and *devolvere*, 'to devolve'; in the *participle* make *involúto*, 'involved'; *devolúto*, 'devolved.'

*Presumere*, 'to presume'; and *riassumere*, 'to re-assume'; *assolvere*, 'to absolve'; *dissolvere*, 'to dissolve'; and *risolvere*, 'to resolve'; in the *perfect* are both *regular* and *irregular*; and make *presumí* or *presúnsi*, 'I presumed'; *assolví* or *assóltsi*, 'I absolved'; &c.

*Assolvere*, *dissolvere*, and *risolvere* in the *participle* make, *assolúto*, 'absolved'; *dissolúto*, 'dissolved'; *risolúto*, 'resolved.'

The verb *solvere*, 'to untie,' 'to solve,' is *regular*, and is varied like *tessere*.

### Variation of the Verb *Concedere*.

(Paradigm of the *Third Class* of the verbs in *ĕre* (*short*).)

#### I. INFINITIVE.

*ConcedERE*, |to grant.

#### PARTICIPLE.

|| *conced-ssO*, |granted.

#### II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

#### 3. — *Perfect*.

1st p. *conced-ssi*, |I granted;

2d p. *conced-esti*, |thou grantedst;

3d p. *conced-essE*, |he granted;

|| *conced-ssimo*,

|| *conced-este*,

|| *conced-ssero*,

|we granted;

|you granted;

|they granted.

The verbs *scindere*, 'to cut asunder'; — *esprimere*, 'to express'; — *scuotere*, 'to shake'; *percuotere*, 'to

\* For this *participle* we, generally, substitute *dissolúto*, a corresponding form of the verb *dissolĕre*, 'to dissolve'; to distinguish it from the word *dissolĕre*, 'dissolute.'

strike'; — *discútere*, 'to discuss'; *concútere*, 'to shake'; — *connétere*, 'to connect'; — *muóvere*, 'to move'; and their compounds have the same irregularities.

*Redímere*, 'to redeem'; in the *perfect* makes *redénsi*, 'I redeemed'; and in the *participle*, *redénto*, 'redeemed.'

*Méttere*, 'to put'; and its compounds *amméttere*, 'to admit'; *comméttere*, 'to commit'; &c., in the *perfect* make *mísi*, 'I put'; *ammi-si*, 'I admitted'; &c.

*Concédere*, 'to grant'; *intercédere*, 'to intercede'; *precédere*, 'to precede'; and *succédere*, 'to succeed,' are both *regular* and *irregular*, and make, in the *perfect*, *concéssi* or *concedéi*, 'I granted'; and in the *participle*, *concéssó* or *concedúto*, 'granted'; &c.

*Connétere*, signifying 'to reason,' is *regular*, and makes, in the *perfect*, *connettéi*, 'I reasoned'; and in the *participle*, *connettúto*, 'reasoned.'

The verbs *cédere*, 'to yield'; *accédere*, 'to accede'; *eccédere*, 'to exceed'; *procédere*,\* 'to proceed'; — *prescindere*, 'to prescind'; — *prémere*, 'to press'; *sprémere*, 'to squeeze'; — *rifléttere*, 'to reflect'; and *báttere*, 'to beat'; and its compounds, are *regular*, and are varied like *téssere*.

*Rifléttere*, when applied to 'light,' 'sound,' &c., in the *participle* makes *rifléssó*, 'reflected.'

### Variation of the Verb *Cuócere*.

(Paradigm of the *Fourth Class* of the verbs ending in *ere* (*short*).)

I. INFINITIVE.		PARTICIPLE.	
<i>Cuó-CERE</i> ,	to cook.	<i>có-TTO</i> ,	cooked.

\* Of this verb, Castiglione has used *proceássi*, 'he proceeded.'

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>có-ssi</i> ,	I cooked ;	<i>cocímmo</i> ,	we cooked ;
2d p. <i>cocésti</i> ,	thou cookedst ;	<i>cocéste</i> ,	you cooked ;
3d p. <i>có-ssæ</i> ,	he cooked ;	<i>có-ssero</i> ,	they cooked.

*Adducere.*(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *úcere*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>AddÚCERE</i> , or	to allege.	<i>addóTTO</i> ,	alleged.
[ <i>addÚRRE</i> ,			

## II. INDICATIVE.

3. — *Perfect.*1st p. *addússi*, | I alleged.4. — *Future.*1st p. *addurrò* [by contraction | I shall or will allege.  
[for *adducerò*],

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *addurréi* (*addurría*) [by | I should, would, or could allege ; or  
[contraction for *adduceréi* (*ad-* | [might allege.  
[*ducería*)],

*Rilúcere*, 'to shine'; and *tralúcere*, 'to shine through'; are never contracted in the *infinitive*, and make, in the *future*, *rilucerà*, 'it will shine'; *tralucerà*, 'it will shine through'; and in the *conditional*, *rilucerébbe*, 'it would shine'; &c.

*Distruggere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Distrúggere*, or *to destroy*. || *distrútto*, | *destroyed*.  
 [*distrúrré*,]

## II. INDICATIVE.

3. — *Perfect*.

1st p. *distrússi*, | I *destroyed*.

4. — *Future*.

1st p. *distrúggerò*, or *distrúrrò*, | I *shall or will destroy*.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present*.

1st p. *distrúggeréi*, or *distrúrréi*, | I *should, would, or could destroy*;  
 [*réi* (*distrúggería or distrúrría*)], | *or might destroy*.

---

*Struggere*, 'to melt'; is never contracted in the *infinitive*, and makes, in the *future*, only *strúggerò*, 'I will melt'; and in the *conditional*, *strúggeréi*, 'I should melt.'

---

*Tráere*.\*

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Tráere*, or *trárré*, | *to draw*. || *trátto*, | *drawn*.  
 [*ré*,]

---

\* From the Latin *trahere*, converted also by the Italians into *trággere*, now become obsolete, but of which it retains many of the forms.



## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>trágo</i> ,	I draw ;	<i>trátamo</i> , or <i>trae-</i>	we draw ;
2d p. <i>trái</i> ,	thou drawest ;	<i>tráete</i> ,	you draw ;
3d p. <i>trás</i> ( <i>trág-</i> [ge]),	he draws ;	<i>trágoozo</i> ( <i>trán-</i> [no]),	they draw.

3. — *Perfect.*1st p. *trássi*, | I drew.4. — *Future.*1st p. *trærò* [by contraction for | I shall or will draw.  
[*traerò*], |

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ió trága</i> ,	that I draw or [may draw ;	<i>trátamo</i> , or <i>trae-</i>	that we draw ;
2d p. <i>tu trága</i> ,	that thou draw ;	<i>tráete</i> or <i>trae-</i>	that you draw ;
3d p. <i>égli trá-</i> [ga],	that he draw ;	<i>trágoozo</i> ,	that they draw.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *trærí* (*traría*) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could draw ; or  
[tion for *traerí* (*traería*)], | [might draw.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>trátamo</i> or <i>trae-</i>	let us draw ;
2d p. <i>trái tu</i> ,	draw thou ;	<i>tráete</i> ,	draw ye ;
3d p. <i>trága</i> [égli],	let him draw ;	<i>trágoozo</i> ,	let them draw.

The compounds of *cuocere*, 'to cook'; *tràere*, 'to draw'; and the verbs *indúcere*, 'to induce'; *condúcere*, 'to conduct'; *dedúcere*, 'to deduct'; *prodúcere*, 'to produce'; *ridúcere*, 'to reduce'; *sedúcere*, 'to seduce'; *tradúcere*, 'to translate'; — *dirigere*, 'to direct'; *erígere*,\* 'to erect'; *negligere*, 'to neglect'; *prediligere*, 'to have a predilection for'; — *leggere*, 'to read'; *reggere*, 'to support'; *protéggere*, 'to protect'; — *strúggere*, 'to melt'; — *scrivere*, 'to write'; and their compounds, have the same irregularities.

*Figgere*,† 'to fix'; *infiggere*, 'to infix'; *trafiggere*, 'to transfix'; in the *participle* end both in *ssu* and *tto*; and make *infitto*, 'fixed'; *infitto* or *infitto*, 'infix'; &c. — *Affiggere*, 'to affix'; *crocifiggere*, 'to crucify'; *prefiggere*, 'to prefix'; end in *ssu*; and make *affisso*, 'affixed'; *crocifisso*, 'crucified'; &c. — *Configgere*, 'to thrust into'; *seconfiggere*, 'to defeat'; *friggere*, 'to fry'; *soffiggere*, 'to fry'; *affliggere*, 'to afflict'; *infliggere*, 'to inflict'; end in *tto*; and make *confitto*, 'thrust into'; *fritto*, 'fried'; *infritto*, 'inflicted'; &c.

*Rilúcere*, 'to shine'; *tralúcere*, 'to shine through'; are both *regular* and *irregular*, and make *rilucéi* or *rilússi*, 'I shone'; *tralucé* or *tralússe*, 'it shone through'; but they have *no participle*.

*Esigere*, 'to exact'; in the *perfect* is both *regular* and *irregular*, and makes *esigéi* or *csássi*, 'I exacted'; and in the *participle* makes *esátto*, 'exacted.'

*Vivere*, 'to live'; in the *participle* makes *vivúto* or *vissúto*, 'lived'; and in the *future* and *conditional*, is often contracted into *vivòd*, 'I will live'; and *vivréi* (*vivria*), 'I would live.'

\* *Erígere* is often by poets contracted into *érigere*, but then has *no participle*. The *érto* mentioned by Mastrofini, notwithstanding its derivation from *erétto*, *participle* of *erígere*, is used in Italian as an adjective, but not as a *participle*.

† *Figgere*, and some of its compounds, as *affiggere*, &c., are sometimes spelt with one *g* only: — *figere*, *affigere*; and then make, in the *perfect*, *figsi*, *affisi*; and in the *participle*, *fitto*, *affitto*; &c.

*Variation of the Verb Rispondere.*

(Paradigm of the *Fifth Class* of the verbs in *ère* (short).)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Risp-ÓNDERE*, |to answer.      || *rispó-sto*,      |answered.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>risp-ósi</i> ,	I answered ;	<i>rispondémmo</i> ,	we answered ;
2d p. <i>rispondésti</i> ,	thou answeredst ;	<i>rispondéste</i> ,	you answered ;
3d p. <i>risp-óse</i> ,	he answered ;	<i>risp-ósero</i> ,	they answered.

*Chiedere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*ChiéDERE*, |to ask.      || *chiésto*,      |asked.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>chiédo</i> [(chiéggio),	I ask or am ask- [ing ;	<i>chiediámo</i> ( <i>chiég-</i> <i>giámo</i> , <i>chiedé-</i> <i>mo</i> ),	we ask ;
2d p. <i>chiédi</i> ,	thou askest ;	<i>chiedéte</i> ,	you ask ;
3d p. <i>chiéde</i> ,	he asks ;	<i>chiedono</i> ( <i>chiég-</i> <i>giono</i> , <i>chiég-</i> <i>gono</i> ),	they ask.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *chiéssi*,      | I asked.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io chiedo</i> that I ask, or [( <i>chiedgia</i> , <i>chiedga</i> ), 2d p. <i>tu chiedi</i> that thou ask ; [( <i>chiedgia</i> , <i>chiedga</i> , <i>chiedghi</i> ), 3d p. <i>egli chiede</i> that he ask ; [( <i>chiedgia</i> , <i>chiedga</i> ),	[may ask ; [that we ask ; [that you ask ; [that they ask.	<i>chiediamo</i> ( <i>chied-</i>   [ <i>giamo</i> ),   <i>chiediate</i> ( <i>chied-</i>   [ <i>giate</i> ),   <i>chiedano</i> ( <i>chied-</i>   [ <i>giano</i> , <i>chied-</i>   [ <i>gano</i> ),	that we ask ;   that you ask ;   that they ask.
--	--	---	---

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . 2d p. <i>chiedi tu</i> , ask thou ; 3d p. <i>chieda</i> let him ask ; [( <i>chiedga</i> ) <i>egli</i> ,	<i>chiediamo noi</i> , let us ask ;    <i>chiedete voi</i> , ask ye ;    <i>chiedano</i> ( <i>chied-</i>    [ <i>gano</i> ) <i>eglino</i> , let them ask.
---	--

*Ponere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

<i>PONERE</i> , or <i>PORRE</i> ,   to put.	<i>posto</i> ,	put.
---	----------------	------

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>pongo</i> I put ; [( <i>pono</i> ), 2d p. <i>poni</i> , thou puttest ; 3d p. <i>pone</i> , he puts ;	<i>poniamo</i> , we put ;    <i>ponete</i> , you put ;    <i>pongono</i> , they put.
---	--

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>posi</i> ,	I put.
----------------------	--------

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>ponerò</i> [by contraction for [ <i>ponerò</i> ],	I shall or will put.
--	----------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>io pónGA</i>	that I put ;	<i>poniámo,</i>	that we put ;
[(póna),			
2d p. <i>tu pónGA</i>	that thou put ;	<i>ponidte,</i>	that you put ;
[(póni),			
3d p. <i>égli pónGA</i>	that he put ;	<i>pónGAŋo,</i>	that they put.
[(póna),			

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>porréi</i> ( <i>porría</i> )	[by contrac-	I should, would, or could put ; or
[ <i>tion for poneréi</i> ( <i>ponería</i> ),		[might put.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>poniámo nbi,</i>	let us put ;
2d p. <i>póni tu,</i>	put thou ;	<i>ponéte vbi,</i>	put ye ;
3d p. <i>pónGA égli,</i>	let him put ;	<i>pónGAŋo églino,</i>	let them put.

The verbs *corrispóndere*, 'to correspond'; *ascóndere*, 'to conceal'; *nascóndere*, 'to hide'; — *richiédere*, 'to request'; — and all the compounds of *pónere*, 'to put'; have the same irregularities.

*Ascóndere* and *nascóndere*, in the *participle*, end also in *so*, making *ascóso*, 'concealed'; and *nascóso*, 'hidden.'

*Fóndere*, 'to melt,' and its compounds *confóndere*, 'to confound'; &c. in the *perfect* make *fósi*, 'I melted'; *confósi*, 'I confounded'; &c.; and in the *participle*, *fóso*, 'melted'; *confóso*, 'confounded'; &c.

*Fóndere* is also *regular*, making also, in the *perfect*, *fondéi*, and in *participle*, *fonduto*.

*Tóndere*,\* 'to shear'; and *scérnere*, 'to distinguish'; † *discérnere*, 'to discern'; *concérnere*, 'to concern'; are *regular*, and varied like *téssere*.

\* The *participle* *tóso*, erroneously attributed to *tóndere*, is a contraction of *teáso*, *participle* of the verb *teádre*, 'to shear.'

† Manzoni has written *scéras*, 'she distinguished'; and *scérasse*, 'they distinguished.'

*Variation of other Irregular Verbs in ěre (short), not included in any of the preceding classes.*

To the above five classes of verbs in ěre (*short*) must be added the verbs,

<i>conoscere,</i>	to know ;		<i>nascere,</i>	to be born ;
<i>creſcere,</i>	to grow ;		<i>rompere,</i>	to break ;
<i>nuocere,</i>	to hurt ;			

which, in the *perfect*, end in *bbi, cqui, ppi*; and in the *participle*, in *uto, to, tto* : thus,

Infinitive.	Perfect.	Participle.
<i>CONOSCERE,</i>	<i>conó-BBI,</i>	<i>conosci-ÚTO ;</i>
<i>CRÉSCERE,</i>	<i>cré-BBI,</i>	<i>creſci-ÚTO ;</i>
<i>NUOCERE,</i>	<i>no-CQUI,</i>	<i>noci-ÚTO ;</i>
<i>NÁSCERE,</i>	<i>ná-CQUI,</i>	<i>ná-TO ;</i>
<i>RÓMPERE,</i>	<i>rú-PPI,</i>	<i>ró-TTO.</i>

---

*Conoscere.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Conoscere,* |to know. || *conosci-úto,* |known.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>conó-BBI</i>	I knew ;	<i>conoscémmo,</i>	we knew ;
[(conoscéi),			
2d p. <i>conoscésti,</i>			
3d p. <i>conó-BBE</i>	he knew ;	<i>conó-BBERO,</i>	they knew.
[(conoscè),			

The compounds of *conoscere*,— and the verb *créscere*, ‘to grow,’ and its compounds,— have the same irregularities.

---

*Nuócere.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Nuócere*, |to hurt.      || *noci-úto*,      |hurt.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3.— *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>nó-cqui</i> ,	I hurt ;	<i>nocémmo</i> ,	we hurt ;
2d p. <i>nocésti</i> ,	thou hurtest ;	<i>nocéste</i> ,	you hurt ;
3d p. <i>nó-cque</i> ,	he hurt ;	<i>nó-cquero</i> ,	they hurt.

---

*Rinuócere*, ‘to hurt again,’— and the verb *náscere*, ‘to be born’; and its compound *rináscere*, ‘to be born again,’— in the *perfect*, have the same irregularities.

*Náscere*, and its compound *rináscere*, in the *participle* make *nó-ro*, ‘been born’; *riná-ro*, ‘been born again.’

The verb *páscere*, ‘to feed,’ although it has the same termination as *conoscere*, *créscere*, *náscere*, is *regular*. The verb *ináscere*, signifying ‘to pour,’ is *regular*, but signifying ‘to mix,’ in the *participle*, is *irregular*, and makes *místo*, ‘mixed.’

---

*Rómpere.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Rómpere*, |to break.      || *ró-πto*,      |broken.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>rú-PPI</i> [(róppi, rompéi),	I broke ;		<i>rompémmo,</i>		we broke ;
2d p. <i>rompésti,</i>	thou brokest ;		<i>rompéste,</i>		you broke ;
3d p. <i>rú-PPR</i> [(róppe, rompè),	he broke ;		<i>rú-PPERO,</i>		they broke.

The compounds of *rompere*, as *corrumpere*, ‘to corrupt’; *dirumpere*, ‘to break’; &c., have the same irregularities.

*Variation of the Verb Bévere.*

*Bévere*, ‘to drink,’ is a *regular* verb; but, as it has been by poets so contracted as to give it the appearance of an irregular one, we will here give its variation.

*Bévere.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Bévere*) *bérs,* | to drink.

GERUND.

*bevéndo* (beéndo), | drinking.

PARTICIPLE.

|| *bevúto,* | drunk.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>bévo</i> (béo),	I drink ;		<i>bevídmo,</i>		we drink ;
2d p. <i>bévi</i> (béi),	thou drinkest ;		<i>bevéte</i> (béte),		you drink ;
3d p. <i>béve</i> (bée),	he drinks ;		<i>bévono</i> (béono),		they drink.



2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *io bevéva* or *bevéa*, | I drank.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>bevéi</i> or [ <i>bevétti</i> , <i>BEVV</i> ] [( <i>bébbi</i> ),	I drank ;		<i>bevémmo</i> ,	we drank ;
2d p. <i>bevésti</i> ,	thou drankest ;		<i>bevéste</i> ,	you drank ;
3d p. <i>bevè</i> or <i>be-</i> [ <i>vétte</i> , <i>BEVVK</i> ] [( <i>bebbe</i> ),	he drank ;		<i>bevérono</i> or <i>be-</i> [ <i>véttero</i> , <i>BEV-</i> [ <i>VERO</i> ( <i>bébbe-</i> [ <i>ro</i> , <i>bévono</i> ),	they drank.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. ( <i>beverò</i> , [ <i>bevèrò</i> ] <i>berò</i> ,	I shall or will [drink ;		( <i>beverémo</i> , <i>be-</i> [ <i>vrémo</i> ] <i>berémo</i> ,	we will drink ;
2d p. ( <i>beverái</i> [ <i>berái</i> ,	thou wilt drink ;		( <i>beveréte</i> ) <i>beréte</i> ,	you will drink ;
3d p. ( <i>beverà</i> , [ <i>bevèrà</i> ] <i>berà</i> ,	he will drink ;		( <i>beveránno</i> ) <i>be-</i> [ <i>ránno</i> ,	they will drink.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io béva</i> [( <i>béa</i> ),	that I drink or [may drink ;		<i>beviámo</i> ,	that we drink ;
2d p. <i>tu béva</i> [( <i>bévi</i> ; <i>béa</i> , <i>béi</i> ),	that thou drink ;		<i>beviáte</i> ,	that you drink ;
3d p. <i>égli béva</i> [( <i>béa</i> ),	that he drink ;		<i>bévamo</i> ( <i>béano</i> ),	that they drink.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io bevéssi</i> [( <i>beéssi</i> ),	if I drink ;		<i>bevéssimo</i> ( <i>beés-</i> [ <i>simo</i> ),	if we drink ;
2d p. <i>tu bevéssi</i> [( <i>beéssi</i> ),	if thou drankest ;		<i>bevéste</i> ( <i>beéste</i> ),	if you drink ;
3d p. <i>bevésse</i> [( <i>beésse</i> ),	if he drinks ;		<i>bevészero</i> ( <i>beés-</i> [ <i>zero</i> , <i>beéssono</i> ),	if they drink.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. ( <i>beveréi</i> [( <i>bevería</i> )) <i>beréi</i> [( <i>bería</i> ), 2d p. ( <i>beverésti</i> ) [ <i>berésti</i> , 3d p. ( <i>beverébbe</i> [( <i>bevería</i> )) <i>be</i> [ <i>rébbe</i> ( <i>bería</i> ),	I should, would, [or could drink ; [or might drink ; thou wouldst [drink ; he would drink ;	( <i>beverémmo</i> ) <i>be</i> [ <i>rémmo</i> , ( <i>beveréste</i> ) <i>beré</i> [ <i>ste</i> , ( <i>beverébbero</i> ( <i>be</i> [ <i>veriano</i> , <i>beveré</i> [ <i>eno</i> )) <i>berébbero</i> [( <i>beriano</i> , <i>beré</i> [ <i>eno</i> ), .	we would drink ; you would drink ; they would drink.
--	--	--	--

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . 2d p. <i>bévi</i> ( <i>béi</i> ) [ <i>tu</i> , 3d p. <i>béva</i> ( <i>béa</i> ) [ <i>égli</i> ,	. . . . . drink thou ; let him drink ;	<i>beviámno nói</i> , <i>bevéte</i> ( <i>beéte</i> ) <i>vóí</i> , <i>bévano</i> ( <i>béano</i> ) [ <i>églino</i> ,	let us drink ;   drink ye ;   let them drink.
--	--	---	---

The compounds of *bévere*, as *imbévere*, 'to imbibe'; *ribévere*, 'to drink again'; have the same irregularities.

REMARKS ON THE FOREGOING VERBS.

All verbs ending in *úcere*, as *addúcere*, 'to allege'; *indúcere*, 'to induce'; &c. in the *participle*, besides changing *cére* into *tto*, change also the *u* into *o*; and make *addóttto*, 'alleged'; *indóttto*, 'induced'; &c.

*Rilúcere*, 'to shine'; and *tralúcere*, 'to shine through'; have no *participle*.

Verbs ending in *glière*, as *cógliere*, 'to gather'; *tógliere*, 'to take away'; &c., in the *perfect* and *participle* retain the *l* of their termination; and make *cólsi*,

'I gathered'; *cólto*, 'gathered'; *tólsi*, 'I took away'; &c.

All verbs ending in *ndēre*, as *accēdere*, 'to kindle'; *scīndere*, 'to cut asunder'; *rispōdere*, 'to answer'; &c., in the *perfect* and the *participle* lose the *n*; and make *accēsi*, 'I kindle'; *accēso*, 'kindled'; *scissi*, 'I cut asunder'; &c.

Verbs ending in *ngēre* may end also in *gnēre*, and *vice versá*; thus, *giungere* or *giugnere*, 'to arrive'; *spēgnere* or *spēngere*, 'to extinguish'; &c. When they end in *gnēre*, in the *perfect* and *participle* they retain the *n* of their termination; and make *spēnsi*, 'I extinguished'; *spēnto*, 'extinguished'; &c.

The transposition of the *n* in verbs in *ngēre* ought not to be made except in those inflexions in which *ng* is followed by *e* or *i*; as, *giungo*, 'I arrive,' *giugni*, 'thou arrivest'; *giugne*, 'he arrives'; *giugniamo*, 'we arrive'; *giugnete*, 'you arrive'; *giungono*, 'they arrive'; and *vice versá* in verbs in *gnēre*, it ought not to be made but in those inflexions in which *gn* is followed by *o* or *a*; as, *spēngo*, 'I extinguish'; *spēgni*, 'thou extinguishest'; &c., *spēnga*, 'that I extinguish'; &c.

Verbs ending in *igere* and *imere*, as *dirigere*, 'to direct'; *esprimere*, 'to express'; &c., in the *perfect* and *participle* change the *i* into *e*; and make *diréssi*, 'I directed'; *dirétto*, 'directed'; *espréssi*, 'I expelled'; *exprésso*, 'expressed'; &c.

The verb *redimere*, 'to redeem'; and verbs ending in *umere*, as *assumere*, 'to assume'; &c., in the *perfect* and *participle*, change the *m* of their termination into *n*, and make *redénsi*, 'I redeemed'; *assúnsi*, 'I assumed'; *assúnto*, 'assumed'; &c.

The verbs *trāere*, 'to draw'; *pōnere*, 'to put,' and their compounds; and all verbs ending in *gliere*, *ucere*, *uggere*; as *cogliere*, 'to gather'; *adducere*, 'to allege'; *distruggere*, 'to destroy'; are, in the *infinitive* contracted into *trārre*, *pōrre*, *cōrre*, *addúrre*, *distrúrre*;

and make, in the *future*, — *trarrò*, ‘I will draw’; *porrò*, ‘I will put’; &c., and in the *conditional*, — *trarréi*, ‘I would draw’; &c.

*Rilúcere*, ‘to shine’; *tralúcere*, ‘to shine through’; and *strúggere*, ‘to melt’; are never contracted in any of the above inflexions.

All verbs ending in *ère* (*short*), preceded by the diphthong *uó* (*accented*), as *cuócere*, ‘to cook’; *scuótere*, ‘to shake’; *muóvere*, ‘to move’; *nuócere*, ‘to hurt’; &c., in the *perfect* and *participle*, — and in *all the inflexions* in which the *diphthong loses the accent*, drop the *u*; and make, *cóssi*, ‘I cooked’; *cótto*, ‘cooked’; *scóssi*, ‘I shook’; &c. — *cociámo*, ‘we cook’; *scotéte*, ‘you shake’; *moverò*, ‘I will move’; *nocerébbe*, ‘it would hurt’; &c.

## EXAMPLES.

*Ad ambidúe quèsti fini ha qui* . . . To both these objects has the  
*ALLÚSO parimente il Signore con* Lord here equally alluded with  
*un tal dèlto.* (Segn. Mann. Nov. such words.  
 16.)

*Non istétte guári, che égli PER-* It was not long before he lost  
*DÈ la vista, e la paróla.* (Bocc. both his sight and speech.  
 g. 4. n. 7.)

*Questa vólta io dirò, còme si* This time I will say, as we are  
*dice, — D' éssermi PÉRSA anch'* wont to say, that I have missed  
*io la lasciátúra.* (Buon. Fier. 2. 4.) the object in view.

*Tagliándo il FENDÈ quasi in-* With a cut he clove him as  
*fino á' dénti.* (Bocc. Filoc. 1.) far as the chin.

*Colúí rÉsse in grémbo a Dio* That one smote in the bosom of  
*— Lo cuór che in sul Tamigi an-* God the heart which is yet hon-  
*cór si còla.* (Dant. Inf, 12.) ored on the Thames.

*Che, per l' effétto dé' suói má'* That, through the effect of his  
*pensiéri, — Fidándomi di lui, io* evil thoughts, I, trusting in him,

*fóssi PRÉSO, — E póscia mórtó, dír non è mestiérrí.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

was taken and afterward put to death, there is no need that I should tell.

*Présá la piástra, la RADÉI da tútta e dúe le bándé.* (Benv. Cell. Oref. 85.)

Having taken the metal, I shaved it on both sides.

*E séco avére úna procélla AS-SÓRTO — Tánti príncipi illústri.* (Ariost. Fur. 14. 6.)

And that along with him one storm had swallowed up so many illustrious princes.

*Vóí troveréte lo speziále per la vía, che andrà a cóRRÉ la misura dé' confétti.* (Fir. Trin. 1. 2.)

You will find the apothecary on the way, going to take the measure of the confections.

*Nè póeta ne CÓLGA mái, nè Gióve — La privilégi.* (Petr. s. 46.)

Never may a poet gather of it, nor Jupiter give it any privilege.

*Se égli [il víno] sáppia di sécco o ábbia odór cattivo, cáccinvisi déntro fiáccole accése, e vi si SPÉNGANO.* (Sod. Colt. 99.)

If it [the wine] tastes too dry or has a bad odor, let lighted torches be thrown into it, and be extinguished in it.

*Sémpre la prossimána érba dattórno si SVÉLGA.* (Cresc. 5. 1.)

Let the grass always be pulled up around it.

*Ché Cristo appárvé a' dúe ch' é-rano in vía, — Già sÚRTO fuór délla sepulcrál búca.* (Dant. Purg. 21.)

That Christ appeared unto the two upon their way, new-risen from his vaulted grave.

*In onoráre altrúsi tenéva la bór-sa STRÉTTA.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

He kept his purse close in honoring others.

*Dcl bél nído di Lédá mi divélsé, — E nel ciél velocíssimo m' IM-PÚLSE.* (Dant. Par. 27.)

From the fair nest of Leda rapt me forth, and wafted me on into swiftest heaven.

*Ch' è di tórbidi nívoiti INVO-LÚTO.* (Dant. Inf. 24.)

Which is wrapt in turbid mists.

*Clódio diéde monéta a' giúdicí, e fu ASSOLÚTO.* (Sen. Pist. 97.)

Clodius gave money to the judges and was acquitted.

*Quéstó possénte mío nóbile ar-dóre — Mí solléna da térra, e pórr-ta il córe — Dov' ír per súa virtù non gli è concéssó.* (Buon. Rim. 50.)

This powerful ardor of mine elevates me from the earth, and carries my heart, where by its own power it is not permitted to ascend.

*A che, e come concedette  
Ambrè — Che conoscete i dub-  
biosi destri? (Dant. Inf. 5.)*

By what and how did Love grant  
that you should know your uncer-  
tain wishes?

REDÉTO, da Redimere. (Cru-  
sca.)

*Redeemed, from to redgem.*

*M mise dentro alle segrete  
cose (Dant. Inf. 3.)*

He led me on into those seclud-  
ed regions.

*Ne anche ben capisco l' illa-  
zione che fa Apelle, del doverci  
concedere qualche lume riflesso  
alla terra. (Gal. Macch. sol. 168.)*

Neither can I understand the  
inference which Apelles makes,  
that some reflected light must be  
granted to the earth.

*Quando Fetonte abbandonò li  
freni, — Perché l' ciel, come pare  
ancor, si cósse. (Dant. Inf. 17.)*

When Phaëton abandoned the  
reins, whence heaven, as it yet  
appears, was wrapt in flames.

*Dato che questa ragione si  
potesse ADDUCERE. (Borg. Rip.  
30.)*

Even could this reason be al-  
leged.

*Nói, sempre che verrà propósi-  
to, ADDURRÉMO simili antichi e-  
sempj. (Dav. Stor. 3.)*

Whenever it shall be conven-  
ient, we will always allege similar  
ancient examples.

*E' subno, che si fa nelle selve  
dai cacciatori, perchè li cani  
traggano al suono. (But. Inf.  
31.)*

It is a sound, which is made by  
hunters in the woods, that the dogs  
may come to that sound.

*Via corta e spedita — TRAR-  
RÉBBE a fin quest' áspra péna, e  
dúra. (Petr. c. 18.)*

A short and expeditious way  
would bring to an end this severe  
and hard pain.

*Sono fiso in un limo, che non  
tróva fondo. (Vit. SS. Pad.)*

I am fixed in a marshy soil  
which has no bottom.

*Lo TRAFFITTO il mirò, ma nùlla  
disse. (Dant. Inf. 25.)*

The pierced spirit looked on  
him, but did not speak.

*Libera spirito od á' subí mem-  
bri AFFISSO. (Petr. s. 118.)*

Free spirit of still confined to  
its limbs.

*Tentò di trár dalla profonda  
piaga la CONFITTA saetta. (Gaar.  
Past. Fid. 5, 7.)*

He tried to draw from the deep  
wound the fixed arrow.

*E tanta gracia sóra me RILÚS-  
SE. (Dant. Par. 22.)*

And so much grace shone over  
me.

*La luce nelle ténobre RILU-  
CÉTTE. (Arr. Vang.)*

Light shone in the darkness.

ESATTO, da Esigere. (Crusca.)

Eracted, from to exact.

*Che gli fusse oscurata la fama  
de' principj della sua milizia da  
un popolo vivuto in lunga pace.*  
(Gulcc. Stor. 5.)

That the fame of the beginning  
of his military life should be ob-  
scured by a people who had lived  
in long peace.

*Ma il ben vissuto vecchio s' in-  
segnava a mostrare la verità del-  
la cosa.* (Firenz. Asin.)

But the well-lived old man en-  
deavoured to show the truth of  
the thing.

VIVRÒ, com' io son visso.\*  
(Petr. s. 118.)

I shall live as I have lived.

*Allora dimandò come si chia-  
mava quell' isola; fu risposto per  
li marinari, che per antico si chia-  
mava Gerusalem.* (Giov. Vill. l. 4. c. 18.)

Then he asked how that island  
was called; he was answered by  
the sailors, that anciently it was  
called Jerusalem.

*Nè può grazia negar che tu gli  
CHIEGGIA.* (Alam. Colt. l. 10.)

Nor can he deny any favor that  
you may ask.

*E se ne venne a PÓNERE óste a  
Fiesole.* (Pecor. g. 11. n. 1.)

And came to encamp at Fiesole.

*Per duo fiammette, che vedem-  
mo PÓRRE.* (Dant. Inf. 8.)

By two small flames, which we  
saw kindle.

*Chà PORRÀ ben la mente e  
l' intelletto.* (Franc. Barb. 169.)

He who will reflect well.

*Lo duca ed io, per quel cammi-  
no ASCÓSO,— Entrammo a ritor-  
nár nel chiaro mondo.* (Dant.  
Inf. 84.)

My guide and I entered by that  
hidden way to return to the bright  
world.

*La pietà d' duo cognati,— Che  
di tristizia tutto mi CONFUSE.*  
(Dant. Inf. 6.)

Pity for the kindred shades,  
whence grief wholly overcame  
me.

*Tutte le campàne che erano in  
quello trovaronsi quasi tutte FON-  
DUTE, come fossero colate nella  
fornace.* (Matt. Vill. 3. 42.)

All the bells which were there,  
were found almost all melted as if  
they had been put in a furnace.

*Il Saladino CONÓBBE costui ot-  
timamente essere saputo uscir del  
laccio, il quale davanti a' piedi  
suo gli avca.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

Saladin saw that he had known  
how to get out of the snare, which  
he had spread before his feet.

*Ben ti dee ricordár, che non ti  
NÓCQUE.* (Dant. Inf. 20.)

Thou oughtest to remember well,  
for it did thee good service.

\* By contraction for *vissuto*.

*Andónne a Pavia per úna discórdia* *НАТА* *tra quelli di Beccheria.* (Din. Comp. 3.)

He went to Pavia on account of a dissension sprung up among the people of Beccheria.

*La cittadinánza, che è or místa — Di Cántpi, e di Certáldo, e di Figghíne, — Púra vedéasi nell' último artista.* (Dant. Par. 16.)

The citizens' blood, that now is mixed from Campi, and Certaldo, and Figghine, ran pure through the last mechanic's veins.

*L' un délli quádli, ancór non è moll' ánni — Rupp' ío per un, che déntro v' annegáva.* (Dant. Inf. 13.)

One of which I broke some few years past, to save an infant who was drowning in it.

*E mángia, e bék, e dórme, e véste pánni.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

And eats, and drinks, and sleeps, and puts raiment on.

EXERCISE XX.

- I. 1. — To gather. to allege. to destroy. to draw.  
*Cógliere. addúcere. distrúggere. tráere.*
- to put. to take away. 7. — cloven. taken. shaven.  
*pónere. tógliere. fendere. préndere. rádere.*
- kindled. devolved. bound. redeemed. extinguished.  
*accéndere. devólvere. stringere. redímere. spégnere.*
- cooked. answered. born. directed. lived. broken.  
*cúocere. rispóndere. náscere. dirígere. vívere. rómpere.*
- alleged. — II. 1. — I gather, thou extinguishest, he  
*addúcere. cógliere, spégnere, ri-*
- reduces, we ask, you draw, they take away. —  
*dúcere, chiédere, tráere, tógliere.*
- I absorb, thou chooseth, he rises, we assume, you  
*assórbere, scégliere, sórgere, assúmere, a-*
- compel, they root up. 3. — I offended, thou vilifiedst,  
*stringere, svéllere. lédere, vilipéndere,*
- he ran, we bite, you sprinkled, they kindled. —  
*córrere, mórdere, aspérgere, accéndere.*
- I expelled, thou invadedst, he knew, we wiped,  
*espéllere, invóddere, conóscere, térgere,*



you shut, they descended. — I cut asunder, thou  
*chiudere,* *scendere.* *scindere,* *con-*

grantedst, he redeemed, we sheared, you chose, they  
*cedere,* *redimere,* *tondere,* *scogliere,* *met-*

put. 4. — I will succour, thou wilt drink, it will occur,  
*tere.* *soccorrere,* *bevere,* *occorrere,*

we will shake, you will draw, they will destroy. —  
*scuotere,* *trarre,* *distruggere.*

I will put, thou wilt move, he will turn, we will untie,  
*ponere,* *muovere,* *voltere,* *sciogliere,*

you will reflect, they will melt. — III. 1. — I may  
*riflettere,* *struggere.* *dis-*

distinguish, thou mayest milk, he may know, we may  
*tinguere,* *mingere,* *nascere,* *protég-*

protect, you may cook, they may conquer. — I may  
*gere,* *cuocere,* *vincere.* *sci-*

choose, thou mayest fry, he may request, we may  
*gliere,* *friggere,* *richiedere,* *contrap-*

pose, you may hurt, they may drink. — IV. 1. —  
*ponere,* *nocere,* *bevere.*

I should drink again, thou wouldst break, he would  
*ribevere,* *frangere,* *riú-*

shine, we would live, you would produce, they would  
*cere,* *vivere,* *prodúcere,* *cré-*

grow. — V. — write thou, let him feign, let us answer,  
*scere.* *scrivere,*  *fingere,* *rispondere,*

pour ye, let them feed.  
*mescere,* *pascere.*



VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

The following are the simple irregular verbs of the third conjugation ; viz.

<i>dire,</i>	} to say, or to tell ;		<i>seguire,</i>	to follow ;
<i>morire,</i>			<i>udire,</i>	to hear ;
<i>salire,</i>			<i>uscire,</i>	to go out ;
	to ascend ;		<i>venire,</i>	to come.

---

*Dire.*

(Varied with *avere.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

**DIRE** (*dícere*),\* | to say.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

*dicéndo,* | saying. || **DÉTTO** (*dítto*), | said.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>dico,</i>	I say ;   thou sayest ;   he says ;		<i>dicíamo,</i>	we say ;   you say ;   they say.
2d p. <i>dici</i> or <i>dí'</i> ,			<i>díge,</i>	
3d p. <i>dice,</i>			<i>dicono,</i>	

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *fo dicéva* or *dicéa,* | I said.

---

\* This verb, belongs, properly, to the second conjugation, it being but a contraction of *dícere*, now become *obsolete*, of which it retains many of the forms.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>dixi</i> ,	I said ;	<i>diximmo</i> ,	we said ;
2d p. <i>dixisti</i> ,	thou saidest ;	<i>dixistis</i> ,	you said ;
3d p. <i>dixit</i> ,	he said ;	<i>dixerunt</i> ,	they said.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>dixero</i> [by contraction for <i>dixerò</i> ],	I shall or will say.
--	----------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *lo dica*, | that I say or may say.2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *lo dicerem*, | if I said or should say.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *dixerem* (*dixissem*) [by contraction | I should, would, or could say ; or  
[for *dixerem* (*dixerissem*)], | [might say.]

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>dixāmo nōi</i> ,	let us say ;
2d p. <i>dixi tu</i> ,	say thou ;	<i>dixite vōi</i> ,	say ye ;
3d p. <i>dixat illi</i> ,	let him say ;	<i>dixant illis</i> ,	let them say.

The compounds of *dire*, as *redire*, 'to say again'; *contradire* or *contraddire*, 'to contradict'; *interdire*, 'to forbid'; *benedire*, 'to speak well of'; *maldire*, 'to speak ill of'; have the same irregularities.

*Benedire*, 'to bless,' and *maldire* or *maledire*, 'to curse,' in the *perfect*, are both *regular* and *irregular*, and make *benedixi* or *benedixisti*, 'I blessed'; *maledixi* or *maledixisti*, 'I cursed.'

*Morire.*

(Varied with *essere*.\*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Morire,* | to die. || ΜÓΡΤΟ, | dead.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. ΜÚΡΟ, or [ΜÚΟΙΟ (ΜÓΙΟ)].	I die ;		<i>moriámo,</i>	we die ;
2d p. ΜÚΟΡΙ,	thou diest ;		<i>moríte,</i>	you die ;
3d p. ΜÚΟΡΚ [( <i>muór</i> )].	he dies ;		ΜÚΟΡΟΝΟ, or ΜÚΟ- [ΙΟΝΟ (ΜÓΙΟ- [no)],	they die.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *morirò* or *morró*, | I shall or will die.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>εἰ</i> ΜÚΟΡΑ,	that I die, or		<i>moriámo,</i>	that we die ;
[or ΜÚΟΙΑ (ΜÓΙΑ)].	[may die ;			
2d p. <i>εἰ</i> ΜÚΟΡΑ,	that thou die ;		<i>moriáte,</i>	that you die ;
[or ΜÚΟΙΑ (ΜÓΙΑ) [or ΜÓΙΑ, ΜÓΡΙ)],				
3d p. <i>ἐγὼ</i> ΜÚΟ- [ΡΑ, or ΜÚΟΙΑ [( <i>móra</i> or <i>móia</i> )],	that he die ;		ΜÚΟΡΑΝΟ, or [ΜÚΟΙΑΝΟ (ΜÓ- [ράνο or <i>móiano</i> )],	that they die.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *moriréi* or *morréi* (*moriría* | I should, would, or could die ; or  
[or *morría*], | [might die.]

\* *Morire* may be varied also with *andra*; but then, as we have already observed (p. 219), it takes the nature of an *active* verb, and signifies 'to kill,' and not 'to die.'

## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.
1st p. . . . .		<i>moriammo noi,</i>   let us die ;
2d p. MUÓRI tu,   die thou ;		<i>morite voi,</i>   die ye ;
3d p. MUÓRA. or let him die ;		MUÓRANO, or   let them die.
[MUÓIA (móra		[MUÓIANO (mó-
[or móia) égli,		[rano or móia-
		[no) églino,

The compounds of *morire*, as *premorire*, 'to die before'; &c., have the same irregularities.

*Salire.*

(Varied with either *avere* or *essere*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Salire* (saglire\*) | to ascend. || *salito*, | ascended.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. SÁLGO, or I ascend ;		<i>saliamo</i> , or SA- we ascend ;
[ <i>salisco</i> (ságljo),		[GLIAMO,
2d p. <i>sáli</i> or sa- thou ascendest ;		<i>salite</i> ,   you ascend ;
[ <i>liscit</i> (ságli),		
3d p. <i>sále</i> or sa- he ascends ;		SÁLGONO, or sa- they ascend.
[ <i>lisce</i> (ságlie),		[ <i>liscono</i> (sá-
		[glione),

\* From this verb, now become *obsolete*, are derived many of the forms of the modern verb *salire*.

† The forms *salisci* and *sagliamo*, of the *present* of the *indicative* and of the *imperative*; and *sagliamo* and *sagliate*, of the *present* of the *conjunctive* mood, are to be preferred when *sali*, *saliamo*, *salite*, might be confounded with *sáli*, *saliamo*, and *salite*, corresponding tenses of the verb *salire*, 'to salt.'

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>salii</i> ( <i>sálsi</i> ),	I ascended ;	<i>salimmo</i> ,	we ascended ;
2d p. <i>salisti</i> ,	thou ascendedst ;	<i>saliste</i> ,	you ascended ;
3d p. <i>salì</i> ( <i>sálse</i> ),	he ascended ;	<i>salirono</i> ( <i>sálsero</i> ),	they ascended.
[ <i>salfo</i> ),		[ <i>salíro</i> , <i>salír</i> ),	

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io</i> <i>sálga</i> , or	that I ascend, or	<i>saliamo</i> , or <i>sa-</i>	that we ascend ;
[ <i>salisca</i> ( <i>ságlia</i> ),	[may ascend ;	[ <i>GLIAMO</i> ,	
2d p. <i>tu</i> <i>sálga</i> , or	that thou ascend ;	<i>saliate</i> , or <i>sa-</i>	that you ascend ;
[ <i>salisca</i> ( <i>sághi</i> ),		[ <i>GLIATE</i> ,	
3d p. <i>egli</i> <i>sálga</i> ,	that he ascend ;	<i>sálgano</i> , or <i>sa-</i>	that they ascend.
[or <i>salisca</i> ,		[ <i>liscano</i> ( <i>sá-</i>	
		[ <i>gliano</i> ),	

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>saliamo</i> , or <i>sa-</i>	let us ascend ;
		[ <i>GLIAMO</i> <i>noi</i> ,	
2d p. <i>sáli</i> , or <i>sa-</i>	ascend thou ;	<i>salite</i> <i>voi</i> ,	ascend ye ;
[ <i>lisci</i> <i>tu</i> ,			
3d p. <i>sálga</i> , or	let him ascend ;	<i>sálgano</i> , or <i>sa-</i>	let them ascend.
[ <i>salisca</i> <i>egli</i> ,		[ <i>liscano</i> <i>églino</i> ,	

The compounds of *salire*, as *risalire*, ‘ to reascend ’ ; *assalire*, ‘ to assail ’ ; &c., have the same irregularities.

*Seguire.*(Varied with either *avere* or *essere*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>Seguire,</i>	to follow.	<i>seguito,</i>	followed.
-----------------	------------	-----------------	-----------

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>segua,</i> or	I follow ;	<i>seguiamo,</i>	we follow ;
[ <i>siégua,</i>			
2d p. <i>seguì,</i> or	thou followest ;	<i>seguite,</i>	you follow ;
[ <i>siégui,</i>			
3d p. <i>segue,</i> or	he follows ;	<i>seguono,</i> or	they follow.
[ <i>siégue,</i>		[ <i>siéguono,</i>	

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io ségua,</i>	that I follow ; or	<i>seguiamo,</i>	that we follow ;
[or <i>siégua,</i>	[may follow ;		
2d p. <i>tu ségua,</i> or	that thou follow ;	<i>seguite,</i>	that you follow ;
[ <i>siégua (ségui,</i>			
[ <i>siégui),</i>			
3d p. <i>egli ségua,</i>	that he follow ;	<i>seguano,</i> or	that they follow.
[or <i>siégua,</i>		[ <i>siéguano,</i>	

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . .	. . . .	<i>seguiamo noi,</i>	let us follow ;
2d p. <i>seguì,</i> or	follow thou ;	<i>seguite voi,</i>	follow ye ;
[ <i>siégui tu.</i>			
3d p. <i>segua,</i> o	let him follow ;	<i>seguano,</i> or <i>si-</i>	let them follow.
[ <i>siégua egli,</i>		[ <i>guano egli,</i>	

The compounds of *seguire*, as *conseguire*, 'to obtain'; *inseguire*, 'to pursue'; *proseguire*, 'to prosecute'; *sussequire*, 'to follow immediately after'; have the same irregularities.

*Uđire.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Uđire* (odire\*), |to hear; || *uđito*, |heard.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. óDO,	I hear;	<i>uđiamo</i> ,	we hear;
2d p. óDI,	thou hearest;	<i>uđite</i> ,	you hear;
3d p. óDE,	he hears;	<i>óDANO</i> ,	they hear.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *uđirò* or *uđrò*, | I shall or will hear.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío</i> óDA,	that I hear or	<i>uđiamo</i> ,	that we hear;
	[may hear;		
2d p. <i>tu</i> óDA,	that thou hear;	<i>uđite</i> ,	that you hear;
	[(ódi),		
3d p. <i>égli</i> óDA,	that he hear;	<i>óDANO</i> ,	that they hear.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *uđiréi* or *uđréi* (*uđiría* or | I should, would, or could hear;  
[*uđría*), | [or might hear.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>uđiamo</i> <i>nói</i> ,	let us hear;
2d p. óDI <i>tu</i> ,	hear thou;	<i>uđite</i> <i>ói</i> ,	hear ye;
3d p. óDA <i>égli</i> ,	let him hear;	<i>óDANO</i> <i>égli</i> <i>no</i> ,	let them hear.

\* From this form, now *obsolete*, are derived *ódo*, *ódi*, &c., of *uđire*.



The compounds of *u lire*, as *riudire*, 'to hear again'; &c. have the same irregularities.

*Esaudire*, 'to grant'; is *regular*, and varied like *esibire*.

—  
*Uscire.*

(Varied with *essere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Uscire* (*escire*\*), | to go out;      || *uscito*,      | gone out.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>éscó</i> ,	I go out;	<i>usciamo</i> ,	we go out;
2d p. <i>ésci</i> ,	thou goest out;	<i>uscite</i> ,	you go out;
3d p. <i>éscé</i> ,	he goes out;	<i>éscano</i> ,	they go out.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io éscá</i> ,	that I go out, or [may go out];	<i>usciamo</i> ,	that we go out;
2d p. <i>tu éscá</i> ,	that thou go out;	<i>uscíte</i> ,	that you go out;
3d p. <i>egli éscá</i> ,	that he go out;	<i>éscano</i> ,	that they go out.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>usciamo noi</i> ,	let us go out;
2d p. <i>ésci tu</i> ,	go thou out;	<i>uscíte voi</i> ,	go ye out;
3d p. <i>éscá egli</i> ,	let him go out;	<i>éscano egli</i> ,	let them go out.

The compound of *uscire*, — *riuscire*, 'to succeed,' has the same irregularities.

\* From this verb, now become *obsolete*, are derived the forms *éscó*, *éscá*, &c., of the verb *uscire*.

*Venire.*

(Varied with *essere.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Venire,* |to come. || VENÚTO, |come.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. VÉNGO	I come ;		veníamo (vegna-	we come ;
[(végno),			[mo),	
2d p. VIÉNI,	thou comest ;		veníate,	you come ;
3d p. VIÉNE,	he comes ;		VÉNGONO (végno-	they come.
			[no),	

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. VÉNNI,	I came ;		venímmo,	we came ;
2d p. venísti,	thou camest ;		veníste,	you came ;
3d p. VÉNNK,	he came ;		VÉNNERO (vení-	they came.
			[ro),	

4. — *Future.*

1st p. verrò [by contraction for | I shall or will come.  
[venirò], |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. io VÉNGA	that I come or		veníamo (vegna-	that we come ;
[(végna),	[may come ;		[mo),	
2d p. tu VÉNGA	that thou come ;		veníate (vegna-	that you come ;
[(végni),			[te),	
3d p. egli VÉNGA	that he come ;		VÉNGANO (vé-	they they come.
[(végna),			[gnao),	

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. verréi (verría) [by contraction | I should, would, or could come ;  
[for veniréi (venría)], | [or might come.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	veníamo n6i,	let us come ;
2d p. VIÉNI tu,	come thou ;	venite v6i,	come ye ;
3d p. VÉNGA	let him come ;	VÉNGANO (végná-	let them come.
[(végná) égh,		[no) égiño,	

*Venire* is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c. and the particle *ne*; thus, **ME NE véngo**, 'I am coming thence'; **TE NE viéni**, 'thou art coming thence'; &c. — *Me*, *te*, &c., are then mere expletives.

The compounds of *venire*, as *convenire*, 'to agree'; *divenire*, 'to become'; *invenire*, 'to find'; *prevenire*, 'to anticipate'; *sovve* *i. e.*, 'to assist'; &c. have the same irregularities.

*Variation of the Verb Offerire.*

*Offerire*, 'to offer,' is both *regular* and *irregular*; and it has, besides, been so contracted by poets, as to render it important to give here its variation.

*Offerire.*(Varied with *avére.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Offerire* or *offrire*, | to offer.

GERUND.	PARTICIPLE.
<i>offeréndo</i> or offering. [ <i>offréndo</i> ,]	( <i>offerito</i> ) <b>OFFÉR-</b>   offered. [ <b>TO</b> ,]

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *offerisco* or *óffro*, | I offer.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io offeriva* or *offriva*, or *offeria* | I offered.  
[or *offria*,

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>offerii</i> , <i>of-</i> [ <i>frü</i> , or <i>OFFÉRSI</i> , 2d p. <i>offeristi</i> or [ <i>offristi</i> , 3d p. <i>offerì</i> , <i>offrì</i> , [or <i>OFFÉRSÈ</i> ,	I offered ;   thou offeredst ;   he offered ;	<i>offerimmo</i> or <i>of-</i> [ <i>frimmo</i> ,   <i>offeriste</i> or <i>offrì-</i> [ <i>ste</i> ,   <i>offerirono</i> or <i>of-</i> [ <i>frirono</i> ( <i>offerì-</i> [ <i>ro</i> or <i>offrìro</i> , [ <i>offerìr</i> or <i>offrìr</i> ), [or <i>OFFÉRSERO</i> ,	we offered ;   you offered ;   they offered.
--	---	---	--

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *offerirò* or *offrirò*, | I shall or will offer.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io offerisca*, *offrisca*, or *óffra*, | that I offer, or may offer.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io offerissi* or *offrissi*, | if I offered, or should offer.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *offeriréi* or *offriréi* (*offeriría* | I should, would, or could offer ;  
[or *offriría*), | [or might offer.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .  
2d p. *offerisci* or *óffri tu*, | offer thou.

The verb *sofferire*, 'to suffer,' has the same irregularities.

*Conferire*, 'to confer'; *differire*, 'to differ'; *inferire*, 'to infer'; *proferire*, 'to proffer'; *referire*, 'to refer'; *transferire*, 'to transfer'; are never contracted; and in the *perfect* and *participle* have the terminations in *ſi* and *ito* only; and make, *conferti*, 'I conferred'; *diferti*, 'I differed'; *conferto*, 'conferred'; &c.\*

---

#### REMARKS ON OTHER VERBS IN *ire*.

The verbs *convertire*, 'to convert'; *sovvertire*, 'to subvert'; are both *regular* and *irregular*, and in the *perfect* make *convertii* or CONVE'RSI, 'I converted'; *sovvertii* or SOVVE'RSI, 'I subverted'; and in the *participle*, *convertito* or CONVE'RSO, 'converted'; *sovvertito* or SOVVE'RSO, 'subverted.'

*Divertire*, 'to divert'; *pervertire*, 'to pervert'; have the terminations in *ſi* and *ito* only; and make *divertii*, 'I diverted'; *pervertii*, 'I perverted'; *divertito*, 'diverted'; *pervertito*, 'perverted.'

*Apparire* and *comparire*, 'to appear'; and their compounds, are both *regular* and *irregular*, and in the *perfect* make *apparſi* or APPA'RVI (*appârſi*); *comparſi* or COMPA'RVI (*compârſi*), 'I appeared'; &c., and in the *participle*, *apparito* or APPA'RSO; (*comparito*) COMPA'RSO, 'appeared'; &c.

*Aprire*, 'to open'; *coprire*, 'to cover'; and their compounds, in the *perfect* are both *regular* and *irregular*, and make *apriu* or APE'RSI, 'I opened,' *copriu* or COPE'RSI, 'I covered'; &c., but in the *participle* are *irregular* only; and make APE'ERTO, 'opened'; COPE'ERTO, 'covered'; &c.

---

\* A few instances may be found among the classics in which *reſerſi*, 'I referred,' and *proſerſi*, 'I proffered'; *reſerto*, 'referred'; have been used.

## EXAMPLES.

*A cui il frate disse: "Dillo sicuramente."* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

To whom the friar said: "Say it frankly."

*E muòiono in quèsta fòlle speranza.* (Gr. S. Gir. 2.)

And die with this foolish expectation.

*Dèsi intèndere, per lo pàdre e per lo figliuòlo, tutti colòro, che sàlono, e iscèndono per rétta linea.* (Maestruzz. 2. 28.)

For father and son, must be understood, all those who ascend or descend in a direct line.

*Onđ' io per lo túo mé' pèno, e discèrno, — Che tu mi sègui, ed io sarò túa guida.* (Dant. Inf. 1.)

Wherefore I, pondering for thy profit, devise, that thou mayest follow me, and I will be thy guide.

*Fiorentino — Mi sèmbri veramente quand' io t' ódo.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

Florentine thou seemest to me, in truth, when I hear thee.

*Qual èsce alcuna vòlta di galoppo — Lo cavalier di schiera, che caválchi.* (Dant. Purg. 24.)

As sometimes one knight pricks forth at a gallop from a troop of ranked chivalry.

*Avèndo fatto fare un grandissimo fuoco in úna sua camminda, in quèlla se ne venne.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2)

Having caused a large fire to be made in one of her halls, there she came.

*Dindanzi ógli ócchi mi si fu offèrto — Chi per lungo silenzio paréa fióco.* (Dant. Inf. 1.)

There presented itself to my sight, the form of one, whose voice seemed faint through long disuse of speech.

*Túli còse, proferite costì in astratto, hánno qualche difficoltà all' ésser comprése.* (Gall. 228.)

Such things, spoken so in abstract, are difficult to be comprehended.

*Per lo qual è chi crèda — Più vòlte 'l mòndo in Caòs convèrso.* (Dant. Inf. 12.)

Whereby, there are some who deem that the world has often been turned into chaos.

*APPARì úna gran mortalità, ec. . . . Stándo costúì nel principio del sùo capitanáto, APPARVE un cásò, ec. . . .* (Franc. Sacch. n. 158.)

There came a great mortality, &c. . . . He being yet in the beginning of his captaincy, an accident there happened, &c.

*Gli accorgimènti e le copèrte vie — l'ò sèppi tútte.* (Dant. Inf. 27.)

I knew all subtleties, and covered ways.

## EXERCISE XXI.

I. 1.—To say. 4.—contradict. 7.—blessed. come.  
*Dire.* *contradire.* *benedire.* *venire.*

died. advised. offered. transferred.—II. 1.—I die,  
*morire.* *avvertire.* *offerire.* *trasferire.* *morire,*

thou ascendest, he follows, we hear, you go out,  
*salire,* *seguire,* *udire,* *uscire,*

they come. 2.—I languished, thou saidst again, he  
*venire.* *languire,* *ridire,* *pre-*

anticipated, we contradicted, you re-opened, they re-  
*venire.* *contradire,* *riaprire,* *rin-*

covered their senses. 3.—I cursed, thou reascendedst,  
*venire* *maledire,* *risalire,*

he became, we suffered, you diverted, they referred.—  
*divenire,* *sofferire,* *divertire,* *riferire.*

I appeared, thou finishedst, he opened, we heard, you  
*apparire,* *finire,* *aprire,* *sentire,* *con-*

agreed, they covered. 4.—I will say, thou wilt arrive,  
*venire,* *coprire.* *dire,* *pervenire,*

he will die, we will differ, you will discover, they will  
*morire,* *differire,* *scoprire,* *as-*

assail.—III. 1.—I may die before, thou mayest obtain,  
*salire.* *premorire,* *conseguire,*

he may hear again, we may convert, you may find,  
*riudire,* *convertire,* *invenire,*

they may succeed. 2.—I might say, thou mightest contra-  
*riuscire.* *dire,* *con-*

dict, he might bless, we might forbid, you might say again,  
*tradire,* *benedire,* *interdire,* *ridire,*

they might curse.—IV. 1.—I would assist, thou wouldst  
*maledire.* *sovvonire,* *sof-*

suffer, he would forbid, we would re-assail, you would come  
*ferire,* *interdire,* *riassalire,* *rioveni-*

again, they would hear one thing for another.—V.—con-  
*re,* *traudire,* *pro-*

tinne thou, let him grant, let us prevent, proffer ye, let  
*sequire,* *esaudire,* *prevenire,* *proferire,* sov-  
 them subvert.  
*vertire.*

[For a Table of Irregular Verbs, see APPENDIX.]

---

 CHAPTER XI.

## DEFECTIVE VERBS.

Defective verbs ending in *ere* (*long*):

<i>Calere,</i>	to care for;	<i>pavere,</i>	to fear;
<i>colere</i> or <i>colere,</i>	to adore;	<i>silere,</i>	to be, or keep,
} <i>lecere</i> & <i>licere,</i> or <i>lecere</i> & <i>licere,</i>	} to be lawful;	<i>solere,</i>	[silent;
		<i>stupere,</i>	to be wont;
			to be astonished.

Defective verbs ending in *ere* (*short*):

<i>Algere,</i>	to be chill;	<i>ridere,</i>	to return;
<i>angere,</i>	to afflict;	<i>serpere,</i>	to creep;
<i>arrigere,</i>	to add;	} <i>soffolcere</i> or <i>soffolgere,</i>	} to support;
<i>capere,</i>	to contain;		
<i>cherere,</i>	to ask;	<i>tollere,</i>	to take away;
<i>convellere,</i>	to convulse;	<i>torpere,</i>	to be benumbed;
<i>federe,</i>	to wound;	<i>urgere,</i>	to urge;
<i>lucere,</i>	to shine;	<i>vigere,</i>	to be vigorous.
<i>molcere,</i>	to assuage;		

Defective verbs ending in *ire*:

<i>Pre,</i> <i>gire,</i>	} to go;	<i>olire,</i>	to smell.
-----------------------------	----------	---------------	-----------



## VARIATION OF DEFECTIVE VERBS.

[These verbs are used only in the tenses and persons, which are here given.]

*Calère.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.*

*Calère,* |to care for. || *éssere calúto,* |to have cared for.

## GERUND.

## PARTICIPLE.

*caléndo,* |caring for. || *calúto,* |cared for.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *cále* or *cál,* |he cares for. || |

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *calévq* or |he cared for. || |  
[*caléa,* |

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *cálse,* |he cared for. || |

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *cáglia,* |that he care for, || |  
[or may care for.] |

4. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *calésse,* |if he cared for, or || |  
[should care for.] |

Singular.

Plural.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

3d p. *CA'GLIA tgli,\** | let him care for. || : : : : | : : : :

*Calére* is generally used with the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, gli*; thus, *mi calé*, 'I care for'; *ci caléva*, 'we cared for'; &c.

*Colére* or *cólere*.

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Colére or cólere), | to adore.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. (cóló),	I adore;	: : : :	: : : :
3d p. (cóle),	he adores.	: : : :	: : : :

*Lécére* & *licére*, or *lécere* & *licere*.

## I. INFINITIVE.

(*Lécére* & *licére*, or | to be lawful. || *éssere lécito* or | to be lawful.  
[*lécere* & *licere*), | [lécito, † |

\* As it has been questioned whether *calére* is used in the *imperative*, we cite from the classics the following examples to prove that it is so used:

*Non te ne CA'GLIA no, to so ben to cid* Do not trouble yourselves about it, I  
*che mi fo.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.) know very well what I am doing.

*Del cómo non ti CA'GLIA, il perchè ti* Do not trouble thyself about the how,  
*dirò.* (Bocc. Filoc. 6) I will tell thee the why.

*Or se frattáto — Son le nóstre castélla* Now if, in the mean time, our castles  
*opprése, e sérve — Non ce ne CA'GLIA.* are oppressed and conquered, let us not  
(Tasso. Ger. 6. 11.) care about it.

† From this form are derived *lécito*, 'it is lawful'; *éra* or *fu lécito*, 'it was lawful'; *sarà lécito*, 'it will be lawful'; &c., which are used to supply the tenses in which *lécere* is defective.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*3d p. *lécé* or *kée*, | it is lawful.

|| : : : :

| : : : :

—

*Pavére.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Pavére), | to fear.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. (páve), | he fears.

|| : : : :

| : : : :

—

*Silére.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Silére),

| to be, or keep, silent.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

2d p. (síli),

| thou art, or keep-  
[est, silent ;

|| : : : :

| : : : :

3d p. (síle),

| he is, or keeps,  
[silent ;

|| : : : :

| : : : :

*Solére.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Solére,* | to be wont. || *éssere sólito,\** | to be wont.

## GERUND.

*soléndo,* | being wont. ||

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. SÓGLIO,	I am wont ;	SOGLIÁMO (solé-	we are wont ;
2d p. SUÓLI,	thou art wont ;	soléte,	you are wont ;
3d p. SUÓLE (só-	he is wont ;	SÓGLIONO,	they are wont.
[le),			

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *fo soléva* or *soléa,* | I was wont.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *fo sóglia,* | that I am wont, or may be wont.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *fo soléssi,* | if I were wont, or should be wont.

*Stupére.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(*Stupére*), | to be astonished.

\* From this form are derived *sóno sólito*, 'I am wont'; *éri sólito*, 'thou wast wont'; &c., which are often used instead of *soglio*; *solévi*; &c.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. (stúpe),	he is astonished.	: : : :	: : : :
----------------	-------------------	---------	---------

—

*Álgere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Álgere), | to be chill.

## II. INDICATIVE.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. (álsi),	I was chill ;	(algémmo),	we were chill ;
2d p. (algésti),	thou wast chill ;	(algéste),	you were chill ;
3d p. (álse),	he was chill ;	(álsero),	they were chill.

—

*Ángere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Ángere), | to afflict.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. (ángo),	it afflicts.	: : : :	: : : :
---------------	--------------	---------	---------

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. (ángéva),	it afflicted.	: : : :	: : : :
-----------------	---------------	---------	---------

*Arrógere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

*Arrógere,* | to add.

GERUND.

*arrogéndo,*

|adding.

PARTICIPLE.

||ARRÓTO, or ARRÓSO,|added.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>arrogámo,</i>	we add ;
3d p. <i>arróge,</i>	he adds ;	<i>arrógono,</i>	they add.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *to arrogéva* or *arrogéa*,|I added.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. ARRÓSI,	I added ;	<i>arrogémmo,</i>	we added ;
2d p. <i>arrogésti,</i>	thou addedst ;	<i>arrogéste,</i>	you added ;
3d p. ARRÓSE,	he added ;	ARRÓSERO,	they added.

*Cápere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Cápere*), | to contain.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. ( <i>cápe</i> ),	it contains.	: . . . .	: . . . .
------------------------	--------------	-----------	-----------

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. ( <i>cápéva</i> ),	it contained.	: . . . .	: . . . .
--------------------------	---------------	-----------	-----------

*Chérere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Chérere), | to ask.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. (chéro),	I ask ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. (chère),	he asks.	. . . . .	. . . . .

*Convèllere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Convèllere,* | to convulse.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

*convèllendo,* |convulsing. || CONVÚLso, |convulsed.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. <i>convèlle,</i>	he convulses ;	<i>convèllono,</i>	they convulse.
------------------------	----------------	--------------------	----------------

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. <i>convèllea</i> [or <i>convèlléa,</i>	he convulsed ;	<i>convèlléano</i> or [ <i>convèlléano,</i>	they convulsed.
---	----------------	--	-----------------

4. — *Future.*

3d p. <i>convèllerà,</i>	he shall or will [convulse ;	<i>convèlleràno,</i>	they shall or will [convulse.
--------------------------	---------------------------------	----------------------	----------------------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. <i>convellésse,</i>	if he convulsed, [or should con- vulse ;	<i>convelléssero,</i>	if they convuls- [ed.
---------------------------	--	-----------------------	--------------------------

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. <i>convelle- [rébbe,</i>	he should, would, [or could con- vulse ; or might convulse ;	<i>convellerébbero,</i>	they should, [would, or could convulse.
------------------------------------	---	-------------------------	---

*Fiédere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

## GERUND.

<i>Fiédere,*</i>	to wound.	<i>fiédéndo,</i>	wounding.
------------------	-----------	------------------	-----------

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>fiédo,</i>	I wound ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. <i>fiédi,</i>	thou woundest ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>fiéde,</i>	he wounds ;	<i>fiédono,</i>	they wound.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io fiédéva</i> or <i>fiédéa,</i>	I wounded.
--	------------

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>fiédéi,</i>	I wounded.
-----------------------	------------

\* Ancient writers said also *féggere*, 'to wound, to strike'; from which are derived the forms *féggono*, 'they strike'; which we meet in the *Ammastramentii*; and *féggia*, 'it strikes,' in the *Inferno* of Dante.



## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>io fiéda</i> [(fiéggia),	that I wound ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>éghi fiéda</i> [(fiéggia),	that he wound ;	<i>fiédano,</i>	that they wound.

## 2. — Imperfect.

1st p. *io fiédessi,* | if I wounded.

*Lúcere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

## GERUND.

*Lúcere,* | to shine. || *lúcendo,* | shining.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>luciamo,</i>	we shine ;
2d p. <i>lúci,</i>	thou shinest ;	<i>lucete,</i>	you shine.
3d p. <i>lúce,</i>	he shines ;	. . . . .	. . . . .

## 2. — Imperfect.

1st p. *io lucéva,* | I shone.

## 3. — Perfect.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>lucémmo,</i>	we shone ;
2d p. <i>lucésti,</i>	thou shonest ;	<i>lucéste,</i>	you shone.
3d p. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .

## 4. — Future.

1st p. *lucéro,* | I shall or will shine.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>lucámo,</i>	that we shine ;
2d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>lucáte,</i>	that you shine ;
3d p. <i>égli</i> ( <i>lúca</i> ),	that he shine ;	( <i>lúcno</i> ),	that they shine.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío lucéssi,* | if I shone or should shine.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *lucertí* (*lucería*), | if I should, would, or could  
[shine ; or might shine.

*Mólcere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Mólcere*), | to assuage.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. ( <i>mólci</i> ),	thou assuagest ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. ( <i>mólce</i> ),	he assuages.	. . . . .	. . . . .

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío</i> ( <i>molcé-</i>	I assuaged ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
[ <i>va</i> ),			
2d . ( <i>molcevi</i> ),	thou assuagest ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>égli</i> ( <i>mol-</i>	he assuaged.	. . . . .	. . . . .
[ <i>céva</i> ),			

*Riédere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Riédere,* | to return.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>riédo,</i>	I return ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. <i>riédi,</i>	thou returnest ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>riéde,</i>	he returns ;	<i>riédono,</i>	they return.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>šo riédéva</i>	I returned ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
[or <i>riédéa,</i>			
2d p. <i>riédévi,</i>	thou returnedst ;	<i>riédévano</i> or <i>rie-</i>	they returned.
3d p. <i>égli riédéva</i>	he returned ;	[ <i>déano,</i>	
[or <i>riédéa,</i>			

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>šo riéda,</i>	that I return ; or	. . . . .	. . . . .
	[may return ;		
2d p. <i>tu riéda,</i>	that thou return ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>égli riéda,</i>	that he return ;	<i>riédano,</i>	that they return.

*Sérpere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

## GERUND.

( <i>Sérpere</i> ),	to creep. ]	( <i>sérpéndo</i> ),	creeping.
---------------------	-------------	----------------------	-----------

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.			Plural.
<b>1. — Present.</b>			
1st p. ( <i>sérpo</i> ),	I creep ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. ( <i>sérpi</i> ),	thou creepest ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. ( <i>sérpe</i> ),	he creeps ;	( <i>sérpono</i> ),	they creep.
<b>2. — Imperfect.</b>			
1st p. <i>ío</i> ( <i>serpé-</i> [ <i>va</i> ]),	I crept ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. ( <i>serpévi</i> ),	thou creptest ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>égli</i> ( <i>serpé-</i> [ <i>va</i> ]),	he crept ;	( <i>serpévano</i> ),	they crept.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

<b>1. — Present.</b>			
1st p. <i>ío</i> ( <i>sérpa</i> ),	that I creep ; or [may creep ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. <i>tu</i> ( <i>sérpa</i> ),	that thou creep ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>égli</i> ( <i>sérpa</i> ),	that he creep ;	( <i>sérpano</i> ),	that they creep.

*Soffólcere* or *Soffólgere*.

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

( <i>Soffólcere</i> or [ <i>soffólgere</i> ],	to support.	( <i>soffólto</i> ),	supported.
--	-------------	----------------------	------------

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

3d p. ( <i>soffólce</i> or [ <i>soffólge</i> ]),	he supports.	. . . . .	. . . . .
---	--------------	-----------	-----------

3. — Perfect.

3d p. ( <i>soffólce</i> ),	he supported.	. . . . .	. . . . .
----------------------------	---------------	-----------	-----------

*Tângere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Tângere), | to touch.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. (tânge),	he touches.	: : : : :	: : : :
----------------	-------------	-----------	---------

*Tôllere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Tôllere), | to take away.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	: : : : :	: : : : :
2d p. (tôlli),	thou takest away;	: : : : :	: : : : :
3d p. (tôlle),	he takes away.	: : : : :	: : : : :

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

2d p. <i>tu</i> (tôlla),	that thou take	: : : : :	: : : : :
3d p. <i>égli</i> (tôlla),	that he take away.	: : : : :	: : : : :

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.
3d p. (tólla) <i>égli</i> ,	let him take [away.	
	. . . . .	. . . . .

---

*Estóllere*, 'to lift'; compound of *tóllere*, is not *defective* but in the *participle*, and in all the persons of the *perfect* of the *indicative*.

---

*Tórperē.*

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Tórperē*), | to become numb.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. (tórho),	I become numb;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. (tórho),	he becomes numb.	. . . . .	. . . . .

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío</i> (tórho),	that I become	. . . . .	. . . . .
	[numb;		
2d p. <i>tu</i> (tórho),	that thou become	. . . . .	. . . . .
	[numb;		
3d p. <i>égli</i> (tórho),	that he become	. . . . .	. . . . .
	[numb.		

*Úrgere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Úrgere*, | to urge.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. <i>úrge</i> ,	he urges.	:::::	:::::
---------------------	-----------	-------	-------

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. <i>égli urgéva</i> [or <i>uréta</i> ,	he urged ;	<i>urgévano</i> or <i>ur-</i>	they urged.
		[ <i>gévano</i> ,	

—

*Vigere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

*(Vígere)*, | to be vigorous.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. ( <i>víge</i> ),	he is vigorous ;	:::::	:::::
------------------------	------------------	-------	-------

4. — *Future.*

3d p. <i>vigerà</i> ),	it will be vigor-	:::::	:::::
	[ous.]		

*Gire.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Gire,* | to go. || *gito,* | gone.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>grámo,</i>	we go;
2d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>gite,</i>	you go.
. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *giva* or *gía,* | I went.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *io gíi,* | I went.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *girò,* | I shall or will go.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>grámo,</i>	that we go, or
2d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>gráte,</i>	[may go;
. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	that you go.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io gíssi,* | if I went, or should go.



## V. CONDITIONAL.

1st p. *giréi* (*giría*),| I should, would, *or* could go; *or*  
[might go.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>gídmo,</i>	let us go;
2d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>gíte,</i>	go ye.
. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .

*Íre.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Fre,*

| to go.

|| *íto,*

| gone.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>íte,</i>	. . . . .
2d p.	. . . . .	. . . . .	you go.
. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío íva,</i>	I went;	. . . . .	. . . . .
. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>égli íva,</i>	he went.	<i>ívano,</i>	we went.
. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .

3. — *Perfect.*

. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. <i>ísti,</i>	thou wentest;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. . . . .	. . . . .	( <i>íro, ír</i> ),	they went.

4. — *Future.*

Singular.			Plural.
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>irémo,</i>	we shall <i>or</i> will
2d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>iréte,</i>	you will go; [go;
3d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>iráno,</i>	they will go.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

3d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>(iríano),</i>	they should, [would, <i>or</i> could [go; <i>or</i> might [go.
---------------	-----------	------------------	---

V. IMPERATIVE.

2d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>íte,</i>	go ye.
---------------	-----------	-------------	--------



*Olire.*

I. INFINITIVE.

*Olire,* | to smell.

II. INDICATIVE.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío olíva,</i>	I smelled;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. <i>olívi,</i>	thou smelledst;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>égli olíva,</i>	he smelled.	<i>olivano,</i>	they smelled.



## EXAMPLES.

*CALÉNDUGLI vie più la salute  
própria che gl' interéssi dé' Semi-  
fontési.* (Stor. Semif. 86.)

Caring more for his own safety  
than for the interests of the Semi-  
phontians.

*Lo cuór che 'n sul Tamígi an-  
cór si CÓLA.* Dant. Inf. 12. —  
CÓLA, cioè CÓLE. (Buti. Com.  
Dant.)

That heart which is yet honored  
on the [bank of the] Thames.

*Quantúnque ólla natura umá-  
na LÉCE — Avér di lúme.* (Dant.  
Par. 18.)

Whatever of light is allowed to  
human nature.

*E dé' nemíci PÁVE e dé' sog-  
gétti.* (Tass. Ger. 1. 83.)

And fears both his enemies and  
his subjects.

*Préso dal nuóvo cánto, STÚPE e  
sfLE.* (Boez. Varch. 3. 12.)

Transported by the new song,  
he is astonished and keeps silent.

*Io dúbito che Vossignoría non  
abbia occupáto il primo luógo  
nella grázia di Sua Beatitúdiné,  
il quále SOLÉVA éssere il mío.*  
(Cas. lett. 19.)

I doubt whether your Lordship  
has not occupied the first place in  
the favor of His Holiness, which  
was wont to be mine.

*ÁLEI ed ársi gran témpo.*  
(Varch. Rim. 3.)

I was chill and burned for a great  
while.

*Tánta paúra e duól l' álma  
trista ANGE.* (Petr. s. 236.)

So much fear and grief afflicts  
my sad soul.

*ARRÓSERO génte nuóva per séi  
Prioráti.* (Giov. Vill. 9. 2.)

They added new people for six  
successive Priorates.

*Se di sapér ch' io sia ti CAL  
cotánto.* (Dant. Inf. 19.)

If it imports thee so much to  
know who I am.

*Chi sa cóme difénde e cóme  
fère, — Soccórsó á' suói perigli  
áltro non CHÉRE.* (Tass. Ger. 2.  
85.)

He who knows how it [the hand  
of God] defends, and how it of-  
fends, asks no other assistance in  
his perils.

*Dópo alcúni stráni avvolgimén-  
ti cascò mórtá, CONVÚLSA e in-  
tirizzíta.* (Red. Vip. 1. 83.)

After some strange whirlings, she  
fell down dead, convulsed and stiff  
with cold.

*"O figliuól," disse, "quál di  
questa gréggia — S' arrésta pun-  
to, giáce pói cent' anni — Sán-  
za arrostársi quándó 'l fóco il  
RÉGGIA."* (Dant. Inf. 15.)

"O son," said he, "whoever of  
this throng stops one instant, lies  
then a hundred years, without any  
ventilation, when the fire smites  
him."

LUCÉVAN gli bechi subì più  
che la stélla. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

Her eyes were brighter than the  
star [of day].

E già il sóle a mézza térsa  
RIÉDE. (Dant. Inf. 84.)

And now the sun returns within  
one hour and a half of noon.

Chi può dir cómo sÉRPA, o  
cómo crésca, — Già da più láti il  
fóco? (Tass. Ger. 12. 45.)

Who can say how the fire  
creeps, and already increases on  
every side.

Perché la vísta túa pur si sov-  
rólae — Laggiù tra l' ómbre trís-  
te smozzicáte? (Dant. Inf. 29.)

Why dost thou fasten thy sight  
below—among the maimed and  
miserable shades?

Io son fáta da Dio, súa mercè,  
tále — Che la vóstra miséria non  
mi TANGE. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

I am so made by God, thanks  
to his grace, that no sufferance of  
your misery touches me.

Che dóna e TÓLLE ógni áltro  
ben fortúna. (Arios. Fur. 27. 84.)

For fortune gives and takes  
away every other good.

Si la gran frónte e le gran cór-  
na ESTÓLLE. (Tass. Ger. 4. 7.)

So high he raises his great brow  
and horns.

A' Gréci — R favellár non TÓR-  
PE infra le lábbra. (Buon. Fier.  
2. 5. 5.)

To the Greeks the speech does  
not languish in their lips.

Che l' úna párt e l' áltra tira  
ed úTRA — Tin tin sonánda con  
si dólce nóta. (Dant. Par. 10.)

In which the one part draws and  
the other pushes, sending out a  
tinkling sound of note so sweet.

Per mostráre che la carità sémp-  
re VIGERA in lóro. (But. Par.  
7.)

To show that charity will al-  
ways be in vigor among them.

E la ingegnósa pécchia al prí-  
mo albóre — GIVA predánda or  
éno or áltro fióre. (Poliz. St. 1.  
26.)

And the industrious bee, at the  
first dawn, was rifling now this  
and now the other flower.

ÍTE, caldi sospíri, al fréddo córe.  
(Petr. s. 120.)

Go, warm sighs, to the cold  
heart.

Mescoláto insiéme con quéllo  
di mólte áltre cóse, che per lo  
giardíno OLIVANO. (Bocc. g. 3.)

Mingled with the scent of many  
other things, which through the  
garden spread their fragrance.

As most of the foregoing *defective verbs* are of rare occurrence, and can be used with propriety only in verse, an *Exercise* upon them has been here thought needless.

## GENERAL REMARKS ON ITALIAN VERBS.

Verbs, which in the *infinitive* end in *äre, ère* or *ëre, ùre*; as *fa'RE*, 'to make'; *téssERE*, 'to weave'; *udì'RE*, 'to hear'; followed by a word beginning with a consonant, except *z* or *s* followed by another consonant, often drop the last vowel; as,

<i>FAR difèsa,</i>	to make defence;
<i>TÉSSER piscèlle,</i>	to weave baskets;
<i>UDIR novèlla,</i>	to hear news.

Those verbs, which, by contraction, end in *ärre, örre, ùrre*; as, *tra'RRÈ* from *träere*, 'to draw'; *impörRE* from *imponere*, 'to impose'; *introdu'RRÈ* from *introducere*, 'to introduce'; drop the last syllable; as,

<i>TRAR non puòte,</i>	he cannot draw;
<i>IMPÖR Léggi,</i>	to impose laws;
<i>INTRODU' costúme,</i>	to introduce a custom.

The *first* and *third* persons *plural* of tenses of verbs ending in *mo, no, ro*; as, *eraváMO*, 'we were'; *parlávano*, 'they spoke'; *cáddero* 'they fell'; often drop the last vowel; as,

<i>ERAVÁM partíti,</i>	we had departed;
<i>PARLÁVAN rádo,</i>	they spoke seldom;
<i>CÁDDER nel bollénte stágnò,</i>	they fell into the boiling lake.

Those *persons* which end in *nno*; as, *saránnò*, 'they will be'; *hánnò*, 'they have'; drop the last syllable; as,

<i>tútti SARÁN serráti,</i>	they shall all be closed;
<i>L' HAN PRÓprio a nóia,</i>	they really hate him.

*Infinitives* of verbs, and the *first* and *third* persons *plural* of their tenses, drop constantly the last vowel

or *syllable*, when they are *followed* by a *conjunctive pronoun*; as,

PARLÁRNE,	to speak of it;
ANDIÁMVI,	let us go thither;
AIUTÁRONMI,	they assisted me;
DIÉDERGLI,	they gave him.

The *third person singular* of the *present* of the *indicative* of the verbs *calére*, 'to care for'; *dolére*, 'to grieve'; *rimanére*, 'to remain'; *solére*, 'to be wont'; *tenére*, 'to hold'; *valére*, 'to be worth'; *volére*, 'to be willing'; *veníre* 'to come'; and the *second person singular* of the *imperative* of the verbs *rimanére*, *tenére*, *veníre*; drop the *last vowel*, especially when they are followed by a *conjunctive pronoun*; as,

se vi CAL DI me,	if you care for me;
DUÓLTI ch' to ti vñce?	does it grieve thee that I conquer thee?
SUÓLMI abbagliáre,	it is wont to dazzle me;
TIÉN dal Cielo,	she holds from Heaven;
RIMÁNTI con nói,	remain with us;
non si VUÓL díre,	it must not be said;
VIÉÑNE quà,	come [thence] hither.

The *first person singular* of the *present* of the *indicative* of the verb *éssere*, 'to be'; and the *second person singular* of the *imperative* of the verb *pónere*, 'to put'; drop the *last vowel*, and when *followed* by the *conjunctive pronoun mi*, they change *n* into *m*; as,

I SON colti,	I am she;
PÓNMI ove 'l Sol uccide i fiori,	put me where the sun kills the flowers.

All forms of verbs followed by a *conjunctive pronoun* (as we have already observed, p. 110, and the foregoing examples clearly show,) are joined to them so as to form one single word. Now, if the form of the verb consists

of one syllable ; as, *è*, 'it is' ; *ha* or *à*, 'it has' ; *dì*, 'tell thou' ; *fà*, 'make thou' ; *sa*, 'he or it knows' ; *io*, 'I go' ; &c. ; or if it bears the accent on the *last syllable* ; as, *dirò*, 'I will tell' ; *mostrò*, 'he showed' ; &c. ; in being joined to a conjunctive pronoun, the *consonant* of the pronoun is *doubled*, and the *accent* when marked is *suppressed* ; as,

<i>evvi caduto dalla memoria?</i>	has it escaped from your mind?
<i>hanmi a tal conditio,</i>	she has reduced me to such a condition ;
<i>avvi letti,</i>	there are beds ;
<i>dimmi, maestro mio,</i>	tell me, my master ;
<i>fatti ben sentire,</i>	make thyself to be heard well ;
<i>sallo Iddio,</i>	God knows it ;
<i>vomene a guisa d'orbo,</i>	I go on like a blind man ;
<i>dirotti perch' t' venni,</i>	I will tell thee why I came ;
<i>mostracci un' ombra,</i>	he showed us a spirit.

## EXCEPTION.

The *g* of the pronoun *gli*, is never doubled, although the accent of the verb is always suppressed ; as,

<i>MANDOGLI dicéndo,</i>	sent him word.
--------------------------	----------------

The forms *trái*, 'thou drawest' or 'draw thou' ; *tráe*, 'he or it draws' ; of the verb *tráere* or *trárre*, 'to draw' ; when joined to a conjunctive pronoun, drop the last vowel, and require that the consonant of the pronoun be doubled ; as,

<i>tranne lo Scricca,</i>	except Scricca ;
<i>trammi di mortál letargo,</i>	it draws me from a mortal lethargy.

Finally, *infinitives* of verbs, like *present participles* in English, are often used in Italian as *substantives* ; as, *il parlare*, 'the speaking' ; *l'abbracciare*, 'the embracing' ; *il favellare*, 'the manner of speaking' ; and then

have a plural, which they form like substantives, by changing *e* into *i*; as,

*li sózzi parlári,*

immodest [speaking or] conversations;

*gli abbracciári,*

the [embracing or] embraces;

*i próprij favellári,*

one's own manners of speaking.

## EXAMPLES.

*Dindansi a lui non vóle —* Before him it does not avail to  
 NASCÓNDER, *nè fuggír, nè far* conceal, to fly, or to make defence.  
*defésa.* (Petr. s. 203.)

*E véde un uom canúto all' ómbre améne —* TÉSSER FISCÉLLE And she sees a hoary old man in  
*alla sua gréggia accénto.* (Tass. the pleasant shade, weaving bas-  
 Ger. 7. 6.) *kets* by the side of his flock.

*Ed élla — Di quéssta cósá udír* And she does not wish to hear  
*non vuóli novélla.* (Bern. Ori. speaking about this thing.  
 l. 9.)

*Trar mólto il débíl fianco óltra* He cannot draw his feeble frame  
*non puóte.* (Tass. Ger. 19. 28.) much further.

*E léggi impórré, ed introdúr* And to impose laws, and to in-  
*costóme, — Ed árti e cúlto di* troduce customs, and arts, and the  
*verácc Núme.* (Tass. Ger. 1. 9.) worship of the true God.

*Nóí eravám partíti già da* We had already departed from  
*élla.* (Dant. Inf. 32.) him.

*Parlaván rado con vóci soávi.* They spoke seldom, but with me-  
 (Dant. Inf. 4.) lodious voices.

*E améndúe — Cádder nel* And both fell into the middle of  
*mézzo del bollénte stágnó.* the boiling lake.  
 (Dant. Inf. 22.)

*Tútti saran serráti — Quán-* They [the sepulchres] shall all  
*de di Josaffá què torneránno.* be closed, when they [the spirits]  
 (Dant. Inf. 10.) shall have once more come here,  
 returning from Jehosaphat.

*Tánto l' han próprio i súbi* So much his own children hate  
*figliuóti a nóia.* (Bern. Rim.) him.



*Ègli mi piàce di PARLÀRNE.*  
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

It pleases me to speak of it.

*ANDIÀNVI, ben mi piàce [di vedérlu].* (Nov. Ant.)

Let us go [thither], I should be glad to see it.

*AUTÀRONNI èlle béne.* (Bocc. g. 4. Proem.)

They assisted me well.

*DIÉDERGLI* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)

They gave him.

*SE VI CAL DI ME, veníte méco sine a palàgio.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.)

If you care for me, come with me as far as the palace.

*Chè avèsti, Anichíno? Duólti costè ch' ío ti vínco?* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)

What ails thee, Anichíno? Does it grieve thee thus that I conquer thee?

*Mórte ha spénto quel sol, che ABBAGLIAR SUÓLMI.* (Petr. s. 311.)

Death has extinguished that sun, which is wont to dazzle me.

*E 'l nóbile ingégnò che DAL CIÉLO — Per grázia TIÉN dell' immortále Apóllò.* (Petr. c. 5.)

And the noble mind which he holds from Heaven, through the favor of the immortal Apolló.

*Státti e rimánti con nói, se tí piàce.* (Vit. SS. PP. 2. 317.)

Stay and remain with us, if thou likest.

*Comàre, égh non si vuól díre.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

Gossip, it must not be said.

*Adriàno dísse: "Sì, viénne quà."* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)

Adrian said: "Yes, come [thence] hither."

*I' son coléi, che tí diè lánta guérre.* (Petr. s. 261.)

I am she, who caused you so much grief.

*PÓMMI óve 'l sol uccíde i fióri e 'l érba.* (Petr. s. 113.)

Put me where the sun kills the flowers and the herbage.

*Óra evvi costè tósto dálla mé-mória cadúto?* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)

Now has it so soon escaped from your mind?

*E' gíta al Cielo; ed hanni a tal condútto.* (Petr. s. 247.)

She is gone to Heaven; and has reduced me to such a condition.

*Ed avvi létti, che vi parréber piú bélli che quelli del Dóge di Vinégia.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

And there are beds, which would appear to you better than those of the Doge of Venice.

*DIMMI, MAÉSTRO mío! DIMMI, SIGNÓRE!* (Dant. Inf. 4.)

Tell me, my master! tell me, my sire!

*Grida forte, FATTI BEN SENTIRE.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 6.)

Cry out loud, make thyself to be heard well.

*SALLO IDDÍO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

God knows it.

*VOMMENE A GUISA D' ÓRBO sènza lúce.* (Petr.)

I go on like a blind man without light.

*DIROTTI PERCH' F' VÉNNI, e quel ch' ío 'ntési.* (Dant. Inf. 2.)

I will tell thee why I came, and what I heard.

*MOSTROCCI UN' ÓMBRA dall' ún canto sóta.* (Dant. Inf. 12.)

He showed us a spirit by itself retired apart.

*E per lettera MANDOGLI DICENDO, che da Brandizio si dovésse leváre.* (Gio. Vill.)

And send him word by letter, that he should depart from Brundisium.

*TRANNE LO SCRÍCCA, — Che sèppe far le moderáte spése.* (Dant. Inf. 29.)

Except Scricca, who knew how to lay out his fortune temperately.

*O' do ío la vóce — Di Dávid? . . . TRAMMI DI MORTÁL LETÁRGO.* (Alf. Saul. 3. 4.)

Do I hear the voice of David? . . . . . It draws me from a mortal lethargy.

*E 'L SÚO PARLÁRE, e 'l bel viso, e le chióme — Mi piáquer sí . . . . .* (Petr. c. 7.)

And her conversation, and her beautiful countenance, and her hair pleased me so . . . . .

*Non hánno paróle nè FAVELLÁRI PRÓPREJ.* (Varch. Ercol. 329.)

They have neither words nor manners of speaking of their own.

*LI SÓZZI PARLÁRI CORRÓMPONO Ì BUÓNI COSTÁMI.* (Albert. c. 10.)

Immodest conversations corrupt good morals.

*Le ténere lágrime, GLI ABBRACCIÁRI, e gli onésti báci.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

The affectionate tears, the embraces, and the chaste kisses.

*O eletti di Dio! gli cùí soffrírí — E giustícia e speránza sán men dúri, — Drizzáte nói vérsó GLI ÁLTI SALÍRI.* (Dant. Pur. 19.)

O ye elect of God! whose sufferings both justice and hope mitigate, direct our way towards the steep ascents.

## CHAPTER XII.

## PARTICIPLES.

ITALIAN participles may be considered either as *forms of the verbs* from which they are derived, or as *adjectives*.

Considered as adjectives, they *follow the same rules* as adjectives with regard to *gender* and *number*.

Present participles end in *e*, are of the common gender, and form the plural by changing *e* into *i*; as,

trionfante, m. & f. s., triumphing;	}	imperatore trionfante, m. s.,
		[triumphing emperor;
		turba trionfante, f. s., triumph-
		[ing militia;
tempestanti, m. & f. p., tempest-tost;	}	uomini tempestanti, m. p.,
		[tempest-tost men;
		navi tempestanti, f. p., tempest-
		[tost ships.

Present participles are sometimes used substantively, as, *amante*, 'lover'; *ascoltanti*, 'listeners'; they follow however invariably the same rule.

Past participles end in *o*, are masculine, and become feminine by changing *o* into *a*; they form the plural by changing *o* into *i*, and *a* into *e*; as,

forato, } pierced;	{	membro forato, m. s., pierced limb;
forata, }	{	gola forata, f. s., pierced throat;
accesi, } kindled;	{	cuori accesi, m. p., kindled hearts;
accese, }	{	fiamme accese, f. p., kindled flames.

Some verbs have a *future participle*; as, *duraturo*, 'to last'; *fatturo*, 'about to do'; *futuro*, 'future', or 'to be'; *perituro*, 'about to perish'; *venturo*, 'about to come'; which follow the same rules as past participles.

Many past participles of verbs of the *first conjugation* are frequently contracted; as, *cérco* for *cercato*, 'search-

ed'; *désto* for *destáto*, 'awakened'; *mózzo* for *mozzáto*, 'cut off'; &c.; these, when contracted, are alike the *first person* of the *present tense* of the *indicative mood*, and are subject to the same inflections as the other participles which are not so; as,

[to] *cérco*, I search;  
[to] *désto*, I awake;  
[to] *mózzo*, I cut off;

*cérco*, searched;  
*désto*, awaken;  
*mózzo*, cut off:

*désto*, awaken;  
*mózza*, cut off;  
*cérche*, searched;

*uómo désto*, m. s., man awakened;  
*máno mózza*, f. s., hand cut off;  
*provinçe cérche*, f. p., provinces  
[sought].

Italian participles agree with substantives in *gender* and *number*; as,

*ménre avvézza*,  
*rággi perdúti*,  
*cóse sapúte*,  
*cóse dette*,

mind accustomed;  
rays lost;  
things known;  
things said.

[For a List of Contracted Participles, see APPENDIX I.]

Italian participles when used as adjectives form their *comparatives* and *superlatives*, according to the rules already given; as,

*lucénte*, bright;  
*nocénte*, guilty;  
*amáto*, loved;  
*riseráto*, revered;  
*intendénte*, versed;

PIÙ LUCÉNTE, more bright;  
MÉNO NOCÉNTE, less guilty;  
MÓLTO AMÁTO, very much loved;  
IL PIÙ RIVERÁTO, the most revered;  
INTENDENTÍSSIMO, very well  
[versed].

## EXAMPLES.

*Sicchè 'l tuo cuor, quantunque  
può, giocòndo — S' appresenti  
àlla TÙRBA TRIONFANTE, — Che  
litta vien: per questo ètera tondo.*  
(Dant. Par. 22.)

So that thy heart should present  
itself as joyful as it can to the tri-  
umphant militia [church], which  
joyfully proceeds through this  
round space.

*Una nave portante UOMINI TEM-  
PESTANTI, PERICOLANTI, SOGGIA-  
CENTI a tanti maròsi. (Giov. Vill.  
l. 11. c. 3.)*

A ship carrying men, wrecked,  
endangered and subject to so many  
storms.

*Quando leggèmmo il disido  
riso — Esser baciato da cotanto  
AMANTE. (Dant. Inf. 5.)*

When we read of those dear lips  
so rapturously kissed by one so  
deep in love.

*Ciò, che avvenuto era, distinta-  
mente narrò, con gran meraviglia  
degli ASCOLTANTI. (Bocc. g. 10.  
n. 4.)*

He related distinctly what had  
happened, to the great wonder of  
the listeners.

*... E qual FORATO SÚO MÈM-  
BRO, e qual MÓZZO — Mostrasse,  
d'agguagliar sarebbe nulla — Il  
modo della nona bólgia sózzo.*  
(Dant. Inf. 28.)

... And if some should have a  
limb pierced, and some cut off, they  
could badly equal the vile mode of  
punishment of the ninth bolge.

*Un altro che FORATA avèa la  
GOLA. (Dant. Inf. 28.)*

Another who had his throat  
pierced.

*Supèrbia, invidia, e avarizia  
sòno — Le tre faville e' hanno i  
CUORI ACCESI. (Dant. Inf. 6.)*

Pride, envy, and avarice are the  
three sparks which have kindled  
their hearts.

*E vède prèso a sè le FIAMME  
ACCÈSE. (Dant. Inf. 23.)*

And sees near her the flames  
kindled.

*E che il príncipe ne nominasse  
dòdici, DURATÙRI cinque ànni.*  
(Dav. Tac. Aud. 2. 40.)

And that the prince should ap-  
point twelve of them, who were to  
last [or remain in office] five years.

*Fatto avèa prima e poi era  
FATTÙRO. (Dant. Par. 6.)*

He had done [that sign], and  
afterward he was to do again.

*Témpo FUTÙRO m' è già nel  
cospétto. (Dant. Pur. 23.)*

Future time is already in my  
presence.

*Più ardentemènte cercano i se-  
colàri le cose PERITÙRE, che noi  
le útili. (Cavalc. Espos. Simb. 1.)*

Men in the world seek with more  
eagerness perishable things, than  
we do useful ones.

*Vigilate d' ogni témpo, sicchè  
siette degni di fuggire l' ira VEN-  
TÙRA. (Cavalc. Frutt. Ling.)*

Be always diligent that you  
may deserve to avoid approaching  
wrath.

*Perchè, essendo DESTO, gli par-  
ve sentirsi scendere nella casa per-  
sone.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

*Un, ch' avéa l' una e l' altra  
MAN MÓZZA.* (Dant. Inf. 28.)

*Avendo CÉRCHÉ molte PROVINCE  
Cristiane.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

*Lassai quel, ch' i' più bramo ;  
ed ho sì AVVÉZZA — La MENTE a  
contemplar sola costei.* (Petr. s.  
93.)

*Avéa la lúna PERDÚTI i RÁGGI  
suoi.* (Petr. c. 38.)

*Io non ho quèste cose SAPÚTE  
dà' vicini, élla medésima méle ha  
MÉTTE.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

*OND' élla féssi — LUCÉNTÉ PIÙ  
assái di quel ch' ell' éra.* (Dant.  
Par. 5.)

*E'ssa tánto più impaziénte  
sostenéva quèsta noia, quánto  
MÉNO si sentiva NOCÉNTÉ.* (Bocc.  
g. 7. n. 5.)

*O MÓLTO AMÁTO cuore, ogni  
mio ufficio verso te è fornito.*  
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

*Tra i quèlli il maggióre e IL PIÙ  
RIVERÍTO da tutti, a quèlle stagió-  
ni, éra Jacopo di Carino.* (Matt.  
Vill. 1. 72.)

*Aristófane è persóna INTEN-  
DENTÍSSIMA — Dèlla scrittúra.*  
(Cecch. Spir. 5. 5.)

Because, being awake, he seem-  
ed to hear people descend into the  
house.

One who had the one and the  
other hand cut off.

Having searched through many  
Christian provinces.

I left what I desire most, and  
I have my mind so accustomed to  
contemplate her alone..

The moon had lost her rays.

I have not heard these things  
from the neighbours, she herself  
has told them to me.

Whence she became far more  
bright than she had been.

She bore this vexation so much  
the more patiently, the less she felt  
guilty.

O very much loved heart, I have  
done towards thee all that I could.

Amongst whom the greatest and  
the most revered by all, at that  
time, was Jacopo di Carino.

Aristophanes is a person very  
well versed in writing.

## EXERCISE XXII.

Before (to the) his eyes they slew her crying  
*Presente suo occhio scendrà ella gridare*  
 for mercy and assistance. To him, residing in Flan-  
 — *mercè aiuto. egli, dimorare Fian-*  
 ders, came a desire | to | hear. Apollo holding that  
*des, venire voglia di sentire. tenere quello*  
 part of the Heaven, which he now traverses, was embel-  
*parte Cielo, — ora trascorrere, abbel-*  
 lishing more (the) their works. In a book which I intend  
*fare più lavoro. libro intendere*  
 | to | make, God granting it, on vulgar eloquence.  
*di fare, Dio concedere —, di volgare eloquenza.*  
 It happened that during the war the queen of France  
 — *Avvenire durare guerra regina Francia*  
 | fell very sick. |  
*ammalò gravemente.*  
 After that the lady had made herself to be  
*Poichè donna avere fare sì pre-*  
 besought very much. They | had | all their heads  
*gare assai. Esse essere tutto — —*  
 surrounded | with | oak leaves — leaves of oak.  
*inghirlandare di — — fonda quercie.*  
 (The) my skin is bronzed (on me), and (like)  
*mio pelle essere abbrunire sopra di io,*  
 my bones are dried up | on account of | the heat.  
*osso essere disseccare per caldo.*  
 Nor were the faults of the Vitellians punished, but  
*Né essere fatta Vitelliano punire, me*  
 well paid | on | the other side. The jealous man  
*ben pagare da altro parte. geloso Messer*  
 had put some little stones in | his | mouth. There  
*avere mettere alcuna pietra s' bocca. —*  
 is a tree more above, | whose fruit | was bitten  
*essere — Legno più su, che essere morders*

by Eve. How many verses I have already spread  
*Éva. Quanto verso — avere già spar-*

about. All were beaten with (the) rods in the middle  
*gere. Tutto essere battersi verga mezzo*

of the square, and had (the) their head cut off. They  
*piazza, avere<sup>2</sup> — testa<sup>3</sup> tagliare<sup>1</sup>. —*

have promised, and sold me to a merchant, who  
*avere<sup>2</sup> promettere<sup>3</sup>,<sup>4</sup> vendere<sup>5</sup> M<sup>11</sup> mercante,*

| is to carry me | to the Sultan in the Levant.  
*dé<sup>5</sup> portar<sup>3</sup> mi<sup>4</sup> | Soldano<sup>1</sup> — Levante.*

Let the ages to come judge from this who  
*— età<sup>4</sup> venire<sup>5</sup> estimare<sup>2</sup> Quinci<sup>6</sup>*

Otho was. The present (age shall hear) and the  
*Ottóno<sup>8</sup> essere<sup>7</sup>.<sup>5</sup> presente<sup>7</sup> mondo<sup>6</sup> udire<sup>4</sup> —<sup>9</sup>*

future ages shall hear (the) my protestations.  
*essere<sup>10</sup> — udire<sup>8</sup> protesto<sup>2</sup>.*

CHAPTER XIII.

ADVERBS.

SIMPLE ADVERBS IN COMMON USE.

*Adverbs of Time.*

<i>Oggi,</i>	to-day ;	<i>diánzi, †</i>	} before ;
<i>ieri,</i>	yesterday ;	<i>innánzi, †</i>	
<i>dománi,*</i>	to-morrow ;	<i>prima,</i>	} just now ;
<i>ora,</i>	} now ;	<i>testè,</i>	
<i>adesso,</i>		<i>póí, §</i>	} afterwards ;
<i>ma, †</i>		<i>dópo,   </i>	
		<i>póscia,</i>	

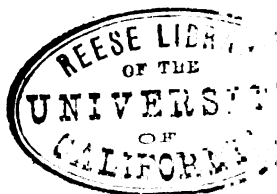
\* From the Latin *de* and *mane*.

† From the Latin *modo*.

‡ From *di*, *in*, and the Latin *ante* : — the Celtic *ant*, 'opposite.'

§ From the Latin *penes* : — the Celtic *bwo* or *bon*, changed into *pen*, 'the last.'

|| From the Celtic *do*, 'after,' and *pen*, 'the last.'





<i>sémpre,*</i>	always ;	<i>tésto,</i>	soon ;
<i>mái,</i>	never ;	<i>présto,</i>	quick ;
<i>spéssó,</i>	} often ;	<i>adágio,</i>	} slow ;
<i>sovénite,†</i>		<i>páссо,</i>	
<i>talvólla,</i>	sometimes ;	<i>perltímpo,</i>	early ;
<i>talóra,</i>	} still ;	<i>tárdi,</i>	late ;
<i>ancóra,‡</i>		<i>già,</i>	already ;
<i>tullóra,</i>	always ;	<i>intánto,</i>	} in the mean time ;
<i>ognóra,</i>	then ;	<i>frattánto,</i>	
<i>allóra,</i>	immediately ;	<i>méntre,</i>	whilst.
<i>súbító,</i>			

### Adverbs of Place.

<i>Qui,</i>	} here, hither ;	<i>altróve,</i>	} elsewhere ;
<i>quà,</i>		<i>altrónde,</i>	
<i>là,§</i>	} there, thither ;	<i>ovínque,</i>	} wherever ;
<i>là,§</i>		<i>dovínque,</i>	
<i>colí,</i>	there, thither ;	<i>sù,</i>	up ;
<i>colà,</i>	} there near you ;	<i>giù,</i>	down ;
<i>costí,  </i>		<i>sópra,**</i>	upon, above ;
<i>costà,  </i>	there ;	<i>sóttó,††</i>	under, below ;
<i>ivi,</i>	thence ;	<i>éntro,††</i>	} within ;
<i>quívi,</i>	from thence ;	<i>déntro,</i>	
<i>índi,</i>	from hence ;	<i>subrí,§§</i>	} without ;
<i>quíndi,</i>	from thence,	<i>subra,§§</i>	
<i>quínici,¶</i>	where you are ;	<i>avánti,   </i>	before ;
<i>costínici,</i>	where ;	<i>díétro,¶¶</i>	behind ;
<i>óve,</i>	} whence ;	<i>accánto,</i>	aside ;
<i>dóve,</i>		<i>allórno,***</i>	around ;
<i>ónde,</i>		<i>rimpétto,</i>	opposite ;
<i>dónde,</i>		<i>vicíno,</i>	near ;
		<i>lúngi,</i>	far ;
		<i>óltre,</i>	beyond.

\* From the Latin *semper* : the Celtic *chemp* or *semp*, 'without,' and *ar* or *er*, 'and.'

† From the Latin *subinde*.

‡ From the Latin *hanc horam*.

§ From the Latin *illuc, illic*.

¶ From the Latin *quo* and *istic, istuc*.

¶ From the Latin *qui* and *hinc*.

\*\* The Latin *super* : — the Celtic *sup*, 'upon.'

†† The Latin *sub, subtus* : — the Celtic *sub*, 'under.'

‡‡ From the Celtic particles *an* and *tre*.

§§ The Latin *foris, foras* : — the Celtic *for*, 'out.'

||| From the Celtic *ab*, 'far,' and *ant*, 'opposite.'

¶¶ From the Celtic *ás*, 'back.'

\*\*\* From the Celtic *tor*, 'circle.'

*Adverbs of Order.*

<i>Prü,</i>	} first ;	<i>indi,</i>	} afterwards ;	
<i>prima,</i>		<i>quindi,</i>		
<i>pöi,</i>	} then ;	<i>appresso,*</i>		} finally.
<i>döpo,</i>		<i>infine,</i>		

*Adverbs of Quantity and Quality.*

<i>Piü,</i>	more ;	<i>tröppo,†</i>	too much ;
<i>méno,</i>	} less ;	<i>guári,‡</i>	not much ;
<i>máncó,</i>		<i>tántó,</i>	so much ;
<i>mólto,</i>	} much ;	<i>póco,</i>	little ;
<i>assái,</i>		<i>affátto,</i>	any at all.

<i>Béne,</i>	well ;	<i>mále,</i>	badly.
--------------	--------	--------------	--------

*Adverbs of Affirmation, Negation, and Doubt.*

<i>Sì,</i>	} yes, indeed ;	<i>davréro,</i>	} indeed, truly, in truth ;
<i>già,</i>		<i>disfáltti,</i>	
<i>cérto,</i>	certainly ;	<i>appúnto,</i>	exactly so.
<i>béne,</i>	well ;		

<i>Nö,</i>	} no, not ;	<i>míca,</i>	} not at all.
<i>non,</i>		<i>púnto,</i>	
<i>mái,</i>	never ;	<i>affátto,</i>	
<i>giammái,</i>			

<i>Fórze,</i>	perhaps ;	<i>préso,</i>	about ;
<i>círca,</i>	about ;	<i>quási,</i>	almost.

*Adverbs of Comparison and Interrogation.*

<i>Sì,</i>	} so, thus ;	<i>méno,</i>	less ;
<i>così,</i>		<i>tántó,</i>	so much, as ;
<i>cóme,</i>	as ;	<i>quántó,</i>	as ;
<i>siccome,</i>	so, as ;	<i>a-gúisa,</i>	} like.
<i>piü,</i>	more ;	<i>a-módo,</i>	

\* From the Celtic *preu*, 'near.'† From the Celtic *tropa*, 'troop,' 'multitude.'‡ From the Latin *gens* : — the Celtic *ger*.

<i>Ove?</i>	} where, } whither? } whence? } when?	<i>chè?</i>	} how? } why? } how much?
<i>dòve?</i>		<i>còme?</i>	
<i>dònde?</i>		<i>perchè?</i>	
<i>quándo?</i>		<i>quánto?</i>	

*Adverbs of Choice and Demonstration.*

<i>Anzi,</i> <i>prima,</i>	} rather;	<i>piuttòsto,</i> <i>piuprèsto,</i>	} sooner.
<i>Ècco,</i> <i>eccoqui,</i> <i>eccoquà,</i>		} behold; } here is, } here are;	

The adverbs *óggi*, 'to-day'; *iéri*, 'yesterday'; and *dománi*, 'to-morrow'; are often used as substantives; as,

<i>quèsto dì d' óggi,</i>	this day;
<i>il giòrno di iéri,</i>	yesterday;
<i>DOMANI è Venerdì,</i>	to-morrow is Friday.

*Mái*, 'never,' is sometimes used in the signification of 'ever'; as,

<i>quái bàrbare fur MÁI?</i>	what savage women were there ever?
<i>così bello còme fu MÁI,</i>	as beautiful as ever was.

*Qui*, *quà*, 'here'; and *quinci*, 'from hence'; indicate a place near the person speaking: *costì*, *costà*, 'there near you'; and *costinci*, 'from thence where you are'; indicate a place near the person spoken to: and *lì*, *là*; *colì*, *colà*; *ivi*, *quiri*, 'there'; *indi*, 'thence', and *quindi*, 'from thence'; indicate a place at a distance from both the person speaking and the person spoken to; as,

<i>così qui mi disse,</i>	so he said to me here;
---------------------------	------------------------

<i>quinci non passa mai anima bubna,</i>	no good spirit ever passes hence ;
<i>tante belle gióvani che costà sóno,</i>	so many beautiful girls as there are there near you ;
<i>ditel costinci,</i>	tell it from where you are ;
<i>nè lù guári lontáno,</i>	not far from thence ;
<i>vublsi così colà dove si púble ciò che si vuble,</i>	so it is willed there, where will is power ;
<i>quívi si piángon li spietáti dánni,</i>	here they wail their merci- less wrongs ;
<i>comandólle che índi non u- scisse,</i>	he ordered her not to go out from thence.

*Si*, 'yes' ; and *no*, 'no' or 'not' ; are sometimes used as substantives ; as,

<i>il mio no,</i>	my negative ;
<i>il suo sí,</i>	his affirmative ;
<i>si e no nel capo mi tenzóna,</i>	yes and no struggle in my head.

*Si* is used sometimes instead of the conjunction *e*, 'and,' and may be rendered in English by the word *both* ; as,

<i>si per la sua fórma, e si per la nobiltà del pádre,</i>	both for his personal beauty and for the nobility of his father.
--	---

*No* sometimes takes the place of a whole sentence ; as,

<i>o voléssero, o no [o non voles- sero],</i>	whether they wished, or not [or they <i>did not wish</i> ] ;
<i>quéllo che to avrò fatto, e quel che no [e quel che non avrò fatto],</i>	what I shall have done, and what not [and <i>what I shall not have done</i> ].

*No* is used only in answering a question, or when used absolutely : *non*, in all other instances, and particularly when the negative is *followed* by a *verb* or another *adverb* ; as,

<i>signór, no,</i>	no, sir ;
--------------------	-----------

NON *farnético*, NO, I do not rave, no ;  
 NO, *per quello non rimarrà il* no, the bargain will not be  
*mercato,* broken off on this account.

*O' ve*, 'where,' in poetry, is often changed into *u'* ;  
 as,

*u' sono i versi?* where are the verses?  
*u' son giunte le rime?* where are the rhymes gone ?

The adverbs *béne*, *già*, *mái*, *míca*, *púnto*, *non*, *écco*,  
 are often used as mere *expletives* ; as,

*sì BÉNE*, yes indeed ;  
*già Dio non vóglia*, may God forbid ;  
*si giáce Mái sempre in ghiaccio*, lies always frozen ;  
*non MÍCA di póco affáre*, not at all of little conse-  
 quence ;  
*non è PÚNTO mórtó*, he is not at all dead ;  
*appéna ancóra NON ha*, he has hardly yet ;  
*écco, non so dir di no*, I cannot say no.

## EXAMPLES.

QUESTO DÌ D' ÓGGI è státo dáto This day has been given to kings,  
*a re, e a soldáni, e a sí fatta gén-* and to sultans, and to similar peo-  
*te.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.) ple.

Quáto mi fu IL GIÓRNO DI What was ordered to me yester-  
*ieri impósto alla súa parténza.* day at your departure.  
 (Red. Lett.)

DOMÁNI È VENERDÌ, e il se- To-morrow is Friday, and the  
*guénte di Sábato.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. following day Saturday.  
 1.)

QUÁI BÁRBARE FUR MÁI, *quái-* What savage women, what Sara-  
*Saracíne?* (Dant. Purg. 23.) cens were there ever ?

Così è óggi BÉLLO il ciélo The sky is as beautiful to-day as  
*CÓME FU MÁI.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.) it ever was.

Qui fúi con Pamfílo, e così Here was I with Pamphílus,  
*quí mi dísse, e così quí facémmo.* and so he said to me here, and so  
 (Bocc. Fiamm. 4.) we did here.

QUINCI NON PÁSSA MÁI ÁNIMA  
BUÓNA. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Hence no good spirit ever passes.

Veggéndo TÁNTE BÉLLE GIÓ-  
VANI CHE COSTÀ SÓNO. (Bocc.  
Filoc. 2.)

Seeing so many beautiful girls  
as are there near you.

DÍTEL COSTÁNCI, *se non, l' arco*  
féro. (Dant. Inf. 12)

Tell it from where you are, or  
else I draw my bow.

NÈ LÌ GUÀRI LONTÀNO *fuór di*  
*via* — *Un suo bel vélo lasciáva*  
*fuggéndo.* (Bocc. Vis. Am. 20.)

Not far from thence flying out of  
the way, she left a beautiful veil.

VUÓLSI COSÌ COLÀ DÓVE SI  
PUÓTE — *Ciò che si vuóle, e più*  
*non dimandáre.* (Dant. Inf. 3.)

So it is willed, there where will  
is power, and ask no more.

QUÍVI SI PIÁNGON LI SPIETÁTI  
DÁNNI: — *Quívi è Alessáandro, e*  
*Dionísio féro* — *Che s'è Sicilia*  
*avér dolorósi ánni.* (Dant. Inf.  
12.)

Here they wail their merciless  
wrongs: here dwells Alexander  
and the fierce Dionysius, who  
wrought for Sicily many years of  
woe.

COMANDÓLLE CHE ÍNDI NON  
USCÍSSE *infino a tanto, che égli*  
*che l' avéa rinchiúta, non l' a-*  
*prísse.* (Passav. 78.)

He ordered her not to go out  
from thence until he, who had  
shut her up there, should come to  
open for her.

Tánto válc IL MÍO NO QUÁNTO  
IL SÚO SÌ. (Cecch. Esalt. cr. 2.  
3.)

My negative is as good as his  
affirmative.

Chè sÌ E NO KEL CÀPO MI TEN-  
ZÓNA.\* (Dant. Inf. 8.)

For yes and no struggle in my  
head.

Era Cimóne, sÌ PER LA SÚA  
FÓRMA, e sÌ PER LA NOBILTÀ e  
ricchézza del pádre, quási nóto a  
ciascúno. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Cimon was, both for his person-  
al beauty, and for the nobility and  
wealth of his father, known to al-  
most every one.

Fo vi dirò QUÉLLO CHE ÍO AVRÒ  
FÁTTO, E QUÉI CHE NO. (Bocc.  
g. 2. n. 1.)

I will tell you what I shall have  
done, and what not.

Il famigliáre rispóse: 'SIGNÓR,  
no.' (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

The domestic replied: 'No, sir.'

Disse allóra Pirro: 'NON FAR-  
NÉTICO, NO; Signóra.' (Bocc.)

Then Pyrrhus said: 'I do not  
rave, Madam, no.'

NO, PER QUÉLLO NON RIMAR-  
RÀ IL MERCÁTO. (Bocc. g. 7. n.  
2.)

No, the bargain will not be brok-  
en off on this account.

\* 'At war 'twixt will and will not.' — SHAKSPERE, *Measure for Measure.*

U' SÓNO I VÉRNI, U' SON GIÚN- TE LE RIME? (Petr. c. 46.)	Where are the verses, where are the rhymes gone?
<i>Disse Calandrino</i> : 'Sì BÈNE.' (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)	Calandrino replied: 'Yes in- deed.'
<i>Il negromante disse</i> : 'Già DÍO NON VOGLIA.' (Bocc. g. 10. n. 5.)	The necromancer replied: 'May God forbid.'
<i>U'na parte del mondo è, che si GIACE — MAI SÉMPRE IN GHIÁC- CIO.</i> (Petr. c. 5.)	There is a part of the world which lies always frozen.
<i>U'na ne dirò, NON MÍCA d' UÓ- MO DI POCO AFFARE.</i> (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)	I will tell you one, not at all of a man of little consequence.
<i>Teddálo NON È PUNTO MÓRTO.</i> (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)	Tedaldo is not at all dead.
<i>Questo nostro fanciúlo, il quále APPÉNA ANCÓRA NON HA quattór- dici anni.</i> (Bocc. g. 4. n. 8.)	This boy of ours, who is hardly fourteen years old yet.
<i>ÉCCO, io NON SO ÓRA DIR DI NO.</i> (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)	I cannot now say no.

## COMPOUND ADVERBS.

Compound adverbs are formed of an *adjective*, and the substantive *mén-te*,\* 'manner.' *Mén-te* being of the *feminine* gender requires that the adjective be of the *same* gender; as,

<i>sávia</i> , wise;	SAVIA-MÉNTE, in a wise manner, or wise- [ly;
<i>onéstá</i> , honest;	ONESTA-MÉNTE, in an honest manner, or [honestly;
<i>cortése</i> , courteous;	CORTESE-MÉNTE, in a courteous manner, [or courteously;
<i>prudénté</i> , prudent;	PRUDENTE-MÉNTE, in a prudent manner, [or prudently;

\* From the Celtic *ment*, 'manner.' It is from this language that the Latins borrowed their *mens*, and formed such expressions as *forti mente*, *clará mente*, *devotá mente*, &c., which afterwards passed to the Italians, as *edna mén-te* in Boccaccio (g. 9. n. 9.); *affettuósa mén-te* in Ariosto (Orl. Fur.); *etérna mén-te* in Monti (Bassv.) may prove; although they are now generally written in one word; as, *fortimén-te*, 'strongly'; *chiaramén-te*, 'clearly'; *devotamén-te*, 'devoutly'; *sacramén-te*, 'wisely'; *affettuosamén-te*, 'affectionately'; *eternamén-te*, 'eternally'; &c.

If the adjective ends in *le*,\* or *re*, for the sake of euphony the *final e* is dropped in the formation of the adverb ; as,

*festevole*, merry ; FESTEVOLO-MENTE, merrily ;  
*particoláre*, particular ; PARTICULAR-MENTE, particularly.

Sometimes the adverb is an *adjective only*, without the addition of the word *mente* ; as,

CHIARO [for *chiaramente*], clearly ;  
 DOLCE [for *dolcemente*], sweetly.

The following are the

*Adjectives commonly used as Adverbs. †*

<i>Forte</i> ,	very strong ;	<i>tánto</i> ,	so much ;
<i>sodo</i> ,	fast, hard ;	<i>ráro</i> ,	rarely ;
<i>álto</i> ,	softly ;	<i>sólo</i> ,	only ;
<i>básso</i> ,	low ;	<i>tútto</i> ,	all ;
<i>cérto</i> ,	certainly ;	<i>póco</i> ,	little ;
<i>triste</i> ,	sadly ;	<i>mólto</i> ,	much ;
<i>létto</i> ,	merrily ;	<i>tróppo</i> ,	too much ;
<i>dólce</i> ,	sweetly ;	<i>bé'lo</i> ,	handsomely ;
<i>chiáro</i> ,	clearly ;	<i>buóno</i> ,	very well ;
<i>scúro</i> ,	darkly ;	<i>apérto</i> ,	openly ;
<i>schíello</i> ,	candidly ;	<i>sicúro</i> ,	surely ;
<i>piáno</i> ,	low, softly ;	<i>diméssó</i> ,	lowly ;
<i>lénto</i> ,	slowly ;	<i>sómmezzo</i> ,	humbly ;
<i>prónto</i> ,	readily ;	<i>vicíno</i> ,	near ;
<i>rátto</i> ,	speedily ;	<i>lontáno</i> ,	far.

\* This rule with regard to adjectives ending in *le* is not without exceptions, as may be seen in the following passages :

*Similmente il mal seme d' Adámo.* In like manner Adam's evil brood.  
 (Dant. Inf. 3.)

*Io la rivoglio starsi umilmente.* I see her remaining humbly.  
 (Petr. s. 211.)

*Umilmente vi priego.* (Boec.) I humbly entreat you.

*Cósa rádo nólla usata per lo comúne, ma utilmente fatta.* (Matt. Vill. 9. 28.) A thing seldom used by the community, but usefully done.

† In order to know when these words are *adjectives*, and when *adverbs*, it is sufficient to observe whether, in the discourse, they are added to, or used for, a sub-



Adverbs formed of an *adjective*, and the adverbs *prêsto*, *sovênte*, *pertêmpo*, *adâgio*, *volentiêri*, *affatto*, may be used in a *comparative* and *superlative* degree, which is formed thus :

<i>tranquillamênte,</i>	tranquilly ;
<i>PIÙ tranquillamênte,</i>	more tranquilly ;
<i>tranquill-ISSIMA-mênte,</i>	very tranquilly :
<i>felicemênte,</i>	happily ;
<i>MÊNÔ felicemênte,</i>	less happily ;
<i>felic-ISSIMA-mênte,</i>	very happily :
<i>schietto,</i>	candidly ;
<i>PIÙ OR MÊNÔ schietto,</i>	more or less candidly ;
<i>schiett-ISSIMA-mênte,</i>	very candidly :
<i>liêto,</i>	merrily ;
<i>PIÙ OR MEN liêto,</i>	more or less merrily ;
<i>liet-ISSIMA-mênte,</i>	very merrily :
<i>volentiêri,</i>	willingly ;
<i>PIÙ OR MÊNÔ volentiêri,</i>	more or less willingly ;
<i>volentier-ISSIMA-mênte,</i>	very willingly.

The adverbs *bêne*, 'well'; and *mâle*, 'badly'; in their comparative and superlative, make,

<i>MÉGLIO,</i>	better ;
<i>OTTIMAMênte</i> or <i>benissimo,</i>	very well :
<i>PÉGGIO,</i>	worse ;
<i>PESSIMAMênte</i> or <i>malissimo,</i>	very badly.

*Assái*, in the superlative makes *assaissimo*, 'very much.'

stantive, or not ; for, if so, they are adjectives ; otherwise they are adverbs. Thus, in these examples,

*S' i' meritái di vói assái o pôco.* If I deserved of you either much or little.  
(Dant. Inf. 28.)

*Ségno manifestó di pôco sêno.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.) A manifest sign of little wisdom.

*E per pôco, se tu mi dicéssi, che te andássi di qui a Perétola, te créde ch' te vi andréi.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) However little you should ask me to go to Peretola, I believe that I should go there.

the word *pôco* is an *adverb* in the first instance, where it modifies the verb *meritái* ; but it is an *adjective* in the other two, where, in the first, it is added to the substantive *sêno*, and, in the second, stands for a substantive ; being equivalent to *pôco cosa*, 'little thing.'

*Béne, póco, adágio, píano, tánto*, as we have already observed at p. 86, have also a *diminutive*,

<i>beníno,</i>	pretty well ;	<i>adagíno,</i>	} very slow ;
<i>pochíno,</i>	} very little ;	<i>pianíno,</i>	
<i>pocolíno,</i>		<i>tantíno,</i>	} very little.
<i>pochettíno,</i>		<i>tantínetto,</i>	

*Béne*, has also an *augmentative* : *benóne*, 'very well.'

## ADVERBIAL PHRASES IN COMMON USE.

<i>Di súbito,</i> suddenly ;	<i>a bello stúdio,</i> } designedly ;
<i>di bóito,</i> presently ;	<i>a bella pósta,</i> }
<i>in un baléno,</i> in an instant ;	<i>a méno che,</i> unless ;
<i>in un báttor d' ócchio,</i> in the [twinkling of an eye ;	<i>se non che,</i> † except ;
<i>póco fa,</i> a little while ago ;	<i>da per tútto,</i> } everywhere ;
<i>fra póco,</i> in a short time ;	<i>per ógni dóve,</i> }
<i>un pézzo fa,</i> some time ago ;	<i>ad un tráttó,</i> at once ;
<i>délie rólte,</i> at times ;	<i>di rádo,</i> } seldom, rarely ;
<i>all' improvviso,</i> unexpectedly ;	<i>di ráro,</i> }
<i>alla ventúra,</i> at random ;	<i>infátti,</i> } in fact ;
<i>all' avventre,</i> in future ;	<i>difáttó,</i> }
<i>a minúto,</i> in detail ;	<i>di gran lúnga,</i> by far ;
<i>a vicénda,</i> by turns ;	<i>a lúngo andáre,</i> in the long [run, in time ;
<i>a gára,</i> emulously ;	<i>a piú potére,</i> with all one's [might ;
<i>a cáso,</i> by chance ;	<i>di mála vóglia,</i> unwillingly ;
<i>a tórtó,</i> wrongly ;	<i>a un di préssó,</i> almost ;
<i>per accidénte,</i> } by chance ;	<i>d' allóra in quà,</i> since that time ;
<i>per sórte,</i> }	<i>d' óra innánzi,</i> henceforth ;
<i>per avventúra,</i> }	<i>in quél méntre,</i> in or at that time ;
<i>pur tróppo,*</i> too truly, too well ;	<i>di púnto in púnto,</i> exactly ;
<i>di fréscó,</i> newly ;	<i>di púnto in bíanco,</i> point blank ;
<i>di buón gráto,</i> willingly ;	<i>di quándo in quándo,</i> } now
<i>suo malgrádo,</i> against one's will ;	<i>di tráttó in tráttó,</i> } and
<i>senza méno,</i> positively ;	<i>di tánto in tánto,</i> } then ;
<i>quánto prima,</i> very soon ;	<i>il piú per lo piú,</i> on the whole, [at the utmost.
<i>a súa pósta,</i> } at one's	
<i>a súa sénno,</i> } pleasure ;	
<i>da stáno,</i> seriously ;	

\* An elliptical expression for the phrases *é PUR TRÓFFO véro*, 'it is too true'; *é PUR TRÓFFO béne*, 'it is too well.'

† An elliptical expression for the phrase *SE NON fósse*, or *fósse státo*, *CHÉ*, 'were it not,' or 'had it not been.'

## EXAMPLES.

- SAVIAMENTE** si spediscono loro ambasciata. (Gio. Vill. l. 8. c. 1) Thus wisely they delivered their message.
- Mangiano** co' forestieri **FESTE-VOLMENTE**. (Dav. Gerid.) They eat merrily with strangers.
- L'altre donne, udita Pampinea, avien già PIÙ PARTICOLARMENTE tra se cominciato a trattar del módo.** (Bocc. Introd.) The other ladies, having heard Pampinea, had already begun more particularly to devise the means.
- Assai la vice lor CHIARO l'abbia.** (Dant. Inf. 7.) Their words reveal their fault too clearly.
- Cóme DOLCE parla, e DOLCE ride.** (Petr. s. 126.) How sweetly she speaks, and how sweetly she smiles.
- Quando pure manca delle cose nel luógo, dice noi siamo, ce n'andiamo in un altro FELICISSIMAMENTE.** (G.lli. Circ. l. 31.) Whenever things are wanting in the place where we are, we go to another very happily.
- Nessun visse giammai più di me LIÉTO.** (Petr. s. 7.) None ever lived more happy than I.
- Questa grassezza non impedisce il ricevimento del metallo, anzi l'accetta PIÙ VOLENTIERI dell'altra terra.** (Ben. Cell. Oref.) This richness [of this earth] does not prevent the metal being received in it; on the contrary it receives it better than the other earth.
- Io m'asterrò VOLONTIERISSIMAMENTE da così fatta preparazione.** (Red. Cons.) I would abstain very willingly from such preparation.
- Il quäle già OTTIMAMENTE la lingua sapéa.** (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.) Who knew already the language very well.
- Tu ti pirti MALÍSSIMO con colui al quäle tu desideravi che gli Déi nócciano.** (Varch. Sen. Ben. 6.) Thou conductest thyself very badly with him whom thou wishest that the gods should injure.
- Oh, mi rallegrò ASSAÍSSIMO — Vedervi vivo e prosperoso.** (Ainbr. Cof. 5. 6.) Oh, I rejoice pretty much to see you alive and prosperous.
- Egli stan pur BENÍN con quelle borse — Di raso al collo.** (Buon. Fier. Introd.) They look pretty well with those bags of satin hung to their necks.

*Piacciavi di prestare un poco* — *A questa penna lo stan-*  
*cato dito.* (Dant. Rin.) May you be pleased to lend to  
 this pen for a very little while  
 your wearied finger.

*Conviene un tantinétto lo-*  
*darmi.* (Salvin. Pros. Tosc. 1.) You ought to praise me a little.

*Assicuratevi, che io vi porto un*  
*benóne grandóne.* (Car. lett. 1.) Be assured, that I love you  
 hugely.

## EXERCISE XXIII.

Where | wast | thou yesterday a little before (to the)  
 | *fósti* | *giór-*  
 day? Where dost thou run? What fury urges thee  
 no? — — <sup>2</sup> *córrere*<sup>1</sup>? *fúria sospingere*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
 on? Where dost thou go? Wait for me. Ah!  
 —? — — <sup>2</sup> *andáre*<sup>1</sup>? *Aspettare* — *Deh!*  
 how | can this be? | I have seen him here  
 | *dée poter questo*<sup>2</sup> *ésser*<sup>1</sup>? | *avére*<sup>2</sup> *vedére*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup>  
 to-day. There | must be | there some places | covered |  
<sup>4</sup> — — | *convicné*<sup>2</sup> *ésser*<sup>3</sup> | <sup>1</sup> — — *luógo* | *nascóso* |  
 with small bushes and grass, where the hares now  
*virgúlto* *érba,* *lépre*  
 and then | can | conceal themselves. It is not  
 | *póssano*<sup>2</sup> | *nascóndere*<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup>. — *éssere*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
 this the earth, which I touched before. The boy  
*terréno,* *toccáre* <sup>4</sup> *fanciúlló*<sup>6</sup>  
 not answering him, he began to call more loud.  
<sup>1</sup> *rispóndere*<sup>2</sup> — <sup>2</sup>, *cominciáre* *chiamáre*  
 You are now already old and | can | ill endure  
*éssere* *vécchio* | *potéte* | *durár*  
 fatigue. Without | thinking | at-all, as if he | had |  
*fatiga.* *Sénza* | *pensáre*<sup>2</sup> | <sup>1</sup>, *quási*<sup>2</sup> — | *avésse*<sup>6</sup> |  
 thought a long time — (much time), he | said. | | It  
*pensáre*<sup>6</sup> — — — <sup>4</sup> *témpo*<sup>6</sup>, — | *dísse.* | | —

behoves (to) me | to go soon to Florence. Ah! yes,  
*conviene<sup>1</sup>* <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> | *andare* *Firenze.* *Deh!* ,

for the love of God | let it be done | quick. I  
*per* *amór* *Dio* | *fácciasi* |

received, a little while ago, letters from Messina.  
*ricevere,* , *léttera*

| Go, | and | see | who cries above. How (much)  
*Vá,* | *and* | *védi* | *piangere* .

far are we from (the) our quarters? | See | who  
*éssere<sup>1</sup>* <sup>2</sup> | *contráda?* | *Vedéts* |

knocks below. He hoped | to | be able to have  
*picchiare* . — *Speráre* | *di* | *potér* *avére*

the city of Lucca easily. He | goes | running here  
*città* <sup>4</sup> *Lucca* <sup>5</sup> *agésóle<sup>1</sup>.* | *va* | *córrere*

and there as if he were crazy. The good woman  
*se* — *éssere* *pázzo.* *buóno* *femmina*

returned | after | (the) her chest, and carried it back  
*ritornáre* | *per* | *(the)* <sup>2</sup> *chest,* <sup>3</sup> *riportáre<sup>4</sup>* <sup>5</sup> —

there from-whence she had taken it. Tell me, whence  
<sup>4</sup> <sup>7</sup> — *avére<sup>8</sup>* *leváre<sup>10</sup>* <sup>9</sup> . *Dí'* ,

art thou, and of what condition art thou?  
*éssere* — , *condixióne* — — ?

And he | replied | : "I am | from | Syria, and I am  
*rispóse* | : " *éssere* | *di* | *Siria,* — *éssere*

a king." He acts carelessly. And | having been  
*re.*" *operáre* *trascuráto.* And | — —

put | in prison, he | was | cruelly treated by them.  
*messo* | *prigióne,* — | *fu* | *crudéle<sup>2</sup>* *trattáre<sup>4</sup>* <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> .

Observe it more particularly. And having departed  
*Osserváre* — *particoláre.* — *partito* —

(himself) from thence, he | went | (thence) to Naples,  
*si* , — | *andò<sup>2</sup>* | *ne<sup>1</sup>* *Nápoli,*

where he | lived | most tranquilly.  
*vissé* | *tranquillo.*

## CHAPTER XIV.

## PREPOSITIONS.

## PREPOSITIONS IN COMMON USE.

<i>Di,*</i>	of ;	<i>accanto,</i>	} aside, about,
<i>a,†</i>	to, in, at ;	<i>allato,</i>	} near, by ;
<i>da,‡</i>	from, by, on, at ;	<i>attorno,</i>	} about, around ;
<i>in,§</i>	in, on, upon ;	<i>dall'orlo,</i>	} on, upon, about ;
<i>con,</i>	with ;	<i>addosso,</i>	} on, upon, about ;
<i>per,</i>	through, by, on ac- [count of, in order [to, for ;	<i>presso,</i>	} near, almost ;
<i>su,</i>	} on, upon ;	<i>vicino,</i>	} near, almost ;
<i>sopra,</i>		<i>lungi,</i>	
<i>sotto,</i>	under ;	<i>lontano,</i>	} at, with, in com- [parison with ;
<i>fra,</i>	} amongst, within ;	<i>appo,  </i>	
<i>tra,</i>		} in, in about ;	<i>verso,¶</i>
<i>infra,</i>	before ;		<i>oltra,</i>
<i>intra,</i>	after ;	<i>oltre,</i>	} till, until, as far as ;
<i>prima,</i>	} before, in the presence of ;	<i>lungo,</i>	
<i>dopo,</i>		<i>fino,</i>	} opposite ;
<i>anzi,</i>		<i>sino,</i>	
<i>innanzi,</i>		<i>infino,</i>	} except, excepted ;
<i>dinanzi,</i>	<i>insino,</i>	} except, excepted ;	
<i>avanti,</i>	<i>contra,**</i>		} opposite ;
<i>davanti,</i>	<i>contro,</i>	} without ;	
<i>dietro,</i>	<i>a-fronte,††</i>		} except, excepted ;
<i>didietro,</i>	<i>rimpetto,‡</i>	} opposite ;	
<i>entro,</i>	<i>dirimpetto,</i>		} without ;
<i>dentro,</i>	<i>senza,‡‡</i>	} except, excepted ;	
<i>fuora,</i>	<i>salvo,</i>		} except, excepted ;
<i>fuori,</i>	<i>eccetto,</i>	} except, excepted ;	
<i>infuori,</i>	<i>tranne,</i>		} except, excepted ;

\* From the Celtic *de*, a sign of qualification.† From the Celtic *da*, 'at.'‡ From the Celtic *a*, 'near,' 'joining with.'§ From the Celtic *en*, 'in.'|| From the Latin *apud* : — Celtic *ap*, 'joint,' 'attached.'¶ From the Latin *versus* : — Celtic *guero*, 'to turn.'\*\* From the Celtic *con*, a sign of opposition ; and *track*, 'side.'†† From the Latin *frons* : — Celtic *fren*, 'before.'‡‡ (And *senza* and *sax*, used by old writers,) from the Latin *sine* : — Celtic *sy*, 'want.' 'privation.'

<i>circa,</i> <i>incirca,</i> <i>intórno,</i>	} about, almost;	<i>secóndo,</i> <i>giústa,*</i> <i>giústo,</i> <i>confórme,</i>	} according.†

The nature of most of the foregoing prepositions is such as to admit of no other significations than those which have been given above; there are however some which are made, in Italian, to express so many different relations, that it has been thought indispensable to add the following remarks:

The preposition *di* may express a relation of *possession*, of *extraction*, or of *qualification*; as,

<i>il denáro DI LÚI,</i>	his own money;
<i>figlio DEL FIGLIUÓLO,</i>	son of the son;
<i>la státua DI MÁRMO,</i>	the statue of marble;
<i>uómini di GRÓSSO INGÉGNO,</i>	men of dull understanding.

*A* may express a relation of *attribution*, of *end* or *tendency of action*, or of *proximity* to a *place*, *person*, or *thing*; as,

<b>AL TÉMPO dell' IMPERADÓRE</b>	in the time of the emperor
<b>FEDERÍGO PRÍMO,</b>	Frederic the First;

\* From the Latin *justa*: — Celtic *ajusta*, 'to adjust.'

† Some of the foregoing prepositions are the same as the adverbs; as, *adpra*, *sólo*, *prima*, *apprésso*, *dópo*, *déntra*, *difúori*, &c., which, when they are followed or preceded by a noun, a pronoun, or a verb which they govern, are always prepositions, but otherwise are adverbs. Thus in the following examples,

<i>Or via méttiti avéanti, io ti verrò apprésso.</i> (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)	Now go before, I will follow after thee.
--	--

<i>Dalla madre della giovane prima, e apprésso da Currádo soprapprésso fúrono.</i> (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)	They were first surprised by the mother of the girl, and afterwards by Currádo.
--	---

the word *apprésso*, in the first instance is a *preposition* because it governs the pronoun *ti*; but in the second is an *adverb* because it governs no other word.

VÉNGA A VEDÉRLA,	let him come to see her ;
<i>chè il vóstro lignággio</i> AN-	that your lineage should be-
DÁSSE A POVERTADE,	come poor ;
TROVÁNDOSI A PARÍGI,	finding himself in Paris ;
ALLÀTO ÁLLA DÓNNA,	by the side of the lady ;
s' AVVICINÁVA ÁLLE TÉRRE	he approached the land of the
<i>del Dúca,</i>	Duke.

*Da* may express a relation of *derivation*, of *departure*, of *separation*, of *dependence*, of *difference*, of *designa-*  
*tion*, of *destination*, of *similitude*, of *fitness*, *aptitude*, or  
*capability*, of *presence*, of *passage through* or *by*, of *un-*  
*certainty of number*, of *time*, of *place*, of *loneliness*, or of  
*instrumentality* ; as,

CINO DA PISTÓIA,	Cino of Pistoia ;
<i>le grázie</i> VÉNGONO DA DÍO,	favors come from God ;
TORNÁNDO DA PARÍGI,	returning from Paris ;
PÀRTITI DA COTÉSTI,	go away from those spirits ;
m' ALLONTÁNA DAL VÓLGO,	she separates me from the
	common people ;
DIFÉNDE DA QUÉL PÚNTO,	it hangs upon that point ;
ALTR' UÓMO DA QUÉLLO <i>che</i>	a different man from what I
<i>io sòno,</i>	am now ;
<i>Gugliélmo</i> DAL CÓRNO,	William [surnamed] from the
	Horn ;
<i>cóse</i> DA MANGIÀRE,	eatable things ;
uómo DA PÓCO,	a foolish man ;
<i>avánti</i> DA SÈ,	before himself ;
DÁLLA CÁSA <i>délla</i> dónna,	before the house of the lady ;
DA NOVÁNTA MÍLA <i>bócche,</i>	above ninety thousand mouths ;
DA GRÁN TÈMPO,	a long time since ;
DA QUÉSTA PÀRTE,	to this side ;
DA <i>me</i> , DA <i>per vái,</i>	of me ; by yourself ;
<i>edificáto</i> DA TARQUÍNIO,	built by Tarquin.



Besides the above relations, the preposition *da* is often used to express with brevity *the habitation of a person*; and is equivalent to the words *a casa, a casa di*, 'to one's house';\* as,

DA [OF <i>a casa di</i> ] <i>me</i> ,	to me [or to my house];
DA [OF <i>a casa di</i> ] <i>lui</i> ,	to his house;
DA [OF <i>a casa di</i> ] <i>lei</i> ,	to her house;
DAL [OF <i>a casa del</i> ] <i>Cardinale</i> ,	to the Cardinal's.

*In* expresses a relation of *interiority*, or a relation between two objects of which the one *contains*, and the other *is contained*; as,

<i>dormiva IN UN LETTICCIUOLO</i> ,	he slept in a little bed;
<i>corsi IN MERCATO</i> ,	I ran to the market;
<i>era IN PARIGI, IN UN ALBERGO</i> ,	there were in Paris, in a hotel.

The Italians consider as *containing-objects*, the *divisions of time*, the *parts of one's body*, the *apparel we wear*, and sometimes even the *surface of bodies*; as,

<i>cento novelle raccontate IN DIECI GIORNI</i> ,	one hundred stories related in ten days;
<i>pudica IN FACCIA</i> ,	chaste in her countenance;
<i>la corona IN FRONTE</i> ,	the crown on the forehead;
<i>IN ABITO di peregrini</i> ,	in pilgrim's dress;
<i>gli furono stracciati i panni IN DOSSO</i> ,	all the clothes he had on were torn;
<i>IN MARE, e IN TERRA</i> ,	on the sea, and on the land.

*Con* expresses a relation of *company*; and the Italians

\* The Italian has derived this usage from the Celtic language, in which the word *de* was a synonyme of, and often used for, the word *cas* or *case*, 'habitation';—the *cases* of the Italian.

generally consider as *companions* the *instruments*, the *means*, or the *manner* in which an action is performed, —

<i>vengo a desinare</i> CON VOI,	I come to dine with you ;
<i>che</i> CON lo STILE, CON la PÉNA, o COL PENNÉLLO non dipignesse,	which with his style, with his pen, or with his pencil, he could not paint ;
<i>facéndogli cénno</i> CÓLLA MÀNO,	making him a sign with her hand ;
<i>incominciò a dire</i> CON UMIL VÓCE,	began to say with a humble voice ;
CON FATICA <i>gli rispose</i> ,	with difficulty he replied to him.

*Per* expresses the *way through*, or the *means by*, which a thing is done ; the *reason why*, or the *object for* which, it is done ; it expresses also a relation of *space* with regard to *time* or *place* ; and a relation of *instrumentality*, of *qualification*, of *destination*, or of *distribution* ; as,

PER ME <i>si va n�lla citt� dolente</i> ,	through me you go into the city of woe ;
PER LI CUI PRIEGHI <i>costui sovvenni</i> ,	at whose entreaties I have aided this one ;
non PER CRUELTA <i>della donna amata</i> , ma PER SOV�RCHIO FUOCO,	not on account of the cruelty of the beloved lady, but on account of an excessive flame ;
vo P� DOLCI FORTI,	I go for the sweet fruit ;
PER PI� DI <i>dimorando</i> ,	remaining for several days ;
PER li CAMPI, PER le VIE, e PER le CASE <i>morieno</i> ,	through the fields, through the streets, and in the houses they died ;
<i>promessi a me</i> PER lo VERACE DUCA,	promised to me by my sure guide ;
� <i>riputato</i> PER SANTO,	he is reputed a holy man ;
<i>farei</i> PER Currado <i>ogni cosa</i> ,	I would do for Currado every thing ;
<i>dieci ducati</i> . PER uno,	ten ducats each.

*Per* is also used to *entreat* or to *swear by* ; as,

PER <i>quella páce che per voi</i>	by that peace which is pre-
<i>s' aspétti, ditene . . . . ,</i>	pared for you, tell us . . . . ;
TI GIURO, PER <i>quello amore</i>	I swear to thee, by that love,
<i>che io ti porto, che . . . . ,</i>	which I bear thee, that . . . .

The preposition *a*, as it was mentioned p. 37, followed by a word beginning with a *vowel* takes a *d* after it, and *su* followed by another *u* takes an *r* ; *fuora*, *fuori*, and *fino*, *sino*, *insino*, *insino*, followed by a word beginning with a *consonant* often *lose* the *last vowel* ; and *verso*, *loses* the *last syllable* ; as,

AD UOMO <i>d' intellétto,</i>	to a man of sound judgment ;
SUR UN' <i>ásse,</i>	upon a board ;
INFIN DA <i>óra,</i>	henceforth ;
VOLTA VER <i>me,</i>	turned towards me.

#### EXAMPLES.

<i>E con IL DENARO DI LUI il</i>	And paid him with his own
<i>pagò. (Bocc.)</i>	money.

<i>Fu FIGLIO DEL FIGLIUOLO del</i>	He was son of the son of the
<i>Conte d' Artése. (Gio. Vill. 11.</i>	Count of Artois.
<i>54.)</i>	

<i>LA STATUA DI MÁRMO, o di</i>	The statue of marble, or of
<i>légno, o di métallo, rimása per</i>	wood, or of metal, remaining there
<i>memória d' alcun valénte úomo.</i>	in memory of some great man.
<i>(Dant. Conviv.)</i>	

<i>Érano UÓMINI e fémmine DI</i>	They were men and women of
<i>GRÓSSO INGÉGNO. (Bocc. Intr.)</i>	dull understanding.

<i>AL TÉMPO DELL' IMPERADÓRE</i>	In the time of the emperor
<i>FEDERÍGO PRÍMO. (Bocc. g. 10.</i>	Frederic the First.
<i>d. 9 )</i>	

<i>Chi nol créde, VÉNGA égli A</i>	He who does not believe it, let
<i>VEDÉRLA. (Petr. s. 210.)</i>	him come to see her.

- A vóti non vi sarèbbè onóre*  
**CHE 'L VÓSTRO LIGNÁGGIO ANDÁSSA A POVERTÀDE.** (NOV. ART. 46.)  
 It would not be honorable to you, that your lineage should become poor.
- TROVÁNDOSI ÉGLI ÚNA VÓLTA A PARÍGI in pòvero státo.** (Bocc.)  
 Finding himself once in Paris in poor circumstances.
- ALLÁTO ÁLLA DÓNNA la póse.** (Bocc.)  
 By the side of the lady he put it.
- ÁLLÉ TÉRRE DEL DÚCA s' AVVICINÁVA.** (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)  
 He approached the lands of the Duke.
- Écco CÍN DA PISTÓIA.** (Petr. Fr. Am. 4.)  
 Behold Cino of Pistoia.
- DA DÍO VÉNGONO LE GRÁZIE.** (Bocc. g. 10. n. 3.)  
 Favors come from God.
- DA PARÍGI a Génova TORNÁNDÓ.** (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)  
 Returning from Paris to Genoa.
- E tu che sé' costì, ánima víva, — PÁRTITI DA COTÉSTI che son mórti.** (Dant. Inf. 3.)  
 And thou who standest there, living spirit, go away from those spirits who are dead.
- Quésta sóla DAL VÓLGO M' AL-LONTÁNA.** (Petr. c. 19.)  
 She alone separates me from the common people.
- DA QUÉL PÚNTO — DIPÉNDE il Cielo e tútta la nátura.** (Dant. Par. 28.)  
 Heaven and nature hangs upon that point.
- Quand' éra in pártè ALTR' UÓM DA QUÉL CH' I' SÓNO.** (Petr. s. 1.)  
 When I was in part a different man from what I am now.
- Il quále avéa nóme GUGLIÉLMO DAL Córno.** (Gio. Vill. 9.)  
 Who was named William [surnamed] from the Horn.
- Le cóse DA MANGIÁRE non si stímáno dall' úso o dall' affétto, ma dálla consuetúdi-ne.** (Varch.)  
 Eatable things are not valued from their use or their taste, but from habit.
- Tu sé' piú DA PÓCO che Máo, che si lasciáva fuggíre i pésci cotti.** (Lasc. Spir. 6. 7.)  
 Thou art more foolish than Maso, who let the cooked fish escape from him.
- Póco AVÁNTI DA SÈ, víde le céneri rimáse a' Áttila, flagélló di Dio.** (Bocc. Flocc. 4.)  
 At a little distance before himself, he saw the ashes left by Attila, the scourge of God.
- Dal fráte partitosi, DÁLLA CÁSA n' andò DÉLLA DÓNNA.** (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)  
 Leaving the friar, he passed before the house of the lady.

*Stimavasi avère in Firenze DA NOVANTA MILA BOCCHE, tra uomini, femmine, e fanciulli.* (Gio. Vill. 11. 93.)

It was thought that there were in Florence about ninety thousand mouths, among men, women, and children.

*Già DA GRAN TEMPO nullo più ne conosci.* (Alf. Fil. 4. 2.)

It is already a long time since thou forgettest them all [thy pangs of remorse].

*Si dura poca fatica a farlo inchinare DA QUESTA O DA QUELLA PARTE.* (Mach.)

One meets with very little difficulty in making him lean to this or to that side.

*Pòscia rispòse lui: "DA ME non venni."* (Dant. Pur. 1.)

Then he replied to him: "I did not come of myself."

*Vói ve ne avvedrète DA PER vói nel leggere questo frammento.* (Red. lett.)

You will perceive it by yourself in reading this fragment.

*Il campidoglio fu EDIFICATO DA TARQUINIO, assediato DA Brenno, e liberato DA Camillo.* (Vanz.)

The capitol was built by Tarquin, besieged by Brennus, and delivered by Camillus.

*Torna qui DA ME.* (Mach.)

Return here to me [or to this my house].

*Adunque, andatevene DA LUI.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

Go, then, to his house.

*Essendo Salabaetto DA LUI andato una sera.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.)

Salabaetto having gone one evening to her house.

*DAL CARDINAL di Morone, appena arrivato, andarono tutti gli ambasciatori.* (Pall.)

All the ambassadors went to the Cardinal of Morone's, as soon as he arrived.

*IN UN LETTICCIUOLO assai piccolo si DORMIVA.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

He slept in a very small bed.

*Io corsi IN MERCATO per dirtelo.* (Mach. Com.)

I ran to the market to tell it to you.

*ERA IN PARIGI, IN UN ALBERGO, alquanti mercatanti Italiani.* (Bocc.)

There were in Paris, in a hotel, a number of Italian merchants.

*Intendo di raccontare CENTO NOVELLE. RACCONTATE IN DIECI GIORNI.* (Bocc. Intr.)

I intend to relate one hundred stories, to be related in ten days.

*PUDICA IN FACCIA, e nell'andare onesta.* (Dant. Pur. 3.)

Chaste in her countenance, and modest in her carriage.

*Fulgeoami già IN FRÓNTE LA  
CORÓNA.* (Dant. Pur. 8.)

The crown shone already on my forehead.

*IN ÁBITO DI PEREGRÍNI.* (Bocc.)

In pilgrim's dress.

*Tutti i PÁNNI GLI FÚRONO IN  
DÓSSO STRACCIÁTI.* (Bocc. g. 1.  
n. 1.)

All the clothes he had on were torn.

*Comandaménto ebbero dal lor  
comúne d' abbáttere la fórza dé'  
Vniziáni IN MÀRE, E IN TÈRRA.*  
(Gio. Vill.)

They were ordered by their community to destroy all the forces, which the Venetians had on the sea, and on the land.

*Signóre, io VÉNGO A DESINÁRE  
CON VÓI, e CON LA VÓSTRA BRIGÁ-  
TA.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

Sir, I come to dine with you, and with your company.

*Núna cósà fu, che égli CON  
LO STÍLE, CON LA PÉNNNA, O COL  
PENNÉLLO NON DIPIGNÉSSE símile  
a quélla.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 6.)

There was nothing, that he could not with his style, with his pen, or with his pencil, paint like it.

*E P' invitò ad avvicinársi, FA-  
CÉNDUGLI CÉNNO CÓLLA MÁNO.*  
(Bocc.)

And she invited him to approach, making him a sign with her hand.

*Incominciò CON ÚMIL VÓCE A  
DÍRE — Quél ch' io vó' all' últro  
cánto differire.* (Arios. Fur.)

He began to tell with an humble voice what I choose to leave for the next canto.

*Títo, non restándo di piángere,  
CON FATICA COSÌ GLI RISPOSE.*  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Titus, without ceasing from weeping, with difficulty replied to him thus.

*PER ME SI VA NÉLLA CITTÀ  
DOLÉNTÉ, — PER ME SI VA nell'  
etérrno dolóre, — PER ME SI VA  
tra la perdúta génte.* (Dant.  
Inf. 3.)

Through me you go into the city of woe, through me you go into eternal pain, through me you go amongst the damned spirits.

*Dónna scése dal ciélo, PER LI  
CÚI PRIÉGHI — Délla mia com-  
pagnía COSTÚI SOVVÉNNI.* (Dant.  
Purg. 1.)

A dame descended from heaven, at whose entreaties I have aided this one with my guidance.

*NON PER CRUDELTA' DÉLLA  
DÓNNA AMÁTA, MA PER SOVÉR-  
CHIO FUÓCO NÉLLA MENTE CONCÉT-  
TO da póco regoláto appetíto.*  
(Bocc. Proem.)

Not on account of the cruelty of the beloved lady, but on account of the excessive flame kindled in his mind by an unruled passion.

*Láscio lo féle, e VO PÉ' DÓLCI  
FÓMI — PROMÉSSI A ME PER LO  
VERÁCE DÚCA.* (Dant. Inf. 16.)

I leave the gall, and go for the sweet fruit promised to me by my sure guide.

*Quasi PER PIÙ DÌ DIMORÁNDO.*  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

There remaining for several days.

*PER le VILLE, e PER LI CÀMPI ;  
PER LE VIE, e PER LE CÀSE, dè  
dà e di nòtte, morieno.* (Bocc.  
Introd.)

Through the villages, and through the fields ; through the streets, and in the houses, both by day and by night, they died.

*Esséndo státo un pèssimo uó-  
mo in vita, in mórtè È RIPUTÁTO  
PER SÁNTO.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

Having been a very bad man in his life, he is in death reputed a holy man.

*Io FARÉI PER CURRÁDO ÓGNI  
CÓSA, che io potèssi.* (Bocc. g. 2.  
n. 7.)

I would do for Currado every thing that I could.

*E diè lóro DIÉCI DUCÁTI PER  
ÚNO.* (Bocc.)

And gave them ten ducats each.

*O spíríti elétti, — PER QUÉLLA  
PÁCE — Ch' io crédo CHE PER VÓI  
tútti s' ASPÉTTI, — DÍTENE dóve  
la montágnà giáce.* (Dant. Pur.  
3.)

O chosen spirits, for that peace, which, as I deem, is for all of you prepared, tell us where the mountain low declines.

*Io TI GIÚRO PER QUÉLLO in-  
dissolúbile AMÓRE CHE IO TI  
PÓRTO, CHE il quárto mése non  
uscirà, che tu mi rivedrái.* (Bocc.  
Fiam. 2.)

I swear to thee by that indissoluble love, which I bear thee, that the fourth month will not pass, ere thou wilt see me again.

*Non páre indégno AD UÓMO  
D' INTELLÉTTO.* (Dant. Inf. 2.)

It does not seem undeserved to a man of sound judgment.

*Battúti in SUR UN' ÁSSE col  
colléllò.* (Dav. Colt.)

Beaten upon a board with a knife.

*O'gni áltra cósà, sia vóstra li-  
beraménte INFÍN DA ÓRA.* (Bocc.  
g. 4. n. 4.)

Let every other thing be freely yours henceforth.

*VÓLTA VER ME, mi dísse.* (Fi-  
renz. Asin. 525.)

Turned towards me, she said.

## EXERCISE XXIV.

He gave us the key of his house. This gentle  
 — *dàre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> *chiàve*<sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>7</sup> *càsa*.<sup>6</sup> <sup>2</sup> *gentìl*<sup>3</sup>  
 lady being very often urged by the messages and  
*dónna*<sup>2</sup> *Èssere*<sup>1</sup> *stimolàre* *ambasciàta*  
 by the entreaties of each one of them. Both in-  
*priègo* *in-*  
 flamed by a fierce vengeance, turned towards (to) these  
*fiammàre* — *feròce*<sup>2</sup> *vendètta*<sup>1</sup>, *riòlgerè*  
 walls (the) their sword still warm | with | civil blood.  
*mùro* — *fèrro* *càlido* | *di* | *civile*<sup>2</sup> *sàngue*<sup>1</sup>.  
 | It is believed that he is | the richest prelate that  
 | *Si crède* *che sia* | *ricco* *prelato* that  
 there is in — | has | the church of God (from)  
 — — — | *àbbia* | *chiesa* *Dio*  
 the Pope excepted. They were all garlanded | with |  
*Pàpa* *èssere tutto inghirlandàre*<sup>5</sup> *di*<sup>1</sup> |  
 leaves of oak. We will give thee so many blows  
*fòglia*<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> *quercia*<sup>4</sup>. *dàre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> —  
 | with | one of these iron bars — bars of iron  
 | *d* | — — — *pàlo* *fèrro*  
 upon (the) your head, that we will make thee fall  
 — — — *fàre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *cadè-*  
 down dead. I have a farm very near to the bank  
*re* *mòrto*. *avère* *podère* *riva*  
 of the river. Then came the time of going out  
*fiume*. *venire* *tèmpo* *uscire*  
 against the prince, who was approaching (himself)  
*prince*, *avvicinàre*<sup>2</sup>  
 already to the lands of the Duke. They made him  
*terra* *Duca*. — — —  
 — he was put to sit down just opposite to the  
 — *Èssere mettere* *sedere*  
 door of the room, whence the abbot was obliged  
*uscio* *cámara*, *abate* *dotere*



to come out into the | dining room |. Here thou  
 — *uscire* | *sála a mangiáre* |.

seest a temple by-the-side | of | the sea. The em-  
*vedére* *témpio* | *a* | *máre.* <sup>2</sup> *im-*

peror being one day between these two sages, the  
*perátóre*<sup>2</sup> *Éssere*<sup>1</sup> *giórno* — *advio,*

one stood on the right | of him |, and the other  
*stáre*<sup>2</sup> *a*<sup>2</sup> — *déstra*<sup>4</sup> | *gh*<sup>1</sup> |,

on the left. Having gone out from the city they  
*a* — *sinistra.* — *Uscire* *città* —

put themselves on the way. He put a ring on  
*méttere*<sup>2</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup> — *via.* — *Méttere* <sup>5</sup> *anéllo*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>

the finger | of | Torello. Looking fixedly in his  
 — *dito*<sup>2</sup> | *a*<sup>2</sup> | <sup>4</sup> *Guardáre.* — — —

face — at him fixedly in the face, in order to  
 — — — *fiso* *viso,*

see whether he was speaking seriously. Having  
*vedére* *se* *díre* — — —

put (himself) on a great black pelisse, he arranged  
*Méttere* — *néro*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>, — *acconciáre*<sup>4</sup>

himself in that in such a manner, that he looked like  
<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> *guisa,* — *parére*

a bear. With the best harmony in the world all  
*orso.* *migliór* *páce* *móndo* *tutto*

(and) four dined together. He began with the  
*quáttro desináre insiéme.* — *incominciáre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup>

piece of wood to give him the greatest blows in  
*stécca*<sup>2</sup> <sup>6</sup> *dáre*<sup>7</sup> *GI*<sup>1</sup> *maggióre* *cóppe*

the world, now on (the) his head, and then on  
*móndo,* — *tésta,* *e*

(the) his sides. I wish first to go to Rome, and  
 — *fiáncó.* *volére* — *andáre* *Róma,*

there to see him (the) whom thou sayest to be —  
 — *vedére* *díre* — —

that he is — vicar of God on earth. There sounded  
*éssere* *vicário* *Dio* *térta.* — *Suonáre*

through the city a wonderful report, that the tombs  
*città mirabile<sup>2</sup> voce<sup>1</sup>, <sup>3</sup> <sup>5</sup> tomba<sup>6</sup>*

of the Scipios | were discovered | . By that steep  
<sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> *Scipione<sup>9</sup> si fùssero scoperte<sup>4</sup> | . scoscésò*

way I arrived at the tombs of the valorous race.  
*via — giungere avèllo valoroso<sup>2</sup> stirpe<sup>1</sup>.*

Neither by letter did she dare | to | let him hear it.  
*Nè lettera — ardire | di | fare <sup>2</sup> sentire<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup>.*

Not seeing through the wood any path. You will  
*vedere selva sentirò. ri-*

receive a hundred (of them) for every-one. He went to  
*cèvere<sup>2</sup> — cento<sup>5</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> ciascuno<sup>4</sup>. andare*

Ravenna in-order-to speak to the army. No, I never  
*parlare armata. , — —*

will mention it — will not mention it ever. With  
*dire<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>4</sup>.*

a low voice he replied thus. This ferocious man,  
*— basso voce — rispondere<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>. ferocè<sup>2</sup> uomo<sup>1</sup>,*

having usurped with (the) frauds and with (the) | acts of  
*— usurpare frode | vio-*

violence | a throne not his own, sought | to | pre-  
*lenza | trono —, cercare<sup>8</sup> | di<sup>9</sup> | man-*

serve it with (the) terror and with (the) cruelty.  
*tenere<sup>10</sup> <sup>11</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> terrore<sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> crudeltà<sup>7</sup>.*

Without any fail I promise to thee, upon (the) my  
*alcun fallo promettere<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>, mio*

faith, that within — among a few days thou wilt  
*fè, — — poco di tro-*

find thyself with me. I wish that we should de-  
*verè<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>2</sup>. volere — scèn-*

scend (until) there below.  
*dere giù.*

## CHAPTER XV.

## CONJUNCTIONS.

## CONJUNCTIONS IN COMMON USE.

<i>E,</i>	and ;	<i>non già,</i>	{ not at all, not
<i>o,</i>	or, either ;	<i>non sólo,</i>	{ indeed ;
<i>nè,</i>	nor, neither ;	<i>non che,</i>	{ not only,
<i>se,</i>	if, whether ;	<i>purchè,</i>	{ not merely ;
<i>ma,</i>	} but ;	<i>a méno chè,</i>	{ provided ;
<i>però,</i>		{ that ;	{ unless ;
<i>che,</i>	{ yet, neverthe-	<i>ánzi che,</i>	{ rather, sooner ;
<i>ppure,</i>	{ less ;	<i>ánzi che no,</i>	{ rather than not,
<i>già,</i>	{ yet, already ;		{ rather so than
<i>ánzi,</i>	{ nay, rather, on	<i>sì,</i>	{ otherwise ;
<i>anche,</i>	{ the contrary ;	<i>così,</i>	{ so, thus ;
<i>anco,</i>	} also, even ;	<i>cóme,</i>	{ as, like ;
<i>eziandio,</i>		{ also, even, a-	<i>siccome,</i>
<i>altresi,</i>	{ gain ;	<i>sicchè,</i>	{ wherefore ;
<i>ancóra,</i>	{ yet, neverthe-	<i>così che,</i>	{ so, so that ;
<i>epppure,</i>	{ less ;	<i>talchè,</i>	{ since ;
<i>ossia,</i>	} or, either ;	<i>giacchè,</i>	{ that is ;
<i>ovvéro,</i>		{ or, either ;	<i>ciò,</i>
<i>oppúre,</i>	} neither,	<i>ciò a dire,</i>	{ at least ;
<i>nemméno,</i>		{ not even ;	<i>vále a dire,</i>
<i>nemmáncó,</i>	} neither,	<i>alméno,</i>	{ besides,
<i>neppure,</i>		{ not even ;	<i>almáncó,</i>
<i>neanche,</i>	} if ever,	<i>di più,</i>	{ then,
<i>tampóco,</i>		{ if indeed ;	<i>inóltre,</i>
<i>nettampóco,</i>	{ if however ;	<i>oltrecchè,</i>	{ wherefore,
<i>se mái,</i>	{ unless, except,	<i>oltracciò,</i>	{ whereupon ;
<i>seppure,</i>	} but ;	<i>d' altrónde,</i>	{ therefore, for
<i>se però,</i>		{ but ;	<i>dúnque,</i>
<i>se non,</i>		<i>adúnque,</i>	
<i>se non che,</i>		<i>ónde,</i>	
		<i>lánde,</i>	
		<i>quíndi,</i>	
		<i>perciò,</i>	

<p><i>accìo,</i> <i>acciocchè,</i> <i>affine,</i> <i>affinchè,</i> <i>chè,</i> <i>perchè,</i> <i>poichè,</i> <i>posciachè,</i> <i>perocchè,</i> <i>imperocchè,</i> <i>perciocchè,</i> <i>imperciocchè,</i> <i>conciosiacchè,</i> <i>quantunque,</i> <i>sebbène,</i> <i>benchè,</i> <i>comechè,</i> <i>avegnachè,</i> <i>ancorchè,</i> <i>contuttochè,</i> <i>nonostante,</i> <i>nondimèno,</i> <i>nientedimèno,</i> <i>con tutto ciò,</i> <i>non per tanto,</i> <i>non per questo,</i> <i>ciò non ostante,</i> <i>ciò non di mèno,</i> <i>tuttavia,</i></p>	<p>in order that, to the end that;  for, why? because; because, since, as, after;  because, whereas, as, since;  although;  even that;  still, nevertheless, notwithstand- ing, for all that;</p>	<p><i>in sòmma,</i> <i>in fine,</i> <i>sia che,</i> <i>vuòti,</i> <i>del resto,</i> <i>per altro,</i> <i>tánto,</i> <i>quánto,</i> <i>quándo,</i> <i>quand' anche,</i> <i>in guisa che,</i> <i>in módo che,</i> <i>in maniera che,</i> <i>di módo che,</i> <i>di maniera che,</i>  <i>intánto,</i> <i>frattánto,</i>  <i>mèntre,</i> <i>mentrecchè,</i> <i>sálvo,</i> <i>eccetto,</i> <i>tranne,</i> <i>fuorchè,</i> <i>forse,</i> <i>óra,</i></p>	<p>in short, in conclusion; whether, or, either; otherwise, besides; as; as; when; even when;  so that, in such a manner;  in the mean time, mean- while, whilst; whilst, whilst that;  save, saving, except;  perhaps; now.*</p>
---	---	--	---

Many of these conjunctions, as *nondimèno*, *ciò non ostante*, &c. contain in themselves a *pronoun*, a *preposition*, an *adverb*, &c.; but, from their office of *joining* sentences together, they are commonly reckoned amongst conjunctions, though in fact they are but *conjunctive phrases*.

\* Some of these conjunctions might be mistaken for *prepositions* or *adverbs*, and the conjunction *CHI*, for the *relative pronoun* *CHI*, 'who,' 'which,' 'that'; their character however will soon be ascertained by considering the office which they perform in a sentence. Thus in the following examples:

*Idèno mi ha fatto tanta grazia, che to*  
*À'NZI la mia morte ho veduto alcuni de'*  
*miei fratelli.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

God has granted me such a favor as to enable me to see some of my brothers before my death.

*Attempatella era, e À'NZI superba che*  
*no.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)

She was a little advanced in years and rather proud.

*Io era ben così, ma non per natura,*  
*À'NZI per una infermità.* (Bocc. g. 3.  
n. 1.)

I was indeed not naturally so, but by a disease.

the word *anzi* is a *preposition* in the first instance because it governs *la mia morte*:

The conjunction *ne* is sometimes used in the signification of *e*, 'and'; as,

*dólcì nÈ cãri,* sweet and dear;  
*parláì nÈ scrissi,* I spoke and wrote.

---

*Ma* is often used in the signification of *più*, 'more'; as,\*

*MA che úno,* more than one;  
*non MA che di sospiri,* no more than sighs.

---

*Che* is sometimes used in the signification of *fra* or *tra*, 'between'; as,

*méglio di diecimila dóbbre,* more than ten thousand pis-  
*CHE in gróte, e CHE in* toles between jewels and  
*denãri,* money.

---

*Púre* is often used in the signification of *ancóra*, 'also,' 'even'; *sólo*, *solaménte*, 'only'; as,

*È PÚRE peccáto,* it is also a sin;  
*s' to avéssi avúto PÚRE un* had I had even the slightest  
*pensierázzo,* thought;  
*nátura non avéa tvi PUR di-* nature had not only painted  
*pínto,* there.

---

The conjunctions *quantúnque*, *sebbéne*, *benchè*, *come-  
 chè*, *avvegnachè*, *ancorchè*, *contuttochè*, are generally followed by one of the following conjunctions, *púre*,

it is an *adverb* in the second because it *modifies* the verb *era*: and it is a *conjunction* in the last because it *connects* the clause (*era*) *per natura* with (*era*) *per una infirmità*.

And in the following:

*Cominciarono a dire, CHE quello, CHE* They began to say that what he had  
*egli aveva risposto, non veniva a dir né-* replied was without meaning.  
*la.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 9.)

the *first che* is a *conjunction*, because it *connects* *dire*, with what follows; and the *second* is a *relative pronoun*, because it *refers* to *quello*, its *antecedent*.

\* From these and similar examples it seems as if the Italian *ma* were derived from the Latin *magis*: — the Celtic *mai*, 'great.'

*nonostante, nondiméno, nientediméno, con tutto ciò, ciò non ostante, ciò non di méno, non pertanto, non per questo tuttavia*; as their *correlatives*; as,

COMECHÈ *varie cose gli andasse per lo pensiero di fare, PÙRE deliberò . . . .*, although it passed through his mind to do various things, yet he determined . . . .

Often the *correlative* conjunction is suppressed; as,

*Arrignuccio, CONTUTTOCHÈ fosse mercatante, era [nondiméno] un fiero uomo,* Arrignuccio, although a merchant, was a proud man.

*Non solo, non che*, are followed by *ma, ma ancora*; as,

*sta bene di così fatte cose NON CHE gli amici, MA gli stranieri di ripigliare,* it is well to reprimand for such things, not only friends, but even strangers;

*il vino NON SÓLO conforta il natural calore, MA ANCÓRA chiarifica il sangue,* wine not only assists the natural heat, but it clears the blood.

*Non che* is often an *elliptical expression* for the phrase *NON solaménte dico CHE, ma*, 'I say not only that, but'; as,

*spéro trovar pietà NON CHE perdóno [NON SOLAMÉNTE DICO CHE spéro trovar perdóno, MA pietà],* I hope to find not only pardon, but pity;

*avrèbbero potuto muóver la guerra, NON CHE difendersi [DICO NON SOLAMÉNTE CHE avrèbbero potuto difendersi, MA muóver la guerra],* they could have not only defended themselves, but even waged war.

*Tánto* is followed by *quánto*, and sometimes by *che*; corresponding to the English words *both . . . and*; as,

TÁNTO *crudi* QUÁNTO *cotti*, both raw and cooked;  
TÁNTO *másci*, CHE *femmine*, both men and women.

The conjunctions *e, o*, followed by a word beginning with a *vowel* often take a *d* after them; and *púre, ep-púre, oppúre, alméno, nemméno, óra, ancóra*, followed by a *consonant* drop the *last vowel*; as,

<i>dáre, ed áspre balláglie,</i>	hard and severe battles;
<i>od ómbra, od úomo cértó,</i>	whether a spirit or a living man;
<i>che il cuór mi préme giù PUR pensándo,</i>	which to think of oppresses my heart;
<i>ch' ANCÓR lassù vedére spéra,</i>	which he hopes to see also there in heaven.

*Púre, già, óra*, are sometimes mere *expletives*; as,

<i>la cósá andò PUR così,</i>	the thing passed just so;
<i>fóssero éssi pur GIÀ dispósti,</i>	would that they were disposed;
<i>ÓRA le parole fúrono assái,</i>	now the words were many.

## EXAMPLES.

*Se gli ócchi subí ti fur DÓLCI, NÈ CARI.* (Petr. c. 40.) If her eyes were sweet and dear to thee.

*Quánto di léi PARLAI, NÈ SCRÍSSI.* (Petr. s. 296.) How much I spoke and wrote of her.

*Or cúi chiámi tu Iddío? Égli non è MA CHE ÚNO.* (Nov. Ant. 78.) Now whom callest thou God? There is no more than one.

*Quívi, secóndo che per ascol-táre, — Non aréa piánto, MA CHE DI SOSPIRI — Che l' aúra etérna facévan tremáre.* (Dant. Inf. 4.) There, as well as my ear could note, no other plaints were heard than sighs, which caused the eternal air to tremble.

*Donólle CHE IN GIÓIE, e CHE in vasellaménti d' óro e d' ariénto, E CHE IN DENÁRI, quéllo che vólse méglío d' áltre DIECIMÍLA DÓBBRE.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.) He gave her between jewels, and gold and silver vases, and money, what would be worth more than ten thousand pistoles.

*E pognámo, che non lo faccía-mo a malízia, púre nientedimé-no È PÚRE PECCÁTO.* (Cavalc. Pungil. 195.) And let us suppose, that we do not do it through malice, yet nevertheless it is also a sin.

O, S' IO AVÉSSI AVÚTO PÙRE UN PENSIERÚZZO di fàre l' una di quelle còse, che vói dite, credéte vói, che Iddío m' avésse tanto sostenúta? (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

Oh! had I had even the slightest thought of doing one of those things which you say, do you believe that God would have assisted me?

NON AVÉA PUR NATÚRA ÍVI DIFÍNTO, — Ma di soavità di mille odóri — VÍ facéa un incógnito indistínto. (Dant. Pur. 7.)

Nature not only had painted there, but of the sweetness of a thousand smells had made an unknown, undistinguishable fragrance.

COMECHÈ VÁRIE CÓSE GLI ANDÁSSE PER LO PENSIÉRO DI FÁRE, PÙRE, vedéndo il re, DELIBERÒ . . . . . (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

Although it passed through his mind to do various things, yet, seeing the king, he determined . . . . .

ÉRA ARRIGÚCCIO, CONTUTTOCHÈ FÓSSE MERCATÁNTE, UN FIÉRO UÓMO. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.)

Arriguccio, although a merchant, was a proud man.

A vói STA BÉNE DI COSÌ FÁTTE CÓSE, NON CHE GLI AMÍCI, MA GLI STRANIÉRI DI RIPIGLIÁRE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

It is well for you to reprimand for such things, not only your friends, but even strangers.

IL VÍNO NON SÓLO CONFÓRTA IL NATURÁL CALÓRE, MA ANCÓRA CHIARÍFICA IL SÁNGUE tórbido. (Cresc. 4; 48; 2.)

Wine not only assists the natural heat, but it clears also the turbid blood.

SPERO TROVÁR PIETÀ, NON CHE PERDÓNO. (Petr. s. 1.)

I hope to find not only pardon, but pity.

Tánte miglídáa armáti, a piè e a caválla, AVRÉBBERO, con áltro cápo, POTÚTO MUÓVER LA GUÉRRÁ, NON CHE DIFÉNDERSI. (Dav. Stor.)

So many thousand armed men, on foot and on horseback, would have, under another captain, not only defended themselves, but waged war.

I frútti sòno saníssimi TÁNTO CRÚDI, QUÁNTO CÓTTI. (Red. lett. 2.)

Fruits are very wholesome, both raw and cooked.

Dimórano salúbreménte in quell' ária di collína, TÁNTO MÀSGHI, CHE FÉMMINE. (Lib. Cur. Malatt.)

In that mountain air both men and women live in very good health.

Le détte nazióni ébbero DÚRE, ED ÀSPRE BATTÁGLIE. (Glo. Vill. b. 6. c. 29.)

Said nations had hard and severe battles.

"Miserére di me," gridáa a lúí, — "Qual che tu stí, OD ÓMBRA, OD UÓMO CÉRTO." (Dant Inf. 1.)

"Take pity upon me," cried I to him, "whatever thou be, whether a spirit or a living man."



*Tu vuoi ch' io rinnovelli —  
Disperato dolor che il cuor mi  
preme — GIA PUR PENSANDO, pria  
ch' io ne favelli. (Dant. Inf. 33.)*

Thou wishest that I should re-  
call the desperate grief, which to  
think of oppresses my heart, before  
I tell it.

*Per mirar la sembianza di Co-  
lasi, — CH' ANCOR LASSÙ nel ciél  
VEDERE SPÉRA. (Petr. s. 14.)*

In order to see the image of  
Him whom he hopes to see also  
there in heaven.

*LA CÔSA ANDÒ PUR COSÌ. (Bocc.  
g. 2. n. 5.)*

The thing happened just so.

*O'ra FÓSSERO ÉSSI PUR GLÀ  
DISPÓSTI a venire. (Bocc. Int.)*

Now would that were disposed  
to come.

*ÓRA LE PARÓLE FÚRONO AS-  
SÁI, ed il rammarichio délla dón-  
na grande. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)*

Now the words were many, and  
the sorrow of the lady great.

---

EXERCISE XXV.

The waters, and the air, and the branches, and  
*acqua, áura, ramo,*  
 the little birds, and the fishes, and the flowers, and  
*uccello, pesce, fiore,*  
 the grass speak of love. | I do not go away |  
*erba parlare amore. | . non<sup>10</sup> mi<sup>11</sup> allontanó<sup>12</sup> |*  
 neither from (the) Mount Parnassus, nor from the  
<sub>1</sub> <sub>2</sub> <sub>3</sub> *Mónte<sup>4</sup> Parnáso,<sup>5</sup>* <sub>6</sub> <sub>7</sub> <sub>8</sub>  
 Muses. And it appears to me to see with-her la-  
*Músa<sup>9</sup>. parére<sup>4</sup> vedér<sup>2</sup> dón-*  
 dies and damsels, and they are savins and beech-trees.  
*na donzella, — essere abete faggio.*  
 Neither by message, nor by letter did she dare | to |  
*ambasciata, lettera — ardere | di |*  
 | let him know it. | Nimrod was the first king, or  
*farglielo sapere. | Nembrótte essere re,*  
 ruler, or collector (of assemblage) of people.\* I will  
*rettóre, ragunatore congregazione gente. d-*

\* People, in the plural — peoples.

tell perhaps a thing not credible, but true. He was  
*re cōsa credibile, véro. — Èssere*

not only killed, but devoured even to the bones.  
*uccidére, <sup>1</sup> divorare<sup>5</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> ósso<sup>4</sup>.*

He lost every hope, not only of | ever having her  
*— perdere<sup>2</sup> Ogni<sup>1</sup> speranza<sup>2</sup>, dovérta mái*

again, | but even | of seeing | her. "And for what rea-  
*riavére, vedére — ca-*

son?" said Ferondo: "Because thou wast jealous."  
*gióne?" díre "Èssere gelóso."*

Alexander although | he had | great fear, yet he  
*Alessándro — avésse<sup>2</sup> gránde<sup>1</sup> paura<sup>2</sup>, —*

| remained | quiet. Surely, although thou affirmest  
*stétte chéto. Céрто, affermáre<sup>2</sup>*

it, I do not believe, that thou | believest | it. "Go  
*<sup>1</sup>, — , crédu<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>. "André*

then," said the lady, "and call him." Since you  
*, díre dóнна, "chiamáre."*

promise me | to | pardon me, I will tell it to you.  
*prométtere<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> | di<sup>2</sup> | perdonáre<sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup>, <sup>6</sup> díre<sup>9</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>7</sup>.*

Therefore I stop (*myself*); but why goest thou?  
*— arrestáre<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>; andáre?<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup>*

Although we are in the month of July — be of July,  
*— — — — — Èssere<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> Lúglío<sup>2</sup>,*

| I thought | this morning I should freeze — to  
*| mi son credúta | máttina — — — as-*

freeze. I wish, that she | should send | me a small  
*sideráre. — Volére, mándi<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>*

lock of the beard of Nicostratus. Now it happened,  
*ciócca bárba Nicóstrato. — avventre,*

that the king of France . . . . He | was guarding | the  
*re Fráncia . . . . — | Èra a guardáre |*

passes with more than three thousand horsemen, between  
*pásso tremíla cavaliére,*

German and (*between*) Lombards. Provided | you have  
*Tedésco Lombárdo. | a víi díe*

the mind | | to | keep secret what — that which I  
*il cuóre | | di | tenér secréto — — —*

will say to you. The cranes | have | only one  
*ragionare*<sup>2</sup> | <sup>1</sup> | *grù* | *non hanno* |

leg and one foot. I see, that he wishes, that I  
*gamba* | *piè.* | *vedere,* | *volere,*

| should do | what — that which, I never — not ever,  
*faccia* | — | , | — | <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup>,

wished to do, that is, that I | should relate | (the)  
*volere*<sup>2</sup> | *fare,* | , | *racconti* | <sup>1</sup>

his wickedness.  
<sup>2</sup> *cattività*<sup>2</sup>.

## CHAPTER XVI.

## INTERJECTIONS.

## INTERJECTIONS IN COMMON USE.

<i>Ah!</i>	ah! ha! alas!	<i>ahimè! aimè!</i>	} alas (me)!
<i>eh! e!</i>	eh!	<i>chimè! einè!</i>	
<i>ih!</i>	ih!	<i>ohimè! oimè!</i>	
<i>oh! o!</i>	oh! ho!	<i>[omè!</i>	} alas (thee)!
<i>uh!</i>	uh!	<i>oitè!</i>	
<i>áhi!</i>	ah! alas!	<i>oisè!</i>	alas (him or her)!
<i>éhi!</i>	{ here! ho hey!	<i>guá!</i>	woe!
<i>óhi! ói!</i>	{ ho there!	<i>aiúto!</i>	help!
<i>úhi!</i>	ah! oh!	<i>o Dio!</i>	oh Heavens!
<i>dek!</i>	ah! alas!	<i>lásso!</i>	} alas!
<i>doh!</i>	{ ah! alas! pray!	<i>lásso me!</i>	
<i>ah, ah!</i>	oh! pshaw!	<i>áhi lásso!</i>	} wretched that I am! unfortunate that I am! wretched me! poor me!
<i>eh, eh!</i>	ah, ah!	<i>póvero me!</i>	
<i>oh, oh!</i>	eh, eh!	<i>misero me!</i>	
<i>poh!</i>	oh, oh!	<i>meschino me!</i>	
<i>puh! pu!</i>	poh!	<i>dolénte me!</i>	
<i>éia!</i>	pu! pooh!	<i>o me beáto!</i>	} happy that I am!
<i>olà!</i>	halloo!	<i>o me felice!</i>	
	holla! ho there!	<i>beáto me!</i>	
		<i>felice me!</i>	} happy me!

<i>così !</i>	so ! thus !	<i>álto !</i>	halt !
<i>sì !</i>	{ yes, certainly !	<i>sta !</i>	stop !
<i>già !</i>		<i>ohè !</i>	{ take care !
<i>piùre !</i>	yet !	<i>guárda !</i>	{ have care !
<i>cóme !</i>	{ how ! how then !	<i>lárgo !</i>	{ beware !
	{ why ? why so !	<i>piáno,</i>	{ softly ! gently !
<i>su !</i>	{ up, up ! come !	<i>adágio,</i>	{ slowly !
<i>orsù !</i>		{ come then !	<i>zì ! zítto !</i>
<i>su, su !</i>		<i>chétto !</i>	quiet ! still !
<i>via !</i>		<i>non più !</i>	{ enough !
<i>via, via !</i>	away !	<i>básta !</i>	{
<i>ch via !</i>	fie ! fie upon !	<i>silénzio !</i>	{ silence !
<i>vergógna !</i>	for shame !	<i>tacéte !</i>	
<i>oibò !</i>	o fie ! o fough !	<i>andáte !</i>	away !
<i>ánimo !</i>	{ courage !	<i>badáte !</i>	mind !
<i>corággio !</i>		{ cheer up !	<i>all' értá !</i>
<i>fáte cuóre !</i>		<i>státe all' értá !</i>	{ beware !
<i>béne !</i>	well !	<i>di grázia !</i>	pray !
<i>brávo !</i>	{ bravo !	<i>per carità !</i>	for charity's
	{ very well !		[sake !
<i>buóno !</i>	good !	<i>per amór del cié-</i>	for heaven's
<i>viva !</i>	long live !	<i>lo !</i>	[sake !
<i>eh viva ! evviva !</i>	huzza !	<i>mercè !</i>	{ mercy !
<i>cápperi !</i>	{ ay ! heyday !	<i>misericórdia !</i>	{ mercy upon us !
<i>cáppita !</i>		{ marry !	<i>possibile !</i>
<i>possáre !</i>		<i>appínto !</i>	exactly ! just !
<i>oh bélla !</i>	fine !	<i>pensáte !</i>	just think ! *
<i>écco !</i>	lo ! behold !		

The interjections *lásso*, *póvero*, *misero*, *meschino*, *beáto* (*me !*), are mere *adjectives*, and when used by a *female*, take the *feminine* termination : — *lássá*, *póvera*, *mísera* (*me !*), &c. ; and in the plural make, *lássí*, *póveri* (*noi !*), &c., for the *masculine* ; and *lássé*, *póvere* (*noi !*), &c. for the *feminine* ; as,

LÁSSA ME ! <i>in che mal' óra</i>	alas ! in what evil hour was I
<i>náequi,</i>	born ;
MÍSERI NÓI ! <i>che síám, se Id-</i>	miserable that we are ! what
<i>díó ci láschia ?</i>	becomes of us, if God forsakes us ?

\* It is important to observe, that, as some of these interjections are used to express *different*, and even *contrary*, emotions or affections of the mind, their exact signification can only be determined by the *sense* of the words which accompany them, or give rise to the exclamation.

*Brávo! zítto! chéto!* are also *adjectives*, and, when used in speaking to a *female*, or to more than one *male* or *female*, follow the same rule; as,

BRÁVA! <i>cóme quándo?</i>	bravo! as when?
ZÍTTI, <i>un pó'!</i>	hush, a little!

*Brávo!* is also used in its superlative, and makes *bravissimo! bravissima! bravissimi! bravissime*, 'bravissimo!'

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Oimè! LÁSSA ME! dolénte me!</i> IN CHE MAL' ÓRA NÁCQUI. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 2.)	Alas! unfortunate that I am! in what evil hour was I born.
--	---

MÍSERRI NÓI! CHE SIÁM, SE ID- DIO CI LÁSCIA? (Alf. Saul. 1. 1.)	Miserable that we are! what be- comes of us, if God forsakes us.
--	---

BRÁVA! CÓME QUÁNDO? (Manz. Prom. Spos. c. 1.)	Bravo! as when?
--	-----------------

ZÍTTI, UN PÓ'! <i>ch' elle dórmo- no.</i> (Buon. Fier.)	Hush a little! for they are sleep- ing.
---	--

Many of the foregoing interjections are *elliptical expressions* of, and *equivalent* to, *perfect sentences*; as, *olà*, for instance, which stands for *O [tu, che séi] LÀ*, 'O thou, who art there'; *orsù*, for *ÓRA [lévati or levátevi] SU*, 'now rise up'; *via*, for [*vá' or andáte*] *VIA*; *chéto*, for [*sta or státe*] *CHE'TO*, 'be still'; *corággio*, for [*abbii or abbiáte*] *CORÁ'GGIO*, 'have courage'; *viva*, for *VIVA [égli or élla lungaménte]*, 'may he or she live long'; *béne*, for [*sta or va*] *BE'NE*, 'it is well'; *brávo, bráva*, for [*séi or stéte*] *BRA'VO, BRA'VA*; *oh bélla*, for *OH [quésta è] BE'L-LA*, 'oh this is fine'; &c.; to which may be added *máncó mále*, or *méno mále*, 'less evil,' 'not so bad,' 'better so'; which is often used as an *interjection*, and is equivalent to the phrase [*il*] *MA'LE* [*è*] *MA'NCO*, or *ME'NO*, [*che non*

*sarebbe stato, se la cosa fosse andata altrimenti,]* 'the evil is less than if the thing had happened otherwise,' 'it is not so bad as if it had happened otherwise,' 'better so than otherwise.'

EXERCISE XXVI.

Ah! how many steps thou lovest through the for-  
*pásso — pèrdere*<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> *sél-*  
 est! "Ah!" | said he, | "valiant men, ah! com-  
*es?* | *dicéa —,* | "valénte uómo, com-  
 panions, ah! brothers, keep (the) your place." Alas!  
*págnò,* *fratéllo,* *tenére* *luógo."*  
 mercy; for heaven's sake! Alas! blind ungrateful world!  
*brò* *ingrátò*<sup>2</sup> *móndo*<sup>1</sup>!  
 O! happy souls! Wretched that I am! I have  
*felíce*<sup>2</sup> *ánima*<sup>1</sup>! *avére*<sup>2</sup>  
 loved thee more than (the) my own life. Fie! go  
*amóre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> — *vita.* *andáre*  
 on. Is it possible, that thou | art | alive? Marry!  
*ólire.* | *sii* | *vivo?*  
 I recant (myself.) How many tears, alas! have I  
*ridére*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *lágrima,* *avére* —  
 already shed! Woe to you, perverse souls! | never  
*spárgere!* *práva*<sup>2</sup> *ánima*<sup>1</sup>! | *non is-*  
 hope *mái* | to see the heaven again. Hush! hush! other-  
*peráte* | *vedér* *ciélo* —  
 wise we begin again. Holla! where art thou? Come!  
 — *éssere da-cápo.* *éssere* ?  
 let us see. Up, up! citizens, let every-one arm himself  
*vedére.* *cittadino,* — <sup>2</sup> *armáre*<sup>2</sup> .<sup>1</sup>  
 speedily to the defence. Oh! thou art in great haste.  
*valóce* *difésa.* *avére* — *gran frétta*  
 Alas! how miserable is (the) our fortune! "The cava-  
*quánto misero*<sup>2</sup> *éssere*<sup>1</sup> *fortúna!* " *cava-*

lier said: "I wish to leave thee, and serve God."  
*liere*<sup>2</sup> *Dire*<sup>1</sup>: " *volere* — *lasciár* — *servir* *Dío*."

The demon replied: "Pshaw! why wishest thou to  
<sup>2</sup> *demonio*<sup>2</sup> *Rispondere*<sup>1</sup>: " *volere*<sup>2</sup> —

leave me?" O poor me! (that) I | shall never be good  
*lasciáre* <sup>1</sup>?" *non sarò mái più buó-*

again | | for | any thing. Pray! my friend, why wishest  
*no* | | *a* | *amico*<sup>1</sup>, *volere*

thou | to give thyself | this trouble? "Alas!" said the  
*entráre* *in* | *fatiga*? " *dire*

other, "what is that which thou sayest?" Come!  
 " *éssere* *dire*?"

go, I will wait for thee in the house. Away! do  
*andáre*, *aspettáre*<sup>2</sup> — <sup>1</sup> — *cása*.

not have any fear, I will carry thee to the house  
*avér* — *paúra*, *pónerò*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> — *cása*

safe and sound. Silence, son, do | not make noise |  
*sólto*<sup>2</sup> <sup>2</sup> *séno*<sup>1</sup>. , *figliuolo*, — | *non far romóre* |;

let (the) thy father sleep. Oh! you make me laugh.  
*lasciáre* <sup>2</sup> — *genitóre*<sup>2</sup> *dormire*<sup>1</sup>. *fare*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *ridere*.

He cried out: "Oh, oh!" | at | (the) which cry the  
 — *Gridáre*: " | *per* | *grido*

cranes began to fly. Oh, blind! oh, wretched! oh,  
*grà cominciáre fuggire*. *cieca*!

foolish man! oh, how infirm thou art! Alas (him)!  
*mátto* — ! *quáto inférmo*<sup>2</sup> — *éssere*<sup>1</sup>!

wretched (him)! that the hog had been stolen from  
 ! *pórcò éssere*<sup>2</sup> *imbaldre*<sup>2</sup> —

him — to him. Heyday! how well in tune she is!  
 — <sup>1</sup> — <sup>2</sup> *túno*<sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup> *stáre*<sup>2</sup>!

Courage, young men, let us assault manly, and with  
 , *giovane*, *assaltáre* *virile*,

cheerful front, these drowsy people. Away, stay there  
*allégro frónte* *dormighiáne*.

with the other dogs.  
*cáne*.

## PART III.

# ITALIAN SYNTAX.



## CHAPTER I.

### ORDER AND POSITION OF WORDS.

WORDS may be arranged in Italian either in the *natural order* of the ideas which they are used to convey; as, *io son ricco, e spendo il mio in metter tavola*, 'I am rich, and spend my money in keeping a good table'; or in a somewhat *different order*, in which *euphony* or *emphasis* is consulted; as, *in quella dimorando, poco o niente potrebbe del suo valor dimostrare* [for *potrebbe dimostrare poco o niente del suo valor, dimorando in quella*], 'He could show little or nothing of his valor, remaining there.' Hence there are *two* different *constructions*, the one called *simple* or *direct*, the other *inverse* or *indirect*.

#### SIMPLE CONSTRUCTION.

In the *simple construction*, the *subjective* is always put *before the verb*. It is generally a *pronoun*, a *noun*, an *adjective* or a *verb used as a noun*, or a *phrase*; as,

io amo,

I love;

PIÉTRO fugge,

Peter flies;

IL BÉLLO piúce,

the beautiful pleases;



IL SÚO PARLÁRE MI piácuqe sì,	[her speaking] her conversation pleased me so ;
CHE TU CON NÓI TI RIMÁN- GA, n' è cáro,	we should be very glad, if thou wouldst remain with us.

The *objective* is put *after the verb*. It is generally a *pronoun*, a *noun*, an *adjective*, a *verb*, or a *phrase* ; as,

guardáte ME,	look at me ;
ámo GUISCÁRDO,	I love Guiscard ;
pérdono IL BÉLLO,	they lose [the beautiful] the beauty ;
avéndo compiúto IL SÚO CAN- TÁRE,	having finished her singing ;
significò IL FÁTTO CÓME STÁ- VA,	declared the fact as it was.

If the *subjective* or *objective* have an *article*, this article is put *before them* ; as,

GLI úomini sóno cápo delle fémmine,	[the] men are the head of wo- men ;
IL capitáno cádde, e sconciós- si IL piéde,	the captain fell, and sprained [the foot] his foot.

The *adjectives* belonging to the *subjective* and *objective* are put immediately *after them* ; as,

gli scolári MORIGERÁTI e DI- LIGÉNTI stúdiáno,	the well-behaved and diligent scholars study ;
il maéstro prémia gli scolári ATTÉNTI e STUDIÓSI,	the master rewards the atten- tive and studious scholars.

*Any other word* which is *dependent* on the *subjective* or *objective* is also put immediately *after them* ; as,

la virtù DI PÁOLO fu rico- noscíuta,	the virtue of Paul was ac- knowledged ;
riconosceva néi discendéti la virtù DEL FÁDRE,	it acknowledged in the de- scendants the virtue [of the father] of their father.

The *relative pronoun* is put *after its antecedent* ; as,

*Lo scolare, il* QUÁLE nascóso *the scholar, who had concealed*  
*era,* himself.

The *adverb* is put immediately *after the verb*, which it modifies ; as,

*ama* ARDENTEMENTE *la gló- he loves glory*  
*ria,* *ardently.*

The *preposition* is put *before the word*, which it governs ; as,

DI *sélva* IN *sélva* DAL *crudél* *she flies from wood to wood to*  
*s' invóla,* avoid the pursuit of the ferocious animal.

The *conjunction* is put *between those parts of a sentence*, which it connects ; as,

*gli augellétti, e i pésci, e i* the little birds, *and* the fishes,  
*fióri, e l' érba,* and the flowers, *and* the  
 grass.

The *interjection* has no fixed place, it having no intrinsic relation to the other words ; it is, however, generally put at the beginning of the phrase ; as,

OIMÈ! *che è quéllo, che tu* alas! what is that you say?  
*di'?*

## EXAMPLES.

ÍO SÓNO RÍCCO, E SPÉNDO IL I am rich, and spend my money  
 MÍO IN MÉTTER TÁVOLA, *ed onó-* in keeping a good table to enter-  
 ro i míi concittadini. (Bocc. g. tain my fellow-citizens.  
 9. n. 9.)

IN QUÉLLA DIMORÁNDO, POCO He could show little or nothing  
 O NIÉNTÉ POTRÉBBE DEL SÚO of his valor, remaining there.  
 VALÓR DIMOSTRÁRE. (Bocc. g.  
 10. n. 1.)

ÍO ho amáto, e AMO GUISCÁR- I have loved, and love Guis-  
 DO. (Bocc. g. n. 1.) card.

PIÉTRO Boccamázza FÚGGE con Peter Boccamazza flies away  
 l' Agnolélla, e trúova ladróni. with Agnolella, and meets with  
 (Bocc. 5. n. 8.) thieves.

IL BÉLLO PIÁCE ágli ócchi, e si ammíra. (Vas.)

The beautiful pleases the eyes, and is admired.

E'l sÚO PARLÁRE, e'l bÉl víso, e le chíome MI PIÁCQUER sí, ch' ío l' ho dindássi ágli ócchi. (Petr. c. 7.)

And her conversation, and her beautiful face, and her hair pleased me so, that I have her before my eyes.

CHE TU CON NOI TI RIMÁNGA per quÉsta sÉra, n' É CÁRO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

We should be very glad, if thou wouldst remain to-night with us.

GUARDÁTE ME, che son di vísta prívá. (Pign. Fav.)

Look at me, that am deprived of sight.

Le dónne, quándo arriváno a quaránta ánni, PÉRDONO IL BÉLLO délla gioventúdi, e acquístano il bÉllo matronále. (Lib. Adorn. Donn.)

Women, when they arrive to the age of forty, lose the beauty of youth, and acquire that of matrons.

AVÉNDÓ GIÀ COMPIÚTO la délla nínfa IL SÚO CANTÁRE. (Bocc. Am.)

The beautiful nymph having finished her singing.

A lúi si raccomandò, e significò IL FÁTTO CÓME STÁVA. (Ser. Giov. Fior. Pecor.)

He recommended himself to him, and declared the fact as it was.

GLI UÓMINI SÓNO DÉLLE FÉMMINE CÁPO, e sÉnza l' órdine lóro ráde vólte riésce alcúna nóstra ópera a laudévol fine. (Bocc. Intr.)

Men are the head of women, and without their management it seldom happens that any undertaking of ours succeeds well.

IL CAPITÁNO CÁDDE, E SCONCIÓSSI IL PIÉDE in fÓrma, che non poté stáre in piédi. (Matt. Vill. 9. 11.)

The captain fell, and sprained his foot in such a manner, that he could stand no more.

GLI SCOLÁRI MORIGERÁTI E DILIGÉNTI STÚDIANO. (Cort. Osserv.)

The well-behaved and diligent scholars study.

IL MAÉSTRO PRÉMIA GLI SCOLÁRI ATTÉNTI E STUDIÓSI. (Buom. Ling. Tosc.)

The master rewards the attentive and studious scholars.

LA VIRTÙ DI PÁOLO FU debítamente RICONOSCIÚTA. (Cavalc.)

The virtue of Paul was duly acknowledged.

Ma la ricordévol pátria RICONOSCÉVA NÉ' DISCENDÉNTI LA VIRTÙ DEL FÁDRE. (Bott. Stor. Am. 1. 9.)

But the grateful country acknowledged in the descendants the virtues of their father.

LO SCOLÁRE, IL QUÁLE, *in sul fare della notte, col suo fante, presso della torretta, nascóso éra.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

The scholar, who, when it grew night, had concealed himself, with his servant, near the small tower.

PIÉTRO ÁMA ARDENTEMENTE LA GLÓRIA. (Cort. Osserv.)

Peter loves glory ardently.

DI SÉLVA IN SÉLVA DAL CRU- DÉL S' INVÓLA. (Ariost. Fur. 1. 34.)

She flies from wood to wood to avoid the pursuit of the ferocious animal.

L' acque parlan d' amore, e l' áura, e i rámi, — E GLI AUGEL- LÉTTI, E I PÉSCI, E I FIÓRI, E L' ÉRBA; — *Tutti insieme pre- gándo ch' é' sempr' ámi.* (Petr. s. 239.)

The waters speak of love, and the air, and the boughs, and the little birds, and the fishes, and the flowers, and the grass; entreating all together that I should always love.

OIMÈ! CHE È QUELLO, CHE TU DÍ? (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Alas! what is it you say?

---

#### INVERSE CONSTRUCTION.

With regard to *inverse construction* no certain rules can be established, it *varying* according to the *taste* and *ear* of the speaker or writer. It can only be said, that in this construction the *subjective* may be put *after the verb*; as,

<i>chiese</i> L' IMPERATÓRE <i>della</i> <i>Ditta tremila cavállí,</i>	<i>the Emperor</i> asked of the Diet three thousand horses;
<i>preseme</i> allóra LA MÍA SCÓR- TA <i>per máno,</i>	<i>then my guide</i> took me by the hand.

The *objective* may be put *before the verb*; as,

<i>s'ingegnano</i> IL LÓRO TÉMPO <i>dé consumáre,</i>	<i>they endeavour</i> to pass away <i>their time</i> ;
GRÁNDI BÉSTIE <i>hánno né' ló-</i> <i>ro bósci,</i>	<i>they have. large</i> <i>beasts</i> in their woods.

The *adjectives* belonging to the *subjective* or the *objective*, may be put *before them*; as,

*quantunque fosse tondo e* although he was a foolish man.  
GRÓSSO UÓMO,

The other words dependent on the subjective or objective, may also be put before them ; as,

il [DI] CÚI NÓME ERA EFIGENIA whose name was Ephigenia.  
nia,

The adverb may be put before the verb, which it modifies ; as,

PIETOSAMENTE il chiamáva, she did call him with a lamentable voice.

The preposition may be put after the word, which it governs ; as,

to TI verrò APPRÉSSO, I will come after thee.

#### EXAMPLES.

CHIÈSE L' IMPERATORE ÁLLA DIÈTA, per tale impresa, TREMILA CAVALLI, e sedicimila fanti. (Mach. lett.) The Emperor asked of the Diet, for such an undertaking, three thousand horses, and sixteen thousand foot-soldiers.

PRÉSEMI ALLÓRA LA MIA SCÓRTA PER MÁNO. (Dant. Inf. 13.) Then my guide took me by the hand.

S' INGEGNANO IL LÓRO TÉMPO DI CONSUMÁRE. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.) They endeavour to pass away their time.

GRÁNDI BÉSTIE HÁNNO NÉ' LÓRO BÓSCI. (Dav. Germ.) They have large beasts in their woods.

QUANTÚNQUE FÓSSE TÓNDO E GRÓSSO UÓMO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.) Although he was a foolish man.

IL CÚI NÓME ERA EFIGENIA. Whose name was Ephigenia.  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Assái vólte, la nótte, PIETOSAMENTE IL CHIAMÁVA. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.) A great many times, during the night, did she call him with a lamentable voice.

Or via ! méttiti avánti, fo TI VERRÒ APPRÉSSO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.) Come ! walk before, I will come after thee.

These inversions are very common in Italian, and add great expression and beauty to the phrase; but in using them we must always consult euphony. A learner ought never to avail himself of such liberties, until, by a competent knowledge of the language, and a long perusal of the classics, he be able to appreciate their value and to make use of them with propriety.

## EXERCISE XXVII.

Rome was full of funerals, the capitol of victims.  
*Róma piéno mortório; campidóglío víttima.*

I routed three legions, and three lieutenants. This house  
*atterráre legióne, legáto. cása*

is built on a high situation; it has gar-  
*fabbrikáre in eminénte<sup>s</sup> síto<sup>1</sup>; — avére giar-*

dens, it has groves, it has plains and hills. The  
*dáno, — bóscó, — pianúra collína.*

conversation of Montanus pleased so-much the sen-  
*parláre Montáno piácre sená-*

ate, that Elvidius Priscus hoped to be able to  
*to, Élvídió Prísco speráre | di | potére ab-*

conquer even Marcellus. Many wives have spoiled  
*báttere Marcélló. | móglie<sup>s</sup> | guastáre*

(the) their husbands. He made him dress nobly.  
*— maríto. — fáre<sup>s</sup> | vestíre<sup>s</sup> nóbile<sup>s</sup>.*

Fulvius, who had been consul, and had already tri-  
*Fúlvio, — — éssere cónsole, — — | tri-*

umphed over the Gauls, the most illustrious of (the)  
*onfátóre dé' | Gállo, | illústre*

thy followers, was killed by the Patricians in a bath  
*segúcce, uccídere | Pátre | bágno*

together with a son of his as beautiful as innocent.  
*figliuólo<sup>s</sup> | — | — | leggíadro | innocénte.*

There came a merchant | of Cyprus, | much beloved  
 — Venire mercatante | Cipriano, | amere<sup>3</sup>

by him. Thou seest, that it is useless to pray  
 | 2. vedere, — inutile — —

and to weep — (the praying and the weeping.)  
 — — pregare pungere.

Nothing else has been left to me of the inherit-  
 9 — essere<sup>11</sup> — rimanere<sup>8</sup> 10 1 2 credi-

ance of (the) my ancestors, except (the) my honor;  
 id<sup>3</sup> 4 (the) 5 6 avolo<sup>7</sup>, 12 12 — onestà;

and that I intend | to | guard, and | to | preserve  
 2 intendere<sup>1</sup> | di | guardare, | di | serbare

as long as I live — (the life will last to me).  
 — — durare<sup>2</sup> 1

To be contented — (the being contented) | with | (the)  
 — — essere contento | di |

his own condition, to moderate (the) excessive desires,  
 proprio stato, moderare soverchio<sup>2</sup> desiderio<sup>1</sup>,

not to allow himself neither to be transported | by |  
 lasciare — trasportare | ad |

excessive joy in (the) prosperities, nor to be overcome  
 eccessivo gioia prosperità, — abbattere

| by | (the) misfortunes, form the character of a wise  
 | in | disgrazia, formare carattere saggio<sup>2</sup>

man. He could not appease the angry mother with  
 ubmo<sup>1</sup>. — potere<sup>2</sup> 4 attutare<sup>2</sup> 1 irato<sup>3</sup> madre<sup>2</sup>

any act of generosity. Plato asserts, that in  
 niuno — — larghezza. Platone<sup>2</sup> Affermare<sup>1</sup>, —

literary disputes — (in (the) disputes of (the) letters)  
 — — disputazione lettere

it is more useful to be conquered — (the being  
 — utile — — essere

conquered) than to conquer.  
 vincere vincere.

## CHAPTER II.

## CONCORDANCE OR AGREEMENT OF WORDS.

## CONCORDANCE OF ARTICLES.

ARTICLES agree with nouns, in gender and number ;  
as,

IL fratéllò, LA sorélla,	the brother, the sister ;
LI pádri, LE mádri,	the fathers, the mothers ;
LA dónna, IL marito,	the wife, the husband ;
I figliuóli,	the children.

## EXAMPLES.

*L' un fratéllò l' áltro abbandónáva, e LA sorélla IL fratéllò, e spésse vólle LA dónna IL síu maríto.* (Bocc. Intr.)      One brother abandoned the other, and the sister the brother, and oftentimes the wife her husband.

*E che maggiór còsa è, LI PÁDRI e LE MÁDRI, I FIGLIUÓLI di visitáre e di servíre schivávano.* (Bocc. Intr.)      And what is more, the fathers and the mothers shunned to visit and serve their children.

## CONCORDANCE OF ADJECTIVES.

*Adjectives*, as we have already observed at p. 63, are to agree with their *substantives*, in gender and number ; as,

úomo dótto, buóna génte,	a learned man, good people ;
bélle dónne, leggiádri fanciúlli,	fair women, pretty youths.



Adjectives are also to agree with *personal, conjunctive, and relative pronouns, in gender and number*; as,

io (fem.) <i>son vÍVA,</i>	I am alive ;
vóI (masc.) <i>síte LONTÁNI,</i>	you are far ;
VI (fem.) <i>lÁscio LÍBERA di Nicolúccio,</i>	I leave you at the disposal of Nicoluccio ;
<i>per rendérci (masc.) FÓRTI ed INVINCÍBILI,</i>	to make us strong and invincible ;
<i>quándo LA videro SÓLA,</i>	when they saw her alone ;
<i>li QUÁLI érano mótto LÚNGHI,</i>	which were very long.

When *two or more substantives singular of the same gender* come together, the *adjectives* belonging to them are put in the *plural*, agreeing with a noun of the *same gender* understood ; as,

LÍCIA e CALLÍMACO [quésti dúe individui] <i>sóno RÍCCHI,</i>	Lycias and Callimachus [ <i>these two individuals</i> ] are rich ;
MARÍA e LUCÍA [quéste dúe fanciúlle] <i>sóno PÓVERE,</i>	Mary and Lucy [ <i>these two girls</i> ] are poor.

If the substantives are of *different genders or different numbers*, the adjectives are put in the *plural*, agreeing with a *masculine noun* understood ; as,

IL PÁDRE e LA MÁDRE <i>délla Lisa, CONTÉNTI, fécero grandissima fèsta,</i>	the father and the mother of Lisa, both glad, expressed very great joy ;
LA CÓRTE TÚTTA, I SOVRÁNI <i>sóno sommanénte CONTÉNTI,</i>	the whole court, the sovereigns are well satisfied,

#### EXCEPTION.

If, however, one of the substantives is *preceded* by the preposition *con*, 'with,' 'in company with' ; then the *adjective or participle* used as an *adjective, may agree either with the other substantive, or with a noun in the plural* understood ; as,

<i>esséndosi</i> DIONÉO <i>con gli álti giovani</i> <i>méssò a giucàre,</i>	Dioneo and the other youths having set themselves to play ;
<i>esséndosi</i> LA DÓNNA <i>col giovane</i> <i>pósti a tavola,</i>	the lady and the young man having sat down to table.

When there are in a phrase *several substantives* of *different gender* and *different number*, separated from their adjective by a *verb* either *expressed* or *understood*; the *adjective* is put in the *plural*, agreeing with a *masculine* noun understood; as,

LE mie CÀSE ed I LUÓGHI my houses and the public places  
púbblìci di Róma, SON PIÉ- of Rome are filled with  
NI d' antiche inmáginì, ancient images;

IL PÁDRE di léi e LA MÁDRE, both her father and her mother,  
[esséndo] DOLORÓSI di [being] grieved at this acci-  
quésto accidénte, l' alávano, dent, relieved her.

If several *names of inanimate beings* occur in the same phrase, and they are *not separated* from their adjective by a *verb*; this *adjective* agrees with the *nearest* noun;\* as,

onóri e GLÓRIA NUÓVA, new honors and glory;  
con bárba e CRÍNI BAGNÁTI, with a dripping beard and hair;  
l' úna e l' ÁLTRA MAN MÓZZA, both hands cut off.

The adjective agrees also with the *nearest* noun, when there are in the same phrase several substantives, and the *quality* expressed by that adjective is *affirmed* or *denied* to belong, *successively* or *alternatively*, to *either* of them; as,

Pítro o MARÍA è MÓRTA, either Peter or Mary is dead;  
nè Francésca, nè GIOVÁNNI neither Frances nor John has  
non è PARTÍTO, gone;  
un tizzo, un carbóne, ÚNA a brand, a coal, a spark might  
FAVÍLLA è ÁTTA ad appic- set fire.  
cár fuóco,

---

\* Contrary to this rule is the following example in Boccaccio:

Se così gridato avéste, ella avrébbe così  
L' A'LTRÀ CO'SCIA, e l' áltro pié fuór  
MANDA'TA. (G. 6. n. 4.)

If you had cried out so, it (the crane)  
would have likewise put out the other  
leg and the other foot.

## EXCEPTIONS.

An adjective accompanied with a substantive *feminine* applicable to a man, is put in the *masculine* gender ; as,

LA PERSONA *quándo é* TRIBOLÁ- when a person is afflicted ;  
TO,

QUÉLLA BÉSTIA [di Tófano] *é*ra that stupid ass [Tofano] was dis-  
pur DISPÓSTO, posed.

The adjective *mézzo*, 'half,' when it *precedes* a substantive, *agrees* with it in *gender* ; but when it *follows*, it remains *invariable* ; as,

*in súlla* MÉZZA NÓTTE, about midnight ;

*úna libbra e* MÉZZO di castróne, one pound and a half of mutton ;

*ventitrè e* MÉZZO caráti, twenty-three carats and a half.

The adjective *sálvo*, signifying 'except' ; remains *invariable* ; as,

*sálvo* la *Márca* Trivigiána, except the Trevisan March ;

*sálvo* *quelli delle case* *eccettu- except those of the families ex-*  
*áte per* Ghibellini, cluded as Ghibellines.

## EXAMPLES.

UÓMO DÓTTO *delle* Scrittúre. A man learned in Holy Writ.  
(Cavalc. Att. Apost. 113.)

Náta di BUÓNA e virtuosá *gente*. Born of good and virtuous peo-  
GENTE. (Ariost. Fur. 18. 82.)

Quánte BÉLLE DÓNNE, *quánti* How many fair women, how  
LEGGIÁDRI FANCIÚLLI, *la séra* many pretty youths, the coming  
*vegnénte, nell' áltro móndo ce-* evening, supped in the other  
*ndrono con li loro passáti!* (Bocc. world with their departed friends !  
Intr.)

Ío SON VÍVA, *la Dío* *mercè*. I am alive, thank God.  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 9.)

Considerándo, *che vói* *siéte* Considering, that you are far  
*dalle vóstre donne* LONTÁNI. from your wives.  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Madónna, *omái* *da ógni pro-* Madam, I free you from all your  
*méssa fáttami ío* *vi assólvo, e* *LÍ-* promises to me, and I leave you at  
*BERA* *vi LÁSCIO* *DI* *NICOLÚCCIO.* the disposal of Nicoluccio.  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 4.)

*Egli viene ad unire la sua potenza colla nostra debolezza, PER RENDERCÍ FÓRTI ED INVINCÍBILI.* (Gang.)

He comes to unite his strength with our weakness, to make us strong and invincible.

*Li quáli, QUÁNDO LA VÍDERO SÓLA, dissero.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

Who, when they saw her alone, said.

*Alessándro, levátosi prestamente, con tutto che i panni del mórtó avésse indóssó, LI QUÁLI ÉRANO MÓLTO LÚNGHI, pure andò via altresì.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

Alexander, getting up quickly, although he was dressed in the clothes of the deceased, which were very long, went away likewise.

*Messér LÍCIA È CALLÍMACO SON RÍCCHI.* (Mach. Com.)

Messer Lycias and Messer Callimachus are rich.

*Ma MARÍA E LUCÍA SÓNO PÓVERE.* (Mach. Com.)

But Mary and Lucy are poor.

*Perdicóne, e 'L PÁDRE E LA MÁDRE DÉLLA LÍSA, ed élla altresì CONTÉNTI, GRANDÍSSIMA FÉSTA FÉCERO.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 7.)

Perdicone, and the father and the mother of Lisa, and herself, all glád, expressed great joy.

*Dovevate díirmi, che LA CÓRTE TUTTA, che I SOVRÁNI SÓNO SOMMAMÉNTÉ CONTÉNTI.* (Metast. lett)

You ought to have told me, that the whole court, and the sovereigns are well satisfied.

*ESSÉNDOSI DIONÉO CON GLI ÁLTTRI GIÓVANI MÉSSO A GIUCÁRE.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

Dioneo and the other youths having set themselves to play.

*ESSÉNDOSI LA DÓNNA COL GIÓVANE PÓSTI A TÁVOLA per cenáre.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

The lady and the young man having sat down to supper.

*LE MÍE CÁSE ED I LUÓGHI PÚBLICI DI RÓMA SON PIÉNI D' ANTICHE IMMÁGINI dé' miéi maggióri.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

My houses and the public places of Rome are filled with ancient images of my ancestors.

*IL PÁDRE DI LÉI E LA MÁDRE, DOLORÓSI DI QUÉSTO ACCIDÉNTÉ, in ciò che si poléva, L' ATÁVANO.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 7.)

Both her father and her mother, grieved at that accident, did all in their power to relieve her.

*E cósá manifestíssima, che oggi non viene in consúlta se ha a rifiutáre l' occasione d' acquistáre ONÓRI E GLÓRIA NUÓVA.* (Guicc.)

It is a manifest thing, that none comes now to a consultation whether he is to refuse the opportunity of gaining new honors and glory.

- L' Océano si farà d'alla destra,*  
UN OMACCIONE CON BARBA E CRÍ-  
NI BAGNATI. (Ann. Car. lett.)
- As for the Ocean, it is to be  
re, resented on the right, as a  
large man with a dripping beard  
and hair.
- Ed un, che avéa l' ÚNA E*  
L' ÁLTRA MAN MÓZZA, — *Disse.*  
(Dant. Inf. 28.)
- And one, who had both hands  
cut off, said.
- PIÉTRO O MARÍA È MÓRTA.  
(Mach. Com.)
- Either Peter or Mary is dead.
- NÈ FRANCÉSICA NÈ GIOVÁNNI  
NON È PARTÍTO. (BUON. Tanc.)
- Neither Frances nor John has  
gone.
- UN TÍZZO, UN CARBÓNE, ÚNA  
FAVÍLLA È ÁTTA AD APPICCÁR  
FUÓCO. (Cavalc.)
- A brand, a coal, a spark might  
set fire.
- LA PERSONA QUÁNDO È TRIBO-  
LÁTO si dice e pènsa, che Iddio  
F' ábbia in ódio. (Fra. Giord.  
Pred.)
- When a person is afflicted, peo-  
ple say and believe God hates  
him.
- Li priéghi non giovavano al-*  
*cúna cosa, perchè QUELLA BÉS-*  
*TIA ERA PUR DISPÓSTO a volére*  
..... (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)
- Entreaties were of no use, be-  
cause that stupid ass [Tofano]  
was disposed to wish . . . .
- Vientene IN SÚLLA MÉZZA  
NÓTTE. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)
- Come about midnight.
- Tógli ÚNA LÍBBRA E MÉZZO DI  
GASTRÓNE. (Burch. p. 2. s. 1.)
- Take a pound and a half of  
mutton.
- LA monéta di VENTITRÈ E MÉZ-  
ZO CARÁTI. (Giov. Vill. l. 8.  
c. 58.)
- The coins of twenty-three ca-  
rats and a half.
- Rendégli la Signoría di Lom-*  
*bardia, SALVO LA MÁRCA TRIVI-*  
*GIÁNA.* (Giov. Vill. l. 3. c. 5.)
- He restored to him the Signo-  
ry of Lombardy, except the Tre-  
visan March.
- Févero órdine e decreto, che*  
*ciascúno potésse uscire dal bándó,*  
*SÁLVO QUELLI DÉLLE CÁSE EC-*  
*CETTUÁTE PER GHIBELLÍNI.*  
(Giov. Vill. l. 6.)
- They ordained and decreed, that  
every one could return from ban-  
ishment, except those of the fam-  
ilies excluded as Ghibellines.

## CONCORDANCE OF NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

*Numeral* adjectives agree with their *substantives*, in gender and number ; as,

<i>Platónè vivétte</i> OTTANTÚNO ANNO,	Plato lived eighty-one years ;
<i>páre descéndere áltre</i> NOVANTÚNA RUÓTA,	he seems to descend ninety-one more circles ;
<i>il TÈRZO GIÓRNO dall' appa- rizzione déi sopradétti sé- gni,</i>	the third day after the appear- ance of the abovementioned symptoms ;
<i>in quèi PRÍMI GIÓRNI, vi vo- lò sópra la tístà un' áqui- la,</i>	in those first days, an eagle flew over your head.

## EXAMPLES.

*Abbiamo di PLATÓNE, che és-  
so* VIVÉTTÈ OTTANTÚNO ANNO.  
(Dant. Conv.)

They say that Plato lived eighty-one years.

*Póì per la medésima vía* PÁRE  
DESCÉNDERE ÁLTRE NOVANTÚNA  
RUÓTA. (Dant. Conv.)

Then he seems to descend ninety-one more circles by the same way.

*Anzi quasi tútti, infra* IL TÈR-  
ZO GIÓRNO DALL' APPARIZIÓNE  
DÉI SOPRADÉTTI SÉGNI, *morivano.*  
(Bocc. Intr.)

Nay almost all died the third day after the appearance of the abovementioned symptoms.

*E che in quèi PRÍMI GIÓRNI,  
di sul mónte délla Trinità, vi  
VOLÒ SÓPRA LA TÈSTA UN' ÁQUI-  
LA.* (Bemb.)

And that in those first days, on the mountain of the Trinity, an eagle flew over your head.

## CONCORDANCE OF PRONOUNS.

*Adjective pronouns* agree with their *substantives*, in gender and number ; as,

*tenéle* QUÈSTO DENÁRO,      take this money ;

*non rimarrébbe a sostenér* there would not remain any  
 NESSÚNA PÉNA, punishment to suffer.

## EXCEPTION.

The pronoun *tutto*, preceded by the preposition *per*, 'through'; remains invariable; as,

*per tÚTTO Róma,*  
*per tÚTTO la casa,*

[through all or] all over Rome ;  
 all over the house.

*Possessive pronouns agree with the thing possessed,* and not with the possessor; as,

*Mónna Giovánna sen' andá- MONNA GIOVANNA used to go*  
*va con quéslo sÚO FI-* with this son of hers ;  
 GLIUÓLO,

*Frescò avéva úna sÚA NEPÓ-* Frescò had a niece.  
 TE,

The *relative pronoun quále*, 'which'; agrees with its antecedent, in gender and number; as,

*quél CUÓRE, IL QUÁLE la lí-* that heart, which propitious  
*ta fortuna non avéa potúto* fortune had not been able to  
*aprire,* move.

If the antecedent consists of *two or more nouns of different gender or number*, the relative *quále* agrees with the nearest noun; as,

*la virtù è l' ONÓRE DEL QUÁ-* the virtue and honor with  
*LE è dotáta,* which she is endowed ;  
 I QUÁLI TÉMPJ e cappélle ri- which temples and chapels he  
*empiè di paraméjti,* filled with ornaments.

## EXAMPLES.

*Signóra, TENÉTE QUÉSTO DE-* Madam, take this money.  
 NÁRO. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 1.)

*Che NON RIMARRÉBBE A SOS-* That there would not remain  
 TENÉR PÉNA NESSÚNA nel purga- in purgatory any punishment to  
*tório per gli peccáti. (Pass.)* suffer for sins.

*Sóno státo* PER TÚTTO RÓMA. I have been all over Rome. —  
 — *L' ho cercáto* PER TÚTTO LA I have looked for it all over the  
 CÁSA. (Salv. Avvert. vol. 1. l. 3.) house.

*MÓNNA GIOVÁNNA CON QUÉSTO* Monna Giovanna used to go  
*SÚO FIGLIUÓLO SEN' ANDÁVA in* into the country with this son of  
*contádo.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.) hers.

*Úno, che si chiamò* FRESCÒ, A certain man, called Frescò,  
*AVÉVA ÚNA SÚA NÉPÓTE.* (Bocc. had a niece.  
 g. 6. n. 8.)

*QUÉL CUÓRE, IL QUÁLE LA LIÉ-* That heart, which the propitious  
*TA FORTÚNA DI GIRÓLAMO NON* fortune of Jerome had not been  
*AVÉA POTÚTO APRÍRE, la miséria* able to open, was opened by his  
*P' apérse.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 8.) misery.

*LA VIRTÙ E L' ONÓRE DEL* The virtue and honor with which  
*QUÁLE È DOTÁTA.* (Bocc. g. 5. she is endowed.  
 n. 6.)

*Óltre di quésto, féce fare altári* Besides that, he caused very  
*e cappélle splendidissime, i QUÁLI* splendid altars and chapels to be  
*TÉMPJ E CAPPÉLLE RIEMPIÈ DI* built, which temples and chapels  
*PARAMÉNTI.* (Mach. Stor. Fior. he filled with ornaments.  
 l. 7.)

## CONCORDANCE OF VERBS.

*Verbs* are to agree with their *subjectives*, either *expressed* or *understood*, in *number* and *person*; as,

io ti CONSOLERÒ,	I will gratify thee;
vói non UDÍSTE,	you did not hear;
[io] BRÁMO la mórtè,	I desire death.

When the subjective *consists* of *several* nouns, which *all concur* simultaneously to *perform* the *action* of the verb, the verb *agrees* with a *noun* in the *plural* understood; as,

CONSÍGLIO e RAGIÓNÈ [qué-	advice and reason [ <i>these two</i>
ste dúc cóse] CONDÚCONO	<i>things</i> ] lead to victory;
la vittória,	



<p>CALANDRINO, BRUNO, e BUFFALMÁCCO [questi tre soggetti] VANNO cercándo di trovar l' eliotrópia,</p> <p>né LA SÚA PARTÍTA, né LA SÚA LÚNGA DIMÓRA, né LA SVENTURÁTA SÚA MÓRTE, me l' HÁNNO POTÚTO trarre dal cuóre,</p>	<p>Calandrino, Bruno, and Buffal-macco [<i>these three persons</i>] go in search of the helio-trope;* neither his departure, nor his long absence, nor his lamentable death, has been able to take him out of my heart.</p>
--	---

When there are in a phrase *several subjectives*, and these are of two or more *different persons*; as, *io e tu*, 'I and thou'; *tu ed egli*, 'thou and he'; &c., the verb agrees with a *personal pronoun* in the *plural* understood.

Thus, if one of the subjectives is *io*, 'I'; the pronoun understood with which the verb will agree, is *nói*, 'we'; if one of the subjectives is *tu*, and *io* is not one of the others, the pronoun understood is *vói*, 'you'; and if the subjectives are all of the *third* person, the pronoun understood is *églino*, *élleno*, or *éssi*, 'they'; as,†

<p>TU dall' ún láto e STÉCCHI dall' áltro [vói].mi VERRÉTE SOSTENÉNDÓ,</p> <p>cóme sái tu, chi mío MARÍTO o ío [nói] ci SIÁMO?</p> <p>ÉGLI e ÉLLA [éssi] CERNÁRONO un póco di cárne saláta,</p> <p>TU, ÉGLI. Sífro, e ío [nói] PI-GLIERÁMO úno per . . . . .</p> <p>vorréi che vói o ÉGLINO mi DICÉSTE,</p>	<p>thou on one side and Stecchi on the other [<i>you</i>] will support me;</p> <p>how dost thou know who my husband and I [<i>we</i>] are?</p> <p>he and she [<i>they</i>] supped on a little salt beef;</p> <p>thou, he, Cyrus, and I [<i>we</i>] will take a man for . . . . .</p> <p>I wish that either you or they would tell me.</p>
---	---

If the subjective consists of *several* nouns, and the *action* of the verb can be performed, either successively or

\* A kind of precious stone, which was believed to possess the virtue of rendering invisible the persons who carried it about them. — See Dant. Inf. 24; Bocc. g. 8. n. 3; Franc. Sacch. Op. Div. 93.

† There are two examples in Dante in which this rule appears to have been disregarded for the sake of rhyme:

*Túto che il d'ca ed ío nel léno vu'í.* (Dant. Inf. 8.)

*Dé' quái né ío, né il d'ca m'ío s' accósse.* (Dant. Inf.)

but such licenses are not to be followed.

As soon as my leader and I entered in the boat;

Of whom neither I nor my leader was aware:

alternatively, by *either of them*, the *verb agrees* with the *nearest noun* ; as,

MUÓVASI LA CAPRAÍA e la Gorgóna,	may Capraia and Gorgona rise from their foundations ;
quál fortuna o DESTÍNO quag- giù ti MÉNA ?	what fortune or destiny brings thee here below ?
non Cinna, non SÍLLA SI- GNOREGGIÒ lungaménte,	neither Cinna nor Sylla ruled long.

Sometimes one of the nouns, which form the subjective of the verb, is a *word* which in itself *includes* the *signi-* *fication* of all the *others*, and then the verb *agrees* directly with *this word* ; as,

nè vói, nè ÁLTRI mi POTRÀ più dire ch' io non l' ábbia vedúta,	neither you nor any other one will be able to tell me any longer that I have not seen it ;
nè pióggia cadúta, nè ácqua gittáta, nè ÁLTRO UMIDÓRE gli SPEGNÉVA,	neither the rain which had fal- len, nor the water which they threw on it, nor any other wet thing extinguished them.

If the subjective consists of two nouns, the one of which is, as it were, a *part* of the other which expresses the *whole*, the verb *agrees* with the *whole*, and not with the *part* ; as,

la maggiór parte de' suoi só- NO mórti,	the greater part of his friends are dead ;
úna infinùtà di STROMÉNTI FÚRONO preparáti,	a great number of instruments were prepared.

Sometimes the noun expressing the *whole* is *under-* *stood* ; as,

la maggiór partita [di indi- vidui] FÚRONO mórti,	the greater part [of the indi- viduals] were killed.
--	---

When the subjective is a *collective* noun, the *verb* is put in the *singular*; \* as,

<i>perchè QUEL PÓPOLO È sì tm- pio?</i>	why is that people so fell?
<i>m' APPARÌ ÚNA GENTE d' á- nime,</i>	a troop of spirits appeared to me;
<i>VENÌA MAGGIÓR FRÓTTA dī Románi,</i>	there came a greater crowd of Romans.

If the subjective is a *verb used as a noun*, or a *phrase*, the *verb* is put in the *singular*; as,

<i>IL VOLÉRE SOTTOMÉTTERE LE MIE FÓRZE A GROSSÍSSIMI PÉSİ, m' È 'agione dī qu- sta infermità,</i>	the wish to oppose my strength to very heavy burdens is the occasion of this weakness.
---	--

Sometimes the subjective of the verb is *represented* by the *relative* pronoun *che*, 'who,' 'which'; and then the verb *agrees* with the *noun* or *pronoun*, *represented* by *che*; either *expressed* or *understood*; † as,

<i>İ son Beatrice che ti FÁCCIO andáre,</i>	I am Beatrice, who bids thee to go;
---	--

\* Instances may be quoted from the classics, however, in which the *verb* is put in the *plural*; as,

*L' INNO CHE QUE'LLA GENTE allór CAN-  
TA'RO.* (Dant. Purg. 32.)

The hymn, which those people then  
sung.

*Potéte vedére cōme IL COMU'NE PÓPOLO  
E' RANO ignoranti del vére Idēo.* (Giov.  
Vill. l. 1. c. 26.)

You may see how ignorant of the true  
God the common people were.

*LA SU'A FAMÍGLIA AVE'VANO un dī  
préso un pentoláo per malleveria.* (Nov.  
Ant. 83.)

One day his family took a pottor for  
bail:

but this usage is carefully avoided by modern writers.

† Examples may be found, nevertheless, in which the verb *agrees* directly with the *relative pronoun che*, without any reference to the *noun* or *pronoun*, which it represents; as,

*Fo son colai, CHE ti diò tanta guérta,  
— E compió ssa giornata innanzi sera.*  
(Petr. s. 361.)

I am she, who caused thee so much  
trouble, and who closed her day before  
its evening.

*Or sé tu quella Corisca, CHE tradito  
m' HA in tanti módi? — Corisca son ben  
io, — ch' ágli ócchi tuóti — Un tempo  
fu sì cara.* (Guar. Past. Fid. 2. 6.)

Now art thou that Corisca, who has  
betrayed me in so many different ways?  
— I am indeed that Corisca, who was  
once so dear in your eyes.

<i>io son colui, che TENNI ambo le chiavi,</i>	I am he, who held both the keys;
<i>poeta, [tu] che mi GUIDI,</i>	poet! [ <i>thou</i> ] who art my guide;
<i>O frati, [vói] che SIETE giunti all' occidente,</i>	O brothers! [ <i>you</i> ] who have now reached the west;
<i>uno de' sette REGI, che ASSI- SERO Tebe,</i>	one of the seven kings, who be- sieged Thebes;
<i>uno di QUEGLI, che il POSERO in croce,</i>	one of those, who put him on the cross.

EXAMPLES.

*IO TI CONSOLERÒ di così LUNGO  
desio.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)

I will gratify thee in so long a  
desire.

*Grazióse dónne, VÓI NON UDÍ-  
STE forse mái díre.* (Bocc. g. 3.  
n. 10.)

Charming ladies, perhaps you  
never heard say.

*Che per minór martír LA MÓR-  
TE BRÁMO.* (Bocc. g. 4. Canz.)

I desire death to lessen my suf-  
ferings.

*CONSÍGLIO E RAGIÓNÉ CONDÚ-  
CONO LA VITTÓRIA.* (Dav. St.)

Advice and reason lead to vic-  
tory.

*CALANDRÍNO, BRÚNO, E BUF-  
FALMÁCCO VÁNNO CERCÁNDO DI  
TROVÁR L' ELITRÓPIA, e Calan-  
dríno se la créde avér trováta.*  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

Calandrino, Bruno, and Buffal-  
macco go in search of the *helio-  
trope*, and Calandrino believes he  
has found it.

*NÈ LA SÚA PARTÍTA, NÈ LA  
SÚA LÚNGA DIMÓRA, NÈ LA SVEN-  
TURÁTA SÚA MÓRTE, ME L' HÀN-  
NO POTÚTO TRÁRRE DAL CUÓRE.*  
(Bocc.)

Neither his departure, nor his  
long absence, nor his lamentable  
death, have been able to take him  
out of my heart.

*TU DALL' ÚN LÁTO, E STÉCCHI  
DALL' ÁLTRO, MI VERRÉTE SOS-  
TENÉNDO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

Thou on one side, and Stecchi  
on the other, will support me.

*"COME," disse la dónna, "SÁI  
TU CHI MÍO MARÍTO O ÍO CI SIÁ-  
MO?"*

"How dost thou know," said  
the lady, "who my husband and  
I are?"

*ÉGLI E ÉLLA CENÁRONO UN  
PÓCO DI CÁRNE SALÁTA.* (Bocc.  
g. 7. n. 1.)

He and she supped on a little  
salt beef.

TU, ÉGLI, SÍRO, E IO FIGLIE- Thou, he, Syrus, and I, will  
RÉMO ÚNO PER . . . . (Mach. take a man for . . . .  
Mandrag.)

VORRÉI CHE VÓI O ÉGLINO MI I wish that either you or they  
DICÉSTE. (Ben. Varch.) would tell me.

MUÓVASI I.A. CAPRAIA E LA May Capraia and Gorgona rise  
GORGÓNA, — *E fáccian síepe ad from their foundations, and dam up  
A'rno in su la fôce.* (Dant. Inf. the mouth of Arno.  
c. 83.)

QUÁL FORTÚNA O DESTÍNO, — What fortune or destiny brings  
A'nzi l' último dì, QUAGGIÙ TI thee here below, before thy last  
MÉNA? (Dant. Inf. 15.) day?

NON CÍNNA, NON SÍLLA, si- Neither Cinna, nor Sylla ruled  
GNOREGGIÒ LUNGAMÉNTE. (Dav. long.  
Stor.)

"*Fáteci dipingere la Cortesia.*" "Cause Liberality to be paint-  
— "*Io c'ella farò dipingere di ed there.*" — "I will cause it to  
maniera, che mái nè vói, nè be painted there in such a manner,  
ÁLTRI, con ragióne, MI POTRÀ that neither you nor any other  
PIÙ DÍRE, CH' ÍO NON L' ÁBBIA one, will be able to tell me any  
VEDÚTA, nè conosciúta." (Bocc. longer, that I have never seen it,  
g. 1. n. 8.) or known it."

NÈ PIÓGGIA CADÚTA, NÈ ÁC- Neither the rain which had fal-  
QUA GITTÁTA, NÈ ÁLTRO UMIDÓ- len, nor the water which they  
RE GLI SPEGNÉVA. (Dav. Ann.) threw on it, nor any other wet  
thing extinguished them.

Ciascúna di nói sa che DÉ' Every one of us knows, that  
SUÓI SÓNO LA MAGGIÓR PÁRTE the greater part of our friends are  
MÓRTI. (Bocc. Intr.) dead.

ÚNA INFINITÀ DI STROMÉNTI A great number of instruments  
da dar martório FÚRONO PRE- of torture were prepared.  
PARÁTI. (Fir. As. 71.)

LA MAGGIÓR PARTÍTA FÚRONO The greater part were killed  
MÓRTI e tagliáti, e párte presi. and cut to pieces, and some taken.  
(Giov. Vill. l. 7. c. 19.)

Dímme, PERCHÈ QUÉL PÓPOLO Tell me, why is that people so  
È SÌ ÉMPÍO — *Incónt'r d' miéi in fell against my kin in all their  
ciascúna súa légge?* (Dant. Inf. laws?  
10.)

Da man sinistra m' APPARÌ On the left hand appeared to  
ÚNA GÉNTE — D' ÁNIME, che mo- me a troop of spirits, that moved  
viéno i piè ver nói. (Dant. Purg. their steps towards us.  
3.)

*Póì, VENIA MAGGIÓR FRÓTTA*  
DI ROMÁNI. (Franc. Sacch. Rim.)

Then, there came a greater crowd  
of Romans.

*Signór mio, IL VOLÉRE ío LE*  
MIE FÓRZE SOTTOMÉTTERE A  
GROSSÍSSIMI PÉSI M' È CAGIÓNE  
DI QUÉSTA INFERMITÀ. (Bocc. g.  
10. n. 7.)

My lord, the wish to oppose my  
strength to very heavy burdens is  
the occasion of this weakness.

*I' SON BEATRÍCE, CHE TI FÁC-*  
CIO ANDÁRE. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

I am Beatrice, who bids thee  
to go.

*Ío SON COLÚI, CHE TÉNNI ÁM-*  
BO LE CHIÁVI — *Del cuór di Fe-*  
*derigo.* (Dant. Inf. 13.)

I am he, who held both the keys  
of the heart of Frederick.

*Ío comincíai: "POÉTA, CHE*  
MI GUÍDI, — *Guárda la mia vir-*  
*tù s' ell' è possénte."* (Dant. Inf.  
2.)

I began: "Poet! thou who art  
my guide, consider well if there is  
sufficient virtue in me."

*"O FRÁTI," díssi, "CHE per*  
*cénto mília — Perigli SIÉTE*  
*GIÚNTI ALL' OCCIDÉNTE."* (Dant.  
Inf. 26.)

"O brothers!" said I, "who  
through perils without number  
have now reached the west."

*Dicéndo: "Quél fu l' UN DÉ'*  
*SÉTTE RÉGI, — CH' ASSÍSER TÉ-*  
*BE."* (Dant. Inf. 14.)

Saying: "That was one of  
the seven kings, who besieged  
Thebes."

*Se tu fòssi státo ÚNO DI QUÉ-*  
*GLI, CHE IL PÓSERO IN CRÓCE.*  
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

If thou had been one of those,  
who put him on the cross.

## CONCORDANCE OF PARTICIPLES.

*Participles*, as it has been already mentioned p. 345,  
when used as adjectives, agree with *substantives* in *gen-*  
*der* and *number*, and follow in this respect the *rules*  
already given with regard to the *concordance* of that *part*  
*of speech*; as,

*LÉI, in váno mercè ADDO-*  
*MANDÁNTE, uccíse,*

he killed her, while begging  
in vain for mercy;

*álle DÓNNE ASPETTÁNTI sí*  
*rivolse,*

he addressed himself to the la-  
dies [who were] waiting;

<i>il cavalière, UDÌTA LA DO-</i> <i>MÀNDA E LA PROFÉRTA,</i> <i>propòse,</i>	the gentleman, having heard the request and the proposal, resolved ;
<i>poichè il giardino, e LA</i> <i>CÀSA di Messèr Neri ebbe</i> <i>VEDÚTA,</i>	after having viewed the gar- den and the house of Messer Neri ;
<i>le DÓNNE e i CAVALIÉRI nel</i> <i>palágio RADUNÀTI,</i>	the ladies and gentlemen [that had] collected in the palace ;
<i>L' ANÉLLA e LA CORÓNA</i> <i>AVÚTE dal nuòvo spòso,</i>	the rings and the garland, [which she had] received from her new husband :
<i>IL RE cò' SUOI COMPÀGNI</i> <i>RIMONTÀTI a cavállo,</i>	the king with his attendants having mounted their horses.

[For Rules how to determine when Participles are used as adjectives and when not, see CHAPTER ON PARTICIPLES.]

## EXAMPLES.

*Fólco, da dolór vnto, tiráta*  
*fuòri úna spáda, LÉI, IN VÁNO*  
*MERCÈ ADDOMANDANTE, UCCISE.*  
(Bocc. g. 4. d. 3.)

Folco, overcome by grief, hav-  
ing drawn a sword, killed her while  
begging in vain for mercy.

*ALLE DÓNNE ASPETTÁNTI SI*  
*RIVÓLSE, e disse.* (Bocc. g. 9.  
d. 10.)

He addressed himself to the  
ladies who were waiting, and said.

*IL CAVALIÉRE, UDÌTA LA DO-*  
*MÀNDA E LA PROFÉRTA délla*  
*dónna, sèco PROPÒSE.* (Bocc. g.  
10. d. 5.)

The gentleman, having heard  
the request and the proposal of  
the lady, resolved.

*Il quále, POICHÈ IL GIARDÍN*  
*tutto, E LA CÀSA DI MESSÈR NÉ-*  
*RI ÉBBE VEDÚTA.* (Bocc. g. 10.  
d. 6.)

Who, after having viewed the  
garden and the house of Messer  
Neri.

*E senténdo LE DÓNNE E' CAVA-*  
*LIÉRI NEL PALÁGIO del cònte RA-*  
*DUNÀTI.* (Bocc. g. 3. d. 9.)

And hearing that the ladies and  
gentlemen had collected in the  
palace of the count.

*La dónna e L' ANÉLLA E LA*  
*CORÓNA AVÚTE DAL NUÓVO SPÓSO*  
*quívi lasciò.* (Bocc. g. 10. d. 9.)

The lady left there the rings  
and the garland which she had  
received from her new husband.

*IL RE CÒ' SUOI COMPÀGNI, RI-*  
*MONTÀTI A CAVÁLLO, al reale*  
*ostiére se ne tornárono.* Bocc.  
g. 10. d. 6.)

The king with his attendants,  
having mounted their horses, re-  
turned to the royal palace.

EXERCISE XXVIII.

Then that magnanimous Pompey, who — (the which)  
*magnánimo Pompéo, —*

boasted (himself) continually, that where he | struck |  
*vantare<sup>2</sup> (himself) continuo, — percuotésse |*

the earth with (the) his foot (the) entire legions  
*térra — piè<sup>4</sup> intiero<sup>5</sup> legióno<sup>6</sup>*

| would come out | from it |, fled not only from  
*sarébbero<sup>2</sup> uscite<sup>3</sup> | ne<sup>1</sup> |, fuggire*

Rome, but from (the) Italy also. He is of a won-  
*Róma, — Itália — mara-*

derful agreeableness and (of a wonderful) vivacity.  
*viglióso<sup>6</sup> piacevolézza<sup>1</sup> and (of a wonderful) brío<sup>6</sup>.*

And the preparation, and the joy, and the other  
*apparcchio, allegrézza, áltro*

things were described to-him beyond (of) the truth.  
*cósa<sup>2</sup> dipingere<sup>2</sup> to-him<sup>1</sup> maggióre véro.*

(The) my guide and I descended the mountain.  
*(The) — dúca I scéndere mónte.*

The greatest part of (the) men are ambitious. He  
*maggiór párté (the) uómo ambizióso. —*

commanded that all (the) his family should appear  
*Comandáre tútto (the) famáglia venire<sup>2</sup>*

before him. Know, that I am Bertrand de Born,  
*3 1 Sapére, Bertrám dal Bórnio,*

he who gave (to the) King John the mischievous  
*dáre (to the) re Giovánni málo*

counsels. The filial respect and (the filial) love.  
*confórto. 1 filiale<sup>6</sup> riverénza<sup>2</sup> 2 4 — amór<sup>5</sup>.*

Great,\* small,\* rich,\* and poor,\* no one can escape  
*Gránde, piccoló,<sup>2</sup> ricco,<sup>1</sup> póvero, nessuno potére sottrárre.*

(himself to the) death. Many were accused this year.  
*mórté. Móllo 2 accusáre<sup>4</sup> 1 áнно<sup>2</sup>.*

\* Great, small, rich, poor, are here used in the plural number.



And she embracing (the) her infant. I have looked  
*abbracciare* *figliuolo.* *cercare*

all over the street. Callimachus and Ligurius have  
*tutto<sup>2</sup> per<sup>1</sup>* *strada.* *Callimaco* *Ligurio<sup>2</sup>*

told me, that the doctor and the ladies are coming  
*dire<sup>2</sup>* <sup>1,</sup> *dottore* *donna venire*

to (the) church. Neither thou nor I am rich. I  
*chiesa.* *ricco.*

am the ghost of Capocchio, who falsified (the) metals  
*ombra* *falsare* *metallo*

| by the power of | alchemy. He | fell in love |  
*con* *alchimia.* — *s' innamorò<sup>4</sup>* |

| with | a noble-lady, held in (the) his time \* for  
*D<sup>1</sup>* | <sup>2</sup> *gentildonna,<sup>2</sup> tenere<sup>2</sup>* <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> *tempo<sup>7</sup>* —

one of the most beautiful, and of the most amiable  
 — *bella,* *leggiadra*

that were in Florence. Pride, envy, and avarice  
<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *Firenze<sup>2</sup>.* *Supèrbia, invidia,* *avarizia*

are the three sparks, which have inflamed all  
*favilla,* *accendere<sup>2</sup>* —

(the) hearts. I saw a man, who had both (the)  
<sup>1</sup> *cubre<sup>2</sup>.* — *Vedere* *uòmo,* *ambo*

his hands cut-off, and another who had (the) his  
 — *màno* *mòzzo,* <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> —

throat pierced. For (the) which reasons, (the) our  
*gola<sup>4</sup>* *forato<sup>1</sup>.* *cosa,* *our*

supper having been disturbed, I not only have not  
*céna* — — *sturbare,* <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>

eat it, but not even (have) tasted it. Nor  
*trangiare<sup>4</sup>* <sup>2,</sup> <sup>3</sup> *assaggiare<sup>4</sup>* <sup>1.</sup>

the excessive maternal pity and joy permitted it.  
*soprabbondante materna<sup>4</sup>* *pietà<sup>1</sup>* <sup>2</sup> *allegrezza<sup>3</sup>* *permettere<sup>4</sup>* <sup>2.</sup>

\* Time, in the plural.

## CHAPTER III.

## REGIMEN OR GOVERNMENT OF WORDS.

## REGIMEN OF SUBSTANTIVES.

A *substantive* may be *dependent on*, or *in relation with*, another substantive; and this dependence or relation, which may be expressed in different manners, forms what is called the *regimen* or the *complement* of the signification of *substantives*.

When of *two substantive* nouns the *second*, which is dependent on the first, conveys an idea of *possession*, *extraction*, or *qualification*, (as when it expresses *property*; *paternity*, or *filiation*; the *material*, the *place*, or the *quantity* of a thing; a *family name*; or similar circumstances;) it requires to be *preceded* by the preposition *di*; as,

<i>F</i> <i>occhio</i> DEL CUORE,	the eye of the heart;
<i>gli anni</i> <i>della</i> <i>Incarnazione</i> <i>del Figliuolo</i> DI DIO,	the years of the Incarnation of the Son of God;
<i>vergogna</i> è <i>madre</i> DI ONESTÀ,	shame is the mother of modesty;
<i>una fontana</i> DI MÀRMO bian- <i>chissimo</i> ,	a fountain of very white marble;
<i>Certaldo</i> è un <i>castello</i> DI VALDÉLSA,	Certaldo is a castle of Valdelsa;
<i>torchiétti</i> DI LÍBBRA, e <i>tor-</i> <i>chiétti</i> DI MÉZZA LÍBBRA,	wax-tapers of a pound, and wax-tapers of half a pound each;
<i>fu salvato</i> da <i>certi</i> <i>di casa</i> DÉ' BÀRDI,	he was saved by some people belonging to the house of the Bardi.

There are some *adjective pronouns*, which when used *substantively* follow the same rule ; as,

*faceva un POCO DI BANCÓ,* he kept a little bank ;  
*spalancando TANTO DI GÓLA,* opening his throat [mouth] wide.

The preposition *di* is often elegantly *suppressed* after the word *casa* followed by a *family name* ; as,

*in CASA [di] Messér GUASPAR- in the house of Messer Guaspar-*  
*RÍNO,* *rino ;*  
*in CASA [dé] gli ALBIZZI,* in the house of the Albizzi.

When the *second* substantive expresses the *form* or *similitude* of the *first*, it requires to be *preceded* by the preposition *a* ; as,

*détti A BÍSCHERI,* teeth like pegs ;  
*berettaccia A GRÓNDA,* a cap like the eaves of a house ;  
*bárba A LUCIGNOLI,* a beard like two wicks of a candle.

When the *second* substantive expresses *suitableness*, *convenience*, or *derivation* as to one's *country*,\* it requires to be *preceded* by the preposition *da* ; as,

*età DA MARÍTO,* an age suitable for marriage ;  
*témpo DA CONFÓRTO,* time of consolation ;  
*Guidótto DA CREMÓNA,* Guidotto of Cremona ;  
*Giacómín DA PAVÍA,* James of Pavia.

\* This is limited, however, to the case when the substantive is a *proper name* of a *city, town, village, or castle* ; for, when the substantive is a *proper name* of a *kingdom, province, or island*, it is always *preceded* by the preposition *di* ; as,

*Disso il monaco : " Io sono anche mòr- The monk replied : " I am dead also,*  
*to, e fíli DI SARDIGNA." (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)* and I was of Sardinia."

Instances are also met with amongst the classics, in which the preposition *di* is used even in the case when, according to the rule, *da* ought to be used ; as,

*Lo primo Podestà fus Messér Pazzino The first Podesta was Messer Pazzino*  
*dé' Pazzi DI FIRENZE. (Stor. Pist. 50.)* *de' Pazzi of Florence.*

*Cólla fórza dé' détti Orsini DI RÓMA. With the assistance of the said Orsini*  
*(Gio. Vill. l. 9. c. 39.)* *of Rome.*

*Il Signór Gismondo Malatesta DI Rí- Gismondo Malatesta of Rimini.*  
*MINI. (Car. lett. 3.)*

## EXAMPLES.

*L' ambre privato chiude* L' OCCHIO DEL CUORE. (Amm. Ant. d. 5. r. 8.) Selfishness shuts the eye of the heart.

*Già erano* GLI ANNI DELLA FRUTTIFERA INCARNAZIONE DEL FIGLIUOLO DI DIO *al número pervenuti di* 1348. (Bocc. Intr.) The years of the fruitful Incarnation of the Son of God had reached the number of 1348.

*VERGÓGNA È MADRE DI ONESTÀ, e maestra d' innocénza.* (Amm. Ant. d. 5. r. 7.) Shame is the mother of modesty, and the mistress of innocence.

*Nel mézzo del qual prato era* UNA FONTANA DI MÁRMO BIANCHÍSSIMO. (Bocc. g. 8. Intr.) In the middle of which field there was a fountain of very white marble.

*CERTÁLDO È UN CASTÉLLO DI VALDÉLSA, il quale quantunque picciol sia, già di molti uomini ed agiati fu abitato.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 10.) Certaldo is a castle of Valdelsa, which, although small, was formerly inhabited by many and wealthy people.

*Una grand' arca tutta fornita di TORCHIÉTTI DI LIBBRA, e la chiesa e le cappelle d' intorno piene di TORCHIÉTTI DI MÉZZA LIBBRA, e spesso di que' DI LIBBRA.* (Borgh. Arm. Fam. 23.) A great coffin surrounded with wax tapers of a pound, and the church and the chapels full of wax-tapers of half a pound, and often of some of a pound each.

*FU scampato e salvato da certi di CASA DÈ' BÀRDI.* (Gio. Vill. l. 12. c. 17.) He was rescued and saved by certain people belonging to the house of the Bardi.

*Vi era un certo Ludovico, il quale aveva di molti danari, e faceva un poco di BANCO.* (Firenz. As. d' Or.) There was a certain Ludovico, who had a great deal of money, and kept a little bank.

*E SPALANCANDO poi TÁNTO DI GÓLA.* (Lip. Malm. 7. 85.) And opening his mouth wide.

*Stettero più anni i due giovani in casa MESSÉR GUASPARRINO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.) The two youths remained for several years in the house of Messer Guasparino.

*Con grande paura e pericolo si fuggì in casa GLI ALBÍZZI.* (Gio. Vill. l. 12. c. 17.) In great fear and danger he took refuge in the house of the Albizzi.

*Con quei suoi DENTI A BIS-  
CHERI.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 2.)

With those teeth of his like  
pegs.

*Con quella BERETTACCIA A  
GRONDA, e con quella BARBA A  
LUCIGNOLI.* (Buon. Fier. 2. 3.)

With that cap of his like the  
eaves of a house, and that beard  
like two wicks of a candle.

*Essendo ella già di ETÀ DA  
MARITO.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 4.)

She being already of an age  
suitable for marriage.

*La donna a cui più TEMPO DA  
CONFORTO, che DA riprensione  
parca.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

The lady to whom this appeared  
more a time of consolation, than of  
reprehension.

*GUIDOTTO DA CREMONA lascia  
a GIACOMIN DA PAVIA una sua  
fanciulla.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

Guidotto of Cremona leaves a  
daughter of his to James of Pavia.

#### RÉGIMEN OF ADJECTIVES.

The *regimen* or *complement* of adjectives is generally a *substantive*, a *pronoun*, a *verb*, or a *phrase* preceded by a *preposition*.

*Adjectives* signifying *knowledge* or *ignorance*, *praise* or *blame*, *possession* or *privation*, *abundance* or *scarcity*, require that their *complement* be *preceded* by the *preposition di*; as,

*dotto delle SCRITTURE,*

learned in the Scriptures;

*ignorantissimi della MEDICINA,*

very ignorant of medicine;

*giovine di ETÀ, bellissima  
di FORMA, chiara di SANGUE  
e di COSTUMI,*

of youthful age, of very beautiful form, and of distinguished birth and manners;

*próde delle ARMI, ma de'  
COSTUMI vizioso,*

brave in arms, but of vicious habits;

*abbondante di GRANO, di ORZO,  
di BESTIAME, e di  
PESCI,*

abundant in grain, barley, cattle, and fish.

*Adjectives* signifying *similitude*, *inclination*, *suitableness*, *advantage*, *tendency*, or the *contrary*, require their *complement* to be *preceded* by the *preposition a*; as,

<i>la bárba A' SUÓI CAPÉGLI</i>	the beard like his locks ;
<i>simigliánte,</i>	
<i>cóse piú átte A' BEVITÓRI,</i>	things more becoming to
<i>che álle SÓBRIE DÓNNE,</i>	drunkards, than to sober ladies ;
<i>provincia dedite ÁLLE ÁRMI,</i>	provinces addicted to arms ;
<i>niuna cósá è cosí contrária</i>	nothing is so unfavorable to a
<i>AL DICITÓRE,</i>	speaker ;
<i>gráve ÁGLI UÓMINI di pervér-</i>	odious to men of wicked habits.
<i>si costúmi,</i>	

*Adjectives* signifying *departure, distance, separation,* require that their *complement* should be *preceded* by the preposition *da* ; as,

<i>ésuli DÁLLE LÓRO PÁTRIE,</i>	exiles from their countries ;
<i>fé' disgiúnto DALL' ÁNIMO ù</i>	made the soul disjoined from
<i>passibile intellétto,</i>	his passive intellect ;
<i>éna navicélla di pescatóri</i>	a small fishing boat distant
<i>separáta DÁLL' ÁLTRE NÁ-</i>	from the other vessels.
<i>VI,</i>	

*Some adjectives,* as *conténto,* 'contented,' 'satisfied' ; *présto,* 'prompt,' 'ready' ; *accóncio,* 'disposed,' 'inclined' ; may have a *complement* preceded by either the preposition *di* or *a* ; as,

<i>CONTÉNTO DI QUÉLLO, che</i>	content with what was given
<i>gli éra dáto,</i>	to him ;
<i>státe CONTÉNTI ÁLLA VOLON-</i>	be satisfied with the will of
<i>TÀ di Dio,</i>	God ;
<i>PRÉSTA DI FÁRE FÉSTA al</i>	prompt to greet his fellow-
<i>súo cittadino,</i>	citizen ;
<i>PRÉSTI A MÓRDERE ógni</i>	ready to slander every praise-
<i>laudévol cósá,</i>	worthy thing ;
<i>sóno ACCÓNCIA D' IMPEGNÁR</i>	I am disposed to pawn these
<i>quése róbe,</i>	garments ;
<i>piú ACCÓNCIA A CRÉDERE ù</i>	more inclined to believe the
<i>mále,</i>	evil.

## EXAMPLES.

- Essendo molto dótto delle Scrittúre, ed ammaestrato della fede di Cristo.* (Cav. At. ap. 113.) Being very learned in the Scriptures, and well instructed in the Christian faith.
- Molti vi sono della medicina ignorantissimi.* (Lib. Cur. mal.) There are many very ignorant of medicine.
- Una di loro di età giovine, di forma bellissima, chiara di sangue e di costumi.* (Bocc. Fiam. l. 1.) One of them of youthful age, of most beautiful form, and of distinguished birth and manners.
- Cavaliere prode delle armi, ma de' costumi vizioso.* (Pass. Spec. Ver. Penit.) A cavalier brave in arms, but of vicious habits.
- Il paese è grandissimo, e molto abbondante di grano, di orzo, di bestiame, e di pesci.* (Giamb. l. 5.) The country is very vast, and very abundant in grain, barley, cattle, and fish.
- Lunga la barba, e di poi bianco mista, — Portava, à' suoi capelli simigliante.* (Dant. Pur. l.) His beard, mixed with hoary white, like his locks, descended low down.
- Cose più atte à' bevitori che alle sóbrie ed oneste donne.* (Bocc. Intr.) Things more becoming to drunkards, than to sober and modest ladies.
- Province naturalmente dedita alle armi.* (Giamb. l. 3.) Provinces naturally addicted to arms.
- Niuna cosa è così contraria al dicitore, come il manifesto acconciamento.* (Amm. Ant. d. 11. r. 3.) Nothing is so unfavorable to a speaker as the evident dressing up of language.
- La vita de' buoni è sempre grave agli uomini di perversi costumi.* (Amm. Ant. d. 14. r. 1.) The life of the good is always odious to men of wicked habits.
- Coloro, che sono esuli dalle loro patrie, desiderano di tornarvi.* (Fra Giord. Pred.) Those, who are exiles from their countries, are desirous to return there.
- Sicchè, per sua dottrina, fé' disgiunto — dall' animo il passibile intelletto.* (Dant. Pur. 25.) So that, by his wisdom, he made the soul disjoined from his passive intellect.

*Trovò per avventúra, alquánto  
SEPARÁTA DÁLLE ÁLTRE NÁVI,  
ÚNA NAVICÉLLA DI PESCATÓRI.  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)*

He found by chance, a small  
fishing boat somewhat distant from  
the other vessels.

*CONTÉNTO DI QUÉLLO, CHE DÁ-  
TO GLI ÉRA, piú non chiedéa.  
(Vit. S. Ant.)*

Content with what was given  
to him, he asked no more.

*E però, pádre e mádre mía,  
STÁTE CONTÉNTI ÁLLA VOLONTÀ  
DI DÍO. (Vit. S. Gio. Batt.)*

Therefore, my parents, be satis-  
fied with the will of God.

*Quell' ánima gentíl fu costì  
PRÉSTA — DI FÁRE AL CITTADÍN  
SÚO quívi FÉSTA. (Dant. Pur. 6.)*

That gentle spirit was so prompt  
to greet there his fellow-citizen.

*Dar matéria ágl' invidiósi,  
PRÉSTI A MÓRDERE ÓGNI LAU-  
DÉVOL CÓSA. (Bocc. Intr.)*

To give occasion to envious per-  
sons, ready to slander every praise-  
worthy thing.

*Per me SÓNO ACCÓNCIA D' IM-  
PEGNÁR per te QUÉSTE RÓBE.  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.)*

As for me, I am disposed to  
pawn for thee these garments.

*Lu gènte è piú ACCÓNCIA A  
CRÉDERE IL MÁLE, che il béne.  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 6.)*

People are more inclined to be-  
lieve the evil, than the good.

---

#### REGIMEN OF VERBS.

Verbs may govern, or have for a *complement*, a *noun*, a *pronoun*, another *verb*, or a *phrase*.

The *nouns* and *pronouns* governed by the verb may be in the *subjective*, in the *objective*, or in any *other relation* preceded by a *preposition*.

The *verbs* governed by another verb may be in the *indicative*, in the *conjunctive*, or in the *infinitive* mood, either in the *objective* or in any *other relation*, except the *subjective*, preceded by a *preposition*.

The verb *essere* governs a *noun* in the *subjective*, and is consequently construed with *two subjectives*, called, the



one, *the subjective before*, and, the other, *the subjective after, the verb*; as,

io *sóno* LA SVENTURÁTA I am the unfortunate Ginevra;  
GINÉVRA,  
i *véri amici sóno* ÚNA CÓSA true friends are one thing  
*insiéme,* together.

*Active verbs govern a noun or a pronoun in the objective*; as,

io *ho amáto ed ámo* GUI- I have loved and love Guis-  
CÁRDO, card;  
*mólti sánno* MÓLTE CÓSE, e many know many things, and  
*non sánno* SÈ MEDÉSIMI, do not know themselves.

Many active verbs, besides having a noun or a pronoun in the objective, or, what is the same, a *direct regimen*, may govern a *noun* or a *pronoun* in any *other relation*, except the *subjective*, preceded by a *preposition*, and thus have also an *indirect regimen*; as,

io *non la vendéi* LÓRO, *ma* I did not sell it to them, but  
*éssi* ME L' *avránno* imbolá- they must have stolen it  
*ta,* from me;  
*per premiáre* il cavaliére in order to reward the gentle-  
DELL' ONÓRE *ricevúto,* man for the honor received;  
*sè* AD ÓGNI SÚO SERVÍGIO of- he offered himself to serve her  
*ferse,* in every thing;  
*s' ingegnò* di rivólgerla DA he endeavoured to dissuade her  
PROPONIMÉTO *si fiéro,* from so cruel a proposal.

*Passive verbs govern a noun or a pronoun in the relation of derivation* preceded by the *preposition da*; as,

*egli* DA ME *é*ra *egualménte* he was equally loved by me;  
*amáto,*  
*Efigénia* DA MÓLTE NÓBILI Iphigenia was received by  
DÓNNE *di Ródi* *fu ricevúta,* many noble ladies of Rhodes.

Sometimes instead of *da* we find the preposition *per* used by good writers ; as,

*la più bella cosa, che giammai* the handsomest object that was  
 PER ALCÚNO vedúta fosse, ever seen by anybody ;  
 PER FÁLSA LÓDE di stólto essere to be deceived by the false praise  
 ingannáto, of fools.

*Neuter* verbs, strictly speaking, have *no regimen* ; but as some of them are often *used*, in Italian, *actively*, they follow, when so used, the *same rules* as *active* verbs, as,

cenárono UN PÓCO DI CÁRNE they supped on a little of  
 SALÁTA, meat ;  
*quantúnque Amóre I LIÉTI* although Love dwells more  
 PALÁGI, *più volentieri che* willingly in royal palaces,  
 LE PÓVERE CAPÁNNE, *úbiti,* than in poor cottages.

*Pronominal* verbs govern the pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, si*, with which they are varied, in the *objective* ; as,

*io MI levái diritta,* I stood up ;  
*lo scoláre s' esercitáva,* the scholar took exercise.

Many *pronominal* verbs, besides the above, which is their *direct regimen*, may have an *indirect regimen*, or, what is the same, may also *govern* a *noun* in any *other relation*, but the *subjective*, *preceded* by a *preposition* ; as,

*l' attristi DÉLLA MÍA DIMÓ- thou grievest for my stay ;*  
 RA,  
*la città s' arrendéto A CÉ- the city surrendered to Cæsar.*  
 SARE,

*Unipersonal* verbs, generally, have *no regimen* ; there are instances, however, in which some of them govern

a word in the relation of attribution, preceded by the preposition *a* ; as,

*óme accade á' BUÓNI, così* as it befalls good people, so it  
*accade á' CATTÍVI,* befalls bad people ;  
*questa novélla, la quále a me* this novel, which I 'am to re-  
*tócca di dover dire,* late.

## EXAMPLES.

*Signór mio, io sÓNO LA mísera* Sir, I am the unfortunate, wretch-  
*SVENTURÁTA GINÉVRA.* (Bocc. ed Ginevra.  
g. 5. n. 9.)

*I VÉRI AMÍCI SÓNO ÚNA CÓSA* True friends are one thing to-  
*INSIÉME.* (Am. Ant. d. 18. r. 1.) together.

*ÍO HO AMÁTO ED ÁMO GUIS-* I have loved and love Guiscard,  
*CÁRDO, e quánto viverò io l' ame-* and I shall love him as long as I  
*rò.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.) live.

*MÓLTI MÓLTE CÓSE SÁNNO, SÈ* Many know many things, and do  
*MEDÉSIMI NON SÁNNO.* (Am. Ant. not know themselves.  
d. 5. r. 3.)

*ÍO NON LA VENDÉI LÓRO, MA* I did not sell it to them, but  
*ÉSSI questa nótte me l' AVRÁNNO* they must have stolen it from me  
*IMBOLÁTA.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.) last night.

*PER PREMIÁRE IL CAVALIÉRE* In order to reward the gentle-  
*DELL' ONÓRE RICEVÚTO da líi.* man for the honor he had received  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.) of him.

*Soddisfécce álla sua dománda,* He complied with her request,  
*e sÈ ad ógni suo sèrvígio of-* and offered himself to serve her in  
*fèrse.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.) every thing.

*Con parole assái s' INGEGNÒ* With a great many words he  
*DI RIVÓLGERLA DA PROPONIMÉ-* endeavoured to dissuade her from  
*TO SÌ FIÉRO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.) so cruel a proposal.

*Così ÉGLI DA ME ÉRA EGUAL-* So he was equally loved by me,  
*MÉNTE AMÁTO, com' egli me amá-* as he loved me.  
*ta.* (Bocc. Fiam. 1. 6.)

*EFIGENÍA DA MÓLTE NÓBILI* Iphigenia was received by many  
*DÓNNE DI RÓDI FU RICEVÚTA.* noble ladies of Rhodes.  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

*Costéi ésser LA PIÙ BÉLLA* She was the handsomest object  
*CÓSA, CHE GIAMMÁI PER ALCÚNO* that was ever seen by anybody.  
*VEDÚTA FÓSSE.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

*Mégljo è ésser corrétto dal sá-  
vio, che PER FÁLSA LÓDE DI STÓL-  
TO ÉSSER INGANNÁTO. (AMM. ANT.  
d. 3. r. 6.)*

It is better to be corrected by  
the wise, than to be deceived by  
the false praise of fools.

CENÁRONO UN PÓCO DI CÁRNE  
SALÁTA. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

They supped on a little salt  
meat.

QUANTÚNQUE AMÓRE I LIÉTI,  
PALÁGI e le mórvide càmere, PIÙ  
VOLENTIÉRI CHE LE PÓVERE CA-  
PÁNNE, ÁBITI. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 10.)

Although Love dwells in gay  
palaces and sumptuous apartments,  
more willingly than in poor cot-  
tages.

ÍO MI LEVÁI DIRÍTTA. (Bocc.  
g. 7. n. 6.)

I stood up.

LO SCOLÁRE S' ESERCITÁVA  
per riscaldársi. (Bocc. g. 8. n.  
7.)

The scholar took exercise to get  
warm.

DÉLLA MÍA lúnga DIMÓRA  
T' ATTRÍSTI. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)

Thou grievest for my long stay.

S' ARRENDÉO LA CITTÀ A CÉ-  
SARE. (Gio. Vill.)

The city surrendered to Cæsar.

CÓME ACCÁDE Á' BUÓNI, COSÌ,  
fratélló, mi páre che accággia  
Á' CATTÍVI. (Fra. Guitt. lett.)

Brother, I think that as it befalls  
good people, so it befalls bad peo-  
ple.

QUÉSTA NOVÉLLA, LA QUÁLE A  
ME TÓCCA DI DOVÉR DÍRE, VÓGLIO  
ve ne rénda ammaestráte. (Bocc.  
g. 1. n. 10.)

I wish, that the novel, which I  
am to relate, may make you wise.

---

GOVERNMENT OF VERBS — *Continued.*

A *verb governs* another *verb* that *depends* upon it, in the *infinitive* mood, whenever the *subject* of the *principal* (*governing*) verb is the same with that of the *dependent* (*governed*) verb; as in the following example of Boccaccio, Proem. :

*assái manifestaménte pÓSSO  
COMPRÉNDERE, quéllo ésser  
véro, che SÓGLIONO I SÁVJ  
DÍRE, CHE SÓLO LA MISÉ-  
RIA è sénza invídia,*

I can easily believe, that that  
is really true, which wise  
men are wont to say, name-  
ly, that poverty alone is not  
envied ;

where *pÓSSO* and *sÓglio* govern *compréndere* and *díre*

in the *infinitive*; because, in the first instance, *io*, which is understood, is the subject of *póssò* and at the same time of *compréndere*, that depends upon it; and in the last, *sávj* is the subject of *sógliono* as well as of *diré*, that depends upon it.

The *infinitives*, depending on another verb which governs them, may be either in the *objective*, as in the foregoing example; or in *any other relation*, except the *subjective*, preceded by a *preposition*; as,

<i>néga</i> D' AVÉR RICEVÚTO Ì	he denies to have received the
<i>beneficio</i> ,	benefit;
<i>dobbíamo imparáre</i> A TACÉ-	we must learn how to keep
<i>RE</i> ,	silent.

If the *subjects* of the two verbs be *different*, then the *principal verb governs* the *dependent verb* in a *tense* of the *indicative* or *conjunctive mood*, preceded by the *conjunction che*; as,

SO ÍO BÉNE, CHE ÉGLI <i>ne</i>	I know well, that he carried
PORTÒ (ind.) <i>l'ánima mia</i> ,	away my soul;
ÍO CRÉDO, CHE LE SUÓRE	I think, that the nuns are
SÍENO (conj.) <i>a dormíre</i> ,	asleep.

By a peculiarity of language the *conjunction che* is sometimes *suppressed*; as,

<i>crédo</i> , [che] <i>égli se n' ANDÒ</i>	I believe that he went away.
(ind.),	
<i>teméndo</i> [che] <i>non gli AVVE-</i>	fearing lest it should happen to
<i>NÍSSX</i> (conj.),	him.

The *dependent verb* is put in the *indicative*, when the *principal verb* implies *affirmation, knowledge, or certainty of action*; as,

<i>vi díco</i> , <i>ch' égli è mórtò</i> ,	I tell you, that he is dead;
<i>so ch' égli è così</i> ,	I know that it is so;
<i>égli STA béne, sálvo che gli</i>	he is well, except that he has
<i>DUÓLE ÌL CÁPO</i> ,	the headache.

The *dependent* verb is put in the *conjunctive*, when the *principal* verb implies *will, desire, entreaty, command, hope, fear, pleasure, displeasure, permission, prohibition, negation, shame, blame, adulation, wonder, surprise, supposition, conjecture, judgment, belief, question, doubt, ignorance, uncertainty, or future action*; as,

to VO' <i>che</i> SÁPPI,	I wish that thou shouldst know;
DESÍDERO <i>che</i> SÍA pósto in esecuziõne,	I desire that it should be put in execution;
PREGÁVA <i>che</i> ne VENÍSSE,	she begged him to come;
COMANDÒ <i>ad un dè' suoi</i> <i>famigliári che nella sua</i> <i>cása il</i> MENÁSSE,	he ordered one of his domestics to bring him into his house;
SPÉRI <i>tu che Nicóstrato</i> AN- DÁSSE <i>la lealtà ritrován-</i> <i>do?</i>	dost thou hope [or believe] that Nicostratus would ob- serve loyalty?
TÉMO [che] <i>il sovréchio af-</i> <i>fánno non</i> DISTRÚGGA <i>il</i> <i>cor,</i>	I fear that excessive grief will destroy the heart;
DISPIÁCQUE <i>loro, che i Peru-</i> <i>gini</i> AVÉSSERO <i>rólta la</i> <i>léga,</i>	it displeased them, that the Perugians should have brok- en the league;
SUPPÓNGASI <i>che Juppiter</i> SÍA <i>ánimo di questo móndo,</i> <i>quéllo che l' ánimo</i> GIÚDICA <i>che</i> SÍA <i>ben fúlto,</i>	let us suppose that Jupiter be the soul of this world; that which the soul judges to be well done;
CRÉDO [che] <i>mi</i> PORTÁSSE <i>amóre,</i>	I believe that he loved me;
DOMANDÁVA, <i>che</i> ciò FÓSSE,	he asked, what that was;
<i>non so</i> <i>che</i> méne PÉNSI, <i>o</i> <i>che</i> <i>mi</i> DICA,	I know not what to think, or what to say.

The verb is put in the *conjunctive*, when it is *dependent* upon a *unipersonal* verb, such as *sembráre*, 'to seem'; *parére*, 'to appear'; *mostráre*, 'to show'; *bisognáre*, 'must' or 'to be obliged'; &c.; as,

<i>mi</i> SÉMBRAVA, <i>che</i> AVÉSSÉ <i>vóglia di ridere,</i>	it appeared to me as if he had a wish to laugh;
---	--

- È** PAR *che tu sía mórtó,* it seems as if thou wert dead ;
- MÓSTRA** *che Róma si REG-ÉSSE a signoria di re,* it shows that Rome was under the government of kings ;
- BISOGNÁVA** *che PARTÍSSE l' indománi,* it was necessary that he should set out the next morning.

The *dependent* verb is put in the *conjunctive*, when preceded by a *comparative* or a *superlative* ; as,

- costí fu dal pádre TÁNTO AMÁTA, QUÁNTO alcuna figliuola da pádre FÓSSE giammái,* this young woman was as dear to her father, as any other child ever was to a parent ;
- era IL PIÙ SÁVIO ed IL PIÙ AVVEDÚTO úomo, che al móndo FÓSSE,* he was the wisest and the most prudent man that there ever was in the world.

The *dependent* verb is likewise put in the *conjunctive* when it is preceded by the *relative* pronouns, *chi*, 'who' ; and *quále*, 'which,' 'what' ; as,

- quivi non era CHI le smarríte fôrze RIVOCÁSSE,* there was no one there who could restore to her her lost spirits ;
- dicéndoli QUÁLE VOLÉSSE,* asking him which he would prefer.

The verb is also put in the *conjunctive* after the conjunction *se*, 'if' ;\* the adverb *quándo*, used in the signification of 'if,' 'provided' ; and the adverbs *óve*, *dóve*, both in the signification of 'if,' 'when,' 'in case that,' and in their proper signification of 'where' ; as,

- SE** *d' ésser mentováto laggiù DÉGNI,* if thou dost not disdain to be mentioned there below ;

\* Instances are, nevertheless, to be found, in which the verb is put in the indicative after *se* ; as,

*Non so, SE a vói quillo se me PARRÀ, che a me se FARR'ÈRE.* (Bocc. Intr.) I do not know, whether it will seem to you, as it would seem to me.

<i>io vóglío pórre fine álle tue angóscie QUÁNDO TU VÓGLI,</i>	I wish to put an end to thy suffering, if [or provided] thou wishest it ;
<i>ÓVE COSÌ NON FÓSSE,</i>	if [or when] it will not prove so ;
<i>DÓVE tu non VÓGLI COSÌ fare,</i>	if [or when, or in case that] thou dost not wish to do so ;
<i>vómmene in guisa d' órbo, che non sa ÓVE SI VÁDA,</i>	I move along like a blind man, who does not know whither he goes ;
<i>io non so DÓVE io mi fugga,</i>	I know not whither I should fly.

[For a List of Verbs governing a *noun* or another verb, either in the *object*, or in any other relation, preceded by a *preposition*, see APPENDIX K.]

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Ingráto è chi il beneficio NÉGA D' AVÉR RICEVÚTO. (Am. Ant., d. 17. r. 2.)</i>	He is ungrateful, who denies to have received a benefit.
<i>DOBBIÁMO parlándo IMPARÁRE A TACÉRE. (Am. Ant. d. 7. r. 3.)</i>	We must, in speaking, learn how to keep silent.
<i>So io BÉNE, CHE stanótte ÉGLI NE PORTÒ L' ÁNIMA MÍA. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)</i>	I know well, that last night he carried away my soul.
<i>Ío mi CRÉDO, CHE LE SUÓRE SIÉN tútte A DORNÍRE. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 1.)</i>	I believe that the nuns are all gone to sleep.
<i>I'ò CRÉDO, ÉGLI SE N' ANDÒ disperáto. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)</i>	I believe, he went away in de- spair.
<i>TEMÉNDÓ, NON GLI AVVENÍSSE quéllo, che gli avvenne. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 6.)</i>	Fearing, lest it should happen to him, what in fact happened to him.
<i>VI DÍCO, CH' ÉGLI È MÓRTO. (Bocc.)</i>	I tell you, that he is dead.
<i>So CH' ÉGLI È COSÌ, ma non ne compréndo la ragióne. (Class.)</i>	I know it is so, but do not understand the reason.
<i>ÉGLI STA BÉNE, SÁLVO CHE GLI DUÓLE IL CÁPO. (Barb. Gr. Gr.)</i>	He is well, except that he has the headache.



*Sennuccio, io vó' CHE SÁPPI in quál maniera — Trattáto sóno.* (Petr. s. 89.)

Sennuccio, I wish that thou shouldst know in what manner I am treated.

*Perciò DESÍDERO CHE SÍA PÓSTO IN ESECUZIONE.* (Cas. lett. 15.)

Therefore I desire that it should be put in execution.

*Il chiamáva, e PREGÁVA CHE NE VENÍSSE.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)

She called him, and begged him to come.

*COMANDÒ AD UN DÉ' SUOI FAMILIARI CHE NÉLLA SÚA CÀSA IL MENÁSSE, e gli facésse dar da mangiàre, per Dio.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

He ordered one of his domestics to bring him into his house, and cause something to eat to be given to him, for God's sake.

*SPÉRI TU, CHE NICÓSTRATO ANDÁSSE LA LEALTÀ RITROVÁNDO, che tu servár vuóti a lui?* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)

Dost thou believe, that Nicotratns will observe the loyalty towards thee, that thou dost towards him?

*Ch' io TÉMO, lássò! NO 'L SOVÉRCHIO AFFÁNNO — DISTRÚGGA IL COR.* (Petr. s. 84.)

So that I fear, alas! that excessive grief will destroy the heart.

*DISPIÁCQUE LÓRO grandemente, CHE I PERUGÍNI RÓTTA AVÉSSERO LA LÉGA.* (Gio. Vill.)

It displeased them exceedingly, that the Perugians should have broken the league.

*SUPPÓNGASI però, CHE JÚPITER SÍA, a módo lóro, ÁNIMO DI QUÉSTO MÓNDO.* (St. Aug. Cit. Dio.)

But let us suppose, that Jupiter, as they will have it, be the soul of this world.

*Che tu fácci, QUÉLLO CHE L' ÁNIMO tí GIÚDICA CHE BEN SÍA FÁTTO.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 6.)

That thou shouldst do, what thy soul judges to be well done.

*CRÉDO MI PORTÁSSE AMÓRE, e che di me non FÓSSE méno ardente.* (Ariost.)

I believe that he loved me, and that he was no less ardent in love than I.

*DOMANDÁVA, CHE CIÒ FÓSSE.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)

He asked, what that was.

*NON SO CHE MÉNE PÉNSI, O CHE MI DÍCA.* (Petr.)

I do not know what to think, or what to say of it.

*MI SEMBRÁVA, CHE AVÉSSE VÓGLIA DI RÍDERE.* (Bocc.)

It appeared to me, as if he had a wish to laugh.

*É' PAR CHE TU SÍA MÓRTO, che tí sénti tu?* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3)

It seems as if thou wert dead, what ails thee?

*E così MÓSTRA CHE RÓMA SI  
REGGÉSSE A SIGNORÍA DI RE cén-  
to cinquantaquattro anni.* (Gio.  
Vill. 129.)

*E ch'a BISOGNÁVA CHE PARTÍSSE  
L' INDOMÁNI.* (Bocc.)

*COSTÉI FU DAL PÁDRE TÁNTO  
teneraménte AMÁTA, QUÁNTO AL-  
CÚNA áltra FIGLIUÓLA DA PÁ-  
DRE FÓSSE GIAMMÁI.* (Bocc. g. 4.  
n. 1.)

*Égli ÉRA IL PIÙ SÁVIO ED IL  
PIÙ AVVEDÚTO UÓMO CHE AL MÓN-  
DO FÓSSE.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.)

*QUÍVI NON ÉRA CHI con acqua  
frédda o con áltro argométo  
LE SMARRÍTE FÓRZE RIVOCÁSSE.*  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

*DICÉNDOLI QUÁLE VOLÉSSE, o  
súbito restituire il sùo pórco, o che  
égli andásse al rettóre.* (Franc.  
Sacch. 146.)

*Grázie riporterò di te a léi,—  
SE D' ÉSSER MENTOVÁTO LAGGIÙ  
DÉGNI.* (Dant. Purg. 1.)

*ÍO VÓGLIO ÁLLE TÚE ANGÓSCÉ,  
QUÁNDO TU medésimo VÓGLI,  
PÓRRE FÍNE.* (Bocc.)

*ÓVE COSÌ NON FÓSSE, ío mi ri-  
marrò giudéo com' ío mi sónó.*  
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

*E DÓVE TU NON VÓGLI COSÌ  
FÁRE, raccomandánda a Dio l' áni-  
ma túa.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

*VÓMMENE IN GUÍSA D' ÓRBO  
sénza líuce,— CHE NON SA ÓVE  
SI VÁDA, e pur si páрте.* (Petr.  
s. 16.)

*Éccoli tútti fubri; ío NON SO  
DÓVE ío MI FÚGGA, óve ío mi  
nascónda.* (Mach. Com.)

And thus it shows, that Rome  
was under the government of kings  
one hundred and fifty-four years.

And that it was necessary that  
he should set out the next day.

This young woman was as ten-  
derly loved by her father, as any  
other child ever was by a parent.

He was the wisest and most  
prudent man that ever there was  
in the world.

There was no one there who  
could either with cold water or  
by any other means, restore to her  
her lost spirits.

Asking him which he would  
prefer, either that he should return  
him immediately his hog, or that  
he should go to the rector.

I will return thanks to her for  
thy favor, if thou dost not disdain  
to be mentioned there below.

I wish to put an end to thy  
troubles, if thou thyself wishest  
it.

If it will not prove so, I will  
remain a Jew as I am.

And if thou dost not wish to  
do so, recommend thy soul to  
God.

I move along like a blind man,  
deprived of light, who does not  
know where he goes, and yet he  
departs.

Here they are all out; I know  
not whither I should fly, where I  
should conceal myself.

## REGIMEN OF PREPOSITIONS.

The *regimen* or *complement* of *prepositions* is generally a *noun*, a *pronoun*, or a *verb*, either in the *objective*, or in any *other relation*, except the *subjective*, preceded by *another preposition*; as,

io non dáva lóco PER LO MÍO CÓRPO al trapassár dé' rág- gi,	I gave no way for the rays to pass through my body ;
volgeánsi CÍRCA NÓI le dúe ghirlánde,	the two garlands [of unfad- ing roses] wreathed about us ;
un giòrno, DIÉTRO MANGIÁ- RE, laggiù venútone,	one day having come there be- low, after dinner ;
cominciò a piágnere SÓPRA DI LÉI,	he began to mourn over her ;
assái PRÉSSO A SALÉRNO ò úna cósta,	very near Salerno there lies a coast ;
LONTÁNO DA ÓGNI UÓMO,	far from every man.

[For a *List of Prepositions* governing the *objective* or any *other relation* preceded by a *preposition*, see APPENDIX L.]

## EXAMPLES.

Quando s' accorsér ch' io non  
DÁVA LÓCO — PER LO MÍO CÓRPO  
AL TRAPASSÁR DÉ' RÁGGI. (Dant.  
Purg. 5.)

When they perceived, that  
through my body I gave no way  
for the rays to pass.

Cusí di quélle sempitérne róse  
— VOLGEÁNSI CÍRCA NÓI LE DÚE  
GHIRLÁNDE. (Dant. Parad. 12.)

Thus about us wreathed the  
two garlands of unfading roses.

UN GIÓRNO, DIÉTRO MANGIÁRE,  
LAGGIÙ VENÚTONE, in un cánto  
sóptra un curélló si póse a sedére.  
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

One day having come there be-  
low, after dinner, he seated himself  
in a corner upon a cushion.

COMINCIÒ A PIÁGNERE SÓPRA  
EI LÉI, non altraménte .che se  
mórta fósse. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

He began to mourn over her,  
not otherwise than if she had been  
dead.

ASSÁI PRÉSSO A SALÉRNO È  
 ÚNA CÒSTA ÌL MÀRE RIGUARDÁNTE,  
 LA QUÀLE GLI ABITÁNTI CHIÁMANO LA  
 CÒSTA DI MÁLFI. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 4.)

Very near Salerno there lies a  
 coast looking upon the sea, which  
 the inhabitants call the coast of  
 Amalfi.

DA ÚNA PÀRTE DÉLLA SÁLA, ASSÍ  
 LONTÁNO DA OGNI UÓMO, CÒLLA DÓN-  
 NA SI PÓSE A SEDÉRE. (Bocc. g. 5.  
 n. 5.)

In one corner of the hall, very  
 far from every man, he sat down  
 with the lady.

## REGIMEN OF CONJUNCTIONS.

There are some *conjunctions*, in Italian, which have a *verb* for their *regimen*, which they require to be put either in the *indicative*, or the *conjunctive* mood.

The *following* are those, which *require* the *verb* to be put in the *conjunctive* mood :

Acciocchè,	} in order that ;	comúnque,	however ;	
affinchè,		conciosiachè,	whereas, since ;	
abbenchè,		cáso che,	} in case that ;	
ancorchè,		in cáso che,		
avvegnachè,		dáto che,	suppose,	
benchè,		suppósto che,	grant that ;	
comechè,		} though, although ;	finchè,	} till, until ;
contuttochè,			finlántochè,	
quantúnque,		infino che,	} notwithstanding that ;	
sebbéne,		insino che,		
tuttochè,		} before, sooner than ;	sinchè,	} for fear that, lest ;
avánti che,			nonostánteche,	
ánzi che,		} except, unless ;	per téma che,	} if, when, whenever ;
innánzi che,			qualóra,	
prima che,	} on condition, provided that ;	quand' ánche,	even when ;	
a méno che,		se,	if ;	
a condizióne che,		sénza che,	without ;	
con pátto che,		sólo che,	only that.*	
purchè,	} as if ;			
cóme se,				

\* The following instances are, nevertheless, met with in the classics, in which

To which may be added the conjunction *perchè*, used in the signification of 'although,' and 'in order that': also the conjunctions *che*, 'that'; *se*, 'if'; *quando*, in the signification of 'if,' 'in case that,' 'provided'; and the adverbs *ove*, *dove*, both in their own signification and that of the conjunctions 'if,' 'when,' 'provided'; as has been already mentioned at p. 428, in treating of the *regimen of verbs*.

*Se* requires the verb in the *conjunctive*, when it expresses something *contingent* or *doubtful*: but when it expresses a *sure*, *natural*, or *expected circumstance*, or when the *action* of the verb is *entirely past*, the *verb* is put in the *indicative*; as,

SE tu ti CÀLI io non ti verrò diétro di galòppo,	if thou do cast thee down, I cannot chase thee on foot;
dámmi SE io PÓSSO adoperàre alcúna còsa,	tell me whether I can do any thing for thee;
nóti gliélo farém fare, SE tu VORRAI,	we will make her do it, if thou wishest it;
s' io MERITAI di vóti méntre ch' io vissi, non vi movéte,	if, living, I merited aught of you, move ye not;
SE gli occhi subì ti FUR dólci nè càri,	if her eyes were dear and sweet to thee;
s' io DISSI fáleo, e tu FALSÁSTI il cònio,	if I spoke false, thou falsely stampedst the coin.

the conjunctions *avvegnachè*, *benchè*, *comachè*, *contuttoché*, *sebbène*, are used with a *verb* in the *indicative* mood:

AVVEGNACHÈ quel dì niuno E'RA ANDATO a lavoràrs. (Bocc. g. 8. d. 7.)

Since, that day, no one had gone to work.

BENCHÈ a me non FA'VE MAI ch'è vóti giudice fósto. (Bocc. g. 2. d. 10.)

Although I never thought you were a judge.

La quäle il giòvane focosamente ama, COMECHÈ ella non se ne ACCÓRGE, per quello ch'è to végga. (Bocc. g. 2. d. 8.)

Whom the young man ardently loves, although she does not perceive it, for what I see.

Si ricominciò la guèrra còntro gli Aretini, CONTUTTOCHÈ nel segreto RIMASERO gli Aretini in trattàto d' accòrds cò' Fiorentini. (Gio. Vill. l. 11. c. 58.)

They renewed the war against the Aretines, although in secret the Aretines remained on terms of peace with the Florentines.

Perchè SEBBE'NE i giòvani l' AUMERANO, d' non sanno di pói mantenerle. (Gell.)

For, although young men enlarge them (the cities), they know not how to govern them afterwards.

## EXAMPLES.

**ACCIOCCHÈ** più avanti non **POTÉSSE** il prénce venire. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

In order that the prince should not approach any further.

**Perocchè** Amór l'avea già ferita, — **ABBENCHÈ** le **PARÉSSE** ésser tradita. (Bocc. Ninf. Fies.)

Because Love had already wounded her, although she thought she was betrayed.

**Alessádro**, **ANCORCHÈ** gran paura **AVÉSSE**, stétte pur chéto. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

Alexander, although he had great fear, remained quiet.

**Niuno** altro, per **QUANTÚNQUE** **AVÉSSE** agúto l'avediménto, **potrébbe** chi io mi fossi **conócere**. (Bocc. Fiam.)

No one else, however acute perception he may have, could know who I am.

**TUTTOCHÈ** questa gente **maladetta** in véra **perfezió** **giammai** non **VÁDA**. (Dant. Inf. 6.)

Though this accursed race never can reach true perfection.

**Io** non ti **concederò** **quéllo** che **séguita**, **perchè**, **DATOCHÈ** **nó** ce li **DIAMO**, non **perciò** **restiamo** **debitóri**. (Varch. Sen. ben. 5. 9.)

I will not grant thee what follows, because, suppose we should give them to them, we shall remain no less debtors.

**Dico**, che **COMÚNQUE** si **sta**, **egli** ha **tánte** **óre** la **notte** **quánte** **il** **dì**. (Ser. Brun. Tes. 2. 44.)

I say, that however it may be, there are as many hours in the day as in the night.

**La** **medicína** da **guarirlo** **so** **to** **tróppo** **béne** **fáre**, **PURCHÈ** a **vói** **dí** **il** **cuóre** **di** **segréto** **tenére** **ciò** **che** **io** **vi** **ragionerò**. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)

The medicine to cure him, I know well how to apply, provided you have a mind to keep secret what I shall tell you.

**NONOSTÁNTE** **CHE** **fósse** **pregáto** **da** **tútti** **i** **cittadini**, **che** **gli** **dovésse** **perdonáre**. (Zibald. Andr. 3. 3.)

Notwithstanding he was begged by all the citizens to pardon him.

**Or** **vó'** **che** **sáppi**, **INNÁNZI** **CHE** **più** **ÁNDI**, — **Ch'** **éi** **non** **peccáto**. (Dant. Inf. 4.)

Now I wish thou mayst know, before thou passest any farther, that these did not sin.

**Seguirò** **l'** **ómbra** **di** **quél** **dólce** **láuro**, — **FINCHÈ** **l'** **último** **dì** **CHIÚDA** **quest'** **ócchi**. (Petr. c. 7.)

I will follow the shade of that sweet laurel, until death close these eyes.

**Ch'** **io** **spero** — **Fármí** **immortal**, **PERCHÈ** **la** **cárne** **MUÓIA**. (Petr. c. 18.)

So that I hope to make myself immortal, though the body die.

*La 'ncominciò a battere PER- He began to beat her in order  
CHÈ 'l PASSÀSSE. (Bocc. g. 9. to cure her.  
n. 9.)*

*SE TU TI CÀLI, IO NON TI VER- If thou do cast thee down (into  
RÒ DIÉTRO DI GALÓPPO. (Dant. the pitch) I cannot chase thee on  
Inf. 22.)* foot.

*Cáccia via la paura, e dímmi Drive away fear, and tell me  
SE IO POSSO ADOPERÁRE ALCÓ- whether I can do any thing for  
NA CÓSA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)* thee.

*NÓI GLIÉLO FARÉM FÀRE, O We will make her do it, whether  
VÓGLIA ÉLLA O NO, SE TU VORRÁI. she is willing or not, if thou wish-  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)* est it.

*O di che siete due dentro ad O ye, who dwell two spirits  
un fuoco, — S' io MERITÁI DI VÓI within one fire, if living I merited  
MÉNTRE CH' io VÍSSI, — S' io aught of you, whatever may have  
MERITÁI DI VÓI assái o pÓCO, — been the measure of that desert,  
Quándo nel mondo gli alti vérsi when in the world I wrote my  
scríssi, — NON VI MOVÉTE. (Dant. lofty verses, move ye not.  
Inf. 26.)*

*Anzi la voce al suo nóme Nay let thy voice celebrate her  
rischiári, — SE GLI OCCHI SUÓI TI name, if her eyes were ever dear  
FUR DÓLCI NÈ CÀRI. (Petr. s. 40.)* and sweet to thee.

*S' io DÍSSI FÁLSO, E TU FÁL- If I spoke false, thou falsely  
SÁSTI IL CÓNIO, — Disse Sinóne. stampedst the coin, said Sinon.  
(Dant. Inf. 30.)*

## EXERCISE XXIX.

A good man, destitute of money, and of poor mind.  
*buón úbmo, pÓvero monéta, <sup>2</sup> strétto<sup>1</sup> ánimo.*

Deprived of every virtue, and full of every pride.  
*Vóto valór, piéno orgóglío.*

Of ancient blood, and (of) noble manners. The  
*<sup>2</sup> Antico<sup>1</sup> sángue,<sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>6</sup> nóbile<sup>5</sup> costúme.*

Marquis of Monferrato was a man of great valor.  
*Marchése úbmo álto valóre.*

With some good wine, and some preserves she re-  
*alquánto buón víno, alquánto confétto — ricon-*

cruited him. (*The*) pride is hated by — (is odious  
*fertare*<sup>1</sup> *supérbia* — — — *odióso*

to) God and by — (to) (*the*) men. They foment that  
*Dío* — — — *úomo.* — *Fomentare*

| bad disposition | of theirs, inclined to (*the*) evil.  
*geniáccio* | — , *inclináre* *mále.*

Ready to do virtuously | to | others that, which she  
*Prónto*<sup>1</sup> *operáre*<sup>2</sup> *virtuóso*<sup>3</sup> | *in*<sup>4</sup> | *o*<sup>5</sup> *o*<sup>3</sup> *o*<sup>6</sup> —

would (*that*) should be done | to | her. In exchange  
*volére*<sup>11</sup> <sup>12</sup> *éssere*<sup>13</sup> *operáre*<sup>14</sup> | *in*<sup>9</sup> | <sup>10</sup>. *cámbio*

for that, which I received. She left at liberty  
*ricévere.* — *concédere*<sup>9</sup> <sup>10</sup> *libertá*<sup>9</sup>

every-one until (*to*) the hour of (*the*) supper. This  
<sup>11</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> *óra*<sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> *céna*<sup>7</sup>.

young-woman is neither from Cremona, nor from Pavia,  
*giovane* <sup>2</sup> *non*<sup>1</sup> , ,

say she is from Faenza — (a Faentine). He wished,  
*Faentino.* — *Volére,*

that I should see all the holy relics. Show me  
*vedére* *sánto reliquia.* *Mostráre* —

the way, that goes to Rome. I myself know not,  
*cammino,* *andáre* *Róma.* *medésimo sapére*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>,

what — (that which) I wish (*for myself*). I know  
<sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> *volére*<sup>7</sup> — <sup>6</sup>. *sapére*<sup>2</sup>

not, who thou mayst be, nor by what means thou hast  
<sup>1</sup> , *módo* — *éssere*<sup>2</sup>

come here-below. | Being much pleased | with the  
*veníre*<sup>1</sup> . | *Piacéndogli* *mólto* | —

manners of the boy, he asked who he was.  
*módo* *fanciullo,* — *domandáre*

He began pleasantly to speak, and to ask who  
*Cominciáre piacevole* *ragionáre,* — *domandáre*

he was, whence he came, and where he was-going.  
 — , — *veníre,* — *andáre.*

He was disposed to go wherever it was (*to*) her  
*dispósto* *andáre* — <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup>



| pleasure | to go. As I arrived | on the other side, |  
*a grádo<sup>4</sup>* | — —. *giúngere* | *di* *lá,* |  
 there was one who seemed to know — (that he  
*paréte* — —  
 knew) all (the) my sins | by heart |. Do thou  
*sapére<sup>3</sup>* <sup>1</sup> (*the*) <sup>2</sup> *peccáto<sup>4</sup>* | *a ménte* |. — <sup>3</sup>  
 stay (*thyself*), whom | by | the fashion of thy garb  
*Sostáre<sup>1</sup>* (*thyself*) <sup>2</sup> | *a* | the — — — *gurb*  
*ábite*  
 we deem to be — (seemest to-us to be) some native  
 — — — *sembráre<sup>2</sup>* <sup>1</sup> — —  
 — (some one) of our evil land. If I had this  
*právo<sup>3</sup> térra<sup>1</sup>*. —  
 money,\* I would lend it\* to thee immediately. Who  
*dédro,* *prestáre<sup>2</sup>* <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *incontánente*.  
 would fare better than I, if that money† were mine?  
*stáre* , *dédro* ?  
 Whenever you wish, I will take you a great part  
 — *volére,* *portáre<sup>2</sup>* <sup>1</sup> — *grán párté*  
 of the way | on horse-back |. He might govern such  
*via* | *a caváillo* |. — *réggere<sup>2</sup>* *quále<sup>2</sup>*  
 a part (of it) as he should wish. He asked of the  
<sup>1</sup> *párte<sup>2</sup>* <sup>3</sup> — — *volére<sup>4</sup>*. — *Domandáre* —  
 host where he could sleep. (The) virtue will not  
*óste* *éssó potére dormire.* *virtù*  
 be conquered by (the) misery. Many novels  
*éssere vñcere* *miséria.* *novélla*  
 | come into my mind | | to be | related by me.  
*mi si páraa d' avánti<sup>3</sup>* | | *per dovére ésser<sup>1</sup>* | *raccontáre<sup>4</sup>* <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup>.  
 God feeds the angels and (the) his servants | with |  
*Iddio páscere* *ángelo* <sup>2</sup> *servo<sup>1</sup>* | *di* |  
 love and | (with) | eternal joy. Let there be this  
*amóre* | *di* | *sempitérno<sup>2</sup> gáudio<sup>1</sup>*. — <sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
 law in (the) friendship, that | of | (the) friends we  
*légge<sup>2</sup>* <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> *amicizia<sup>5</sup>,* <sup>7</sup> | *da<sup>8</sup>* | (*the*) <sup>9</sup> *amico<sup>10</sup>* —

\* This money — it, — to be used in the plural.

† That money, in the plural.

should ask but an honest thing. Deliberate all (the) thy  
*demandáre*<sup>13</sup> — — *onésto*<sup>11</sup> *cósa*<sup>12</sup>. *Deliberáre*<sup>7</sup> 1 2 —

things with (the) thy friend, but always before (of) him.  
*cósa*<sup>2</sup> 4 5 — *amíco*<sup>6</sup>, —

| A | friend who is a time-server — (according to  
 | L' | *amíco* — — — — —

the time) will not be constant in the day of (the)  
*témpo* *stáre* *férmo* *dí*

tribulations. I refrained (myself) | from | speaking  
*tribolazióne.* — *trárre*<sup>8</sup> *(myself)* | *dí*<sup>9</sup> | *parláre*<sup>6</sup>

until we reached (to) the river. The flatterer is  
 1 — — 2 3 *fiúme*<sup>4</sup>. *adulatóre*

| (even) | like that voice, which replies | from | the  
*anco* | *vóce,* *rispóndere* | *dópo* |

mountains and the walls to him-who cries-out. In  
*mónte* *múro* *gridáre.*

order that the world should know her and love her.  
*móndo* *conóscere*<sup>3</sup> 1 *amáre* —.

Although positively it displeases her. And what dif-  
*strétto* — *dispiacére*<sup>2</sup> 1. *dif-*

ference there is between these and the other visions,  
*ferénza* — *avére* *visióne,*

since the learned men speak of it, I will not write  
 — *dottóre* *parláre*<sup>2</sup> 1, — — 3 *scrívere*<sup>8</sup>

it here. In order to prevent, I say, in case that  
 4 *salváre,* — *díre,*

we | should do | otherwise, that this | should be | the  
 — | *facéndo*<sup>2</sup> | *altraménte*<sup>1</sup>, — — | *fóra*<sup>3</sup> | —

cause of blame and ignominy to us. Whereupon he  
 — — *biásimo*<sup>3</sup> 4 *ignomínia*<sup>5</sup> — —.

said to me: "Although thou rendest away all my  
 — : " *dischiomáre*<sup>2</sup> *mi*<sup>1</sup>

hair, I will neither tell (thee), nor show (if to)  
 — — 3 *díre*<sup>5</sup> 4, 9 *mostráre*<sup>10</sup> — 11 —

thee, who I am."  
 12, 6 7 6,"

## CHAPTER IV.

## USE OF ARTICLES.

*Articles* are used, in Italian, before all common nouns employed in a *determinate* sense.

*Nouns* may be employed in a determinate sense in *three* different ways :

First, when, in naming an object, we intend to designate the *whole species* or *kind*, to which that object belongs ; as, *gli uómini*, ‘ [the] men ’ ; the noun *uómini* being taken in the *whole extent* of its signification, the article *gli* shows that all the individuals composing the human kind are here spoken of.

Secondly, when we intend to designate a *class of objects* of any kind ; as, *gli uómini virtúosi*, ‘ [the] virtuous men ’ ; here the noun *uómini*, expresses only a certain number of men, its *signification* being *restricted* by the adjective *virtúosi*.

Thirdly, when we intend to designate *one particular object* of a kind or of a class ; as, *l’ uómo di cui ti parlo*, ‘ the man of whom I speak to you ’ ; the noun *uómo* being taken, in this case, individually, and the article used to express the man spoken of :

GLI UÓMINI sÓNO DÈLLE FÈM- men are the head of women ;  
MINE cÁPO,

GLI UÓMINI di quÉsta tÉrra the people of this land will rise  
si leverÁnno a romóre, in an uproar ;

se L’ UÓM [con cui tu parli] if the man [with whom thou  
ti fáccia liberamente ciò, speakest] will do for thee  
che ’l tío dir préga, ancór freely, what thou entreatest,  
ti piáccia di dirne, do thou further be pleased  
to declare to us.

When the noun is sufficiently *determined* by the nature of the thing, or by the circumstances of the case, the *article* is generally *suppressed*; as,

<i>così</i> CAVÁLLI, UÓMINI <i>fur</i> <i>vittime,</i>	thus horses and men were vic- tims;
<i>quivi</i> SOSPÍRI, PIÁNTI, <i>ed</i> ÁLTI GUÁI <i>risonávan,</i>	there sighs, lamentations, and loud moans resounded;
SÓNI, CÁNTI, VESTÍR, GIUÓ- CHI, VIVÁNDE, <i>quánto può</i> <i>cuór pensár, può chiéder</i> <i>bócca,</i>	music, singing, dresses, games, viands, all that the heart can think of, and all that the pal- ate can desire.

The article is also suppressed when the noun is used as a *mere sign of qualification* of the objects expressed. This is generally the case,

First, when the noun is *preceded* by the verb *essere*, 'to be'; as,

ÉRANO UÓMINI e FÉMMINE <i>di gróssu ingégno,</i>	they were men and women of dull understanding;
<i>tu, che sé' uómo, dovrésti sa-</i> <i>pére délle cose del móndo,</i>	thou, who art a man, ought to be acquainted with the af- fairs of the world.

Secondly, when the noun is *preceded* by one of the prepositions, *a, di, da, con, in, per, senza*; as,

<i>uscirono fubchi di sottérta,</i> <i>che si apprésero a CÁMPI,</i> VÍLLE, CASÁLI,	there issued flames from under the earth, which set fields, villas, and hamlets on fire;
<i>si nutrisce di PÁNE e d' ÁC-</i> <i>QUA,</i>	he feeds on bread and water;
<i>mórsi da PÚLCI, da MÓSCHE,</i> <i>o da TAFÁNI,</i>	bitten by fleas, by flies, or gadflies;
CON BÉ' MÓTTI, e CON RI- SPÓSTE PRÓNTE,	with witty sayings, and prompt replies;
<i>venne crescéndo in ÁNNI, in</i> <i>PERSÓNA, ed in BELLÉZZA,</i>	grew up in years, in stature, and in beauty;
PER PAÚRA d' altrú, e <i>per</i> <i>serváre la mia fâma,</i>	for fear of other people, and also to preserve my fame;

*così penserò di fare, SENZA* I shall do so, without fail.  
*FALLO,*

Thirdly, in *comparisons of equality*, when the noun is preceded by the adverb *cóme*, 'as,' 'like'; as,

*non CÓME UÓMINI, ma quasi* they died not like men, but  
*CÓME BÉSTIE morivano,* almost like beasts;  
*paréva che ruggisse CÓME* he appeared to roar like a lion,  
*LEÓNE, e belásse CÓME PÉ-* to bleat like a sheep, and to  
*CORA, e ragghiásse CÓME* bray like an ass.  
*ÁSINO,*

When a noun is employed in an *indeterminate* sense the *article* is never used; as,

*quál che tu sii, od ÓMBRA od* whatever thou art, whether a  
*UÓMO CÉRTO,* shadow or a living man;  
*non UÓM, UÓMO già fui,* now I am not a man, man I was  
 formerly;  
*pármi vedére DÓNNE e DON-* I seem to see ladies and dam-  
*ZELLE, e sóno ABÉTI e* sels, and they are firs and  
*FÁGGI,* beeches.

The *article* is also never used when a noun is preceded by a *demonstrative* or *indefinite pronoun*; as,

*QUÉSTO GARZONCÉLLO s' in-* this little boy began to be fa-  
*cominciò a domesticáre,* miliar;  
*cóme dite vói COTÉSTE PA-* how do you say those words?  
*RÓLE?*  
*partéva quélla GOTÁLE INFER-* it appeared to communicate  
*MITÀ trasportáre,* that same sickness;  
*con ÓGNI SOLLECITÓDINE,* they strive with all their zeal,  
*con ÓGNI INGÉGNO, e con* and their power, and their  
*ÓGNI ÁRTE si proccácciano* skill, to overthrow the Chris-  
*di ridúcere a nùlla la Cri-* tian religion.  
*stiána religióne,*

## EXCEPTION.

When a noun is preceded by the indefinite pronoun *tutto*, the article is *used after* the pronoun; as,

TÚTTI I PENSIÉRI, TÚTTO LO all the thoughts, all the attentions,  
STÚDIO, e TÚTTE LE ÓPERE, and all the actions.

The article, however, is omitted when *tutto* is used as a mere sign of qualification; as,

nóí siám TÚTTE FÉMMINE, we are all women ;  
ténne il pónte cóntra TÚTTA kept possession of the bridge  
TOSCÁNA, against all Tuscany.

When several nouns come together before or after the verb, and the *article* is *used* or *omitted* before the first of them, this article is to be *repeated* or *omitted* before *every other noun* in the sentence ; \* as,

Lúcio Silla vinse LA VIRTÙ, Lucius Sylla surpassed Caius  
e I TRIÓNFI, e I SÉTTE Marius in courage and in the  
CONSOLÁTI di Cáo Mário, number of his triumphs and  
consulships ;

nè VECCHIÉZZA, nè INFER- neither age, nor sickness, nor  
MITÀ, nè PAÚRA di móрте, the fear of death, could deter  
dalla sua malvagità l'hán- him from his wicked course.  
no potúto rimuóvere,

\* Examples are found in the classics, nevertheless, in which this rule is not rigorously observed; as,

AMÓRE, e L'IRA del re. (Bocc. g. 5. The love and anger of the king.  
n. 6.)

Crepáta per LO LU'NGO e per TRAVE'R- Broken lengthwise and breadthwise.  
SO. (Dant: Pur. 9.)

Fra FÓLTI BÓSCI, e LE RÍGIDE A'LPI, In the thick woods, and among the  
e DISERTI SPELÓNCHÉ. (Bocc. g. 3. rugged Alps, and in lonely caves.  
n. 10.)

In the following examples :

Sopravvénnero I CONFÓRTI ed OFFER- There arrived the encouragements and  
TE dé' Venetiani. (Guicc. Stor. Ital.) the offers of the Venitians.

Se, col NÓME SU'O e RIFUTAZIO'NE del Whether, with his name and the rep-  
padre, ritornáre negli státi suoi di Pe- putation of his father, he could not return  
rúgia potéva. (Mach. Stor. Fior.) to his own estates at Perugia:

the omission of *le* before *offerta*, and of *la* or *colla* before *reputazione*, are manifest errors of grammatical concordance.

## EXAMPLES.

GLI UÓMINI SÓNO DÉLLE FÉM-  
MINE CÀPO, e senza l'ordine lóro  
ràde vólte riésece alcuna nóstra  
òpera a laudévol fine. (Bocc.  
Intr.)

GLI UÓMINI DI QUÉSTA TÈRRA,  
vedéndo ciò, si LEVERÁNNO A RU-  
MÓRE. (Bocc.)

SE L' UÓM TI FÀCCIA — LIBE-  
RAMÉNTÉ CIÒ, CHE 'L TÚO DIR  
PRÉGA, — Spirito 'ncarceráto, AN-  
CÓR TI PIÀCCIA — DI DIRNE CÓMS  
l'ánima si léga — In quésti nó-  
chi. (Dant. Inf. 13.)

COSÌ CAVÁLLI, UÓMINI FUR  
VÍTTIME. (Dav. Add.)

QUÍVI SOSPÍRI, PIÁNTI, ED ÁLTI  
GUÁI — RISONÁVAN per l' aere  
senza stéllé. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

SÓNI, CÁNTI, VESTÍR, GIUÓCHI,  
VIVÁNDE, — QUÁNTO PUÒ CUÓR  
FENSÁR, PUÒ CHIÉDER BÓCCA.  
(Ariost. Fur. 4. 32.)

ÉRANO UÓMINI E FÉMINE DI  
GRÓSSO INGÉGNO. (Bocc. Intr.)

TU, CHE SÉ' UÓMO, DOVRÉSTI  
SAPÉRE DÉLLE CÓSE DEL MÓNDO.  
(Bocc. g. 7. d. 2.)

USCÍRON FUÓCHI DI SOTTÈRRA,  
CHE SI APPRÉSERO A CÀMPI, VÍL-  
LE, CASÁLI. (Bocc. g. 3. d. 3.)

SI NUTRÍSCE DI PÁNE E D' ÁC-  
QUA. (Bocc. g. 3. d. 3.)

Non altriménti fan di státe i  
cáni — Or col céffo or có' pié,  
quándo son MÓRSI — O DA PÚLCI,  
o DA MÓSCHE, o DA TAFÁNI.  
(Dant. Inf. 17.)

CON BÉ' MÓTTI, E CON RISPÓSTE  
PRÓNTE. (Bocc. g. 5. fin.)

Men are the head of women,  
and without their management it  
seldom happens that any under-  
taking of ours succeeds well.

The people of this land, seeing  
this, will rise in an uproar.

If he [this man] will do for  
thee freely, what thou entreatest,  
O imprisoned spirit! do thou fur-  
ther be pleased to declare to us,  
how in these gnarled joints the  
soul is tied.

Thus horses and men were vic-  
tims.

There sighs, lamentations, and  
loud moans resounded through the  
starless air.

Music, singing, dresses, games,  
viands, all that the heart can think  
of, and all that the palate can de-  
sire.

They were men and women of  
dull understanding.

Thou, who art a man, ought to  
be acquainted with the things of  
the world.

There issued flames from under  
the earth, which set fields, villas,  
and hamlets on fire.

He feeds on bread and water.

Thus use the dogs in summer  
to ply now with their jaws and  
now with their feet, when bitten  
by fleas, or flies, or gadflies.

With witty sayings, and prompt  
replies.

*La Violante* VÉNNE CRESCÉNDO ED IN ANNI, ED IN PERSONA, ED IN BELLÉZZA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Violante grew up in years, in stature, and in beauty.

*Così m' è convenúto fare, e per paura d' altrú, e per serváre la fama délla mia onestà.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

I have been obliged to do so, for fear of other people, and also to preserve my character.

*Sol tanto vi dirò, che come imposto m' avete, così penserò di fare senza fallo.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

I only tell you that I shall, without fail, do what you have ordered.

*Non come uomini, ma quasi come bestie morivano.* (Bocc. Intr.)

They died not like men, but almost like beasts.

*Paréva che ruggísse come leone, e belásse come pecora, e ragghiásse come asino.* (Dial. S. Greg. m.)

He appeared to roar like a lion, and to bleat like a sheep, and to bray like an ass.

*"Miserere di me," gridò a lui, — "Qual che tu sù, od ombra od uomo certo." — Rispossemi: "Non uom, uomo già fù."* (Dant. Inf. 1.)

"Have mercy on me," cried I to him, "whatever thou art, whether a shadow, or a living man." He answered me: "Now I am not a man, man I was formerly."

*Ch' io l' ho negli occhi, e veder seco parmi — Donne e donzelle, e sono abeti e faggi.* (Petr. s. 143.)

Whom I have before my eyes, and I seem to see ladies and damsels with her, and they are firs and beeches.

*Questo garzoncello s' incominciò a dimesticare con questo Federico.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

This little boy began to be familiar with this Frederic.

*Voi mi parête uomo di Dio, come dite voi coteste parole?* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

You appear to me to be a man of God, how do you say those words?

*Ma ancora il toccare i panni dagli infermi adoperati paréva seco quella cotale infermità nel toccar trasportare.* (Bocc. Intr.)

But even to touch the clothes used by the sick appeared to communicate with it the same sickness to the one who had touched them.



*E per quello che io estími, con*  
 ÓGNI SOLLECITÚDINE, CON ÓGNI  
 INGÉGNO, E CON ÓGNI ÁRTE, mi  
 páre che si PROCÁCCIANO DI RIDÚ-  
 CERE A NÚLLA, e di cacciáre del  
 móndo LA CRISTIÁNA RELIGIONE.  
 (Bocc. g. 1. d. 2.)

TÚTTI I PENSIÉRI *delle fem-*  
 mine, TÚTTO LO STÚDIO, TÚTTE  
 LE ÓPERE, a niúna áltra ósa  
 tirano, se non a signoreggiáre  
 gli úomini. (Bocc. Lab.)

Ricórdávi che nói siám TÚTTE  
 FÉMMINE. (Bocc. Intr.)

*E quél, che, sólo, —* CÓNTRA  
 TÚTTA TOSCÁNA TÉNNE IL PÓNTE.  
 (Petr. Trionf. Fam. c. 1.)

*Onde LÚCIO SÍLLA, che víNSE*  
 LA VIRTÙ, E I TRIÓNFI, E I SÉTTE  
 CONSOLÁTI DI CÁIO MÁRIO, si  
 fé' chiamáre il Felíce. (Davan.)

*Che úomo è costú, il quále nè*  
 VECCHIÉZZA, NÈ INFERMITÀ, NÈ  
 PAÚRA DI MÓRTE DÁLLA SÚA  
 MALVAGITÀ L' HÁNNO POTÚTO  
 RIMUÓVERE ?

And by what I can judge, it  
 seems that they strive with all  
 their zeal, and their power, and  
 their skill to overthrow the Chris-  
 tian religion, and to drive it from  
 the face of the earth.

All the thoughts, all the atten-  
 tion, and all the actions of women  
 tend to nothing but to rule over  
 men.

Remember that we are all wo-  
 men.

And he, who alone kept pos-  
 session of the bridge against all  
 Tuscany.

Therefore Lucius Sylla, who  
 surpassed Caius Marius in cour-  
 age, and in the number of his  
 triumphs and consulships, made  
 himself to be called the Happy.

What a man is this, whom nei-  
 ther age, sickness, nor the fear of  
 death, could deter from his wicked  
 course.

It has been said, that articles are used before *nouns*  
 employed in a *determined sense*; *adjectives, verbs, ad-*  
*verbs,* and *prepositions,* therefore, when used as *nouns,*  
 in *that sense,* require the *article* before them; as,

*sol d' una chiara fonte muó-*  
 ve IL DÓLCE e L' AMÁRO,

from the same clear fountain  
 springs the bitter and the  
 sweet;

IL NÁSCER *gránde è caso e*  
*non virtú,*

to be born in high life is a  
 chance and not merit;

saréi conténto di sapére IL  
 QUÁNDO,

I should be happy to know  
 [the] when;

IL DÓVE *io ho già pensáto,*

I have already thought [of the]  
 where;

IL CÓME *io ho ben vedúto,*

I have already seen [the] how;

IL PERCHÈ ti dirò, ci è IL PRÒ, e 'L CÓNTRÒ,	I will tell you [the] why ; there is something to say for and against ;
son cërta del sì, ciascúno rispóse del NO,	I am certain of the affirmative ; every one answered in the negative.

## EXAMPLES.

Così SOL D' ÚNA CHIÁRA FÓN-  
TE víva — MUÓVE IL DÓLCE E  
L' AMÁRO. (Petr. s. 131.)

Thus, from the same clear, living  
fount, springs the bitter and the  
sweet.

IL NÁSCER GRÁNDE È CÁSO  
E NON VIRTÙ. (Metast. Artas.  
1. 1.)

To be born in high life is a  
chance and not merit.

SARÉI CONTÉNTO DI SAPÉRE IL  
QUÁNDO. (Petr. s. 306.)

I should be happy to know [the]  
when.

IL DÓVE ÍO HO GIÀ PENSÁTO.  
(Bocc. g. 2.)

I have already thought [of the]  
where.

IL CÓME HO ÍO BEN VEDÚTO.  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 6.)

I have already seen [the] how.

Del còme non ti cáglia, IL  
PERCHÈ TI DIRÒ. (Bocc. Filoc.  
6.)

Do not trouble thyself about  
[the] how, I will tell you [the]  
why.

Sicchè CI È IL PRÒ E 'L CÓN-  
TRO. (Gio. Vill.)

So that there is something to  
say for and against.

SON CÉRTA DEL SÌ. (Bocc.  
g. 7. n. 7.)

I am certain of the affirmative.

CIASCÚNO RISPÓSE DEL NO.  
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Every one answered in the  
negative.

The names of *abstract substances*, and those of *gems*,  
*metals*, *liquids*, and *provisions*, require the *article* before  
them, when used in a *generic sense* ; as,

laudévol còsa è né' princípi  
LA PRUDÉNZÁ,  
L' ÓRO, e LE PÉRLE, e i flór  
vermígli e bíanchi,

prudence is praiseworthy in  
rulers ;  
the gold, and the pearls, and  
the red and white flowers ;

*vièppiù dólce si tróva L' ÁC- water and bread are sweeter*  
*QUA e 'L PÁNE, che LE than gems and gold.*  
*GÉMME e L' ÓRO,*

## EXAMPLES.

LAUDÉVOL CÓSA, e *necessária* Prudence is praiseworthy, and  
*mólto è NÉ' PRÍNCIPI LA PRU- very necessary to rulers.*  
*DÉNZA. (Bocc. Filoc.)*

L' ÓRO, e LE PÉRLE, e I FIOR The gold, and the pearls, and  
*VERMÍGLI e BIÁNCI, — Son per the red and white flowers, are to*  
*me acérbi e velenósi stécchi. me sharp and poisonous thorns.*  
*(Petr. s. 38.)*

VIÈPPIÙ DÓLCE SI TRÓVA L' ÁC- Water and bread are sweeter  
*QUA e 'L PÁNE, — CHE LE GÉM- than gems and gold.*  
*ME e L' ÓRO. (Petr. Trionf. c. 6.)*

The names of *heaven*, the *earth*, and the *sea* ; of the *cardinal points* ; of the *four quarters of the world* ; also of *kingdoms*, *provinces*, *mountains*, and *rivers*, when, in speaking of them, we consider their *whole extent*, take the *article* ; — but when we speak of any indeterminate part of them, they *refuse* it ; as,

<i>era státo tánto témpo sènza</i>	he had been so long without
<i>vedére IL CIÉLO,</i>	seeing the heavens [the sky] ;
<i>LA TÈRRA è frédda e sècca,</i>	the earth is cold and dry ;
<i>andávi su per LO MÀRE,</i>	thou didst walk on the sea ;
<i>era già L' ORIÉNTE tútto</i>	the east was already bright ;
<i>biáncó,</i>	
<i>non solaménte IL LEVÁNTE,</i>	not only the east, but also the
<i>ma quási tútto IL PONÉNTE,</i>	greatest part of the west,
<i>il conoscéva,</i>	knew him ;
<i>tútta L' EURÓPA è riputatá</i>	all Europe is considered to be
<i>strétto confíne,</i>	a narrow limit ;
<i>L' ITÁLIA è státa piú vólte</i>	Italy has been several times
<i>soggiogáta dá' bárbari,</i>	subdued by barbarians ;
<i>sálvo LA MÁRCA TRIVIGIÁ-</i>	except the March of Trevigi ;
<i>NA,</i>	
<i>inghiottíta da úna eruzióne</i>	overwhelmed by an eruption
<i>del VESÚVIO,</i>	of Mount Vesuvius ;

*ella è tagliata dall' ÁDIGE,* it is intersected by the Adige :

---

<i>Visse sánto in TÈRRA ed óra è in CIÈLO,</i>	He lived a saint on earth and now is in heaven ;
<i>il cámpe Cristiáno passò in ORIENTE,</i>	the Christian camp passed to the east ;
<i>le glórie d' ITÁLIA,</i>	the glories of Italy ;
<i>cóme fálde di néve in ÁLPE sénza vénto,</i>	like flakes of snow on the summit of the Alps, when the wind is hushed ;
<i>mi dissetái con ácqua di SÉN- NA,</i>	I quenched my thirst with the water of the Seine.

## EXCEPT

*Il Lázio,* ' [the] Latium ' ; which always *takes* the article : and  
*Ída,* ' Ida ' ; *O'ssa,* ' Ossa ' ; which always *refuse* it.

Names of *seas* take the *article* ; as,

IL MEDITERRÁNEO, L' ADRI- ÁTICO,	the Mediterranean, the Adri- atic ;
L' EGÉO,	the Egean ;
L' ATLÁNTICO, IL PACÍFICO,	the Atlantic, the Pacific.

Names of *cities, islands, and lakes* take *no article* ; as,

FIRÉNZE, RÓMA, MARSÍ- GLIA,	Florence, Rome, Marseilles ;
CÍPRO, SCÍO, CRÉTA,	Cyprus, Scio, Crete ;
lago MAGGIÓRE, di LUGÁNO, di CÓMO,	lake Maggiore, of Lugano, of Como.

## EXCEPTIONS.

The following names of *cities and islands*, however, *take* the *article* ; viz. IL CÁIRO, ' Cairo ' ; LA MIRÁNDOLA, ' Mirandola ' ; LA ROCCELLA, ' Rochelles ' ; L' AÍIA, ' Aix ' ; — IL GÍGLIO, ' Giglio ' ; LA CAPRAÍIA, ' Capraia ' ; LA GORGÓNA, ' Gorgona ' ; and perhaps a few more : also the *names* of those *islands* which are *spoken* of in the *plural* ; as, LE BALEÁRI, ' the Balearic islands ' ; LE FILIPPÍNE, ' the Philippine islands ' ; LE MOLÚCICHE, ' the Molucca islands ' ; &c.

The *names* of the following *islands*, *may* or *may not* take the *article* ; viz. ÉLBA or L' ÉLBA, ' Elba ' ; SARDÉGNA or LA SARDÉGNA,

'Sardinia'; *Còrsica* or *LA Còrsica*, 'Corsica'; *Sicilia* or *LA Sicilia*, 'Sicily'; *Inghiltèrra* or *L' Inghiltèrra*, 'England'; *Irlànda* or *L' Irlànda*, 'Ireland.'

Names of cities, &c., always take the article when preceded by an adjective; as, *la bella Firenze*, '[the] beautiful Florence'; &c.

## EXAMPLES.

TÁNTO TÈMPO ÈRA STÀTO SÈNZA VEDÈRE IL CIÈLO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.) He had been so long without seeing the sky.

LA TÈRRA È FRÈDDA E SÈCCA, — L' *àere* è càldo e úmido. (Brun. Tes. 1.) The earth is cold and dry, and the air warm and damp.

*Per la quál tu su per lo màre andávi.* (Dant. Par. 24.) By which thou didst walk on the sea.

ÈRA GIÀ L' ORIÈNTE TÚTTO BIÀNCO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.) The east was already bright.

NON SOLAMÈNTE IL LEVÀNTE, MA GIÀ QUÀSI TÚTTO IL PONÈNTE *per fama* IL CONOSCÈVA. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 3.) Not only the east, but also the greatest part of the west, knew him by reputation.

TÚTTA L' EURÓPA È RIPUTÁTA STRÈTTO CONFÍNE. (BUOM.) All Europe is considered to be a narrow limit.

*Vóti sapète che l' Itàlia è stàta piú vólte soggiogáta da mólti bàrbari.* (BUOM.) You know that Italy has been several times subdued by many barbarians.

*Rendégli la Signoria di Lombardia,* SALVO LA MÀRCA TRIVIGIANA. (Gio. Vill. l. 3. c. 5.) He restored to him the signiory of Lombardy, except the March of Treviso.

*O've restò un tèmpo inghiot-títa la città d' Ercoláno* DA ÚNA ERUZIÓNE DEL VESÚVIO. (Gang. lett.) Where the city of Herculaneum was overwhelmed by an eruption of Mount Vesuvius.

ÈLLA È TAGLIÁTA DÁLL' ÁDIGE, *fiume, còme sái, amenissimo.* (Algar. lett.) It is intersected by the Adige, a very pleasant river, as thou knowest.

VÍSSE SÁNTO IN TÈRRA, ED ÓRA È IN CIÈLO. (Tass. Ger.) He lived a saint on earth, and now is in heaven.

*Già 'l sèsto ànno volgèa che 'n ORIÈNTE — PASSÒ IL CÀMPO CRISTIÀNO all' álta imprèsa.* (Tass. Ger.) It was already six years since the Christian camp passed to the East on their great undertaking.

LE *soumme* GLÓRIE D' ITÁLIA.  
(Buom.)

The very great glories of Italy.

*Piovéan di fúcco dilattáte fúlde,*  
— CÔME DI NÉVE IN ÁLPE SÉNZA  
VÉNTO. (Dant. Inf. 14.)

There fell down dilated flakes  
of fire, as flakes of snow on the  
summit of the Alps, when the  
wind is hushed.

MI DISSETÁI CON ÁCQUA DI  
SÉNNA. (Vanz.)

I quenched my thirst with the  
water of the Seine.

Ma l' Egéio, ma l' Atlán-  
tico, non cêrca di comprénde-  
re, e sa béne che éi non pud.  
(Davan.)

But he does not try to compre-  
hend the Egean sea, and the  
Atlantic ocean, and he knows he  
cannot.

Perchè FIRÉNZE è città domi-  
nante, e imitatrice di RÓMA.  
(Davan.)

Because Florence is a powerful  
city, and the rival of Rome.

MARSEILLES [MARSÍGLIA], sic-  
còme vóí sapéte, è antica e nobi-  
líssima città. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)

Marseilles is, as you know, an  
ancient and very noble city.

Guiscárdo, re di CÍPRO. (Eriz.  
Giorn.)

Guiscard, king of Cyprus.

Che le biáde — Ogn' ísola di  
Grécia a lui sol miéta, — E Scío  
pietrósa gli vendémmi e CRÉTA.  
(Tass. Ger. 1. 78.)

That every island of Greece  
should reap corn, and stony Scio  
and Crete should make wine for  
him alone.

Viággio á' tre lághi: MAG-  
GIÓRE, DI LUGÁNO, e DI CÔMO.  
(Amor.)

A journey to the three lakes:  
Maggiore, of Lugano, and of Co-  
mo.

Il cònte Guido délla MIRÁN-  
DOLA, móssó dálla munificénza  
di Lorenzo, póse la sua abita-  
sioné in Firénse. (Mach. Stor.  
Flor. 1. 8.)

Count Guido of Mirandola,  
pleased with the munificence of  
Lorenzo, fixed his residence in  
Florence.

Mubvasi LA CAPRÁIA e LA  
GORGÓNA. (Dant. Inf. 33.)

May Capraia and Gorgona rise  
from their foundations.

*Dio* or *Iddio*, 'God'; and names of persons, when used in their full meaning, never take the article; but, when we limit their signification to designate a particular object, they always take the article; as,

Dío ci mándi béne,

God help us;

IDDÍO <i>dispóse altramente,</i>	God ordained otherwise ;
APÓLLO <i>fu vedúto saettàre il Pítone,</i>	Apollo was seen shooting the serpent Python ;
ov' ÉRCOLE <i>segnò li súbi riguàrdi,</i>	where Hercules fixed his boundaries ;
OMÉRO, VIRGÍLIO, e DÁNTE,	Homer, Virgil, and Dante :

IL DÍO <i>délla guérra,</i>	The God of war ;
L' APÓLLO <i>del Belvedére,</i>	the Apollo of Belvedere ;
L' ÉRCOLE <i>Farnése,</i>	the Farnese Hercules ;
L' OMÉRO <i>Ferrartése,</i>	the Ferrarese Homer [Ariosto].

Agreeably to this principle the nouns *Dío, Idáto*, in the plural, when speaking of the deities of the heathens, take the article ; as,

<i>se fósse piaciúto aGLI DÉI,</i>	if it had pleased the Gods ;
<i>GL' IDDÍI, li quáli govérnano le nòstre cose,</i>	the Gods, who govern our affairs.

They take also the article, when they are preceded by an adjective ; as,

L' <i>onnipoténte</i> DÍO,	the almighty God ;
IL <i>gránde</i> ACHILLE,	the great Achilles ;
L' <i>infelíce</i> PRÍAMO,	the unhappy Priamus.

They take the article when they are used to designate persons familiarly or publicly known ; as,

<i>chiamáto</i> IL GERBÍNO,	having called Gerbino ;
<i>aveva amáta</i> LA NINÉTTA,	he had loved Ninetta ;
LA MADDALÉNA, LA MARI- ÁNNA,	Magdalen, Marianna.

But when names of persons are preceded by one of the nouns *Sére*, ' Sir ' ; *Messére*, ' Master ' ; *maestro*, ' master ' ; *Don*, ' Don ' ; *Dónna*, ' Donna ' ; *Fráte*, ' Friar or Brother ' ; *Sánto* or *Sánta*, ' Saint ' ; they refuse the article ; as,

SER <i>Brunétto,</i>	Sir Brunetto ;
----------------------	----------------

MESSÈR <i>Gugliélmo</i> ,	Mr. William ;
MAÉSTRO <i>Adámo</i> ,	master Adamo ;
DON <i>Piétro</i> ,	Don Pedro ;
FRÁTE <i>Albérto</i> ,	Friar Albert ;
SAN <i>Maurizio</i> ,	Saint Maurice ;
SÁNTA <i>Veridiána</i> ,	Saint Veridiana.

*Names of persons, preceded by the nouns Pápa, 'Pope'; Re, 'King,' are better used without the article ; as,*

*Pápa Giovanni, Re Carlo, Pope John, King Charles.*

*Surnames or family names take no article, when preceded by names of persons ; but when they are used to specify a person of such a family, also when we speak of celebrated men, and when they are preceded by a title, the article is used ; as,*

<i>Gugliélmo Rossiglióne, Gugliélmo Guardastágnò,</i>	William Rossiglione, William Guardastagno ;
IL GUARDASTÁGNO, IL ROSSIGLIÓNE,	Guardastagno, Rossiglione ;
IL PETRÁRCA, IL BOCCÁCCIO,	Petrarch, Boccaccio ;
IL cardinál MAZZARÍNI,	cardinal Mazzarini.

*Names of the months take no article ; as,*

<i>il sesto di GENNAIO fu l'ásce,</i>	the sixth of January was for the axe ;
<i>il primo e 'l secóndo di AGÓSTO firon le martélla,</i>	the first and second of August were for the hammers.

*Names of the days may be used with or without the article ; as,*

MERCOLEDÌ, <i>dópo desinare,</i>	Wednesday, after dinner ;
IL SÁBATO <i>mattina si partì di Fírénze,</i>	on Saturday morning he left Florence.



## EXAMPLES.

- Entrándo dentro disse: "Dio ci MANDI BENE; chi è quà?"* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 2.)  
On entering said: "God help us; who is here?"
- Iddio, giusto riguardatore degli altrui mériti, ALTRAMENTE DISPÓSE.* (Bocc. g. 2 n. 8.)  
God, the just rewarder of people's merit, ordained otherwise.
- Chè fu veramente veduto APÓLLO SAETTARE IL velenoso PITÓNE.* (D'AVAN.)  
For Apollo was really seen shooting the venomous serpent Python.
- Po e i compagni eravam vecchi e tardi, — Quando venimmo a quella foce stretta, — Ov' ERCOLE SEGNÒ LI SUOI RIGUARDI.* (Dant. Inf. 26.)  
I and my companions were tardy with age, when we came to the strait pass where Hercules fixed his boundaries.
- OMÉRO, VIRGÍLIO, E DÁNTE han lasciáto nelle pitture loro mólto di che fare all'immaginativa del leggítore.* (Fosc.)  
Homer, Virgil, and Dante have left in their pictures much to do for the imagination of the reader.
- IL DIO DELLA GUÉRRA.* (Cesar.)  
The God of War.
- L' APÓLLO DEL BELVEDÉRE.* (Miliz. Art. Dis.)  
The Apollo of Belvedere.
- L' OMÉRO FERRARÉSE.* (Metast. lett.)  
The Ferrarese Homer [Ariosto].
- SE ÁGLI DÉI FÓSSE PIACIÚTO.* (Bocc. Filoc.)  
If it had pleased the Gods.
- GL' IDDI, LI QUÁLI dispóngono e GOVERNAN NOI, e LE NOSTRE CÓSE.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)  
The Gods, who dispose of, and govern, us and our affairs.
- L' ONNIPÓTENTE DIO, e misericordiúso giúdice, nascónde dal suo giudicio i nostri fálli.* (Pass. Ver. Pen.)  
The almighty God, and merciful judge, conceals our sins from his judgment.
- E vídi 'L GRÁNDE ACHÍLLE, — Che con amore al fine combattéo.* (Dant. Inf. 5.)  
And I saw the great Achilles who fought with love to the end.
- Il quále mólto AMÁTA AVÉVA LA NINÉTTA.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)  
Who had ardently loved Ninetta.

*E chinando la mano alla sua faccia — Risposi: "Siete voi qui, SER BRUNETTO?"* (Dant. Inf. 15.)

And inclining my hand towards his face, I answered: "Sir Brunetto, are you here?"

*MESSÉR GUGLIÉLMO Rossiglione dà a mangiàre alla moglie sua ed attendéte — Alla miséria del MAÉSTRO ADAMO.*" (Dant. Inf. 30.)

Mr. William Rossiglione gives to his wife the heart of Mr. William Guardastagno to eat.

*Diss' egli a noi: "Guardate, ed attendéte — Alla miséria del MAÉSTRO ADAMO."* (Dant. Inf. 30.)

And he said to us: "Regard attentively the woe of master Adamo."

*Tórto faréi alla infinita virtù dell' eccellentissimo DON PIÉTRO de Tolédo.* (Bern. Tass. lett.)

I should do wrong to the immense merit of the most excellent Don Pedro de Toledo.

*FRÁTE ALBÉRTO dà a vedére ad una dónna, che l' ágnolo Gabriéle . . . .* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

Friar Albert gives a woman to understand, that the angel Gabriel . . . .

*Con una bólla istituì l' órdine di SAN MAURÍZIO.* (Den. Riv. Ital.)

With a bull he instituted the order of Saint Maurice.

*Paréva pur SÁNTA VERIDIÁNA, che dà a beccáre alle sérpi.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

She seemed Saint Veridiana, feeding the serpents.

*Mórto PÁPA GIOVÁNNI, e non avéndo potúto RE CÁRLO ottenére che si fósse rifátto un Pápa Franzése.* (Gian. Stor. Giv. Nap. l. 20. c. 5.)

Pope John having died, and King Charles having not been able to obtain that a French Pope should be re-elected.

*IL GUARDASTÁGNO rispóse, che senza fállò il dì seguénte andrébbe a cenár con lui. IL ROSSIGLIÓNE, udéndo quéstò, pensò il témpo ésser venúto di potérlo ucidere.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5)

Guardastagno answered, that he would without fail sup with him the following night. Rossiglione, hearing this, thought the time of murdering him was come.

*L' esquisitézza del PETRÁRCA, áltro nùme délla nóstra volgár poesia.* (Buom.)

The exquisite elegance of Petrarch, another god of our Italian poetry.

*Il Decamerón del BOCCÁCCIO è di grán lúnga il migliór líbro, che abbíamo in fáttò d' eloquénza Italiána.* (Den. Sag. Letter.)

The Decameron of Boccaccio is by far the best book which we have in point of Italian eloquence.

IL CARDINÁL MAZZARINI, *Bali-  
áno ancór esso.* (Den. Riv. Ital.  
l. 23. c. 12.)

Cardinal Mazzarini, an Italian  
also.

Se IL SÉSTO DI GENNÁIO FU  
L' ÁSCHE, e IL PRÍMO e IL SECÓNDO  
D' AGÓSTO FÚRONO LE MARTÉLLA.  
(DAVAR. Stor.)

If the sixth of January was for  
the axe, and the first and second  
of August were for the hammers.

MERCOLEDÌ, DÓPO DESINÁRE,  
*assalírono da piú párti quegli del  
lato dégli Adimári.* (Gio. Vill.  
c. 20.)

Wednesday, after dinner, they  
assailed from different quarters  
those who sided with the Adimari.

*Venúta in Firenze la novélla  
il Venerdì sera, IL SÁBATO MAT-  
TÍNA Messér Giambertáldo si  
PARTÌ DI FIRENZE.* (Gio. Vill.  
l. 7. c. 31.)

The news having reached Flor-  
ence on Friday evening, Messer  
Giambertaldo left Florence on Sat-  
urday morning.

A noun preceded by an *adjective* takes the article  
before this adjective; as,

IL GRAN *mále*, IL GRAN *pec-  
cáto*, IL GRAN *fátto adope-  
ráti da Gisippo,*

the great evil, the great sin,  
the great crime committed  
by Gisippus.

Nouns also take the article when preceded by an  
ordinal number, or a possessive pronoun; \* but they

\* This rule with regard to possessive pronouns has not been strictly followed by  
the early writers, as may be seen by the following examples:

*Com' é vedrámo quel voláme apérto,  
— Nel qual si scrivon tatti suoi DISPER-  
GI.* (Dant. PAR. 19.)

As soon as they shall see that book  
open, in which all their sins are written.

*Pásson VÓSTRI TRIÓNFI e VÓSTRI  
RÓMPE.* (Petr. Trionf. Temp.)

Your triumphs and your pomp pass  
away.

*Quésta ira di Dio e NÓSTRA CORREZI-  
ÓNE mandáta sópra i mortáli.* (Bocc.  
Intr.)

This wrath of God sent down upon  
mortals for our correction.

Besides there are in Italian several modes of expression, such as *a mia piú*, 'at  
my pleasure'; *in suo nóme*, 'in his name'; *contra sua voglia*, 'against his will';  
&c., in which, by a peculiarity of language, the article is elegantly suppressed; as,

*Po non posso far caldo e fréddo a MIA  
rósta.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

I cannot make warm and cold weather  
at my pleasure.

*Quésti agrida, IN SUO NÓME, il tróppo  
arráre.* (Tass. Ger. 3. 53.)

This one blames, in his (Godfrey's)  
name, their excessive daring.

*Ed io, CÓNTRA SU'A VÓGLIA, altrónde 'l  
méno.* (Petr. s. 39.)

And I guide him elsewhere against  
his will.

*refuse* it when they are *preceded* by a *demonstrative*, *interrogative*, or *indefinite pronoun* ; as,

IL VENTÉSIMO Cánto,	the twentieth Canto ;
LA PRÍMA canzóne,	the first song ;
LA MÍA pátria,	my country ;
IL VÓSTRO amíco,	your friend :

---

QUÉSTI sospíri,	these sighs ;
QUÁL paúra ?	what fear ;
QUALÚNQUE ÁLTRA fánite,	any other woman ;
ÚNA COTÁL mezzanità,	such a middling course.

## EXCEPTIONS.

When the nouns are preceded by the *indefinite* pronouns, *úno*, 'one' ; *áltro*, 'other' ; *stéssu* or *medésimo*, 'same' ; they are *used* with the *article* ; as,

L' ÚNA e L' ÁLTRA máno,	the one and the other hand ;
NÉLLA MEDÉSIMA città, NEL MEDÉSIMO giòrno,	in the same city, in the same day.

Sometimes the *noun*, which is preceded by an *ordinal number* or a *possessive pronoun*, is *understood* ; as,

non stringéndosi nélle vívande quánto I PRÍMI, nè nel bére quánto I SECÓNDI,	not confining themselves in eating like the former, nor in drinking like the latter ;
sóma d' áltri ómeri che dáí TUÓI,	a burden for stronger shoulders than thine.

When the *noun*, which is preceded by a *possessive pronoun*, is one of those which express *kindred* or *relation*, *quality* or *rank*, and this *noun* is in the *singular number*, the *article* is *suppressed* ;\* but, if the *noun* is in the *plural*, the *article* is *always used* ; as,

---

\* Notwithstanding this, instances are often found in excellent writers, in which

MÍO FÍGLIO ov' è?	where is my son?
SÚO PÁDRE ci fece mólti dón- ni,	his father did us many injuries :
MÍA MÁDRE, un fratéllo mi- nóre, ed io,	my mother, a younger brother, and I ;
ména téco TÚA MÓGLIE,	take thy wife with thee ;
il nóbile átto di Filippo, usáto a salute di SÚO MARÍTO,	the noble action which Philip had done for the safety of her husband ;
il dirò a MÍO FRATÉLLO,	I will tell it to my brother ;
VÓSTRA SORÉLLA, VÓSTRA ZIA,	your sister, your aunt ;
SÚA ECCELLÉNZA le baciò la máno,	His Excellency kissed her hand ;
stiámo assái béne con SÚA ALTÉZZA,	we stand very well with His Highness ;
gl' interési di SÚA MAESTÀ,	His Majesty's interests :

---

Guardái nel viso ái MIÉI FIGLIUÓLLI,	I looked upon the countenance of my sons ;
ringrázio LE LÓRO SIGNORÍE,	I thank your Lordships.

## EXCEPT

When the *noun* is separated from the *pronoun* by an *adjective*

---

the article is used before nouns of *kindred* and *quality* in the singular, preceded by *possessive pronouns* ; as,

*E'cco IL TU'O FÍGLIO.* (Guar. Past. Fid. 1.)

Behold thy son.

*Aréte Cirenáica, che dópo la mórté del  
SU'O PÁDRE, résse la scúola.* (Firenz. lett.)

Aréte of Cyrene, who, after her father's death, directed the school.

*Vedér puóti con quánto affétto, — La  
vite s' avviticchia al SU'O MARÍTO.* (Tass. Amint. 1. 1.)

Thou mightest see with what affection the vine entwines itself round her husband [the oak].

*Avéndo riguárdo áLLA VÓSTRA ECCEL-  
LE'NZIA.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

Paying regard to your Excellency.

*Andirò di pórgeré i priégghi mídi áLLA  
VÓSTRA ALTE'ZZA.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

I will take the liberty of advancing my prayers to your Highness.

LA SU'A MAESTÀ. (Dav.)

His Majesty.

placed between them; and when it is *preceded* by the pronoun *l'oro*, 'their'; in which cases the *article* is *used* even in the *singular*; as,

AL mio DISPIETÀTO pàdre,           to my cruel father;  
LA LÓRO figlia, LA LÓRO so-   their daughter, their sister.  
rèlla,

The *article* is also *suppressed*, when the noun, preceded by a possessive pronoun, is also *preceded* by a *numeral adjective*, or a *demonstrative* or *indefinite pronoun*; as,

con QUESTO suo figliuolo,       with this son of hers;  
QUÁLCHE suo amico,           some of his friends;  
OGNI mio ufficio,           all my obligations;  
NIUN vostro fatto,           none of your business;  
CÉRTI suoi amici,           certain friends of his.

The *relative pronoun* *quále*, 'which,' when *preceded* by its *antecedent*, *requires* the *article*; \* but it *refuses* the *article* when it is used in the signification of *chi*, 'he who'; when it expresses *doubt*, or when it expresses *similitude*; as,

SETTE GIOVANI DONNE, i nó-   seven young women, whose  
mi DÉLLE QUÁLI raccon-   names I would relate;  
terti,  
QUÁL più gente possiede,   he who has most people [sol-  
diers];  
QUÁL guerriero Cristiano,   like a Christian warrior;  
QUÁL più vi piace delle due,   which of the two you like best.

The words *signóre* or *signóra*, when used *substantively* in the signification of the *master* or *mistress* of a

\* In poetry, however, the *article* is often *suppressed*; as,

O DIVA LUCE, QU'LE, in tre persóne  
— Ed una essénza, il Ciel governa e 'l  
móndo. (Bocc. Amet. 98.)

E quí: "Di ródo — Incontra," mi  
rispóse, "che di nbi — Faccia 'L GAMMI-  
no aloba, per QU'LE te vódo." (Dant.  
Inf. 9.)

O divine light, who, one substance in  
three persons, governest Heaven and the  
world.

And he replied to me: "It seldom  
happens, that any one of us makes the  
journey which I am going."

thing, *take* the *article*; but when used *adjectively* as *titles* or *epithets*, they *take* the *article*, when we *speak of*, and they *refuse* it, when we *speak to*, a person; as,

IL SIGNÓRE [di quèsta càsa] è uscito,	the master [of this house] is gone out;
LA SIGNÓRA è occupáta,	the mistress is engaged;
vóti qui sítte IL SIGNÓRE,	you are the master here;
IL SIGNÓR Cárlo Dati ed IL SIGNÓR Andréa Cavalcánti,	Mr. Charles Dati and Mr. An- drew Cavalcanti;
IL SIGNÓR Cardinále Spi- nola,	Cardinal Spinola;
IL SIGNÓR marchése e LA SIGNÓRA contéssa,	the marquis and the countess:

O SIGNÓR Achille!	O Mr. Achilles!
vedéte, SIGNÓRI, com' égli m' avta lasciáto,	see, sirs, how he had left me;
SIGNÓRI e dónne, vóti dovéte sapére,	gentlemen and ladies, you must know.

Agreeably to this rule, the words *signóre* and *signóra*, *take* the *article*, when used to *express* 'our Lord' [God], and 'our Lady' [the Virgin];\* and *refuse* it, when used *with* the adverbs *sì*, 'yes'; and *no* or *non*, 'no'; in *affirmative* and *negative* phrases; as,

IL SIGNÓRE, Jesù,	our Lord, Jesus;
LA SIGNÓRA délle Grázie,	our Lady of the Graces;
SIGNÓR SÌ,	yes, Sir;
NON SIGNÓRA,	no, Madam.

\* In the following instances the article is suppressed before the word *signóre*, preceded by the *possessive* pronoun *nóstro*:

A chi nóstro SIGNÓRE lasciò le chiavi.  
(Dant. Par. 24.)

Quánto tesoro volle — NÓSTRO SIGNÓ-  
RE in prima da San Piétro — Che poné-  
se le chiavi in óca baña? (Dant. Inf. 19.)

Si dès éssere lo cavaliero astinénto, e  
digiunáre il Venerdì, in rimembráncia di  
NÓSTRO SIGNÓRE. (Nov. Ant. 51.)

To whom our Lord [Christ] left the  
keys.

What treasures did our Lord demand  
of St. Peter, before he put the keys into  
his charge?

A knight ought to be abstinent, and  
ought to fast on Friday, in commemora-  
tion of [the death of] our Lord.

Finally, there are several expressions in Italian, in which the *article* is always *suppressed*; as,

<i>andáre</i> A CÁSA, A PALÁGIO OR A CÔRTE, A NÓZZE, A FÉSTA, A CHIÉSA,	to go home, to court, to a wedding, to a feast, to church;
<i>stáre</i> OR <i>éssere</i> IN CÁSA, IN BOTTÉGA, IN PIÁZZA, IN CITTÀ, IN CAMPÁGNA OR CONTÁDO,	to live <i>or</i> to be at home, in the shop, in the square, in the city, in the country;
<i>uscíre</i> DI CÁSA, DI CITTÀ, DI CONTÁDO,	to go out of the house, of the city, of the country;
<i>avér</i> FÁME, SÉTE, CÁLDO, FRÉDDO,	to be hungry, thirsty, warm, cold;
<i>avére</i> IN MÁNO, <i>méttere</i> IN BÓCCA,	to have in hand, to put into one's mouth;
<i>menáre</i> A SPÁSSO, <i>tenér</i> TÁ- VOLA,	to take one to walk, to give a dinner;
<i>córrer</i> RÍSCHIO, <i>réndér</i> CÓNTO, <i>dáre</i> ÓRDINE, <i>prestár</i> FÉDE,	to run a risk, to give account; to give orders, to give credit.

## EXAMPLES.

*Questo è dunque* IL GRAN MÁLE, IL GRAN PECCÁTO, IL GRAN FÁTTO ADOPERÁTO DA GISÍPPO? (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Is this, then, the great evil, the great sin, the great crime committed by Gisippus?

*Di nuóva péna mi convién far vérsi, — E dar matéria al VENTÉSIMO CÁNTO — DÉLLA PRÍMA CANZÓNE, ch' è dé' sommérsi.* (Dant. Inf. 20.)

I must write verses respecting new torments, to be the subject of the twentieth canto of the first song, which treats of those who are sunk in woe.

LA MÍA PÁTRIA mi ha nutrióto saviáménte. (Am. Ant. d. 2. r. 6.)

My country has brought me up wisely.

*Io vi vóglío díre ciocchè IL VÓSTRO AMÍCO mi féce stamáne.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

I wish to tell you what your friend did to me this morning.

*Che fanno omái méco QUÉSTI sospíri?* (Petr. c. 33.)

What do these sighs do with me?

*Quáki léggi, quáki mináce, QUÁL PAÚRA?* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

What laws, what threats, what fear?



*Sé' tu più che QUALUNQUE  
ÁLTRA dolorosétta FANTE.* (Bocc.  
g. 8. n. 7.)

Art thou more than any other  
weeping woman.

*Per ÚNA COTÁL MEZZANITÀ, e  
per contentáre il pópolo, eléssero  
due cavaliéri Fráti Gaudénti.*  
(Gio. Vill. l. 7. c. 13.)

To observe such a middling  
course, and to satisfy the people,  
they elected two knights [of the  
order of] Joyous Friars.

*Ed un, ch' avéa l' ÚNA E L' ÁL-  
TRA MAN móssa.* (Dant. Inf.)

And one, who had the one and  
the other hand cut off.

*E NÉLLA MEDÉSIMA CITTÀ, nel  
mése medésimo di Apríle, NEL  
MEDÉSIMO GIORNO séi, nell' ánno  
mille trecénto quarantótto, da  
quéstá luce quélla luce fu tólta.*  
(Petr. lett.)

And in the same city, in the  
same month of April, on the same  
sixth day, in the year one thou-  
sand three hundred and forty-  
eight, that light (Laura) was  
taken from this light.

*Mólta áltri servávano úna mez-  
zána via, NON STRINGÉNDOSI NÉL-  
LE VIVÁNDE QUÁNTO I PRÍMI, NÈ  
NEL BÉRE QUÁNTO I SECÓNDI.*  
(Bocc. Intr.)

Many others chose a method  
between the two, not confining  
themselves in eating like the for-  
mer, nor in drinking like the latter.

*Chè fáre onóre — È D' ÁLTRI  
ÓMERI SÓMA, CHE DÁ' TUÓI.* (Petr.  
s. 5.)

For to do her honor is a burden  
for stronger shoulders than thine.

*MÍO FÍGLIO ov' è, e perché  
non è téco?* (Dant. Inf. 10.)

Where is my son, and why is he  
not with thee?

*SÚO PÁDRE CI FÉCE MÓLTI  
DÁNNI.* (Dav. Stor. 4.)

His father did us many inju-  
ries.

*MÍA MÁDRE, UN FRATÉLLO  
MINÓRE, ED IO, síamo restáti  
nell' estréma miséria.* (Sorv.  
Nov.)

My mother, a younger brother,  
and I, have remained in extreme  
misery.

*Io vóglío che tu ti váda, e  
MÉNI TÉCO TÚA MÓGLIE.* (Bocc.)

I wish that thou shouldst go,  
and take thy wife with thee.

*Intéso IL NÓBILE ÁTTO DI  
FILÍPPO, USÁTO A SALÚTE DI SÚO  
MARÍTO.* (Giral. lett.)

Having heard of the noble ac-  
tion, which Phillip had done for  
the safety of her husband.

*Io IL DIRÒ A MÍO FRATÉLLO.*  
(Bocc.)

I will tell it to my brother.

*VÓSTRA SORÉLLA mi mandò  
a casa Mónna Lessánda, vó-  
STRA zÍA.* (Cecch. Dot. 2. 2.)

Your sister sent me to Mouna  
Lessandra's, your aunt.

*E SÚA ECCELLÉNZÁ LE BACIÒ  
LA MÁNO.* (Car. lett.)

And His Excellency kissed her  
hand.

- Noi due, secondo che a me pare, STIAMO ASSAI BENE CON SÚA ALTÉZZA.* (Firenz. disc. an. 14.)  
We two, as it seems to me, stand very well with His Highness.
- Gl' INTERÉSSI DI SÚA MAESTÀ.* (Bent. lett.)  
His Majesty's interests.
- Onđ io GUARDÁI — NEL VISO Á' MIÉ' FIGLIUÓLI senza far mótto.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)  
Whence I looked upon the countenances of my sons without saying a word.
- A che rispóndo, prima che io RINGRÁZII LE LÓRO SIGNORÍE.* (Bemb. lett.)  
To which I reply, before thanking your Lordships.
- Póse Iddío nell' ánimo AL MÍO DISPIETÁTO PÁDRE.* (Bocc.)  
God put into the mind of my cruel father.
- Senténdo gli Amidéi, che Messer Buondelmónte avéva tóltá un' áltra móglie, e non voléva LA LÓRO [FIGLIA, SORÉLLA], furono insieme.* (Gio. Fior. Pecor.)  
The Amidei hearing, that Messer Buondelmonte had taken another wife, and wished no longer for their [daughter, sister] met together.
- Mónna Giovánna CON QUÉSTO SÚO FIGLIUÓLO sen' andéva in contádo.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)  
Monna Giovanna used to go into the country with this son of hers.
- Per consíglío di QUÁLCHÉ SÚO AMÍCO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)  
By the advice of some friend of his.
- O móltó amáto cuóre, ÓGNI MÍO UFFÍCIO verso te è forníto.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)  
O beloved heart [object], all my obligations towards thee are satisfied.
- Éssi di NIUN VÓSTRO FÁTTO s' impácciano.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)  
They do not meddle with any of your business.
- Gli venne un méso da CÉRTI SUÓI grandíssimi AMÍCI.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)  
He received a message from certain very great friends of his.
- SÉTTE GIOVANI DÓNNE, I NÓMI DELLE QUÁLI io in própria fórma RACCONTERÉI.* (Bocc. Intr.)  
Seven young women, whose names I would relate in due form.
- QUÁL PIÙ GÉNTE POSSIÉDE, — Colúí è piú dá' subí nemici avóltó.* (Petr. c. 29.)  
He who has most people [soldiers], is surrounded by most enemies.
- Vivésti QUÁL GUERRIÉRO CRISTIÁNO, e sánto.* (Tass. Ger. 3. 68.)  
Thou livedst like a Christian and holy warrior.

*Nella vostra elezione stà di torre quäl piü vi piäce delle düx, o, se volöte, amendüs.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 2.)

IL SIGNÖRE È USCITO. (Gram. Gram.)

LA SIGNÖRA È OCCUPÄTA. (Vanz.)

VÖI QUI SIETE IL SIGNÖRE. (Bocc.)

IL SIGNÖR CARLO DÄTI, IL SIGNÖR AGOSTINO NELLI, ED IL SIGNÖR ANDRÉA CAVALCÄNTI vi salutano caramente. (Red. lett.)

IL SIGNÖR CARDINÄLE SPINOLA, nöstro legäto. (Bent. lett. 1.)

IL SIGNÖR maestro, IL SIGNÖR MARCHÉSE, E LA SIGNÖRA CONTESSA. (Gram. Gram.)

O SIGNÖR ACHILLE! (Guid.)

*E ä villani rivötto, disse: "VEDÉTE, SIGNÖRI, COM' EGLI M' AVÉA LASCIÄTO nell' albérگو in arnese."* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 4.)

SIGNÖRI E DÖNNE, VÖI DOVÉTE SAPÉRE, che . . . . (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

*Andarono, e pensomi che trovarono IL SIGNÖRE, Gesù.* (Vit. S. G. Bat.)

*E dal buön uomo firono äLLA SIGNÖRA DELLE GRÄZIE raccomandäte.* (Vit. S. Cater.)

"SIGNÖR sì, da cavalière," gridò il cönte. (Manz. Prom. Spos.)

NON SIGNÖRA; è in compagnia d' un forestiére. (Gold. Advent.)

*Giunti a CASA del pädre della fanciulla.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.)

It is at your option to take which of the two you like best, or, if you wish, both of them.

The master is gone out.

The mistress is engaged.

You are the master here.

Mr Charles Dati, Mr. Augustine Nelli, and Mr. Andrew Cavalcanti salute you affectionately.

Cardinal Spinola, our legate.

The master, the marquis, and the countess.

O Mr. Achilles!

And turning to the rustics, he said: "See, sirs, in what condition he had left me at the inn."

Gentlemen and ladies, you must know, that . . . .

They went, and I imagine that they found our Lord, Jesus.

And by that good man they were recommended to our Lady of the Graces.

"Yes, sir, [it is the act] of a nobleman," cried out the count.

No, madam; she is accompanied by a stranger.

Having arrived at the house of the father of the girl.

*Benchè i cittadini non abbiano a far cosa del mondo a PALÀGIO, pur talvolta vi vånno.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 5.) The citizens sometimes go to court, though they have nothing in the world to do there.

*Nò già arèsti amico sì càro, per cù mallevadbre tu andàssi a CÒRTE.* (Senec. Pist.) You would not have so dear a friend, for whom you would go into court as bail.

*Che a NÓZZE, o a FÉSTA, o a CHIÉSA andár potésse.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.) That she might go to wedding, or to a feast, or to church.

*Gli sbanditi uscirono qudsi tãtti di città, e di contàdo.* (Gio. Vill.) Almost all the outlaws went out of the city, and out of the country.

When we wish to designate a *portion* or a *number* of the *objects* in a *class*, this may be done in four different ways :

First, by *naming* only the *objects* of the class ; as, *ho buòn vïno*, or *buòni vïni*, ‘I have good wine,’ or ‘good wines.’

Secondly, by *using* the preposition *di*, ‘of’ ; as, *ho di buòn vïno*, or *di buòni vïni*, ‘I have [of] good wine,’ or ‘[of] good wines.’

Thirdly, by *using* the same *preposition* and the *article* ; as, *ho del buòn vïno*, or *dèi buòni vïni*, ‘I have [of the] good wine,’ or ‘[of the] good wines.’

Fourthly, by *using* the indefinite pronoun *ùno*, *ùna*, ‘a’ or ‘an,’ in the singular ; *alcùni*, *alcùne*, ‘some,’ in the plural ; as, *ho un buòn vïno*, or *alcùni buòni vïni*, ‘I have a good wine, or ‘some good wines.’ Thus,

GRÁNDI BÉSTIE,	great beasts ;
VIE AMPÍSSIME,	very extensive walks ;
DI BÉLLI GIOIÉLLI,	[of] beautiful jewels ;
DI BUÒNE MERÉNDE,	[of] good luncheons ;
DÉLLE CANZÓNI, e DÈ’ SONÉTTI,	[of the] songs and [of the] sonnets ;

DÉGLI amici, e DÉ' servidóri,	some [of the] friends, and some [of the] servants ;
ÚNA lor sorélla,	a sister of theirs ;
ALCÚNI suói vicini,	some of his neighbours.

## EXAMPLES.

GRÁNDI BÉSTIE hánno né' lóro bóschí. (Dav. Ann.)	They have great beasts in their woods.
Ésso avéa víe ampíssime. (Bocc.)	It had very extensive walks.
Io ho di bélli gioiéli. (Bocc.)	I have beautiful jewels.
Avévan da lui di buóne me- rénde. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)	They had from him good lun- cheons.
Cominciò a fare délle can- zóni, e dé' sonétti. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 3.)	He began to write songs and sonnets.
Fátti prestaménte chiamáre. DÉGLI AMÍCI, E DÉ' SERVIDÓRI, (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)	Having caused some friends and some servants immediately to be called.
Avévano úna lor sorélla, chiamáta Lisabétta. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)	They had a sister of theirs, called Elizabeth.
Trovóllo con alcúni suói vicí- ni. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 8.)	He found him with some of his neighbours.

The English make use of the *article* before an *ordinal number* joined to a *proper name* ; as, *Leo THE Tenth*, &c. ; before a *noun in apposition*, or immediately following another, of which it expresses a *quality* ; as, *Mr. Grant, THE son of John*, &c. ; also in speaking of *quotations*, or of the *division* of a book ; *book THE first, chapter THE second*, &c. : in Italian, however, the *article* is *suppressed* ; as,

il cardinale Richelieu, primo ministaro di Luigi Decimo- térzo,	cardinal Richelieu, THE prime minister of Louis THE Thir- teenth ;
---	--

*giornata nona, novella ottava,* the ninth day, novel the eighth.

In speaking of *buying* and *selling* any thing, the English article *a* or *an*, used with nouns of *number*, *measure*, or *weight*, is expressed in Italian by the articles *il, lo, la* ; as,

*il frumento si vendeva ad ottanta lire* the wheat was sold at eighty  
*IL móggio,* livres  $\Delta$  bushel.

The same article, *a* or *an*, in Italian is *suppressed* :

First, after the verbs *to be*, *to become*, with a noun expressing the *country*, *profession*, *dignity*, or any other *quality* of the *subject* of the verb ; as,

<i>Vittorio Siri, Italiano,</i>	Vittorio Siri, $\Delta$ N Italian;
<i>fu poeta,</i>	I was $\Delta$ poet ;
<i>sarà capitano,</i>	you will be $\Delta$ captain ;
<i>diverrà cardinale,</i>	he will become $\Delta$ cardinal.

Secondly, with a noun of the same kind after the verbs *to make*, *to create*, *to appoint*, *to elect*, *to choose*, *to declare*, *to proclaim*, whatever may be the *subject* of the verb ; as,

<i>fècelo marescalco,</i>	he made him $\Delta$ marshal ;
<i>lo dichiarò matto,</i>	she declared him $\Delta$ madman.

Thirdly, before a noun in *apposition*, or *qualifying* another which *precedes* it ; as,

<i>il Tamigi, fiume d' Inghilterra,</i>	the Thames, $\Delta$ river in England.
---	--

Fourthly, before the *title* of a *work* ; as,

<i>discorso di Luigi Guicciardini,</i>	$\Delta$ discourse of Luigi Guicciardini.
--	---

## EXAMPLES.

<b>IL CARDINALE RICHELIEU,</b>	Cardinal Richelieu, the prime
<b>PRIMO MINISTRO DI LUIGI DECIMOTERZO.</b> (Den. Letter.)	minister of Louis the Thirteenth.

GIORNATA NONA, NOVELLA OTTAVA. (Bocc.)      The ninth day, novel the eighth.

*Fissò la mèta del pàne al prezzo che il pàne avrèbbe avùto, se il frumànto si fùsse vendùto a lire trentatrè il móggio; e si vendèva fino ad ottàntà.* (Manz. Prom. Spos.)      He fixed the price of bread, as if the wheat were sold at thirty-three livres a bushel; and it was selling as high as eighty.

VITTÓRIO SÍRI, ITALIANO, fu storiógráfo della córte di Frància. (Den. Letter.)      Vittorio Siri, an Italian, was historian to the court of France.

POÉTA VÍI, e contái di quel giústo — Figliuól d' Anchise, che venne da Tróia. (Dant. Inf. 1.)      I was a poet, and sang of that just son of Anchises, who came from Troy.

*In luógo di quello che mórtó era, il sostitùt, e vécelo suo MALISCÁLCO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)      He substituted him for the one who had died, and made him his marshal.

SUL TAMÍGI, FIUME D' INGHILTÉRA. (Bocc. Com. Dant.)      On the Thames, a river in England.

DISCÓRISO DI LUIGI GUICCIARDINI ái magistráti. (Mach.)      A discourse of Luigi Guiccardini to the magistrates.

---

### EXERCISE XXX.

The good, which man can derive from a thing,  
*giovaménto,      úmo potère cavár      còsa,*  
 consists either in (the) its utility, or (in the) pleasure.  
*consistere      —      útile,      piacere.*

He advised the king to wish for peace, and not war.  
 — *Confortàre      re      volère —      páce,      guérva.*

I know (of) many fine things, and (of) beautiful little-  
*sapère      mólto bello còsa,      bello can-*  
 songs, and I | wish | to tell thee one\* of them.  
*zòne,      —      vó'      d'ère<sup>2</sup>      '      4      3.*

---

\* One, in the feminine gender.

The queen having turned (*herself*) to Filomena, or-  
*regina* — *tornára* — *in-*  
 dered her | to | continue. Now you say, that if,  
*pórra*<sup>2</sup> | <sup>1</sup> | *seguitáre*. <sup>2</sup> *díre*<sup>1</sup>,

| of | all things created for man, the faculty of  
 | *fra* | *tutto* *cósa* *create* — —, — —

speech — (speaking) is that which properly and par-  
 — *parláre*, — *próprio* — *par-*  
 ticularly belongs to — (is for) man, speaking | may  
*ficóláre* — — *uómo*, *parláre* | *si*  
 be said | with reason to be an excellent thing.  
*può* *dír* | *ragióne* — — — *óttimo*<sup>2</sup> *cósa*<sup>1</sup>.

And being asked by her (*of*) the reason — (why), he  
 — *domandáre* — — — — —

related to her | word for word | his whole dream.  
*raccontáre*<sup>2</sup> | <sup>2</sup> | *ordinataménte*<sup>1</sup> | — *sógno*.

I | can | not say how, nor if the effect is true; but  
 — | *so*<sup>2</sup> | <sup>1</sup> *díre* , *effétto* *véro* ;

I believe it for certain. I hope, (*that*) you will  
*crédere*<sup>2</sup> | <sup>1</sup> *cérto*. — *Speráre*,

not permit, that I, for | the great | love I bear  
*sofferíre*, , | *tánto e tále* | *amóre* — —

you, should receive death | as | a reward. It ap-  
 —, *ricévere*<sup>2</sup> *mórté*<sup>1</sup> | *per* | — *guiderdóne*. — *pa-*  
 peared to him, that he gave away, now to one,  
*rére*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>, <sup>2</sup> *éssó*<sup>4</sup> *donáre*<sup>12</sup>, <sup>6</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>7</sup>,

and then — (now) to another, castles, cities, and  
<sup>8</sup> — <sup>9</sup> <sup>10</sup> <sup>11</sup>, *castélló*, *cittá*,

baronies. We have arms, men, and | well-fortified |  
*baronía*. *arme*, *uómo*, | *ben muniti* |

quarters, and provisions for a long war. Speak to  
*alloggiáméto*, *vettuáglia* — *lúngo guérra*. *Ricordáre* —

him of past and present things, and of new fears.  
 — *passáto*<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> *présénte*<sup>4</sup> *cósa*<sup>1</sup>, <sup>5</sup> — *nuóvo*<sup>7</sup> *paúra*<sup>6</sup>.

Weakness, fear, melancholy, and ignorance are the  
*Debolézza*, *timóre*, *malinconía*, *ignoránza*



sources of superstition. The Romans were inured  
*sergente superstizione. Romano assuefare*

to hardship, fatigue, and a military life. Italy is  
*disaggio, fatica, — militare<sup>2</sup> vita<sup>1</sup>. Italia*

situated between two seas. Cane della Scala was  
*situata mare.*

one of the greatest lords, that from the time of  
*pes notabile signore,*

the emperor Frederic the Second | to this | | has  
*— imperadore Federigo in qua | | si*

been known | in Italy. The Tiber washes a great  
*sapesse | Italia. Tevere bagnare — gran*

portion of the state | of the Pope |. King Charles  
*parte Stato | Pontificio |. Re Carlo*

died, when (the) his son | was | still in Burgundy  
*morire, — <sup>3</sup> — figliuolo<sup>4</sup> essendo<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> Borgogna*

| under the care of | the Duke Philip. The Arno  
*| appresso a | Duca Filippo. <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup>*

separates it,\* which, as you know, flows from east  
*dividere<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>, — sapere, correre oriente*

to west. Rinieri king of Cyprus. Three young  
*ponente. re Cipro. gio-*

men love three sisters, and elope (themselves) with  
*vano amare sorella, fuggire<sup>4</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup>*

them to Crete. I see Fracastoro, Bovazzano, Trifon  
*Elleno<sup>2</sup> Créta. vedere*

Gabriel, and farther on — (more far) I see Tasso.  
*— — <sup>2</sup> lontano<sup>2</sup> — — <sup>1</sup>.*

The Greeks attributed them to their Gods, and to  
*Gréco attribuire<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> Iddio,*

those who performed those great deeds, which are  
*colui fare gran cosa,*

recorded of Hercules and Theseus, of Hector and  
*scrivere Ercole Teséo, Ettore*

\* R, in the feminine gender.

Achilles. He has thy sister for his wife. Thou wilt  
*Achille. sorélla — móglie. — Rì-*

remember (thyself) | to | tell to thy father, that thy  
*cordáre. — di | díre pádre,*

children, and his and my nephews, are not descendants  
*figliuólo, nepóte, 2 1 nascere<sup>b</sup>*

| on their mother's side | | of | a paltry-fellow. She  
*per<sup>3</sup> mádre<sup>4</sup> | | da | — paltoniére. —*

made (to) her brother, and (to) her sisters, and (to)  
*Fáre fratélló, sorélla,*

every other person, believe, that by the power of de-  
*persóna, crédere, — indozzaménto de-*

mons this had appeared to them. Have you heard  
*mónio éssere accadere<sup>3</sup> 1. — udire*

how your good brother-in-law treats your sister. This  
*buóno cognáto trattáre 2 sorélla<sup>1</sup>.*

is my master. Without preserving faith to his friend  
*signóre. serbáre fède<sup>3</sup> 1 2 amíco<sup>3</sup>*

and to his master. Gentlemen, it is well to taste  
*4 5 6 signóre<sup>7</sup>. Signóre, égli buóno — —*

— (that we should taste) (some of) the wine of this  
*assaggiáre víno*

able man. Shall I tell it to the master or to  
*valent' úmo. — díre<sup>3</sup> 1 signóre*

the mistress? O, my Lord, when shall I ever  
*signóra? O, 2 1, quándo<sup>3</sup> — ever<sup>3</sup>*

be happy? A treatise | on | painting and | on |  
*4 liétó? Trattáto | di | pittúra | di |*

sculpture | by | Leon-Battista Alberti. Guided by —  
*scultúra | di | — —*

(with the guidance of) Ulamane, a Persian. Having  
*guída, Persiáno.*

left Tauris, a royal city. In the times of the  
*abbandonáre Táuride, redde<sup>3</sup> città<sup>1</sup>. t'empo*

emperor Frederic the Second. Under the pontificate  
*imperátóre Federigo pontificáto*

of Pope Clement the Seventh. Tasso, Jerusalem  
*Pápa Clemente* , *Gerusaléme*  
 Delivered, Canto the fourth, stanza the third, the  
*Liberáta,* , ,  
 first verse.  
 ' verso<sup>1</sup>.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### POSITION OF ADJECTIVES.

ADJECTIVES in Italian, as we have already observed at pp. 390 and 393, may be *placed* either *before* or *after* the *substantives*, which they are to qualify ; as,

NUOVA sposa, }	[new spouse] bride ;
sposa NUOVA, }	
vini BUONI,	good wines ;
BUONE vivande,	good meats.

The adjective is often separated from its substantive by another word ; as,

un monastéro di donne assái FAMÓSO,	a convent of nuns very much renowned ;
dúe cose mólto ái miéi costúmi CONTRÁRIE,	two things very much contrary to my habits.

---

There are, however, *some* adjectives which are to be *placed after* their substantives, and *others* which are to be *placed before* them ; as,

féra CRUDÉLE,	cruel monster ;
inclinazione BISBÉTICA,	extravagant disposition ;
BÉGLI ócchi,	beautiful eyes ;
GRAN mále,	great evil.

Adjectives of *nations* ; adjectives expressing *taste*, *smell*, or *hearing* ; denoting *shape* or *form* ; expressing *colors*,\* the *state* of the *elements*, and *physical* or *mental qualities* ; adjectives that may be *used as substantives* ; that are *formed of participles* ; that *govern*, or are *connected with*, any other part of *speech* ; are to be *placed after* the *substantives* ; as,

<i>ábilo</i> ARABÉSCO,	Arabian dress ;
<i>favélla</i> LATÍNA,	Latin tongue ;
<i>vino</i> DÓLCE,	sweet wine ;
<i>érbe</i> ODORÍFERE,	sweet herbs ;
<i>vóci</i> SOÁVI,	sweet voices ;
<i>tórri</i> RITÓNDE,	round towers ;
<i>rosái</i> BIÁNCI,	white rose-bushes ;
<i>témpo</i> TEMPESTÓSO,	stormy weather ;
<i>vécchio</i> INFERMÍCCIO,	siekly old man ;
<i>persóne</i> DÓTTE,	wise persons ;
[ <i>un</i> góbbó], <i>sárto</i> GÓBBO,	[ <i>a hunchback</i> ], a hunchbacked tailor ;
[ <i>accésso</i> , <i>da</i> <i>accéndere</i> ], <i>lám-</i> <i>pada</i> ACCÉSA,	[ <i>lighted</i> , from <i>to light</i> ], a light- ed lamp ;
<i>tázze</i> PIÉNE di <i>vino</i> ,	cups filled with wine :

To which may be added the *following* adjectives, which, *generally*, are put *after* the *substantives* ; viz.

<i>lángo</i> ,	long ;	<i>lánguido</i> ,	languid ;
<i>córtó</i> ,	short ;	<i>importúno</i> ,	importunate ;
<i>pigro</i> ,	lazy ;	<i>vizióso</i> ,	vicious ;
<i>lénto</i> ,	slow ;	<i>virtuóso</i> ,	virtuous ;
<i>néutro</i> ,	neuter ;	<i>pauróso</i> ,	fearful ;
<i>intióro</i> ,	entire ;	<i>coraggióso</i> ,	courageous :

\* Instances are found, notwithstanding, among the poets, in which adjectives of *colors* are put before the substantives ; as,

*Cald diritte sópra 'l ver'de sma'lto,—  
Né far mostráti gii spíríti mágni.* (Dant.  
Inf. 4.)

There on the green enamel [verdure]  
were soon shown me the great spirits.

*L' ésser covérto pói di bia'nonne piu'-  
me.* (Petr. c. 4.)

To be then covered with white feathers.

And adjectives ending in *ele*, and *ile* ; as,

CRUDELE, cruel ; | CIVILE, civil.

*Numeral* adjectives, both *cardinal* and *ordinal*, and the adjective pronouns *questo*, 'this' ; *quello*, 'that' ; *cotesto* or *codesto*, 'that near you' ; are to be *placed before* the substantives ; as,

DUE anni,	two years ;
OTTO miglia,	eight miles ;
il TERZO giorno,	the third day ;
la SETTIMA cosa,	the seventh thing ;
QUESTO castello,	this castle ;
QUELL' anno,	that year ;
COTESTE lagrime,	those tears.

#### EXCEPT

When the *ordinal* numeral adjectives are *joined* to a *proper name*, or are *used* in speaking of the *division* of a *work* ; in which case they are *put after* the substantives ; \* as,

Urbano OTTAVO, LEONE DÉ- CIMO,	Urban the Eighth ; Leo the Tenth ;
parte PRIMA, canzone QUARTA,	part the first ; song the fourth :

And the *cardinal* numeral adjectives *ventuno*, 'twenty-one' ; *trentuno*, 'thirty-one' ; *quarantuno*, 'forty-one' ; &c. ; which may be put either *before* or *after* the substantives.

*Numeral adjectives*, as we have already observed at p. 403, agree with their *substantives* in *gender* and *number*. Now, by a peculiarity of language, if the numeral adjectives *ventuno*, *trentuno*, &c., *precede* the *substantive*, this substantive is put in the *singular* ; but if the

\* But, when, in speaking of books, the article is used, we find them, in good writers, both *before* and *after* the substantives ; as,

NEL VENTESIMO CANTO del Purgatorio, egli ricorda la genealogia de' Capetangi. (Fosco.)

Machiavelli, nel LIBRO PRIMO delle Istorie Fiorentine. (Don.)

In the twentieth canto of the Purgatory, he [Dante] traces the genealogy of the Capets.

Machiavel, in the first book of the History of Florence.

numeral adjectives *follow* the *substantive*, then the substantive is put in the *plural*; as,

novantúna ruóta,                      ninety-one circles ;  
 ánni ventúno,                         twenty-one years.

If there is any other *word* connected with the substantive, and this word *precedes* the adjectives *ventúno*, &c., it is put in the *plural*, though the substantive following the adjectives be in the singular; but, if the word *follows* the adjectives, it is put in the *plural* if it comes *after* the *substantive*, and in the *singular* if it comes *before*; as,

áltre novantúna ruóta,                ninety-one circles more ;  
 ánni trentúno intéri,                 thirty-one whole years ;  
 ventúna piccòla stélla, vicin-      twenty-one small stars, very near  
 ísime tra di lóro,\*                     to each other.

To which may be added the *following* adjectives, which, *generally*, are put *before* the substantives; viz.

-buóno,	good ;		béllu,	{ handsome,
cattívo,	bad ;			
gránde,	great ;		brútto,	ugly, bad ;
picciòlo or	{ small ;		ricco,	rich ;
piccòlo,			póvero,	poor.

There are some adjectives which may be placed either before or after the substantives, but whose *posi-*

\* This usage may appear contrary to reason; but it is to be observed that these and similar expressions are elliptical and stand for,— A'LTRE NOVA'NTA ruóta, e U'NA ruóta, 'ninety circles and one circle more'; VE'NTI piccòle stélla, ed U'NA piccòla sté'LLA, tótte VICINÍSSIME TRA DI LÓRO, 'twenty small stars, and one small star, all very near to each other'; &c., which sentences were first abbreviated into,— A'LTRE NOVA'NTA, e U'NA ruóta, 'ninety and one circle more': VE'NTI ed U'NA piccòla sté'LLA, VICINÍSSIME, &c., 'twenty and one small stars, very near, &c.' and afterwards into,— A'LTRE NOVANTU'NA ruóta; — VENTU'NA piccòla sté'LLA, VICINÍSSIME, &c.

Notwithstanding this, there are instances of some writers using the *substantive* in the plural, even when preceded by the numeral adjectives *ventúno*, &c.; as,

*Enéa, ed Ascánio, suo figliuolo, e tótte sua génte DE' LLE VENTU'NA NA'VI, la ditta reína accòlles con gránde onóre.* (Vill.)

*Æneas, and Ascanius his son, and all the crews of the twenty-one ships, were received by the said queen with great honors.*

*Trovavéte l' Ópera dell' Alessándro nell' l'ndio piú còrta di quéllo, che finóra è státo, di 561 ve'ssi.* (Metast. lett.)

You will find the Opera of *Alexander* in *India* 561 lines shorter, than it has been hitherto.

tion affects the signification ; as, *galante, gentile, sólo, certo, doppio, semplice*. Thus,

<i>UN GALANT' uomo,</i>	a good, an honorable man ;
<i>UN UOMO GALANTE,</i>	a courteous, a galant man ;
<i>UN GENTIL' uomo,</i>	a gentleman, a nobleman ;
<i>UN UOMO GENTILE,</i>	a civil, gentle, courteous, kind man ;
<i>UN SÓLO uomo,</i>	a single man [one only] ;
<i>UN UOMO SÓLO,</i>	a single man [not married, without family] ;
<i>UNA CERTA notizia,</i>	certain [not well ascertained] news ;
<i>UNA notizia CERTA,</i>	certain [undoubted] news ;
<i>UN DÓPPIO amico,</i>	a double friend [two or equal to two friends] ;
<i>UN amico DÓPPIO,</i>	a double [false] friend ;
<i>UN SÉMPlice contadino,</i>	a single [no more than one] countryman ;
<i>UN contadino SÉMPlice,</i>	a simple [inexperienced] countryman.

Two or more adjectives, qualifying the same substantive, may be placed before or after the substantive ; as,

<i>VÁRIE e DIVERSE novità,</i>	various and different new things ;
<i>con panni LÁRGI e LÚNGHI,</i>	with garments full and long,
<i>e vóci ÚMILI e MANSUÉTE,</i>	and language humble and meek.

Sometimes they are separated by putting one of them before and the other or others after the substantives, which adds grace and elegance to the phrase ; as,

<i>NÓBILE giovane e BÉLLA,</i>	a noble and beautiful young woman ;
<i>NÓBILI vestiméti e RÍCCHI,</i>	rich and elegant clothes.

## EXAMPLES.

*Dì da mia parte àlla NUOVA SPOSA, che nelle mie contrade s' usa, quando alcun forestiere mangia al convito della SPOSA NUOVA . . . .* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

*Ma l' ora del mangiàre venuta, l' abate e tutti gli altri e di BUONE VIVANDE e di VINI BUONI serviti furono.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

*In queste nostre contrade fu, ed è ancora, UN MONASTERO DI DONNE ASSAI FAMOSO di santità.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

*Mi converrà far DUE COSE MOLTO AI MIEI COSTUMI CONTRARIE.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

*Cerberus, FIERA CRUDELE e diversa, — Con tre gola caninamente lura — Sgora la gente, che quivi è sommersa.* (Dant. Inf. 6.)

*Gli storpiati capricci della sua naturale INCLINAZIONE BISBETICA.* (Alleg. 157.)

*El' è de' suoi BEGLI OCCHI veder vaga.* (Dant. Purg. 27.)

*Questo è dunque il GRAN MALE, il GRAN peccato, il GRAN fatto adoperato da Gisippo?* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

*L' abate, con tutto che egli in ABITO ARABESCO fosse, dopo alquanto il raffigurò.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

*La giovane udendo la FAVELLA LATINA, dubitò, non forse altro vento l' avesse a Lapari ritornata.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

*L' uve troppo mature fanno il vino più DOLCE, ma meno potente.* (Gr. 4. 22.)

Tell the bride from me, that it is a custom in my country, when any foreigner goes to the banquet of the bride . . . .

But when the hour of dinner was come, the abbot and all the others were helped to good meats and good wines.

In this neighbourhood of ours there was, and there is still, a convent of nuns very much renowned for sanctity.

I shall be obliged to do two things very much contrary to my habits.

Cerberus, cruel and strange monster, through his threefold throat barks as a dog over the multitude which is immersed there.

The lame caprices of his natural extravagant disposition.

She is charmed to behold [in the glass] her beautiful eyes.

Is this, then, the great evil, the great sin, the great crime committed by Gisippus?

Although he had on an Arabian dress, the abbot soon recognised him.

The young woman, hearing the Latin [Italian] tongue, feared, lest a contrary wind had brought her back to Lapari.

Grapes, when too ripe, make more sweet wine, but less powerful.



*Molti andavano attorno, portando nelle mani, chi fiori, chi ERBE ODORIFERE, e chi diverse maniere di spezierie.* (Bocc. Intr.)

*Parlavan rado con voci soavi.* (Dant. Inf. 4.)

*Sopra le mura della città edificò TORRI RITONDE molto spesse.* (Gio. Vill. l. 1. c. 38.)

*I lati delle quadi vie, tutti di ROSAI BIANCHI e vermigli, e di gelsomini erano chiusi.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

*Con essa surse un TEMPO fierissimo e TEMPESTOSO.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

*Io non vorrèi, che noi pigliassimo un granchio, e ch'è fosse qualche VECCHIO debole o INFERMICCIO.* (Mach. Mandr. 4. 9.)

*Ma dopo se fa le PERSONE DOTTE.* (Dant. Pur. 22.)

*Costui fu uno de' più infami mostri di quella corte, allievo di un SARTO GOBBO.* (Dav. Ann. 15.)

*Nelle mani le si ponga una LAMPADA ACCESA.* (AND. Car. lett.)

*Con alcune TAZZE in mano PIENE DI VINO.* (Car. lett.)

*La VESTA, chi vuol che sia LUNGA fino á' piedi, chi CORTA fino alle ginocchia.* (Car. lett.)

*Del lungo odio CIVIL ti pregan fine.* (Petr. c. 41.)

*Nel detto anno si cominciò, e fu DUE ANNI seguenti, grande care di grano in Firenze.* (Gio. Vill.)

Many went about carrying in their hands, some, flowers, some, sweet herbs, and others, different kinds of spices.

They spoke seldom, but their words were sweet.

Upon the walls of the city he built round towers very frequent.

The sides of which ways were all lined with white and red rose-bushes, and jasmine.

With it [the night] arose stormy and very severe weather.

I should not wish, that we make a mistake, and that he is some feeble and sickly old man.

But make the persons, that follow them, wise.

This one was one of the most infamous monsters in that court, and a pupil of a hunchbacked tailor.

Let a lighted lamp be put into her hands.

Holding some cups filled with wine.

As for her dress, some will have it to reach to her feet, others to her knees.

They beg that you will put an end to the long civil hatred.

In the said year, began in Florence a great scarcity of corn, which lasted for the two following years.

*E QUÉSTO CASTÉLLO pòsto pro-  
pinqúo a Fírénze ad ótto míglia.  
(Mach. Stor.)*

This castle is situated eight miles from Florence.

*Quási tútti, infra il TÈRZO  
GIÓRNO, mórtuano. (Bocc. Intr.)*

Almost all died within the third day.

*LA SÈTTIMA CÒSA che c' indúce  
a far peniténza, è . . . . (Pass.)*

The seventh thing which induces us to do penance, is . . . .

*Le víti facévano gran vista di  
dovère QUELL' ANNO assái úve  
fàre. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)*

The vines seemed as if they would produce an abundance of grapes that year.

*Al quále la dónna disse: "Tan-  
crédi, sérba COTÈSTE LÁGRIME a  
méno desideráta fórtuna." (Bocc.  
g. 4. n. 1.)*

To whom the lady said: "Tancred, save those tears against worse fortune than this."

*I pittóri, gli scultóri, e gli  
architètti del tèmpo di Páolo  
QUÍNTO, e di URBÁNO OTTÁVO,  
non cedévano quási per áltro ri-  
guárdo a quelli che víssero sótto  
LEÓNE DÉCIMO, e Páolo TÈRZO,  
fuorché nel mérito di avère apér-  
ta e disegnáta la stráda. (Den.  
Riv. Ital. 1. 28. c. 12.)*

The painters, the sculptors, and the architects of the times of Paul the Fifth and Urban the Eighth, were not inferior, perhaps, to those who lived under Leo the Tenth, and Paul the third, in any other respect than the merit of having opened and marked the way.

*Petrárca, PARTE PRÍMA, CAN-  
ZÓNE QUÁRTA. (CIUS.)*

Petrarch, part the first, song the fourth.

*Pòl per la medésima vía páre  
descéndere ÁLTRE NOVANTÚNA  
RUÓTA. (Dant. Conv.)*

Then he seemed to descend ninety-one more circles by the same way.

*Ténnemi amór ÁNNI VENTÚNO  
ardéndo. (Petr. s. 312.)*

Love kept me in a flame twenty-one years.

*Canlándo ÁNNI TRENTÚNO IN-  
TÈRI spési. (Petr.)*

I consumed thirty-one years in the study of the Muses.

*La nubilósa d' Oriónè gli ap-  
parí formáta da VENTÚNA PIC-  
COLA STÉLLA, VICINÍSSIME TRA  
DI LÓRO. (Tris. Elog. Galil.)*

The nebula of Orion showed itself to him to be formed of twenty-one small stars, very near to each other.

*Il Signór Giovánni Corvino  
richi déa d' ésser fáto GENTÍLE  
UÓMO Viniziáno. (Bemb. Stor. 4.)*

Mr. John Corvino, asked to be made a Venetian nobleman.

*DÓNNA è GENTÍL nel ciel, che  
si compíange — Di quésto im-  
pediméto.*

There is a courteous lady in Heaven who mourns this hindrance.

*Avendo sèco Tancredi VARIE E DIVERSE NOVITÀ pensate.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Tancred having revolved in his mind various and different new things.

*Il quale ampia materia mi presta a dimostrare quanta e quale sia la ipocresia de' religiosi, cò' panni larghi e lunghi, e cò' visi artificialmente pallidi, e còlle voci umili e mansuete nel domandar l' altrui.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

Which [proverb] affords me ample matter to show how great is the hypocrisy of the religious, who have garments full and long, and faces made pale artificially, and language humble and meek for the purpose of getting men's property from them.

*Ormida, stato in lungo trattato di dover torre per moglie una nobile giovane e bella, chiamata Cassandra.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Ormida, who had been long talked of as about to marry a noble and beautiful young woman, called Cassandra.

*Maestro Mazzeo, avendo presa per moglie una bella e gentil giovane, di nobili vestimenti e ricchi la teneva fornita.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

Master Mazzeo, having married a beautiful and noble woman, kept her well provided with rich and elegant clothes.

---

### EXERCISE XXXI.

There was once — (one time) a man of a beneficent heart. This courtier had the misfortune —  
 — *Essere* — *vólta* *uòmo* *be-*  
*néfico*<sup>2</sup> *cubre*<sup>1</sup>. *cortigiano*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *misfortune* —  
 (bad fortune) of losing the favor — (falling in dis-  
*fortuna* — — — *cadere* *dis-*  
 grace) of his master. The astrologer of the Caliph,  
*grázia* *signóre.* *astrologo* *Califo,*  
 after various observations, said. I have been writing  
*vário* *osservazione,* *dire.* — — —  
 so long — (it is so long that I write), that my  
 — — — *témpo* *scrivere,*  
 hand | ought to be | accustomed to it. The affairs  
*máno* | *dovrebbe essere* | *avvezza*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>. *affairs*  
*cóse*<sup>2</sup>

of the Lombards being prosperous. No<sup>\*</sup> sinful woman  
*Lombardo<sup>s</sup>                      prospero.                      réo femmina*

was ever more deserving (of) the fire than I — (as  
*—                      dégn<sup>o</sup>                      fuóco<sup>s</sup> — —*

I should be). People really pious, are wise. Although  
*Persona véro                      pio,                      sávio.*

he had a very long beard — (the beard great).  
*—                      —                      —                      barba grande.*

Having, | from | a very rich and great merchant,  
*Essere,                      di                      ricco                      gran mercatante,*

become a nobleman. He showed to him a noble-  
*divenire<sup>s</sup>                      cavaliere<sup>s</sup>.                      —                      Mostrare.                      cava-*

man, called Philip Argenti, a man large and robust,  
*liere, chiamare Filippo                      ,                      uom grande nerboruto,*

and very disdainful, irascible, and passionate. She  
*forte sdegnoso,                      iracóndo,                      bizzarro.                      —*

| is to hold | | her | hands up, and | in | (the) one  
*Tenga                      |                      la                      máno álto,                      |                      da                      |*

hand a white child asleep — (that sleeps), | to |  
*—                      bíanco fanciullo                      —                      dormire,                      per |*

represent sleep; | in | the other a black one; seemingly  
*significare sonno;                      |                      da                      néro                      —*

asleep — (that seems to be asleep), | to represent |  
*—                      parere — — dormire,                      significá*

death. Immediately he collected a large, fine, and  
*mórté.                      Préstó                      —                      congregare grande, bello,*

powerful army. Some (of the) cherries are sweet,  
*poderoso óste.                      certo<sup>s</sup>                      (of the)                      ciriegia<sup>s</sup>                      dolce,*

and some sour. I have many valuable precious stones.  
*—                      certo ágro.                      mólto ricco prezioso pietra.*

The Pope had kept in the college of Pisa — (Pisan  
*Pápa<sup>s</sup>                      tenere                      —                      —                      Pisano*

college), to learn Divine letters, Raphael of Riario,  
*stúdio,                      imparare Pontificio lettera, Raffaello*

a nephew of Count Jerome. The first and most  
*nipóte                      of                      Cónte                      Girólamo.*

\* No, for no one.

† One, for another.

essential advantage, which | ought to have been de-  
*essenziale frutto,* | *si* *dovèta*<sup>6</sup> *ricavare*<sup>7</sup>  
 rived | | from | the new studies, was the knowledge  
*di*<sup>1</sup> | <sup>2</sup> *nuovo*<sup>3</sup> *studio*<sup>4</sup>, *cognizione*  
 of the ancient Latin and Greek authors. The Academy  
*antico Latino* *Gréco autóra.* *Accadéssia*  
 of (the) Inscriptions and Belles Lettres is posterior  
*Inscrizione* *Bélla Léttera* *posterióra*  
 to the Florentine Academy, and that of the Crusca.  
*Fiorentino Accadéssia,* —  
 Lulli was the father and creator of the French music.  
*pádre* *creatóre* *Francése música.*  
 A certain kind and charitable little-woman. Com-  
*cérto compassionévole* *caritativo* *dónna.* *Com-*  
 punition does a great good, and renders man humble,  
*punzióne fáre* *gran béne,* *réndere úomo úmíle,*  
 and charitable. He was tall, and of very pleasing  
*caritativo.* *gránde,* *piacévole*  
 and graceful deportment, and (a young man) of a middle  
*grazíoso maníera,* *gíovane* *mézzo*  
 age. (The) their conversation\* having been long, and  
*età.* <sup>2</sup> *ragionaménto*<sup>4</sup> <sup>3</sup> *lungo,*  
 the heat excessive. Giving her to eat some roots  
*cáldo gránde.* *Dáre,* *da mangiáre* *radíce*  
 of herbs, and wild fruits, and dates.  
*érba,* *erbálico púmo,* *dáttero.*

---

\* Conversation in the plural.

## CHAPTER VI.

## USE AND POSITION OF CERTAIN PRONOUNS.

## PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

ITALIAN *personal pronouns*, as it has been already mentioned at pp. 105, 164, 165, when they form the *subject* of the verb *may be either expressed or understood*; as,

Io vidi un' arca non tróppo grande, I saw a good-sized chest ;

Marsilia, come voi sapéte, è antica e nobilissima città, Marseilles, as you know, is an ancient and famous city :

Nè a negáre, nè a pregáre [io] son dispósta, I am neither inclined to deny, nor to pray ;

il che lietamente [voi] comporteréte, which thing you will take in good part.

When personal pronouns are expressed, they are *generally put before* the verb ; but they *may also be placed after* it ; as,

Égli arca l' anello assái caro, he held the ring very dear :

Nè vóglío [io] qui tralasciár di dire úna cosa, nor do I wish to omit saying one thing.

When, however, a *command* is given, or a *question* is asked, or when, in *narrations*, the *sayings* or *doings* of a person are *mentioned*, the pronouns are *always put after* the verb ; as,

mángi [ÉGLI] del suo, s' egli ne ha, let him eat of his own property, if he has any.

che vái [TU] facéndo per questa contráda ? what art thou doing in this street ?

" dímmi il perchè, díss" io, "tell me the cause," said I.

io non piangéva ; piangévan ÉLLI, I wept not ; they wept.

When personal pronouns are *preceded* by the adverbs *cóme*, *siccóme*, 'as'; *quánto*, 'so much', 'as'; they are put in the *objective*; and consequently *io*, 'I'; *tu*, 'thou'; *égli*, 'he'; *élla*, 'she'; *églino*, *élleno*, 'they'; are changed into *me*, 'me'; *te*, 'thee'; *lúi*, 'him'; *léi*, 'her'; *lóro*, 'them'; if the *verb* of which they are *subjects* is *not expressed*; — but they remain in the *subjective*, and are never changed, if the *verb* of which they are *subjects* is *expressed*; as,

*erano siccómé lúi maliziósi*, they were as malicious as he ;  
*quánto me, puòte éssere al-* any one may be as afflicted as  
*cún dolénte,* I :

*Se io fossi nélla via cóme è* If I were in the street as he  
*égli,* is ;

*se égli fosse in dèssa cóme* if he were within the house as  
*sóno io,* I am.

When two of these pronouns come, *one before*, and the *other after*, the verb *éssere*, 'to be'; or *crédere*, 'to believe'; and these verbs imply an *idea of transmutation* from one to the other of the two pronouns; that which *precedes* the verb, is put in the *subjective*, and that which *follows* it, is put in the *objective*; as,

*credéndo, ch' io fossi te,* believing me to be thee ;  
*maraviglióssi, che [égli]* wondered much that he should  
*fósse credúto lúi,* be taken for him.

If the pronouns *io*, *tu*, *égli*, *élla*, *églino*, *élleno* occur with an *infinitive*, and this *infinitive follows* the pronouns, the pronouns are put in the *objective*; but if the *infinitive precedes* the pronouns, the pronouns remain in the *subjective*; as,

*udéndo lúi con gli álti éss-* hearing that he and his com-  
*ser mórtó,* panions were dead ;  
*conoscéndo léi non éssere* knowing that she was not of a  
*dí buón legnággio,* good condition :

*Non bastándogli d' ésser* He not being satisfied with  
*ÉGLI divenuto ricchissimo,* having become very rich ;  
*dispòse di ANDÀRE ÉLLA me-* she determined to go herself  
*désima per éssò,* after him.

## EXAMPLES.

*Madónna, io vÍDI quÉsta séra* Madam, I saw late in the even-  
*al tÁrDI UN' ÁRCA NON TRÓPPO* ing a good-sized chest.  
*GRÁNDE. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)*

*MARSÍLIA, CÓME VÓI SAPÉTE,* Marseilles, as you know, is an  
*È in Provénza sópra la marÍna* ancient and famous city in Proven-  
*situÁta, ANTICA E NOBÍLISSIMA* ence, situated on the sea coast.  
*CITTÀ. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)*

*Tancrédi, NÈ A NEGÀRE NÈ A* Tancred, I am neither inclined  
*PREGÀRE SON DISPÓSTA. (Bocc.* to deny nor to pray.  
*g. 4. n. 1.)*

*IL CHE, se sÁvj síete, LIETA-* Which thing, if you be wise,  
*MÉNTE COMPORTERÉTE. (Bocc.* you will take in good part.  
*g. 10. n. 8.)*

*ÉGLI AVÉA L' ANÉLLO ASSÁI* He held the ring very dear, on  
*CÁRO per alcúna virtú, che stÁto* account of some virtue, which  
*gli ÉRA DÁTO ad inténdere, che* they had made him believe it pos-  
*ÉGLI avía. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)* sessed.

*NÈ VÓGLIO QUÌ TRALASCIÁR DI* Nor do I wish to omit mention-  
*DIRE ÚNA CÓSA, la quÁle mi par* ing here one thing, which appears  
*mólto véra. (Bott. Stor. Auer.* to me to be very true.  
*l. 6.)*

*OR MÁNGI DEL SÚO, S' ÉGLI NE* Let him eat of his own prop-  
*HA, che del nóstro non mangerà* erty, if he has any, for he will not  
*ÉGLI. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)* eat of ours.

*O figliuóla, CHE VÁI TU a* Daughter, what art thou doing  
*quest' úra, cosí sóla, FACÉNDÓ PER* in this street, alone, at this hour ?  
*QUÉSTA CONTRÁDA ?*

*"DÍMMI 'L PERCHÈ," DISS' ÍO ;* "Tell me the cause," said I,  
*"per tal convégno, — Che se tu* "on such condition, that if right-  
*a ragión di lui ti piángi, — Sap-* fully thou grievest for him, know-  
*piéndó chi vóI síete, e la súa péc-* ing who you are, and his sins, I  
*ca, — N-el móndo sÚO ancór io te* may repay thee in the world  
*ne cángi." (Dant. Inf. 32.)* above."

*ÍO NON PIANGÉVA, sÌ DÉNTO* I wept not ; so petrified was I  
*impietrái : — PIANGÉVAN ÉLLI ;* within : they wept ; and my little  
*ed Anselmuccio mio — Disse :* Anselm cried : "Thou lookest so,  
*"Tu guárdi sÌ, pádre ! che háí ?"* father ! what ails thee ?"  
*(Dant. Inf. 33.)*



*Costoro, che dall' altra parte  
ERANO SICCOME LUI MALIZIOSI.*  
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 4.)

These, who, on the other side,  
were as malicious as he.

*Sicchè, QUANTO ME, PUOTE ES-  
SERE ALCUN DOLENTE.* (Bocc.  
Filoc.)

So that, anybody may be, as  
afflicted as I.

*Che diréste vói, se io FÓSSI  
NÉLLA VÍA CÔME È ÈGLI, od  
ÈGLI FÓSSE IN CÀSA CÔME SÓNO  
io?*

What would you say if I were  
in the street as he is, or he within  
the house as I am?

*CREDÉNDÓ ESSO, CH' IO FÓSSI  
TE, m' ha con un bastone tutto  
rotto.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.)

Believing me to be thee, he  
has broken all my bones with a  
cudgel.

*MARAVIGLIÓSSI fórte Tedáldo,  
che alcúno in tánto il somigliásse,  
CHE FÓSSE CREDÚTO LUI.* (Bocc.  
g. 3. n. 7.)

Tedaldo wondered much, that  
any one should be so much like  
himself, as to be taken for him.

*La giovane, UDÉNDÓ LUI CON  
GLI ÁLTRI ÉSSER MÓRTO, lunga-  
ménte piánse.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

The young woman, hearing,  
that he and his companions were  
dead, was very much grieved.

*CONOSCÉNDÓ LÉI NON ÉSSERE  
DI LEGNÁGGIO che alla sua no-  
bilitá bene stésse, tutto sdegnóso  
dísse.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)

Knowing that she was of a  
condition that did not well com-  
port with his nobility, he said with  
disdain.

*MA NON BASTÁNDÓGLI D' ES-  
SER ÈGLI é' subí compágni in  
briève tempo DIVENÚTI RICCHÍ-  
SIMI.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2)

But he and his friends not being  
satisfied with their having become  
very rich in a short time.

*Séco DISPÓSE di non mandáre,  
ma D' ANDÁRE ÉLLA MEDÉSIMA  
PER ÉSSO.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

She determined not to send,  
but to go herself after him.

---

#### CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

We observed (p. 109), that *conjunctive pronouns* are used instead of *personal pronouns*, when these pronouns are in the *objective* or in the *relation of attribution*, and are closely connected with a verb, of which they are the *direct* or *indirect regimen*.

This is always the case when there is but *one* personal pronoun in the phrase in the *abovementioned relations*, when the *emphasis* does *not fall* upon this pronoun, and when this pronoun is *not in apposition* with the *subject* of the verb ; as,

MI potéle tórre quánto téngo [for, A ME potéto tórre, &c.],	you can take away from me all I have ;
pietosaménte IL chiamáva [for, chiamáva LÚI],	she called him with a piteous voice ;
CI facéste la béffa [for, A NÓI facéste, &c.],	you should put a trick upon us ;
LE VI donerò [for, A VÓI do- nerò LÓRO],	I will give them to you.

But, if there are *more than one* personal pronoun in the phrase, in the *objective* or in the *relation of attribution* ; if the *emphasis falls* upon the pronouns ; and if the pronouns are in *apposition* with the *subject* of the verb, or in *apposition* with *each other* ; the *conjunctive pronouns* are *not used* and the *personal pronouns retain their places* ; as,

ME non ucciderái tu,	thou shalt not murder <i>me</i> ;
úso dire, che É' sta un áltro ME,	I am wont to say that he is another <i>self</i> ;
potréste vói e ME consolàre,	you might console both your- self and <i>me</i> ;
offèsì ME per non offènder LÓI,	I injured myself not to injure him ;
ne fu, ed A LÉI ed A ME, per péna dato, A LÉI di fug- girmi davánti, ed A ME di seguitàrla,	it was, to both her and <i>me</i> , given as a punishment, to her to flee before <i>me</i> , and to <i>me</i> to pursue her.

Conjunctive pronouns are *commonly* put *before* the verb, but *may* also be placed *after* it. When *before* the verb, they are placed *immediately after* the personal pronouns ; and when *after*, they are, as it has been

already stated at p. 110, always *joined* to the verb, so as to form a *single word*; as,

<i>ègli vi ama,</i>	he loves you;
<i>diédegli la sua benedizióne,</i>	he gave him his benediction;
<i>correranno alle case, e l'averé ci ruberanno,</i>	they will run to our houses, and rob us of our property;
<i>il mandarlo fuór di casa NE SARÉBBE gran biasimo,</i>	to send him out of our house would be in us a great fault;
<i>ajularonmi béne,</i>	they assisted me well;
<i>ètti uscito di mente?</i>	has it escaped thy mind?
<i>mostrócci un' dambra,</i>	he showed us a spirit.

We have already observed (pp. 338 – 340), that *infinitives* and some *other forms* of verbs, when joined to *conjunctive pronouns*, drop their *last vowel*; and that the *consonant* of *conjunctive pronouns* (*gli* only excepted) must be *doubled* when *joined* to those forms of verbs, which either consist of *one syllable*, or end with an *accented vowel*.

When the verb is in the *infinitive*, in the *gerund*, in the *participle*, or in the *imperative* mood,\* the *conjunctive pronouns* are *always* to be put *after* the verb; as,

<i>ricominciò a fargli i maggior piaceri,</i>	she began to do him again the greatest kindnesses;
<i>trovandosi egli una volta a Parigi,</i>	he finding himself once in Paris;
<i>son venuta a ristorarti de' danni avuti,</i>	I am come to make thee some amends for the evils sus- tained;

\* Notwithstanding this rule the following examples may be cited from the classics, in which the conjunctive pronoun is put *before* the imperative:

*Fammi ritornare alla prigione, e queto quanto ti piace mi fa affiggere.* (Booc. g. 2. n. 6.)

*Andate voi e Siro a trovar Callimaco, e gli dite che la cosa è proceduta bene.* (Mach. Comm.)

*Ed io a lui: "Con piangere e con fette, — Spirito maledetto, ti rimani."* (Dant. Inf. 8.)

Cause me to be carried back to my prison, and there cause me to be tormented as much as thou pleasest.

Go you and Syrus to find Callimachus, and tell him that the affair went on well.

And I said to him: "In mourning and in woe, cursed spirit, do thou remain."

<i>ricordándoti della tua pre- térila víta,</i>	bringing to thy mind thy past life;
<i>muóvati questo sólo mio átto,</i>	let this act of mine alone move thee;
<i>salutatólo, il domandò se égli si sentisse niente,</i>	after he had saluted him, he asked him, whether any thing ailed him;
<i>siátemi buón amico,</i>	be my good friend;
<i>fáttaLA préndere,</i>	having caused her to be taken.

EXCEPTIONS.

When the adverb *non*, 'no,' or 'not'; *precedes* the verb in the *imperative*, the conjunctive pronouns must be put *before* the verb; as,

<i>non SI rénda ridicola,</i>	do not make yourself ridiculous;
<i>non LE dáte rétta,</i>	do not mind her.

Conjunctive pronouns are sometimes put *before*, even when the verb is in the *infinitive* and in the *gerund*, *preceded* by the adverb *non*; as,

<i>mi aréa proméssó di non s' al- lontanáre,</i>	she had promised me, that she would not depart;
<i>non MI vedéndo giúngere,</i>	not seeing me arrive.

The conjunctive pronoun *loro*, 'to them,' or 'them'; is always to be put *after* the verb; as,

<i>vedúti LÓRO in sí póvera con- dizíone,</i>	having seen them in so mis- erable a condition;
<i>mandò LÓRO dicéndo . . . . ,</i>	sent to them, saying . . . . .

When *loro* is in the *objective*, the pronouns *gli* or *li*, for the *masculine* gender, and *le* for the *feminine*, sometimes take its place, but then they *follow* the *general rule*; as,

<i>facéndoGLI [or, facéndo LÓRO (i suói figli)] da buóni mué- stri insegnáre,</i>	causing them [ <i>her children</i> ] to be instructed by good masters;
<i>GLI féce [or, féce LÓRO] im- paráre tútte le buóne artí,</i>	she made them learn all good arts.

When *more than one* conjunctive pronoun occur with

the *same verb*, they follow the *same rules*, as when they occur with it *singly*; as,

<i>co' compágni subí</i>	<i>ségli</i>	he ate them with his companions;
<i>mangiò,</i>		
<i>deliberárono di dárgliela</i>		they determined to give her to him as his wife.
<i>per móglie,</i>		

Conjunctive pronouns occurring in the *same sentence* with *two verbs*, one of which is in the *infinitive*, are generally put *before the other verb*; as,

<i>io ti vóglío dire,</i>	I wish to tell thee;
<i>non glié lo voltóva dire,</i>	she would not tell it to him.

## EXCEPT

When the *other verb* is in the *imperative*, for then they must be put *after it*; as,

<i>fátti sentire,</i>	make thyself heard;
<i>lasciamiti vedére,</i>	let me look at thee.

When conjunctive pronouns occur with the indefinite pronoun *si*, this is always put *after*, and sometimes *joined* to them; as,

<i>il bel che mi si móstra,</i>	the good which shows itself to me;
<i>quánte cose gli si proméllono,</i>	how many things they promise to him;
<i>attribuisceci a nóstro fálló,</i>	it is attributed to our fault.

Conjunctive pronouns occurring with the adverb *écco*; and the pronoun *lo* occurring with the adverb *non*; are put *after* them; and, as it has been already stated at p. 116, form with them *one single word*.; as,

<i>éccomi,</i>	here I am;
<i>no! niégo,</i>	I do not deny it.

The particles *ne*, 'of him,' 'of her,' 'of it'; 'of them'; and *ci*, 'here, hither'; *vi*, 'there, thither'; follow the same rules as the *conjunctive pronouns*. They may be put either *before* or *after* the verb, *except* when the verb is in the *infinitive*, in the *gerund*, in the *participle*, and in the *imperative*; in which cases they are always put *after* it; as,

<i>mi piace di parlarne,</i>	it pleases me to speak of it;
<i>niuno veggendone,</i>	seeing no one of them;
<i>trattane la sua bella roba,</i>	having taken out her beautiful robe;
<i>gettòne i fondamenti il re Tarquino,</i>	King Tarquin laid the foundations of it;
<i>son disposto ad andarvi,</i>	I am disposed to go there;
<i>il cuoco postovi tutta l' arte,</i>	the cook having employed there [or in it] all his art;
<i>fàleci dipingere la Cortesia,</i>	cause Liberality to be painted there.

If the particles *ci*, *vi*, occur with one of the *conjunctive pronouns* *mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, usage *strictly* requires that the particles should be *placed after* the pronouns; but they are *sometimes* put *before* them, particularly if *euphony* demands it; as,

<i>costoro mi ci fanno entràre,</i>	' they make me enter there [or into it];
<i>to ti ci vèdo sempre,</i>	I see you here always:
<i>Vi ti porrò una tavoluccia,</i>	I shall place for thee there a small table;
<i>dirò che vi ci abbia fàtta venire per denàri,</i>	I will say that he has caused you to come here for money.

When the particles *ci*, *vi*, occur with the pronouns, *lo*, *la*, *li*, *gli*, *le*, they are generally put *before* the pronouns, and, as has been mentioned at p. 160, form with them a *single word*; but they may be placed also *after* them, *separately*; as,

<i>ingegnati di ritenércele,</i>	contrive to keep him there;
----------------------------------	-----------------------------

*ringraziando Iddio che condòtto VEL' aréva,*      thanking God that he had conducted him there :

*Nélla sua cámara il mise, e déntro IL VI serrò,*      she put him in her room, and there she locked him in.

## EXAMPLES.

*Vói MI POTÉTE TÓRRE QUÁNTO TÈNGO, e donármi, siccome vostro úomo, a chi vi piáce.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)      You can take away from me all I have, and give me, like one of your men, to whomsoever it pleases you.

*Assái vólte, la nítte, PIETOSAMENTE IL CHIAMÁVA.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)      A great many times, during the night, did she call him with a piteous voice.

*Ma guardáte che vói non CI FACÉSTE LA BÉFFA.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 1.)      But beware putting a trick upon us.

*S' elle vi piácciono, io LE VI DONERÒ.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)      If you like them, I will give them to you.

*E udéndo che egli avéa mórti due confessóri, disse fra sé medésimo : " ME NON UCCIDERÁI TU." (Pass.)*      And hearing that he had murdered two confessors, he said to himself : " Thou shalt not murder me."

*Tánto póssò dispórre di lui, che io úso díre, CHE CÉRTO É' SÍA UN ÁLTRO ME.* (Firenz.)      I can so much depend on him, that I am wont to say, that he is certainly another self.

*Ma, dove vói voléste, per avéntúra, vói POTRÉSTE VOI E ME CONSOLÁRE.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)      But, if you wish, you might perhaps console both yourself and me.

*OFFÉSI ME PER NON OFFÉNDER LUI.* (Petr.)      I injured myself not to injure him.

*Così NE FU, ED A LÉI ED A ME, PER PÉNA DÁTO, A LÉI DI FUGGÍRMI DAVÁNTI, ED A ME, che già cotánto l' amái, DI SEQUITÁRLA.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 8.)      Thus it was, to both her and me, given as a punishment, to her to flee before me, and to me, who loved her so much, to pursue her.

*Io so che ÉGLI VI ÁMA.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)      I know that he loves you.

*DIÉDEGLI LA SÚA BENEDIZIONE.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)      He gave him his benediction.

*CORRERÁNNOCI ÁLLE CÁSE, E L' AVÉRE CI RUBERÁNNO.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)      They will run to our houses, and rob us of our property.

IL MANDÁRLO FUÓR DI CÁSA  
*nóstra, còst inférmo, NE SARÉB-*  
*BE GRAN BIÁSIMO.* (Bocc. g. 1.  
d. 1.)

AJUTÁRONMI *élle* BÉNE. (Bocc.  
g. 4. Proem.)

ÉTTI *égli da stamáne* USCÍTO  
DI MÉNTE? (Bocc. g. 7. d. 8.)

MOSTRÓCCI UN' ÓMBRA *dall' ún*  
*cánto sóla.* (Dant. Inf. 12.)

RICOMINCIÒ A FÁRGLI I MAG-  
GIÓR PIACÉRI. (Bocc. g. 8. d.  
10.)

TROVÁNDOSI ÉGLI ÚNA VÓLTA  
A PARÍGL. (Bocc. g. 1. d. 7.)

FO SON VENÚTA A RISTORÁRTI  
DÉ' DÁNNI, *li quáli tu hái già*  
*AVÚTI per me.* (Bocc. g. 5. d. 9.)

*Federigo*, RICORDÁNDOTI DÉL-  
LA TÚA PRÉTÉRITA VÍTA. (Bocc.  
g. 5. d. 9.)

MUÓVATI *alquánto* QUÉSTO SÓ-  
LO MÍO ÁTTO. (Bocc. g. 8. d. 7.)

SALUTÁTOLO, IL DOMANDÒ SE  
SI SENTÍSSE NIÉNTE. (Bocc.)

SIÁTEMI, *adúnque, sémpre* BUÓN  
AMÍCO. (Gang. lett.)

FÁTTALA *prestaménte* PRÉN-  
DERE. (Bocc. g. 2. d. 7.)

NON SI RÉNDA RIDÍCOLA *círca*  
*le usánze del móndo.* (Gang.  
lett.)

NON LE DÁTE RÉTTA, *nè piú*  
*la frequentáte.* (Vanz.)

NON MI VEDÉNDO GIÚNGERE  
*in témpo, se ne ritornò, benchè*  
*MI avésse PROMÉSSO DI NON S' AL-*  
*LONTANÁRE fino al mío arrivo.*  
(Vanz.)

To send him out of our house,  
so sick as he is, would be in us  
a great fault.

They assisted me well.

Has it, since this morning, es-  
caped thy mind?

He showed us a spirit by itself  
apart.

She began to do him again the  
greatest kindnesses.

He finding himself once in  
Paris.

I am come to make thee some  
amends for the evils thou hast  
sustained on my account.

Frederic, bringing to thy mind  
thy past life.

Let this act of mine alone move  
thee at least.

After he had saluted him, he  
asked him, whether any thing  
ailed him.

Be, then, always my good  
friend.

Having caused her immediately  
to be taken.

Do not make yourself ridicu-  
lous respecting the customs of the  
world.

Do not mind her, nor visit her  
any longer.

Not seeing me arrive in time,  
she went back, although she had  
promised me, that she would not  
depart before my arrival.



VEDÚTI LÓRO IN SÌ PÓVERA  
CONDIZIÓNE ridótti. (Pecor.)

Having seen them reduced to  
so miserable a condition.

E MANDÒ LÓRO DICÉNDÓ . . .  
(Bott. Stor. Amer.)

And sent to them, saying . . .

*I quãli* [i suoi figli] *facevano*  
*stupire* chi *gli conosceva*, e *la*  
*mãdre* *facevogli* da *buoni*  
*maestri insegnãre*, *gli fece*  
*imparãre* *tutte le buone arti*.  
(Pecor. g. 10. n. 1.)

Who [her children] astonished  
all those, who knew them; and  
their mother, causing them to be  
instructed by good masters, made  
them learn all good arts.

*Comprãti* i *capponi* *insieme*  
*co' compãni* *suoi* *sugli* *man-*  
*giò*. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

Having bought the capons, he  
ate them with his companions.

*Deliberãrono* di *dãrglie-*  
*la* *per* *moglie*. (Bocc. g. 2.  
n. 8.)

They determined to give her to  
him as his wife.

*Attendi* *quello* *che* *io* *ti* *voglio*  
*dire*. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Listen to what I wish to tell  
thee.

*La* *donna* *rispose*, *che* *non*  
*glielo* *volèva* *dire*. (Bocc.  
g. 7. n. 5.)

The lady replied, that she would  
not tell it to him.

*Grida* *forte*, *fãtti* *ben* *sentire*.  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 6.)

Speak loud, make thyself heard.

*Lãsciamiti* *vedere* *a* *mio*  
*sẽno*. (Bocc.)

Let me look at thee at my plea-  
sure.

*Il* *ben*, *che* *mi* *si* *mõstra* *in-*  
*torno*. (Petr. c. 7.)

The good, which shows itself  
about me.

*Quãte* *cõse* *gli* *si* *promet-*  
*tono* *tutto* *'l* *dì*. (Bocc. g. 3.  
n. 1.)

How many things they promise  
to him all day.

*Attribuiscesi* *a* *nõstro* *fãl-*  
*lo*. (Cavalc.)

It is attributed to our fault.

*Lo* *scolare*, *accostatosi* *all'* *ú-*  
*scio*, *dissè*: ' *Èccomi* *quì*, *Madõn-*  
*na*.' (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

The scholar, coming to the  
door, said: 'Here I am, Madam.'

*In* *armi* *ègħ* *era* *prõde*, — *Nol*  
*nẽno* *io*, *no*. (Alf. Saul. 2. 1.)

He was brave in arms, I do not  
deny it, no.

*Ègħ* *mi* *piãce* *di* *parlãre*.  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

It pleases me to speak of it.

*Nũno* *vegeãdone*. (Bocc.  
g. 2. n. 2.)

Seeing no one of them.

TRATTANE <i>celatamente</i> LA SÚA BÉLLA RÓBA. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)	Having taken out secretly her beautiful robe.
GETTÓNE I FONDAMÉNTI IL RE TARQUÍNIO. (Dav. Stor. l. 3.)	King Tarquin laid the founda- tions of it.
Io SON <i>del tutto</i> DÍSPÓSTO AD ANDÁRVI. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)	I am entirely disposed to go there.
IL CUÓCO <i>présolo</i> , e PÓSTOVI TÚTTA L' ÁRTE . . . . (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)	The cook having taken it, and having employed in it all his art, . . . .
FÁTECI DÍPÍNGERE LA CORTE- SÍA. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)	Cause Liberality to be painted there.
COSTÓRO MI CI FÁNNO ENTRÁRE <i>per ingannármí</i> . (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)	They make me enter into it [the chest] in order to play some trick upon me.
ÍO TI CI VÉDO SÉMPRE. (Nov. Ant. 67.)	I see thee here always.
Io VI TI PORRÒ ÚNA TAVOLÚC- CIA. (Bocc. g. 8.)	I shall place for thee there a small table.
Io DIRÒ CHE VI CI ÁBBIA FÁ- TA VENÍRE PER DENÁRI. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)	I will say that he has caused you to come here for money.
INGÉGNATI DI RITENÉRCILO. (Bocc. n. 5.)	Contrive to keep him there.
RINGRAZIÁNDO IDDÍO CHE CON- DÓTTO VEL' AVÉVA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 4.)	Thanking God that he had con- ducted him there.
NÉLLA SÚA CÁMERA IL MÍSE, E DÉNTRO IL VI SERRÒ. (Bocc.)	She put him in her room, and there she locked him in.

## POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

*Possessive pronouns* may be placed either before or after the nouns expressing the things possessed ; as,

la mÍa persóna, i míi míli,	my person, my misfortunes ;
le mēbra míe, il sōngue súo,	my limbs, my blood ;
gli occhi súoi, l'órdine LÓRO,	her eyes, their management.

In *addressing* a person, however, and in *exclamations*, possessive pronouns *are* to be *put after* the nouns ; as,

*pádre* mío, *figliuol* mío !            my father, my son !  
*Itália* míA, *Signór* mío !            my Italy, my Lord !

Possessive pronouns are always to be *repeated* before nouns of *different gender* and *number* ; as,

*la* *LOR* *virtù*, *i* *LOR* *costumi*,    their virtue, their customs, and  
*e* *le* *LORO* *manière*,            their manners.

But if the nouns are of the *same gender* and *number*, they may be used only *once*, *after* the said nouns ; as,

*le* *siróccie* *e* *le* *mógli* *LORO*,    their sisters and their wives.

We have already observed (p. 132), that *possessive nouns* may be *expressed* in Italian, by the *conjunctive pronouns* of that *person* to which the *possessor* belongs. This is always the case when they are *accompanied* by a *noun* expressing the *limbs of the body* or denoting a *part of one's dress* ; as,

*se* *MI* *cacciásser* *gli* *ócchi*    if they should tear out my  
[for, *se* *cacciásser* *i* *MÍ*    eyes ;  
*ócchi*],

*non* *VI* *fiaccáte* *il* *CÓLLO* [for,    do not break your neck.  
*non* *fiaccáte* *il* *VÓSTRO*  
*CÓLLO*],

The English possessive pronouns *his*, *her*, *their*, when they refer to *one's own* limbs or parts of dress, are *expressed* in Italian by the *conjunctive pronoun* *si* ; but when they refer to *another person's* limbs or parts of dress, they are *expressed* by the *conjunctive pronouns* *gli*, *le*, *loro*, according to the *gender* and *number* of the *possessor* ; as,

*si* *levò* *l'* *anéllo* *di* *DÍTO* [for,    he took off the ring from his  
*levò* *l'* *anéllo* *del* *SÚO* *DÍTO*],    [own] finger] ;  
*risólve* *di* *levársi* *le* *SCÁRPE*    he resolved to take off his [own]  
[for, *di* *leváre* *le* *SÚE* *SCÁR-*    shoes :  
*PE*],

*GLI* *rúppe* *tútto* *il* *VÍSO* [for,    he disfigured all his [another per-  
*rúppe* *tútto* *il* *SÚO* (or, *il* *di*    son's] face ;  
*lúsi*) *VÍSO*],

*stracciatale la cúffia* [for, having torn her [another per-  
*stracciata la súa* (or, *la di lei*) *son's*] headdress.  
*cúffia*],

Often the personal pronouns accompanying a noun expressing the limbs of the body, or denoting the parts of one's dress, are *entirely suppressed* when they relate to the *principal subject* of the proposition ; as,

*corsi a cercarmi il lato colla* I laid immediately my hand on  
*máno* [for, *cólla mía má-* my side ;  
*no*],

*asciugandosi gli occhi col bel* drying her eyes with her beau-  
*vélo*, [for, *col sùo bel vé-* tiful veil.  
*lo*],

## EXAMPLES.

*E siccome LA MIA PERSONA* And as [my person or] I grew  
*cresceva, così le mie bellezze, de'* up, my beauty, the first cause of  
*miei mali special cagione, multi-* all my misfortunes, increased.  
*plicavano.* (Bocc. Fiam.)

*Non son rimase acerbe nè ma-* I have not left yonder my limbs,  
*tùre — LE MEMBRA MIE di là, ma* either crude or in mature age ; but  
*son qui meco — COL SANGUE SÙO,* they bear me here, fed with blood  
*e con le sue giunture.* (Dant. and sinew-strung.  
 Purg. 26.)

*Ed erano GLI OCCHI SUOI di* And his [Cæsar's] eyes were  
*quél colore che lo grifone.* (Buti. as black as those of a raven.  
 com. Inf. 4.)

*Senza L' ORDINE LORO rade* Without their management it  
*vólte riesce alcuna NOSTRA ópera* seldom happens that any under-  
*a laudévol fine.* (Bocc. Intr.) taking of ours succeeds.

*Gaddo mi si gittò disteso d'* Gaddo stretched himself at my  
*piédi, — Dicéndo : " PADRE mio,* feet, saying : " My father, why  
*che non m' aiuti ? "* (Dant. Inf. dost thou not assist me ? "  
 33.)

*O FIGLIUOL MIO ! non ti dis-* O my son ! do not disdain that  
*pidécia, — Se Brunétto Latini un* Brunetto Latini should turn back  
*póco téco — Ritórna indietro.* a little, and go with you.  
 (Dant. Inf. 15.)

ITALIA MIA, benchè il parlar  
sia indarno — Alle piaghe mor-  
tali, — Che nel bel corpo tuo sì  
spesse veggio. (Petr.)

O SIGNOR MIO! quando sarò  
io lieto — A veder la vendetta,  
che, nascosa, — Fa dolce l'ira  
tua nel tuo segreto? (Dant. Purg.  
20.)

Riguarda tra tutti i tuoi no-  
bili uomini, ed esamina LA LOR  
VIRTÙ, I LOR COSTUMI, E LE LORO  
MANIERE. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Appresso costoro, LE SOROC-  
CHIE E LE MOGLI LORO vennero.  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

O SE ESSI MI CACCIASSER GLI  
OCCHI O MI traessero i DENTI, o  
mozzassermi le MANI, a che sarè'  
io? (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

Egli è gran peccato che voi  
NON VI FIACCATE IL COLLO.  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)

E così si levò l'ANELLO DI  
DITO, e dièllo al giudice. (Pecor.)

Guarda se altri lo scorge, ed  
alfine si risolve di levarsi LE  
SCARPE. (Lod. Nov.)

E così dicèndo con le pugna  
TUTTO IL VISO GLI RUPPE. (Bocc.  
g. 9. n. 8.)

È STRACCIATALE LA CUFFIA,  
dicèva. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 8.)

Di che io sentiva sì fatto dolò-  
re, che, desto, COLLA MÀNO COSÌ  
subitamente a CERCÁRMI IL LÁ-  
TO. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 6.)

E faccia forza al Cielo, —  
ASCIUGÁNDOSI GLI OCCHI COL  
BEL VÉLO. (Petr. c. 11.)

My Italy, although words will  
have no power to heal the mortal  
wounds which I see, in so great  
a number, in your beautiful body.

O my Lord! when shall I re-  
joice to see the vengeance, which  
thy wrath, well pleased, breeds in  
secret silence?

Look among all your noblemen,  
and examine their virtue, their  
customs, and their manners.

After these, came their sisters  
and their wives.

If they should tear out my  
eyes, or draw out my teeth, or  
lop off my hands, to what should  
I be reduced?

It is a great pity you do not  
break your neck.

And thus he took off the ring  
from his finger, and gave it to the  
judge.

He looked around lest he should  
be seen, and at last he resolved to  
take off his shoes.

And thus saying he disfigured  
all his face with blows.

And having torn her headdress,  
he said.

Which gave me such a pain,  
that, having awaked, I laid imme-  
diately my hand on my side.

And should compel Heaven [to  
have pity upon me], drying her  
eyes with her beautiful veil.

## INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

The *indefinite pronouns*, *stésso*, *medésimo*, ‘same’; and sometimes *tútto*, ‘all,’ ‘every’; are put either before or after the noun; as,

<i>quél dì stésso</i> ; in <i>quél</i> <i>ME-</i>	that same day ; in that same
<i>DÉSIMO ábito</i> ,	dress ;
<i>TÚTTE le nótti</i> ; <i>le quáli cose</i>	every night ; all which things.
<i>TÚTTE</i> ,	

*Tútto*, followed by a *numeral adjective*, takes the particle *e* after it ; as,

<i>tútti e trè</i> ,	all three.
----------------------	------------

The indefinite pronouns *verúno*, *nessúno* or *nissúno*, *neúno* or *niúno*, *núllo*, ‘no one,’ ‘nobody’; and *núlla*, *niénte*, ‘nothing’; as we have already mentioned at p. 147, may have also the signification of ‘any one,’ ‘anybody’; and ‘some or any thing’; according to their respective position in the sentence.

They have the *first* signification, — (of ‘no one,’ ‘nobody’; and ‘nothing’), when they are placed before the verb, or when they are placed after a verb preceded by the adverb *non* ; as,

<i>per verún módo potéva</i> ,	she could do it in no manner ;
<i>non fa cáldo verúno</i> ,	it is not at all warm :
<i>nessún si dólse di servitù</i> ,	no one complained of servitude ;
<i>non si può fare nissúna cosa</i> ,	no-thing can be done :
<i>neúno ebbe gli Déi si favorévóli</i> ,	no one had the Gods so favorable ;
<i>non ve n' è niúno si cattivo</i> ,	there is no one so bad :
<i>núllo martírio sarébbe dólór compíto</i> ,	no torment were a well-proportioned pain ;

NON gli manca NÚLLA,	he wants <i>nothing</i> :
di NÚLLA si dispési,	let him despair of <i>nothing</i> ;
NON ne farò NÚLLA,	I will do <i>nothing</i> about it :
NIÉNTÉ dico del tuo státo,	I say <i>nothing</i> about thy condition ;
NON gli parrebbe NIÉNTÉ,	it would seem to him <i>nothing</i> .

But when they are placed after a verb not preceded by the adverb *non*, and when the phrase in which they occur implies a *question*, or expresses a *doubt*, the abovementioned pronouns have the *last* signification, — (of 'any one,' 'anybody'; and 'some or any thing');\* as,

senza fare a vói VERÚN prò,	without doing <i>any</i> good to yourself ;
se VERÚNO véde la péna méa,	whether <i>any one</i> observes my sorrow ;
quando s' accámpano in NESÚNO luógo,	when they encamp in <i>any</i> place ;
trovóssi NIÚNO che contraddísse álla podestáde ?	was there found <i>any one</i> who opposed public power ?
le dirái se vuóli NÚLLA,	thou wilt ask her, whether she wants <i>any thing</i> ;

\* There are instances, however, in good writers, which seem in contradiction with these rules ; as may be seen by the following examples :

E quando NISSU'NO n' éra preso, subito éra impiccato per la gola. (Stor. Pistol.)

And when *any one* was taken, he was directly hung by the neck.

Che non rimarrébe a sostenére péna NISSU'NA nel purgatorio per gli peccati. (Pass.)

That there would not remain in purgatory *any* punishment to suffer for sins.

Non c' é ragiáne NISSU'NA per la quála é' débba entráre in un tal determináto grádo di velocitá. (Gal. Sist.)

There is no [or not *any*] reason why it should enter in such a determinate degree of velocity.

Mái non méns farò piú NIÚ'NA. (Booc. g. 8. n. 3.)

He will never do me an- [er, *any*] other [thing like this.]

Cóme ella véde un giovinétto di fórma NIÉ'NTE riguardevóle, ella s' accónda delle sue bellézza. (Fit. Asin. 40.)

As soon as she sees a youth somewhat handsome, she falls in love with his beauty :

In which the pronouns *nessuno*, *nessuna*, *niuno* are used instead of *alcuno*, *alcuna*, 'any,' 'any person,' 'any thing'; and *niente* instead of *un poco*, *alquanto*, 'a little,' 'somewhat.'

*il domandò se si sentisse* he asked him whether he felt  
**NIENTE,** any thing.

EXAMPLES.

*Credito abbiamo che costei* We supposed, that she had been  
*nella casa, che mi fu quel dì* burnt that same day along with  
*stesso arsa, ardésse.* (Bocc. g. the house.  
 5. n. 5.)

*Guardando tra molte, che qui-* Looking among so many wo-  
*vi n' erano in quel medesimo* man, who were there, clad in that  
*abito.* (Bocc. Lab.) same dress.

*E 'l rossignuol — Tutte le* And the nightingale every night  
*notte si lamenta e piange.* laments and weeps.  
 (Petr.)

*Le quali cose tutte sono da* All which things ought to be  
*esser diligentemente considerate.* carefully considered.  
 (Cresc. 12. 2.)

*Fratelli miei, che andate voi* Brothers, what are you looking  
*cercando, a quest' ora, tutti e* for, all three, at such an hour?  
*tre?* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.)

*Quando venne il tempo, quella* When the time arrived, that un-  
*miserà per verun modo potè-* fortunate one could not do it in  
*va.* (Vit. SS. PP. 2. 21.) any manner.

*Anzi non fa egli caldo ve-* Nay it is not at all warm.  
*runo.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

*Nessun di servitù giammai* No one ever complained of  
*si dolse, — Né di morte, quant'* servitude or death, as much as I  
*io di libertate.* (Petr. Tr. Mort. 1.) do of liberty.

*Non si può cosa nessuna fare* Nothing can be done in their  
*a lor modo.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.) manner.

*Neuno ebbe mai gli déi sì* No one even had the Gods so  
*favorévoli, che nel futuro gli* favorable as to oblige them to  
*potesse obbligare.* (Bocc. Fiam. favor him in future.  
 5. 84.)

*Egli non ve n' è niuno sì cat-* There is no one so bad, that  
*tivo, che non vi parésse uno im-* you would not take him for an  
*peratore.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) emperor.

*Nullo martirio, fuorchè la* No torment, save thy rage, were  
*tua rabbia, — Sarébbe al tuo* to thy fury a well-proportioned  
*furor dolor compito.* (Dant. pain.  
 Inf. 14.)



*O'nde felice dicano ésser colui,*  
che NON GLI MANCA NÚLLA.  
(Fr. Giord. 20.)

Whence they call him happy  
who wants nothing.

*Chi in alcuna cosa può spe-  
räre, DI NÚLLA SI DISPÉRI.*  
(Bocc. Fiam. 5. 85.)

Let him, who can hope in any  
thing, despair of nothing.

*Altrimenti mái NON NE FARÒ  
NÚLLA.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

Otherwise I will never do any  
thing about it.

*DEL TÚO presénte STÁTO  
NIÉNTE DÍCO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

I say nothing about thy pres-  
ent condition.

*Se l' úomo magnánimo désse  
ógni cosa per amore, NON GLI  
PARRÉBBE AVÉR DÁTO NIÉNTE.*  
(Cavalc. Specch. Cr.)

If the magnanimous man should  
give every thing for love, it would  
not seem to him that he had given  
any thing.

*Faréste danno a nói, SÉNZA  
FÁRE A VÓI PRÒ VERÚNO.* (Bocc.  
g. 8. n. 9.)

You would injure us without  
doing any good to yourself.

*Allóra guárdo intórno, SE VE-  
RÚNO — VÉDE LA PÉNA MÍA,  
che m' ha conquáso.* (Rim. Ant.  
96.)

Then I look around me to see  
whether any one observes that  
sorrow, which has subdued me.

*QUÁNDO s' ACCÁMPANO IN NES-  
SÚNO LUÓGO per cagióne di guér-  
ra.* (Buti. Purg. 7.)

When they encamp in any  
place on account of war.

*Trovóssi in Miláno NIÚNO,  
CHE CONTRADIÁSSÉ ÁLLA PO-  
DESTÁDE?* (Nov. Ant. 21.)

Was there found any one in  
Milan, who opposed the public  
power?

*Tu LE DIRÁI s' ella vuóL NÚL-  
LA.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

Thou wilt ask her whether she  
wants any thing.

*IL DOMANDÒ SE égli si SENTÍSSÉ  
SE NIÉNTE.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 8.)

He asked him whether he felt  
any thing.

### EXERCISE XXXII.

They rob you.  
*rubäre*

Have pity | on | the afflicted.  
*compassióne | di | affittv.*

Dost thou know the  
*conóscere<sup>2</sup> 1*

daughter of Cidippe?  
*figliuóla<sup>2</sup> 1*

May you  
?

be pleased to bless (the) my soul. Let him call  
*Volére* *benedire* *ánima*<sup>s</sup> *Chiamáre*

the leaders to a council. What thou wishest that  
*dúca* — *consiglio*. *volére*

I should say. She said : " How can that be " ?  
*dire*. *Dire* : " *potére questo*<sup>s</sup> " ?

He replied : " Thou wilt see it, if thou comest im-  
*Dire* : " *vedére* *venire* *tó-*

mediately." I am here with one, who, | having |  
*sto*." | *per avére* |

my name, wishes to be | myself | in every thing  
*nóme*, *volére* — | *io* | *ogni cosa*

he does, or rather, that I should be he. He  
 — — ,

saw himself | deprived | of the hope of having her  
*vedére* | *priváre* | *speránsa* — —

for his wife — ( | to have to have | her himself ),  
 — — — *dovére avére* | *egli*,

if Ormisda did not marry her.  
*prendére*

The Turk then said : " If I were thou, I should  
*Túrco* *dire* : " ,

perhaps infringe the law ; but as I am myself and  
*forse violáre legge* ; *perchè* *io*

not thou, I will never do it."  
*non<sup>s</sup> mái<sup>s</sup> fáre<sup>s</sup> ?*"

I will tell thee the truth, companion, I like  
*volére dire* *véro*, *sócio*, — —

her — (she pleases me) so much, that I could not  
 — *piacére* , *potére*

tell it to thee. He sent her | word | that, with-  
*dire* . — *Mandáre* | *a dire* | ,

out any more delay, she should do what — (that  
 — *indúgio*, — *dovére fáre* —

which) he had told her. I order thee to go —  
 — *avére<sup>s</sup> dire<sup>s</sup>* <sup>s</sup>. — *Comandáre* — —

(that thou go) immediately | after | thy father. You  
*andáre<sup>2</sup> incontanente<sup>1</sup> | per | pádre.*

promised me | to | make me speak with (the) your  
*prométtere | di | fare parláre*

wife. | Pray, | leave me in peace. Why dost thou  
*dónna<sup>1</sup>. | In grásia, | lascíare páce. Chè —*

not reply, wicked man? Art thou become dumb  
*rispóndere, réo úomo? Art thou become dumb*  
*diventáre muto*

in hearing me? Having raised (herself) | upon | her  
*— udire ? — Letáre | in | —*

feet), she said: "Brother, you are (the) welcome."  
*piè, — díre: "Fratélló, benvenuto."*

No, she would not believe it, and would turn me  
*, crédere , scacciáre*

out of her house. He begged him that he would  
*— — casa. — Pregáre — in-*

show him how they did. "Then," said he, "let  
*guáre — fare. "Then," díre , "let*

us do it." Say it frankly. (I), as for me, do  
*fare " Díre sicúro. , — ,*

not remember (myself of) it. Having caused a purse  
*ricordáre (myself of) it. Having caused a purse*  
*Fáre <sup>2</sup> borsa<sup>2</sup>*

to be brought to her- (self), she put it (to him) | into |  
*veníre<sup>1</sup> , — mèttere | in |*

his hand, and said: "Count if they are five-hun-  
*— máno, díre: "Annoveráre —*

dred." He conquered Scotland, and was crowned  
*" conquistáre Scózia, coronáre*

king of it. I did not discern there any thing.  
*re . discernere cosa.*

There is Minos | who | grins horribly. I will  
*stáre | e<sup>2</sup> | ringhiáre<sup>2</sup> orribile.<sup>1</sup> fá-*

cause it to be painted there. Where art thou, good  
*re dipingere — , buona*

woman? Here I am — (behold me), what dost  
*dónna? — — — (behold me), what dost*

thou wish? We are — (behold us) ready to obey  
<sup>2</sup> *domandare*<sup>1</sup>? — — *pronto* *ubbidire*  
 you.

My friend and not the friend of fortune. My  
*amico* — — *fortuna*.

father told (*it to*) me, that I should take care (*my-*  
<sup>4</sup> *dare*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *guardare*

*self*) of ever setting foot in Messenia. O Samuel,  
*giamaia*<sup>2</sup> *porre*<sup>1</sup> *piede*<sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup>

once my true father, dost thou command it? | As  
*vero padre*, *impönere* ? | *Per*

much as | thou | valuest | my affection. | In order |  
*quänto* | *thou* | *abbii caro* | *amör.* | *Per* |

to die as your daughter, and not as your enemy.  
*morire* — *figlia*, — *nemica*.

He let fall his hook at his (*own*) feet. Weeping  
 — *Lasciare cascär* *uncino* — *piede*. *Piangere*

he threw himself | on | his (*another person's*) neck.  
 — *gittäre* | *a* | — — *collo*.

The unfortunate ones wept, scratched their (*own*) faces,\*  
*meschina* — *piangere, sgraffiare* — *viso*,

tore their (*own*) hair.† In thinking of it I shud-  
*strappare* — *capello*. *pensäre* — — *racca-*

der (*myself all over*) and my heart melts (*itself*).  
*pricciare* *tutto* — *cuore struggere*

He remained there all the night with certain  
 — *Stäre* — *notte* *certo*

snares of his | to | catch a bat. No person per-  
*artificio*<sup>2</sup> — <sup>1</sup> | *per* | *pigliäre* *pipistrello*. *persona* *ac-*

ceived (*himself*) of it. There is no one|| of them  
*cörgere*

so young, who could not know well how women  
*fanciulla*, *potere* *conoscere*<sup>2</sup> *ben*<sup>1</sup> *femmine*

\* *Face* to be put, in the Italian, in the singular.

† *Hair*, in the plural.

‡ *all*, in the feminine.

§ *No*, for no one.

|| *No* one, for not any one, in the feminine.

are. I have not slept any last night. Let no  
 — — *dormire* *passato* *notte*.

one move himself, or say a word, if he does not  
*muovere* , *fare* *motto*,

wish to die. There it seemed to me to see no<sup>2</sup>  
*volere morire*. 1 — *parere*<sup>13</sup> 14 *vedere*<sup>13</sup> 2

sanctity, no<sup>6</sup> devotion, no<sup>6</sup> good work, or example  
*santità*<sup>4</sup>, *divozione*<sup>5</sup>, *buono*<sup>7</sup> *opera*<sup>8</sup>, *esempio*<sup>10</sup>

of life. Has any one been here? If there is  
 11 *vita*<sup>12</sup>. 2 4 2 1 2

any one, who wishes | to bet | a supper, I will  
 , *volere* | *mettere su* | *cena*, *met-*

do it willingly. If Philip goes any where — (in  
*tere* *volentieri*. *Filippo andare* — —

any place), follow him — (approach thyself to him)  
*luogo*, — — *accostare*

in some manner. I have nothing | to | fear now.  
*qualche modo*. *da* | *temere* *ora*.

Thou knowest nothing then.  
*sapere* *dunque*.

## CHAPTER VII.

## VERBS.

## POSITION OF VERBS.

*Verbs* are generally placed after their *subjectives*; but if a *command* is given, or a *question* is asked, or a *wish* or *imprecation* is expressed; the verb is to be put before the *subjective*; as,

---

‡ No, for no one.

SPÉNGASI <i>néi vóstri pèlli</i> ÓGNI SCINTÍLLA <i>di pestí-</i> <i>fero sdégno;</i>	let every spark of venomous disdain be extinguished in your hearts ;
ACCÉNDASI <i>in quèlli</i> ARDÉN- TE FIÀMMA <i>di sincéro</i> <i>amóre,</i>	let there [in your hearts] be kindled a fervent flame of sincere affection ;
che VUÓL dir QUÉSTO ?	what can this mean ?
VOLÉSSE IDDÍO <i>che il gua-</i> <i>tármi gli fósse bastáto,</i>	would to Heaven that his gaz- ing at me had satisfied him ;
MALADÉTTA SÍA LA CRUDEL- TÀ <i>di coltá, che mi ti fa</i> <i>vedére,</i>	cursed be the cruelty of him, who causes that I should see thee.

The *verb* is likewise put *before the subjective*, when it is *neuter* and is *preceded* by a *sentence* or *part of it* ; when it is *preceded* by a *negative* ; and when an *emphatical adjective* introduces the sentence ; as,

stándosi COSÌ, VÉNNE <i>alla vol-</i> <i>ta sua</i> UN GÀMBERO,	[the bird] being so, a crab came up to him ;
nè <i>me ne</i> HA MÀI PARLÀTO ALCÚNO,	nor has any one ever spoken to me of her ;
dólce È IL BENEFÍCIO,	to do good is pleasing.

Finally, the *verb* is put *before the subjective*, when in *narrations* the *sayings* or *doings* of a person are *related* ; when in *exclamations* it is accompanied by the word *cóme* or *quánto* ; and when one of the following words *ci*, *vi*, *quí*, *quà*, *ívi*, *quívi*, *dóve*, *quíndi*, *quánto*, *così*, — *begins* a sentence or phrase ; as,

DÍSSE LA DÓNNA : " <i>Cóme</i> <i>può ésser quèsto ?</i> "	the lady said : " How can that be ? "
oh ! <i>cóme spésso</i> CÀSCANO I VÉCCHI <i>in quèsto errore !</i>	oh ! how often do old men fall into this error !
se CE NE VENÍSSE ALCÚNA,	if some one should come here ;
quí SÓNO GIARDÍNI,	here are gardens ;
chi è <i>quello che non sáppia</i> quánto SÍA ÉGLI <i>infe-</i> <i>rióre ?</i>	who does not know how in- ferior he is ?

## EXAMPLES.

SPÉNGASI, SPÉNGASI NÉI VÓ-  
STRI PÉTTI ÓGNI SCINTÍLLA DI  
PESTÍFERO SDÉGNO; ACCÉNDASI  
IN QUÉLLI ARDÉNTE FIÁMMA DI  
SINCÉRO ANÓRE. (Cavalcanti.)

CHE VUÓL DIR QUÉSTO?  
(Bocc.)

E VOLÉSSE IDDIÓ, *che il pas-  
sárvu o IL GUATÁRMI GLI FÓSSÉ*  
BASTÁTO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

MALADÉTTA SÍA LA CRUDELTA  
DI COLÚI, *che con gli ócchi dél-  
la frínte or MI TI FA VEDÉRE.*  
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

E STÁNDOSI COSÌ *di mála óg-  
glia VÉNNE ÁLLA VÓLTA SÚA UN*  
GÁMBERO. (Firenz.)

NÈ ME NE HA MÁI PARLÁTO AL-  
CÚNO, *che non me l' ábbia dipín-  
ta eguale álla mía Costánza.*  
(Gell.)

DÓLCE *in ógni témpo è IL*  
BENEFÍCIO. (Soave, Nov.)

DÍSSE LA DÓNNA: "CÓME PUÒ  
ÉSSER QUÉSTO?" — "DÍSSE Mes-  
sér Lizio: "Tu il vedrái, se tu  
viéni préstó." (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

OH! CÓME SPÉSSO CÁSCANO I  
VÉCCHI IN QUÉSTO ERRÓRE!  
(Gell.)

E se per isciángúra CE NE VE-  
NÍSSE ALCÚNA. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

QUÍ SÓNO GIARDÍNI, *quà áltri*  
*luóghi dílettévoli.* (Bocc. Intr.)

Perchè, CHI È QUÉLLO CHE  
NON SÁPPIA QUÁNTO SÍA ÉGLI  
INFERIÓRE *di fórze?* (Tolom.)

Let every spark of venomous  
diedain be extinguished in your  
heart; let there be kindled a fer-  
vent flame of sincere affection.

What can this mean?

And would to Heaven, that his  
passing by, and gazing at me, had  
satisfied him.

Cursed be the cruelty of him,  
who causes that my eyes should  
see thee now.

And being [the bird] so mel-  
ancholy, a crab came up to him.

Nor any one has ever spoken  
to me of her, without describing  
her to me as equal to my Con-  
stanza.

To do good is pleasing at all  
times.

The lady said: "How can that  
be?" — Mr. Lizio said: "Thou  
wilt see it thyself if thou comest  
immediately."

Oh! how often do old men fall  
into this error!

And if, for our misfortune, some  
one should come here.

Here are gardens, there pleasant  
places.

Because, who does not know  
how inferior he is in strength?

## USE OF THE IMPERFECT AND FIRST AND SECOND-PERFECT.

The *preterite* of English verbs answers to the *imperfect* as well as to the *first* and *second-perfect*. In Italian these three tenses are rendered in three different forms; *I loved*, for instance, may be rendered by *io amava*, *io amai*, or *io ho amato*; but these forms are not indifferently used.

We make use of the first, the *imperfect*, when the action of which we speak was *present* in respect to another action *past* at the same time;—CANTA'VA *quándo voi veniste*, 'I was singing when you came'; E' RANO *a tavola quándo noi entrammo*, 'they were at table when we entered'; as,

méntré STÁVAN CENÁNDO, venne il marito,	while they were at supper, her husband came;
incontrò la Catella, che VENÍ- VA,	he met Catella, who was com- ing.

The *imperfect* is also used when we *speak* of an action become *habitual*, or *continued*, or *repeated* several times; as,

io LAVORÁVA un loro giar- dino,	I had the care of their garden;
ANDÁVA al bosco per le lé- gne,	I used to go to the forest for wood;
ATTIGNÉVA acqua, e FACÉVA áltri servigetti,	I drew water, and did other services;
le donne mi DÁVAN sì póco, che io non ne POTÉVA ap- péna pagare i calzari,	the ladies gave me so little, that with it I could scarcely pay for my shoes.

Finally, we use the *imperfect* in speaking of the *age*, *name*, *actions*, *dispositions*, and *good* or *bad qualities* of persons and things that exist no more; as,

né per tre lustri AVÉA forniti,	he [Rinaldo] had scarcely fin- ished his third lustrum;
---------------------------------	--



<i>la moglie, che Isabella</i>	AVÉA	his wife, who was called Isa-
<i>nome,</i>		bella ;
<i>ERA di buona mente, e di fe-</i>		he [Joseph Warren] was of
<i>lice ingégnno dotato, e bel-</i>		good mind, endowed with a
<i>lissimo favellatore,</i>		happy genius, and a very
		fine speaker ;
<i>PARÉVA Santa Veridiana,</i>		she appeared Saint Veridiana
<i>che dà beccare alle serpi,</i>		feeding the serpents ;
<i>ERA questo giardino vago</i>		this garden was very pleasant.
<i>molto,</i>		

It may, perhaps, assist the learner in making a proper use of this tense, to observe further, that whenever the *preterite* in English may be turned into *was* or *were* and the *present participle* of the same verb, or into *used* and the *infinitive* of the same verb ; it is to be rendered by the *imperfect* tense in Italian : thus, if, without altering the meaning, *I* or *we* LOOKED *for*, may be changed into *I* WAS or *we* WERE LOOKING *for*, or into *I* or *we* USED to LOOK *for*, it must be rendered by *fo* CERCAVA, or *noi* CERCAVAMO.

The *first-perfect* is used to denote an action done in a period of time completely past ; as,

<i>poichè a morte mi SENTII fe-</i>		after I found myself mortally
<i>rito,</i>		wounded ;
<i>AVVENNE che il re di Francia</i>		it happened that the king of
<i>MORI,</i>		France died ;
<i>Colombo PARTI per la sco-</i>		Columbus departed for the dis-
<i>perta del nuovo mondo</i>		covery of the new world the
<i>l'anno 1492,</i>		year 1492 ;
<i>Io altresì questa notte passata</i>		I also had a dream last night.
<i>FECI un sogno,</i>		

The *second-perfect* is used to express an action done in a period of time not specified ; or, if specified, not completely past ; as,

<i>anzi t' HO sempre AMATO, e</i>		nay, I always loved thee, and
<i>AVUTO caro,</i>		held thee dear ;
<i>oè l' AVÈTE COMPERATO,</i>		you have obtained it by pur-
<i>ed io non l' HO VENDUTO,</i>		chase, without my selling it
		to you ;

- me' AVÉTE FATTO parlare con una statua di mármò,** you have made me speak with a marble statue ;
- già sòno otto ànni, l' HO PIÙ che la mia vita AMÁTO,** for these eight years have I loved thee more than my very life ;
- mólte útili scopérte sònosì FATTE nel presente século,** many useful discoveries have been made within the present century.

The phrase *I saw him this morning*, if used in the *forenoon*, when the morning is not yet elapsed, is rendered by *l' HO VEDÚTO stamattina* ; but, if used in the *afternoon*, when the morning is already elapsed, it must be rendered by *lo VIDI stamattina*.

## EXAMPLES.

**MÉNTRE STÁVAN CENÁNDÒ,** While they were at supper, her  
**VÉNNE IL MARÍTO. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)** husband came.

**Ègli INCONTRÒ LA CATÉLLA,** He met Catella, who was com-  
**CHE VENÍVA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)** ing.

**ÍO LAVORÁVA UN LÓRO GIARDÍNO bello e gránde, e, óltre a quésto, ANDÁVA alcúna vólta AL BÓSCO PER LE LÉGNE, ATTIGNÉVA ÁCQUA, E FACÉVA cotáki ÁLTRI SERVIGÉTTI ; ma le DÓNNE MI DÁVANO sì PÓCO, CHE ÍO NON NE POTÉVA APPÉNA PAGÁRE I CALZÁRI. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)** I had the care of a large and beautiful garden of theirs, and besides this I used sometimes to go to the forest for wood ; I drew water, and did other like services for them ; but the ladies gave me so little, that with it I could hardly pay for my shoes.

**Allór NÈ PUR TRE LÚSTRI AVÉA FORNÍTI. (Tass. Ger. 1. 60.)** Then he [Rinaldo] had scarcely finished his third lustrum.

**LA MÓGLIE, CHE ISABÉLLA AVÉA NÓME. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)** His wife, who was called Isabella.

**ÈRA DI BUÓNA MÉNTE, E DI FELÍCE INGÉGNO DOTÁTO, E BELLÍSSIMO FAVELLATÓRE. (Bott. Stor. Amer. 1. 5.)** He [Joseph Warren] was of good mind, endowed with a happy genius, and a very fine speaker.

**Una vécchia, che PARÉVA SÁNTA VERIDIÁNA, CHE DÀ BECCÁRE ÁLLE SÉRPI. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)** An old woman, who appeared Saint Veridiana feeding the serpents.

**ÈRA QUÉSTO GIARDÍNO VÁGO MÓLTO. (Bemb.)** This garden was very pleasant.

POICOMÈ A MÓRTE MI SENTÍ  
FERÍTO. (Petr.)

After I found myself mortally  
wounded.

AVVENNE CHE IL RE DI FRÁN-  
CIA MORÌ, ed in sùo luògo fu  
coronáto il figliuòlo. (Boec.)

It happened that the king of  
France died, and his son was  
crowned in his stead.

COLÓMBO PARTÌ PER LA SCO-  
PÉNTA DEL NUÓVO MÓNDO L' AN-  
NO 1492. (Vanz.)

Columbus departed for the dis-  
covery of the new world the year  
1492.

Se io fossi volúto andàre di-  
tro d' ògni, io non ci saréi venú-  
to, non tanto per lo túo, quánto  
per úno, che io altresì quÉSTA  
NÓTTE PARSÀTA NE FÉCL. (Bocc.  
g. 4. n. 6.)

If I had any faith in dreams, I  
should not have come here; and  
not so much for the sake of yours,  
as of one I also had last night.

ÁNZI T' HO SÉMPRE AMÁTO, E  
AVÚTO CÀRO innànci ad ògni  
áttro. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

Nay I always loved thee, and  
held thee dear beyond every other  
person.

Ed or voléssè Idéto che io fátto  
l' avéssi, perciò che vói L' AVÉTE  
COMPERÁTO, ED IO NON L' HO  
VENDÚTO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

And now would to Heaven that  
I had done so, because you have  
obtained it by purchase, without  
my selling it to you.

"Che ti páre? Hott' io béne  
la proméssa serváta?" — "Mes-  
sér, no; vói m' AVÉTE FÁTTO  
PARLÁRE CON ÚNA STÁTUA DI  
MÁRMO." (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

"What dost thou think of it?  
Have I not kept my promise?"  
—"No, sir; you have made me  
speak to a marble statue."

Io, misera me! GIÀ SÓNO ÓTTO  
ÁNNI, T' HO PIÙ CHE LA MÍA  
VITA AMÁTO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

Alas! for these eight years have  
I loved thee more than my very  
life.

MÓLTE ÚTILI SCOPÉRTE SÓNOSI  
FÁTTE NEL PRÉSENTE SÉCOLO.  
(Vanz.)

Many useful discoveries have  
been made within the present cen-  
tury.

USE OF CERTAIN TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE FOR SOME OTHER  
TENSES OF THE SAME MOOD; AND OF THE INFINITIVE FOR  
CERTAIN TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE, AND FOR THE CON-  
JUNCTIVE AND IMPERATIVE MOODS.

The *present* of the *indicative* is sometimes used, in  
narrations, for the *first-perfect*; as,

ÉSCE [for, uscì] velòce da he went quickly out of that  
quÉlla tómba, tomb;

**CÓRRE** [for, **CÓRSE**] *al palággio*, he ran to his palace ;  
**non è** [for, **ÈRA**] *più dúbbia* the way was no longer doubt-  
*la via,* ful ;  
**non è più oscura la notte,** the night was no longer dark.

*It is also used for the future ; as,*

**dománe è** [for, **SARÀ**] *l' últi-* to-morrow will be the last day ;  
*mo dì,*  
*che farái tu, se ella il díce* what wilt thou do, if she will  
[for, **DIRÀ**] *á' fratélli ?* tell it to her brothers ;  
*se ío infra otto giórni non vi* if I shall not cure you in eight  
**GUARISCO** [for, **GUARIRÒ**], days, have me burnt ;  
*fálemi brugíare,*  
*se tu ti cáli* [for, **CALERÁI**], if thou wilt cast thee down, I  
*ío non ti verrò díetro di* cannot chase thee on foot.  
*galóppo,*

*The first-perfect may be used for the present ; as,*

*or che avésti* [for, *che háI*], now what ails thee, that thou  
*che fáI cotál viso,* makest such a face ;  
*Anichino gittò un gran so-* Anichino gave a deep sigh.  
*spíro. La donna disse :* The woman said : "What  
*"Che avésti, Anichino?"* ails thee, Anichino ? "

*The first-perfect may be used, also, for the second-perfect ; as,*

*ónde fosti tu* [for, **SÍI STÁTO** where hast thou been this  
*tu] stamáne ? — Non so* morning ? — I know not  
*óve ío mi fúI* [for, **SÓNO** .where I have been ;  
**STÁTO**],  
*scegliésti ?* [for, **HÁI SCÉLTO?**] hast thou chosen ? — I have.  
*Ho scélto. — E món ? —* — Emon ? — Death. — Thou  
*Mórté. — L' avrái,* shalt have it.

*The second-pluperfect may be used for the first-perfect ; as,*

*il re fu giúnto* [for, **GIÚNSE**] the king arrived and said :  
*e disse : " Cavaliére, a quál* " Knight, what lady dost  
*dónna sé' tu ? "* thou belong to ? "  
*alzála la lanterná, ébber ve-* having raised the lantern, they  
**DÚTO** [for, **VÍDERO**] *il cat-* saw that rogue Andreuccio.  
*tívél di Andreuccio,*

The *future* is used for the *present*, in *doubtful actions*; as,

- PARRÀ [for, *forse* PÀRE] a perhaps it seems to you, that  
 vói, che non vi vóglia béne, she does not like you ;  
 gente si appressa : Elvira people approach : perhaps it  
 SARÀ [for, *forse* è Elvira], is Elvira.

The *future-anterior* is used for the *second-perfect*, in *doubtful cases*; as,

- AVRÒ DÉTTO [for, *forse* HO DÉTTO], perhaps I have said, that I am  
 che ho da andàre to go to Venice.  
 a Venezia,

The *infinitive* may be used for the *third person singular* of the *present* and of the *imperfect* of the *indicative*, and their *compounds*, depending on another verb of the same mood; as,

- conosco lui ÉSSERE [for, che egli è] un malvagio uomo, I know that he is a wicked man ;  
 udendo il re il malvagio ÉSSER [for, che il malvagio ERA] morto, the king hearing that his farrier was dead ;  
 ti converrà avère nella memoria, Iddio ÉSSERE STÀTO [for, che Iddio è STÀTO] creatóre del ciélo, e délla terra, thou must keep in thy mind, that God has been the creator of heaven and earth ;  
 s' accórse l' abàte AVÉR MANGIÀTO [for, che l' abàte AVÉA MANGIATO] fave sècche, he found out, that the abbot had eaten dry beans.

It may likewise be used for the *third person singular* of the *present* and of the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive*, and their *compounds*; as,

- si crède ÉSSERE [for, che egli SIA] uno de' più ricchi preláti del móndo, he is thought to be one of the richest prelates in the world ;  
 ella, credéndo lui ÉSSER [for, che egli FÓSSE] Gisippo, she, believing that he was Gisippus, answered yes ;  
 rispóse di sí,

*di Guiscardo ho to già méco* I have already determined  
*préso partito che FÁRRE* within myself what to do  
 [for, che ne DÉBBA FÁRE], with Guiscard ;  
*credéndo lui ÉSSER TORNÁTO* believing that he had returned  
 [for, che egli FÓBBE TOR- from the wood.  
 NÁTO] dal bósco,

Finally, the *infinitive* is used for the *second* person *singular* of the *imperative* mood, when *preceded* by the *negative* ; as,

ciò NON TEMÉR,\*  
 NON MI TOCCÁRE,

do not fear that ;  
 do not touch me.

## EXAMPLES.

ÈSCE VELÓCE DA QUÉLLA TÓN- He went quickly out of that  
 BA, CÓRRE AL PALÁGIO; non È tomb, ran to his palace ; his steps  
 piú incérto il sùo pássò, NON È were no longer uncertain, the way  
 PIÙ DÚBBIA LA VÍA, NON È PIÙ was no longer doubtful, the night  
 OSCÚRA LA NÓTTE. (Alberg. Nov.) was no longer dark.

Quóllo che mi átte di fàre, si What is to be done, let it be  
 fáccia tóto, perciocchè DOMÁNE done immediately, for to-morrow  
 È L' ÚLTIMO DÌ che io débbo éss- will be the last day of my being  
 sere aspettáto. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.) expected.

CHE FARÁI TU, SE ÉLLA LL What wilt thou do, if she tells it  
 DÍCE Á' FRATÉLLI? (Bocc. g. 3. to her brothers ?  
 n. 3.)

SE IO ÍNFRA ÓTTO GIÓRNI NON If I shall not cure you in eight  
 VI GUARÍSCO, FÁTEMI BRUCIÁRE. days, have me burnt.  
 (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)

SE TU TI CÁLI, IO NON TI VER- If thou wilt cast thee down  
 RÒ DIÉTRO DI GALÓFFO. (Dant. [into the pitch], I cannot chase  
 Inf. 22.) thee on foot.

OR CHE AVÉSTI, CHE FÁI Now what ails thee, that thou  
 COTÁL VÍSO. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.) makest such a face.

ANICHÍNO GITTÒ UN GRANDÍ- Anichino gave a very deep  
 SÍMO SOSPÍRO. LA DÓNNA, guar- sigh. The lady, having looked at  
 dátolo, DÍSSÉ : " CHE AVÉSTI, him, said : " What ails thee, Ani-  
 ANICHÍNO? Duólti cost, che io tí chino ? Art thou sorry, that I con-  
 vñco." (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.) quer thee ? "

\* These and similar expressions ought to be regarded, however, as equivalent to the phrases (*ti comando*, — *ti esórtó*, — *ti consiglío a*) CIÒ NON TEMERE, (*a*) NON MI TOCCARE, &c., '(I) do (command, — exhort, — counsel thee) not (to) fear that, not (to) touch me'; &c.; in which the words contained within parentheses are generally suppressed by *ellipsis*.

ÓNDE FOSTI TU STANÁRE? —  
NON SO ÓVE MI FÚI. (Bocc. g.  
3. n. 8.)

Where hast thou been this  
morning? — I know not where I  
have been.

SCGLIÉSTI? — HO SCÉLTO.  
— EMOH? — MÓRTE. — L' AVERÁI.  
(Alf. Antig. 4. 1.)

Hast thou chosen? — I have.  
— Emon? — Death. — Thou shalt  
have it.

*Io andávo per gránde bisógno  
in servigio délla mia dóнна, IL  
RE FU GIÚRTO, E DÍSSÉ: "CA-  
VALIÉRE, A QUAL DÓNNA SÉ'  
TU?" (Nov. ant. 35.)*

I was going on an important  
errand in the service of my lady,  
when the king arrived, and said:  
"Knight, what lady dost thou be-  
long to?"

ALZÁTA alquánto LA' LANTÉH-  
NA, ÉBBER VEDÚTO IL CATTIVÉL  
DI ANDREÚCCIO. (Bocc. g. 2. n.  
5)

Having raised the lantern a  
little, they saw that rogue An-  
dreuccio.

Eh vá! cáro amíco, PARRÀ A  
VÓI, CHE NON VI VÓGLIA BÉNE.  
(Gold. Ver. Am.)

Come! dear friend, perhaps it  
seems to you, that she does not  
like you

GÉNTE SI APPRÉSSA: ELVÍRA  
SARÀ. (Alf. Fil. 4. 1.)

People approach: perhaps it is  
Elvira.

AVRÒ DÉTTO, CHE HO DA AN-  
DÁRE [A VENÉZIA], per úna lét-  
tera che trátta di mio zío. (Gold.)

Perhaps I have said, that I am  
to go to Venice on account of a  
letter which concerns my uncle.

CONÓSCO LÚI ÉSSERE UN MAL-  
VÁGIO UÓMO. (Gr. Gr.)

I know that he is a wicked  
man.

UDÉNDO IL RE d' Inghiltérta  
IL MALISCÁLCO ÉSSER MÓRTO.  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

The king of England hearing  
that his farrier was dead.

TI CONVERRÀ sémpre AVÉRE  
NÉLLA MEMÓRIA, IDDÍO ÉSSERE  
STÁTO CREATÓR DEL CIÉLO, E  
DÉLLA TÉRRA. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 4.)

Thou must keep always in thy  
mind that God has been the crea-  
tor of heaven and earth.

ÉGNÌ S' ACCÓRSE L' ABÁTE AVÉR  
MANGIÁTO FÁVE SÉCCHE. (Bocc.  
g. 10. n. 2.)

He found out, that the abbot  
had eaten dry beans.

Vénne a córte l' abbatte di Clu-  
gni, il quále si CRÉDE ÉSSERE ÚNO  
DÉ' PIÙ RÍCCHI PRELÁTI DEL  
MÓNDO. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

There came to court the abbot  
of Cluny, who is thought to be  
one of the richest prelates in the  
world.

ÉLLA, CREDÉNDO LÚI ÉSSER  
GISÍPPO, RISPÓSE DI SÌ.

She, believing that he was  
Gisippus, answered yes.

DI GUISCÁRDO HO IO GIÀ  
MÉCO PRÉSO PARTÍTO CHE FÁRNE;  
*ma di te sállo Iddio, chè io non  
so che FÁRMI.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

I have already determined with-  
in myself what to do with Guis-  
card; but God knows what to do  
with thee, for I do not.

CREDÉNDÓ LÚI ÉSSER TORNÁ-  
TO DAL BÓSCO, avvisò di riprén-  
derlo fórté. (Bocc. g. 1.-n. 4.)

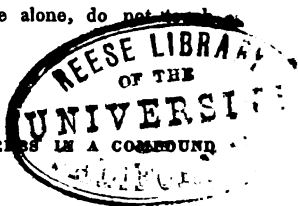
Believing that he had returned  
from the wood, he thought of  
reprimanding him severely.

CIO NON TEMÉR, chè in cru-  
deltà son pári — I tubi minústri  
a te. (Alf. Filip. 4. 2.)

Do not fear that, for thy min-  
isters are not inferior to thee in  
cruelty.

Lásciami, NON MI TOCCÁRE.  
(Bocc.)

Let me alone, do not touch  
me.



OF THE TENSES OF THE DEPENDENT VERBS IN A COMPOUND SENTENCE.

When, in a compound sentence, the *principal verb* is in the *present* of the *indicative*, or in the *future*, the *dependent verb* must be put in the *present* of the *conjunctive*, if we mean to imply the *present* or *future* time; and in the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive*, if we mean to imply the *past*; as,

IO CRÉDO *omdi che mónti e  
piágge SÁPPIAN di che tém-  
pre sía la mía víta,*

I believe that, by this time,  
mountains and plains know  
what is the condition of my  
life;

CONVERRÀ *che tu GÓDA di tal  
desto,*

it is proper that this wish of  
thine should be gratified;

CRÉDO MI PORTASSE *amóre,  
GIUDICHERÀ *facilménte quàn-  
to mi FÓSSI rallegráto,**

I believe that he loved me;  
you will easily imagine how  
much I rejoiced at it.

When the principal verb is in the *imperfect* or the *perfect* of the *indicative*, or in the *conditional*, the *dependent verb* is generally put in the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive*; as,

APPÉNA SAPÉVA *che far si  
DOVÉSSE,*

he hardly knew what to do;



DOMANDÒ *quál fósse la cagione del loro romóre,* she asked what was the cause of their noise ;  
*chi starébbe meglio di me,* who would be happier than I,  
*se quelli denári fóssero míi?* if that money were mine ?

In *suppositive* or *conditional* phrases, the *imperfect* of the *indicative* in English, — *had, was, or were,* is rendered in Italian by the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive* ; as,

*se così non fósse, io non vi* [if it *was* not so] were it not  
*potréi prestáre un gróssa,* so, I could not lend you a  
 farthing ;

*se non avéssi paura di mio* [if I *had* not the fear — if I  
*padre, io gli insegnéti la* *was* not afraid] were I not  
*risposta,* afraid of my father, I would  
 teach him how to reply ;

*se avéssi questi denári, tégiti* If I *had* this money, I would  
*presteréti incontante,* lend it to thee immediately.

## EXAMPLES.

*Si cà' io mi CRÉDO OMÁI, CHE* So that I believe, that, by this  
*MÓNTI, E PIÁGGE, — E fúmmi, e* time, mountains, and plains, and  
*séice SÁPPIAN DI CHE TÈMPRE —* rivers, and woods know what is  
*SÍA LA MÍA VÍTA. (Petr. s. 22.)* the condition of my life.

*DI TAL DESÍO CONVERSÀ CHE* It is pesser that this wish of  
*TU GÓDA. (Dant. Inf. 8.)* thine should be gratified.

*CRÉDO MI PORTÁSSE AMÓRE, e* I believe that he loved me, and  
*che di me non fósse méno ar-* that he was no less ardent in love  
*dénte. (Ariost.)* than I.

*GIUDICHERÀ FACILMÉNTÉ* You will easily imagine how  
*QUÁNTO te MI FÓSSI RALLEGHÁ-* much I rejoiced at it.  
*TO. (Bent. lett.)*

*APPÉNA SAPÉVA CHE PER SI* He hardly knew what to do.  
*DOVÉSSE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)*

*DOMANDÒ LA REGÍNA QUÁL* The queen asked what was the  
*FÓSSE LA CAGÍONE DEL LÓRO RO-* cause of their noise.  
*MÓRE. (Bocc. g. 6.)*

*CHI STARÉBBE MÉGLIO DI ME,* Who would be more happier  
*SE QUÉLLI DENÁRI FÓSSERO MÍI?* I, if that money were mine ?  
 (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

SE COSÌ NON FÓSSE, IO NON VI POTREI PRESTARÉ UN GRÓSSO. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.) Were it not so, I could not lend you a farthing.

SE IO NON AVÉSSI PAÚRA DI MÍO FÁDRE, IO GLI INSEGNERÉI LA RISPOSTA. (Mach. Com.) Were I not afraid of my father, I would teach him how to reply.

SE IO AVÉSSI QUÉSTI DENÁRI, IO TÉGLI PRESTERÉI INCONTANÉTE. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.) If I had this money, I would lend it to thee immediately.

---

OF THE MANNER OF EXPRESSING THE ENGLISH PRESENT-PARTICIPLE IN ITALIAN.

The English *present-participle* may be expressed in Italian :

First, by the *gerund* of the corresponding verb ; as,

VEGÉNDOLO consumáre come la néve al sóle, seeing him waste away like snow in the sun ;  
DORMÉNDO gli párve di vedére la dómma súa, [sleeping or] whilst he was asleep, it seemed to him that he saw his lady.

Secondly, by the conjunction *che*, or the adverb *quando*, and a *tense* of the *indicative* mood ; as,

POI CH' ÉBBI RIPOSÁTO il córpo lássó, having rested my weary body  
QUAND' ÉBBE DÉTTO ciò, riprésé il téschio mísero có' dénti, having said this, he took up once more that miserable skull with his teeth.

Thirdly, by a *preposition* and the verb in the *infinitive* ; as,

consumò quélle mattina IN CERCÁRli, he spent that morning in looking after them ;  
crédo che le suóre sían. tútte A DORMÍRE, I believe that the nuns are all [sleeping or] asleep.

When the English present-participle has before it a preposition, such as *of, from, with, on, in, for, without, before, after, &c.*, it is always rendered in Italian by the corresponding verb in the *infinitive* with a *preposition*.

If the participle is preceded by the prepositions *of, from, with*, they are expressed in Italian by the preposition *di*, attended by the infinitive ; as,

<i>ébbi il piacere DI VEDÉRLO,</i>	I had the pleasure <i>of</i> seeing him ;
<i>élla m' impedisce DI FARLO,</i>	you prevent me <i>from</i> doing so ;
<i>conténto D' AVÉRLA trováta,</i>	being content <i>with</i> having found her.

The preposition *on*, before the participle, may be expressed by the prepositions *di*, or *in* ; as,

<i>si vanta D' AVÉR la lóro conoscenza,</i>	he values himself <i>on</i> being acquainted with them ;
<i>NEL PARTÍRE gli sovvenne di léi,</i>	<i>on</i> his departure he recollected her.

The preposition *in* is rendered by *a*, or *in* ; as,

<i>che A FAR ciò volésse aiutarlo,</i>	that he would assist him <i>in</i> doing that ;
<i>avéa NEL QUÉTAR popolo autorità ed arte,</i>	<i>in</i> appeasing the people he had both authority and art.

The prepositions *for, without, before, after, &c.*, are literally translated.

If the participle is preceded by the preposition *by*, this *preposition* is generally *omitted* in Italian, and the *participle* rendered by the *gerund* of the corresponding verb ; as,

<i>gli scolári impáranó le régole di una lingua STUDIÁNDO-le,</i>	scholars learn the rules of a language <i>by</i> studying them.
---	---

But if we wish to *express* the *preposition*, then the verb must be put in the *infinitive*, and *by* rendered by *con*; as,

*il divino Giulio rintuzzò la sedizione del suo esercito* the divine Julius checked the  
*-col dir sólo: "Ah Romani!"* sedition of his army by only  
saying: "Ah Romans!"

## EXAMPLES.

*VEGGÉNDOLO io CONSUMÁRE* I seeing him waste away as the  
*CÓME si fa LA NÉVE AL SÓLE.* snow does in the sun.  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

*DORMÉNDO GLI PARVE in só- gno DI VEDÉRE LA DÓNNA SÚA* Whilst he was asleep, it seemed  
*andár per un bóscó assái bello.* to him that he saw, in a dream, his  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.) lady going through a very beautiful  
wood.

*POICH' ÉBBI RIPORÁTO IL Cór- PO LÁSSO, — Riprésí via per la* Having rested my wearied body,  
*pióggia désérta.* (Dant. Inf. 1.) I made my way through the des-  
serted shore.

*QUAND' ÉBBE DÉTTO CIÒ, cògli bechi iórti, — Riprésé IL TÉS- CHIO MISERO CÒ' DÉNTI — Che féro all' ósso, còme d' un can, fòrti.* (Dant. Inf. 33.) Having said this, with looks  
askanse he took up once more that miserable skull with his teeth,  
which were as strong upon the bone as those of a dog.

*Tútto il rimanénite di QUÉLLA MATTÍNA CONSUMÒ IN CERCÁRLI.* He spent all the rest of that  
(Bocc. g. 8, n. 3.) morning in looking after them.

*Io mi CRÉDO CHE LE SUÓRE SIÉN TÚTTE A DORMÍRE.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.) I believe that the nuns are all  
asleep.

*Non pñma di ieri ÉBBI IL FIA- CÈRE DI VEDÉRE, in càsa dell' ambasciadóre del re di Frància, . . . .* (Bent.) Not before yesterday did I have  
the pleasure of seeing, at the house of the ambassador of the king of  
France, . . . .

*Se non ch' ÉLLA M' IMPEDÍSCE DI FÁRLO.* (Metast. lett.) Except that you prevent me  
from doing so.

*CONTÉNTO DI AVÉR TROVÁTA Filoména.* (Bocc.) Being content with having found  
Philomena.

*Égli si VÁNTA D' AVÉR LA LÓRO CONOSCÉNZÁ.* (Gold.) He values himself on being ac-  
quainted with them.

NEL PARTIRE GLI SOVVENE On his departure he recollected  
DI LÉI, *che misera rimasa era.* her, whom he had left so misera-  
(Nov. Adl.) ble.

*Pregandolo* CHE A FAR CIÒ Begging that he would assist  
VOLÉSSE AIUTARLO. (Bocc. g. 6.) him in doing that.

AVÉA NEL QUETÁR PÓPOLO AU- In appeasing the people, he had  
TORITÀ ED ARTE. (Dav. St. 8.) both authority and art.

GLI SCOLÁRI IMPÁRANO LE RÉ- Scholars learn the rules of a  
GOLE DI ÚNA LÍNGUA STUDIÁN- language by studying them.  
DOLE. (Rosasco.)

IL DIVÍNO GIÚLIO RINTUZZÒ The divine Julius checked the  
LA SEDIZIÓNE DEL SÚO ESÉRCITO sedition of his army by only say-  
COL DÍR SÓLO: "AH QUIRÍTI!" ing: "Ah Romans!"  
(Dav. Adl.)

---

OF THE WAY OF RENDERING INTO ITALIAN THE ENGLISH  
PARTICLE *to*, BEFORE THE INFINITIVE OF VERBS.

The particle *to* prefixed to English verbs is used sometimes as a mere *sign* of the *infinitive*, and sometimes as a *preposition*. When it is a mere *sign*, it is *never rendered* in Italian, *except* when the infinitive is *used as a noun*, and then it is *expressed* by the article *il* or *lo*. When *to* has the force of a *preposition*, it is *rendered* by the prepositions *di*, *a*, *per*.

When the infinitive of verbs *can* be expressed in Italian by a *noun*; as, — '*to read* is useful,' *la lettura è útile*; — '*always to study* is fatiguing,' *lo stúdio continuo è faticoso*; — the particle *to* is rendered by the article *il* or *lo*; — *il leggere è útile*, '*to read* is useful'; — *lo studiár sempre è faticoso*, '*always to study* is fatiguing'; as,

*le impóse* IL SEGUITÁRE [OR, she ordered her to continue ;  
IL PROSEGUIMÉNTO],

L' ASTENÉRSI [OR, L' ASTI- to abstain from what pleases,  
NÉNTZA] *da quel che piáce,* is true virtue ;  
*è véra virtù,*

*la donna veggendo che* IL the woman, seeing that to  
*PREGARE non le valéva* [OR, pray was useless, had re-  
*che LE PREGHIÈRE non le* course to threats :  
*valévano], ricòrse AL MI-*  
*NACCIARE* [OR, ALLE MI-  
*NACCE],*

But if the infinitive *cannot* be expressed by a *noun*, the particle *to* is rendered by a *preposition*.

If the particle *to* is preceded by a verb signifying *remembering* or *forgetting*, *pleasing* or *displeasing*, *rejoicing* or *grieving*, *owning* or *denying*, *permitting* or *prohibiting*, *telling*, *declaring*, *affirming*, *supposing*, *suspecting*, *fearing*, *commanding*, *asking*, *entreating*, *doubting*, *promising*, *advising*, *concluding*, *finishing*, *proposing* ; or by any verb implying *desire* or *aversion*, it is rendered in Italian by the preposition *di* ; as,

*a me piáce* DI *dirvi una no-* it pleases me to tell you a  
*vèlla,* story ;  
*m' è cadúto nell' ànimo* DI it has occurred to my mind to  
*dimostrarvi,* show you ;  
*a me appartiene* DI *ragioná-* it belongs to me to speak ;  
*re,*  
*ama* D' *èssere svegliáto* a he likes to be awakened by  
*suón di trómbe,* the sound of trumpets.

The particle *to* is translated by the preposition *a*, when it comes after verbs signifying *beginning*, *teaching*, *learning*, *attaining*, *insisting*, *persisting*, *proceeding*, *remaining*, *continuing*, *opposing*, *contributing*, *engaging*, *liking*, *accustoming*, *encouraging*, *obliging* ; after verbs implying *inclination*, *difficulty*, *application*, *thought*, *reluctance*, *fitness* ; and after verbs signifying *motion* ; as,

*cominciò* A *chiedere perdóno,* he began to ask pardon ;  
*ègli è bruttó* A *redére,* he is ugly to look at ;  
*quánto m' era ciò caro* AD how pleasing it was to me to  
*udire !* hear this !  
*chi nol crède,* *venga* A *ve-* let him who does not believe it,  
*dèrta,* come and see her.

And whenever for the particle *to*, joined with the infinitive of English verbs, can be substituted the phrases *in order to*, — *with the design of*; it is rendered in Italian by the preposition *per*; as,

- PER MOSTRARE *d' avere a grado la sua condotta,* to show how agreeable his visit was to him;  
*l' agricola, che Cristo elesse all' orto suo* PER AIUTARLO, the husbandman, whom Christ chose to assist him [to be his helpmate] in his own garden.

## EXAMPLES.

*La regina, a Filomena voltata,* LE IMPOSE IL SEGUIRE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.) The queen, having turned to Philomena, ordered her to converse.

E VERA VIRTUTE, — IL SAPER SI ASTENER DA QUEL CHE PIACE, — *Se quel che piace offende.* (Past. Fid. 2. 2.) To know how to abstain from what pleases, when that which pleases is injurious, is true virtue.

LA DONNA VEGGENDO CHE IL PREGARE NON LE VALÉVA, RICORSE AL MINACCIARE. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.) The woman, seeing that to pray was useless, had recourse to threats.

A ME PIACE DI DIRVI UNA NOVÉLLA. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 8.) It pleases me to tell you a story.

M' È CADUTO NELL' ANIMO DI DIMOSTRARVI *nella novella, che a me tocca di dire . . . .* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 5.) It has occurred to my mind to show to you, in the story which I am to tell you, . . . .

A ME *omni* APPARTIENE DI RACCONTARE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.) Now it belongs to me to speak.

AMA *méglio* D' ESSERE SVEGLIATO A SUON DE TRUMBE, e romór d' arma, che a suon di cetra, o di viola. (Dav. Stor.) He likes better to be awakened by the sound of trumpets, and the noise of arms, than by the sound of citherns or viols.

IL MÉDICO COMINCIO A CHIEDERE *PERDÓNO.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) The physician began to ask pardon.

ÈGLI È *deforme* di corpo, NEUTRO A VEDERE. (Varch.) He is deformed in his person, and ugly to look at.

O QUANTO M' ERA CIÒ CARO AD UDIRE! (Bocc.) O how pleasing it was to me to hear this!

CHI NOL CRÉDE, VÉNGA ÉGLI  
A VEDÉRLA. (Petr. s. 210.)

Let him, who does not believe  
it, come and see her himself.

*Credéndo costui éssere un gran  
barbassóro, PER MOSTRÁRE DI  
AVÉRE A GRÁDO LA SÚA VENÚTA,  
úna gran còppa doráta, la quále  
davánti avéva, comandò, che fús-  
se empiúta di víno, e portáta al  
gentiluómo. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)*

Believing that he was a great  
man, to show how agreeable his  
visit was to him, he ordered that  
a large gilded cup, which he had  
before him, should be filled up  
with wine and given to the gentle-  
man.

*Doménico fu détto, ed io ne  
párlo, — Siccòma dell' AGRÍCOLA,  
CHE CRÍSTO — ELÉSSE ALL' ÓR-  
TO SÚO PER AIUTÁRLO. (Dant.  
Par. 12.)*

He was called Dominic, and  
I speak of him, as of the husband-  
man whom Christ chose to be his  
helpmate in his own garden.

EXERCISE XXXIII.

	Would to Heaven		that my fortune would allow me
	<i>Faccia il Cielo</i>		<i>fortuna däre</i>
	to		put them in execution. They came in sight
	<i>di</i>		<i>méttere ópera.</i>
of —	(saw themselves near to)	a small-castle	from
—	<i>vedere</i>	<i>vicino</i>	<i>castello di</i>
which, having been seen,		about	twelve men suddenly
,	<i>vedere,</i>	<i>da<sup>3</sup></i>	<i>4 fante<sup>5</sup> súbito<sup>1</sup></i>
rushed out upon them. Finally, no — (not any) virtue	<i>uscire<sup>2</sup></i>	—	<i>finalmente<sup>3</sup></i> — <i>Nè<sup>1</sup></i> <i>virtù<sup>4</sup></i>
	can be found		in those, who have given themselves
	<i>si tróva<sup>2</sup></i>		<i>éssere däre</i>
	up		to gluttony. Oh! how true these things
	<i>in préda</i>		<i>góla. come véro cosa</i>
are. It was the castle of one of the family of the	—	—	—
Orsini, and by		good fortune	
,	<i>per</i>	<i>ventúra</i>	his lady — (a lady of —
his) was there. Words		are not necessary	in this
.	<i>Paróla</i>	<i>non bisógnano</i>	— —



business — (here). The mother said: “(O my) daughter,  
 — — — — — — — — madre Dite: “ figlia mia,

what warm | are you talking about? ” |  
 caldo | fa “égli?”

The father, | on account of | the love (that) he bore  
 padre, | per | amore portare

her, took no care — (gave himself little care) | to |  
 , — — — — dare<sup>2</sup> poco<sup>2</sup> cura<sup>2</sup> | di<sup>2</sup> |

marry her again, and it seemed not modest (thing) | in |  
 maritare<sup>2</sup> piu<sup>2</sup>, — — parere<sup>13</sup> né<sup>7</sup> onesto<sup>19</sup> cosa<sup>11</sup> | a<sup>2</sup> |

her | to | ask it (of him). Who was a very young  
 ° | il<sup>13</sup> richiedere<sup>14</sup> — aveva giovane

and handsome | man |. And he saw a knight  
 bello | della persona |. 1 — vedde<sup>2</sup> cavaliere<sup>7</sup>

dressed in black following — (to come after) her. But  
 — — bruno<sup>2</sup> — venire<sup>2</sup> dietro-a<sup>2</sup> 2.

the knight who saw this cried | from afar | to him.  
 cavaliere vedde<sup>2</sup> 1 gridare | di lontano | a him.

The following day the Saladin caused a most beautiful  
 seguente di 2 fare<sup>2</sup> bello<sup>10</sup>

and rich bed | to be put up | in a large hall.  
 11 ricco<sup>12</sup> letto<sup>12</sup> | fare<sup>2</sup> up | in a large hall gram<sup>7</sup> sala<sup>2</sup>.

Yesterday | at | this hour we were in Mugello. He  
 ieri | a | ora — —

was one of those men, who are more attached to liberty,  
 uomo, 2 1 affezionato<sup>2</sup> libertà,

than to life. Three months ago there was a conflagration.  
 vita. mese fa incendio.

A noisy event happened this year. Ferondo was  
 strepitoso<sup>2</sup> avvenimento<sup>2</sup> accadere anno. 2 Esere<sup>2</sup>

quite pale.  
 tutto pallido.

To-morrow will be a holy-day. If thou wilt touch  
 Domani — festa. toccare

her with this | written paper, | she will follow thee  
 scritta, | venir dietro

immediately. He said he was perfidious and vile. He  
*incontinenté. — Dire pérvido vile. —*

took a leap, and threw himself down from the other  
*Préndere saltó, gittáre —*

side. He thought that | this man | was such as  
*parte. — Pensáre — | costui | dovére éssere*

the wickedness of the Burgundians required (it). From  
*malvagità Borgognóne richiédere*

these | it was heard | in the neighbouring fields, that  
*si séppe | vicino cámpo, —*

Terni was guarded by four-hundred horsemen. If he  
*guardáre quattrocénto caválio.*

thinks that the republic needs — (has need) that the  
*crédere — república — bisógno*

senators should speak freely, why does he enter into so  
*senátore parláre líbero, entráre 2*

trifling details? Do not make a noise. She saw  
*débole cosa? fare — strépito. — consáccere 2*

clearly that her vision had been true. She, who was  
*Manifesto 1 — visióne 2 véro 4.*

not a physician, believed without any doubt, that he was  
*2 — médica 1, crédere 2 fáullo, — 7*

dead. Do not flatter thyself.  
*mórto. lusingáre*

Come into the house, for I believe (that) it is  
*Venire casa, crédere*

| better | that she should not see thee. What dost  
*béne | vedére*

thou wish that I should say to her, if I should happen  
*volére dire , — — —*

to — (it happens that I should) speak to her? He  
*— avvenire favelláre ? —*

asked him what had become of the other leg of the  
*Demandáre diventé — cóssa*

crane. He was disposed | to | go wherever she  
*grá. dispónere | di | andáre dovúnque —*

pleased — (it was agreeable to her). I never should  
 — — — a grado — — —

have believed, that he would act so — (was capable of  
 credere, — — — capace

doing this). Who would have been the one — (that),  
 far — — —

that would not have — (set himself to) run-away.  
 essere mettere fuggire.

The king having ordered. Setting fire | to |  
 re ordinare Appiccare | per |

every place. I met them riding post. That day  
 luogo. — Incontrare correre posta. giorno

having passed. Having done writing. When she  
 passare. finire scrivere. —

began to sing.  
 cominciare cantare.

He forbids him to produce the proofs of his  
 — vietare produrre prove

innocence. I am very glad to see you — (I re-  
 innocenza. — — — vedere — — — ral-

joice myself much at seeing you). It is a crime in  
 legare vedere — delitto

Tyre to have a great fortune.\* It begins to rain.  
 Tiro gran bene. — Cominciare piovere.

I beseech you to grant me that favor. If it was  
 — pregare accordare favore. —

a fault to leave thee, behold I make amends for  
 colpa lasciare, ecco — — —

it — (I amend it). He likes to play. I did  
 — ammendare amare giuocare. — fare

so — (it) to oblige you. She speaks thus to  
 — obbligare — Parlare

vex me.  
 tormentare .

\* Fortune, in the plural.

## CHAPTER VIII.

PARTICIPLES, AND USE AND POSITION OF CERTAIN  
ADVERBS.

## AGREEMENT OF PARTICIPLES.

It has already been observed (p. 344) that *participles* in Italian are *considered* and often *used* as *adjectives*, and that, when so used, (pp. 345, 411) they *agree* with *substantives* in *gender* and *number*.

This is always the case with *present-participles*, which constantly *agree* in *gender* and *number* with their *subject*; as,

una nave portante uomini tempestanti, pericola- nti, soggiacenti a tan- ti mari,	a ship carrying men tempest- tossed, endangered, and sub- ject to so many storms;
presente agli occhi suoi lei gridante mercè vendro- no,	before his eyes they slew her [who was] crying out for mercy;
alle donne aspettanti si ri- volse, e disse,	he addressed himself to the la- dies [who were] waiting, and said.

By a peculiarity of language, and in imitation of the *ablative absolute* of the Latin, we often find in good writers a *present-participle* with its *noun* or *pronoun*, *independent* of any verb, and *standing*, as it were, *alone* in a discourse; as,

quando, sopravvenente la notte, si rese un tempo fierissimo e tempestoso,	when, night coming on, there came very severe and tem- pestuous weather;
Cesare parlò assettatamente, udenti noi, della vita e della morte,	Cæsar spoke much to the point, [whilst] we [were] hearing him, about life and death.

With regard to the *agreement of past-participles*, the following are the most sure rules :

When the *past-participle* is *joined* to the verb *essere*, 'to be'; or to such verbs as *venire*, *restare* or *rimanere*, *vedersi*, &c., used in the signification of 'to be'; it is to *agree* with the *subject* of the verb, with which it is joined, in *gender* and *number*; as,

ESSI ERAN DI FRONDI DI QUÉ- CIA INGHIRLANDATI,	they were garlanded with oak- leaves;
NÒ ERANO DE FÀTTE DE' VITEL- LIANI PUNITE, MA BEN PA- GATE,	nor were the faults of Vitel- lius' troops punished, but well paid;
MÉNTRE CH' ÈLLA [LA LINGUA] NON VÉNGA [FOR, NON SÌA] USATA DA FAMÓSI SCRITTÓRI,	whilst it [the language] is not adopted by celebrated writ- ters;
PROCURERÒ CHE [ÈGLI] RÈSTI [FOR, SÌ] IMPIEGATO IN QUESTA CITTÀ,	I shall endeavour that he may be employed in this city;
ÈGLI RIMÀSE [FOR, FU] MA- RAVIGLIATO,	he was astonished;
IL GIOVANE INFELICE SI VIDE [FOR, FU] TOSTO TRATTO IN PRIGIONE,	the unhappy youth was soon taken to prison.

But when the *past-participle* is *joined* to the verb *avere*, 'to have'; — if this verb is used, instead of *essere*, in the signification of 'to be'; or is used in the signification of 'to hold,' 'to possess'; &c., as an *active* and *not* an *auxiliary* verb; the participle *agrees* with the *object* of the verb in *gender* and *number*; as,

PER NON POTÉRTI VEDÉRE L' A- VRÈSTI [FOR, TÌ SARÈSTI] CAVÁTI GLI OCCHI,	thou wouldst have torn out thy eyes, not to see thyself;
S' AVÉA [FOR, S' ERA] MÈSSE ALCUNE PETRUCCE IN BÓCCA,	he had put some small stones in his mouth;
ÙNO CHE FORÁTA AVÉA [FOR, TENÉA, POSSEDÉA] LA GÓLA,	one who had his throat pierc- ed;

HO [FOR, TÈNGO] SÌ AVVÈZZA LA MÈNTE A CONTEMPLÀR A- LA COSTÈI,	I have a mind so accus- tomed to contemplate this lady alone;
BOACHÈ AVÈSSERO [FOR, TE- NÈSSERO] LE SPÀDE ISGUA- NÀTE,	although they had unsheathed their swords;
NON HO QUÈSTE CÒSE SAPÙTE DÀ' VICINI,	I did not hear these things from the neighbours;
AVÈA LA LUNA PERDÙTI I SUOI RÀGGI,	the moon had lost her rays.

If the verb *avère*, to which the *past-participle* is joined, is used as an *auxiliary* verb, in order to represent the idea of *past time*, which *could be* equally expressed by a *single form* of the verb, which the participle belongs to; then this *participle* remains *invariable*; as,

CÒME IO AVRÒ DÀTO [OR, DA- RÒ] LORO OGNI CÒSA,	as soon as I shall have given to them every thing;
CERCÀTO HO [OR, CERCÁI] SÈMPRE SOLITÀRIA VÌA,	I have always sought a solitary way;
M' HA DIMOSTRÀTO [OR, MI DIMOSTRÒ] LA CAGIÒNE DEL TÙO MÀLE,	he has manifested to me the cause of thy evil;
CHI QUÈSTE CÒSE HA MANIFE- STÀTO [OR, MANIFESTÒ] AL MAÈSTRO?	who has told these things to the master?

When the *past-participle* is preceded by one of the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, *si*, *il*, *lo*, *la*, *li*, *gli*, *le*, *ne*, *che*, *cui*, *quale*, *quali*, *quanti*, as *objects* of the verb, the participle agrees with the *pronouns*, or the *objects represented* by them, in *gender* and *number*; as,

ELLA MEDÈSIMA ME LE HA DÈT- TE [OR, MI HA DÈTTE QUÈ- STE CÒSE],	she herself has told them to me;
IL LIBÈRTO DICÈVA AVÈRLA ÈSSO UCCÌSA [OR, AVÈRE ÈSSO UC- CÌSA LA DÒNNA],	the freed-man said that he had killed her himself;

- tu CI *hái* *oggi* *stato* DILITICÁTE [OR, *hái* DILITICÁTE NÓI], thou hast delighted us so much to-day ;
- la *quale* *io* *racconterò* *per* *farvi* ACCÓRTE [OR, *faré* ACCÓRTE VÓI], which I will relate to show you ;
- si* *fé* *dare* *l'acqua*, *CHE* *il* *di* *davanti* *aveva* FÁTTA, she caused the water to be given to her, which she had prepared the day before ;
- vedendo* *così* *fatta* *donna*, *e* *cú* *egli* *colanto* AMÁTA *avea*, seeing such a lady, and one whom he had loved so much ;
- LI *danni*, LI *QUALI* *tu* *hái* *avúti* *per* *me*, the evils which thou hast sustained on my account.

The *participle*, however, remains *invariable* if it is accompanied by an *infinitive*, and the abovementioned pronouns are the *objects* of this infinitive ; as,

- le *cose* *che* *già* *aveva* UDÍTO *dire*, *che* *erano* *intervenute*, the things which he had heard of as having happened ;
- tutti *o'* *avrà* FÁTTO MORÍRE, he will have put you all to death ;
- la *donna*, *la* *quale* *il* *lungo* *vagheggiare* *non* *aveva* POTÚTO MUÓVERE, the lady, whom his long admiration had not been able to move.

Finally, *past-participles* may be used, like present-participles, *absolutely* ; the gerund of the verb *essere*, or *avere*, being generally understood ; and *then*, if the gerund understood is *essendo*, they agree with the *subject*, and if *avendo*, with the *object* of the proposition ; as,

- IL *famigliare* GIÚNTO [FOR, ESSÉNDO GIÚNTO], *e* *dáte* [FOR, AVÉNDO DÁTE] *le* *lettere*, *e* *fátta* [FOR, AVÉNDO FÁTTA] *l'ambasciata*, *fu* *con* *gran* *festa* *ricevuto*, the domestic having arrived, and having consigned the the letters and delivered the message, was received with great joy.

EXAMPLES.

UNA NÁVE PORTÁNTE UÓMINI  
TEMPESTÁNTI, PERICOLÁNTI, SOG-  
GIACÉNTI A TÁNTI MARÓSI. (Giov.  
Vill. 11. 3.)

A ship carrying men tempest-  
tossed, endangered, and subject to  
so many storms.

PRESENTÉ ÁGLI ÓCCHI SUÓI  
LÉI GRIDÁNTE MERCÈ e aiúto  
SVENÁRONO. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 4.)

Before his eyes they slew her  
[who was] crying out for mercy  
and assistance.

ÁLLE DÓNNE ASPETTÁNTI SI  
RIVÓLSE, E DÍSSE. (Bocc. g. 9.  
n. 10.)

He addressed himself to the  
ladies who were waiting, and said.

QUÁNDO, SOPRAVVEGNÉNTÉ LA  
NÓTTE, con éssa insiéme SÚRSE  
UN TÉMPO FIERÍSSIMO E TEMPE-  
STÓSO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

When, night coming on, there  
came with it very severe and tem-  
pestuous weather.

CÉSARE PARLÒ bello e ASSET-  
TAMÉNTÉ, UDÉNTI NÓI, DÉLLA  
VÍTA E DÉLLA MÓRTE, *quándo*  
dísse . . . . (Brun. Tes. 8. 34.)

Cæsar spoke finely and much  
to the point, we hearing him,  
about life and death, when he  
said . . . .

ÉSSI ÉRAN *tútti* DI FRÓNDI  
QUÉRCIA INGHIRLANDÁTI. (Bocc.  
g. 9. n. 1.)

They were all garlanded with  
oak-leaves.

NÈ ÉRANO LE FÁLTE DÉ' VI-  
TELLIÁNI PUNÍTE, MA BEN PA-  
GÁTE. (Dav. Stor. 3.)

Nor were the faults of Vitellius'  
troops punished, but well paid.

*Ma stasi úna língua nóbile,*  
*póco le gioverà méstre ch' élla*  
NON VÉNGA USÁTA DA FAMÓSI  
SCRITTÓRI. (Buom.)

But however noble a language  
may be, this will be of little use to  
it, whilst it is not adopted by cele-  
brated writers.

*Se non mi sarà lécito di spo-*  
*sarlo, PROCURERÒ alméno CHE*  
RÉSTI IMPIEGÁTO IN QUÉSTA CIT-  
TÀ. (Gold. Avv.)

If I am not allowed to marry  
him, I shall at least endeavour  
that he may be employed in this  
city.

ÉGLI RIMÁSE MARAVIGLIÁTO  
*délla brútta invasióné.* (Boccal.)

He was astonished at the bad  
invention.

E IL GIÓVANE INFELÍCE SI  
VÍDE TÓSTO *da úna squádra di*  
*satélliti* CIRCONDÁTO e TRÁTTO  
IN PRIGIÓNÉ. (Scav. Nov.)

And the unhappy youth was  
soon surrounded by a band of  
satellites and taken to prison.



*Di te stessa vergognandoti,  
PER NON POTÉRTI VEDÉRE, T'  
AVRÉSTI CAVÁTI GLI OCCHI.*  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Being ashamed of thyself, thou  
wouldst have torn out thy eyes,  
not to see thyself.

*Mésser lo geloso s' avéa mésser  
ALCÚNE PETRÚZZE IN BÓCCA.*  
(Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

The jealous man had put some  
small stones in his mouth.

*UN ALTRO CHE FORÁTA AVÉA LA  
GÓLA.* (Dant. Inf. 28.)

Another who had his throat  
pierced.

*Lassái quell, ch' i' più brámo :  
cò HO SÌ AVVÉZZA — LA MÉNTE  
A CONTEMPLÁR sóla costéi, — CH'  
áltro-non véde* (Petr. s. 80.)

I have forgotten what I most  
desire : and my mind is so ac-  
customed to contemplate this lady  
alone, that it perceives nothing  
else.

*BENCHÈ églino AVÉSSERO già  
LE SPÁDE ISGUAINÁTE e mendite.*  
(Amm. Art. 11. 1. 12.)

Although they had unsheathed  
and used their swords.

*FO NON HO QUÉSTE CÓSE SA-  
PÚTE DA' VICÍNI; ÉLLA MEDÉSI-  
MA, fórté di te doléndosi, ME LE  
HA DÉTTE.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

I did not hear these things  
from the neighbours ; she herself,  
complaining bitterly of thee, has  
told them to me.

*AVÉA LA LÚNA, esséndo nel  
mézzo del ciélo, PERDÚTI I RÁG-  
GI SUÓL.* (Bocc. g. 6. Intr.)

The moon, although in the  
middle of heaven, had lost her  
rays.

*CÓME FO AVRÒ LÓRO ÓGNI CÓSA  
DÁTO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

As I shall have given to them  
every thing.

*CERCÁTO HO SÉMPRE SOLITÁ-  
RIA VÍA — Per fuggir quest' in-  
tégni sórdi e lóchi.* (Petr. s.  
222.)

I have always sought a solitary  
way, in order to avoid these deaf  
and blind minds.

*Domeneddá m' HA DIMOSTRÁ-  
TO LA CAGIÓNE DEL TÚO MÁLE.*  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

God has manifested to me the  
cause of thy evil.

*CHI áltro che tu, HA QUÉSTE  
CÓSE MANIFESTÁTO AL MAÉSTRO ?*  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.)

Who else but thou has told  
these things to the master ?

*IL LIBÉRTO DICÉVA AVÉRLA  
ÉSSO UCCÍSA, e vendicáta P' in-  
giúria del padrón suo.* (Dav.)

The freed-man said that he had  
killed her himself, and thus avenged  
the offence done to his master.

*Se tu ieri ci affiggésti, TU CI  
HÁI ÓGGI TÁNTO DILITICÁTE che  
niúna di te si dée rammaricáre.*  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

If thou didst afflict us yesterday,  
thou hast delighted us so much  
to-day that none of us can com-  
plain of thee.

LA QUÁLE, *piacevóli dónne*, fo  
RACCONTERÒ PER FÁRVI ACCÓRTE  
..... (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

Which, kind ladies, I will re-  
late to show you . . . . .

E *quéstó dètto*, si fé' DÁRE  
l' *orcivólettó*, nel *quále éra l' ac-*  
*qua*, CHE IL DÌ DAVÁNTI AVÉVA  
FÁTTA, e *tútta la bève*. (Bocc.  
g. 4. n. 1.)

And, having said this, she caus-  
ed the vessel of water to be given  
to her, which she had prepared the  
day before, and drank it all off.

Il *quále* COSÌ FÁTTA DÓNNA,  
E CÚI ÉGLI COTÁNTÓ AMÁTA  
AVÉVA, *per móglie* VEDANDOSI.  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

Who seeing himself united in  
marriage with such a lady, and one  
whom he had loved so much.

Io *sóno venúta a ristoráti dè'*  
DANNI, LI QUÁLI TU HÁI *già*  
AVÚTI PER ME. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

I am come to make thee amends  
for the injuries thou hast sustained  
on my account.

LE CÓSE CHE *già* AVÉVA UDÍTO  
DÍRE, CHE *di nótte* ÉRANO INTER-  
VENÚTE. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

The things which he had heard  
of as having happened by night.

*Dunque*, un *uóm sólo* — Si  
*partirà*, che non l' *avrète offèso*,  
— *Quándo TÚTTI V' AVRÀ FÁT-*  
*TO MORÍRE?* (Ariost. Fur. 17. 8.)

Then, shall a single man depart  
from hence, when he will have put  
all of you to death, without having  
been at all hurt by you?

LA DÓNNA, LA QUÁLE IL LÚN-  
GO VAGHEGGIÁRE, l' *armeggiáre*,  
le *matináte* MUÓVERE NON AVÉ-  
VANO POTÚTO, *móssero le affet-*  
*tuóse paróle*. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

The lady, whom his long admi-  
ration, tournaments, serenades,  
were not able to move, was mov-  
ed by his tender words.

GIÚNTO *adunque* IL FANIGLIÁ-  
RE a *Génova*, E DA'TE LE LÉT-  
TERE, E FÁ'TTA L' AMBASCIÁ'TA,  
FU *dálla dónna* CON GRAN FÉSTA  
RICEVÚTO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

The domestic, having arrived at  
Genoa, and having consigned the  
letters and delivered the message,  
was received by the lady with  
great joy.

---

USE AND POSITION OF CERTAIN ADVERBS.

*Adverbs*, as we mentioned at pp. 391, 394, may be  
put *before* or *after* the *verb*; they *may* be put, also,  
*between* the *auxiliary* and the *participle*, and *between*  
*two participles*; as,

tu *sái* BENE *cóme* io *sóno*  
*agiáto*,

thou knowest well how I am  
situated;

PRESTAMÉNTE s' AVVENTA'- VA ÁLLA GÓLA di castéi,	quickly [a wolf] seized her by the throat ;
NON HO MÁI PÓSCIA POTÚTO dormíre,	I could sleep no longer after that ;
ÈRE STA'TA MÓLTO MA'LE CONSIGLIA'TA,	she had been very badly ad- vised.

The adverb *non*, 'no or not'; is *always* put *before* the *verb*; as,

NON FARNÉTICO, madónna,	I do not rave, Madam ;
NON v' ACCORGÉTE che NOI SIAM VERMI?	do you not perceive that we are worms.

When the adverb *non* is employed to deny several *objects*, and these *precede* the *verb*, the adverb is put *before* the *nouns*, and not before the verb; as,

NON PIÓGGIA, NON GRA'NDO,	neither rain, nor hail, nor snow,
NON NÉVE, NON RUGIA'DA,	nor dew, nor frost falls a-
NON BRÍNA piú su càde,	bove.

The adverb *mai*, which in itself strictly means 'at any time,' may be put either *before* or *after* the *verb*; when, however, it is put *before*, it takes the signification of *never*, and when *after*, it takes that of *ever*; as,

ti priégo che MA'I DICHÍ d' avérmi vedéda,	I beseech thee never to tell, that thou hast seen me ;
i Perugini MA'I si VÓLLERO dichinàre ad alcún accórdo,	the Perugians never wished to condescend to come to any agreement ;
quái bárbari FUR MA'I !	what barbarians were ever !
il ciélo è óggi così bello óme FU MA'I,	the sky is as beautiful to-day as ever it was.

The adverbs *non mai*, 'not ever,' 'never'; occurring in the same phrase, are generally *separated* by the *verb*; and then *non*, 'no or not'; *always* *precedes*, and *mai*, 'ever'; *always* *follows* that verb; as,

to NON mángio MA'I,	I never eat ;
l' arti NON istéttor MA'I pég- gio,	the arts never fared worse ;

NON SPERÁR *dí vedérmí in* never hope to see me again on  
*térra MÁI,* earth.

But they may be used, also, united ; and then, if *mái* precedes *non*, they are to be put both *before* the verb ; if it follows *non*, they may be put *after* it ; as,

*to MÁI NON DÓRMO,* I never sleep ;  
*che férró MÁI NON STRÍNGE,* who never knew how to use  
 arms ;  
*giuróglí dí MÁI NON DÍRLO,* she swore to him never to tell  
 it ;  
*amíci feddli PÓSSON DIVEN-* they can, indeed, become faith-  
*TÁR bène, súdditi NON* ful friends, but subjects nev-  
*MÁI,* er.

## EXAMPLES.

*Pinuccio, TU SÁI BÉNE CÓME* Pinuccio, thou knowest well  
*fo sóro agiáto. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)* how I am situated.

*Il quále PRESTAMENTE S' AV-* Which [wolf] quickly seized her  
*VENTÁVA ÁLLA GÓLA DI COSTÉI.* by the throat.  
*(Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.)*

*Io NON HO MÁI PÓSCIA POTÚTO* I could sleep no longer after  
*DORMÍRE. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)* that.

*E ch' ell' ÉRA STÁTA MÓLTO* And that she had been very  
*MÁLE CONSIGLIÁTA. (Bocc.)* badly advised.

*Disse allóra Pirro : "NON* Then Pyrrhus said : " I do not  
*FARNÉTICO, no, MADÓNNA."* rave, Madam, no."  
*(Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)*

*NON V' ACCORGÉTE VÓI, CHE* Do you not perceive, that we  
*NÓI SIÁM VÉRMI, — Nátí a for-* are worms, made to form the  
*már l' angélica forfállá. (Dant.* winged insect impeded with angel  
*Purg. 10.)* plumes.

*Perchè NON PIÓGGIA, NON* Because neither rain, nor hail,  
*GRÁNDO, NON NÉVE, — NON RU-* nor snow, nor dew, nor frost, ever  
*GIÁDA, NON BRÍNA PIÙ SU CÁDE,* falls above that short ladder of  
*— Che la scalétta dé' tre grádi* three steps.  
*breve. (Dant. Purg. 21.)*

*TI PRIÉGO CHE MÁI ad alcúna* I beseech thee never to tell to  
*persóna DICHI D' AVÉRMI VEDÚ-* any ono that thou hast seen me.  
*TA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)*

I PERUSINI, per loro alterigia,  
MAI VOLLERO DICHIARARE AD AL-  
CUN ACCORDO. (Matt. Vill. 8. 39.)

QUAI BARBARE FUR MAI, quai  
Saraceni? (Dant. Purg. 23.)

Così È OGGI BELLO IL CIELO  
COME FU MAI. (Bocc. g. 6. r. 10.)

Se tu digiuni, io NON MANGIO  
MAI; se tu vegghi, io MAI NON  
DORMO. (Passov.)

In questo mezzo, L'ARTI e la  
mercanzia NON ISTÉTTER MAI  
PIGGIO in Firenze. (Giov. Vill.  
9. 12.)

NON SPERAR DI VEDERMI IN  
TERRA MAI. (Petr. s. 212.)

Pòpolo ignúdo, pavéntoso, e  
lento, — CHE FERRO MAI NON  
STRINGE. (Petr. s. 5.)

E GIURÒGLI DI MAI NON DIRLO.  
(Bocc. g. 3. r. 6.)

AMICI FEDÉLI PÒSSON DIVEN-  
TAR BENE gli Americani agl' In-  
glési, SÚDDITI NON MAI. (Bott.  
Stor. Amer. l. 6.)

The Perugians, through pride,  
never wished to condescend to  
come to any agreement.

What barbarians, what Saracens  
were ever!

The sky is as beautiful to-day  
as ever it was.

If thou fastest, I never eat; if  
thou art watching, I never sleep.

During this time, the arts and  
commerce never fared worse in  
Florence.

Never hope to see me again on  
earth.

A race poor, fearful, and indo-  
lent, who never know how to use  
arms.

And she swore to him never to  
tell it.

The Americans can indeed be-  
come the faithful friends of the  
English, but subjects never.

#### EXERCISE XXXIV.

After he had spent some (of his) time | to con-  
Poiché — <sup>4</sup> pònerc<sup>5</sup> alquánto<sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> — <sup>2</sup> tèmpe<sup>3</sup> | in<sup>6</sup> d'ocór<sup>7</sup>  
sole | her weeping. To him, then residing in  
racconsolàre<sup>10</sup> | <sup>8</sup> piàngerc<sup>9</sup>. , — dimoràre  
Ireland, came the desire of hearing. (The) rivers  
Irlànda, venire — voglia sentirsi. rivo  
of (the) blood extinguished the rising flame. Happy,  
sàngue estinguer<sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup> nascerc<sup>2</sup> fiamma<sup>3</sup>. Felice,  
and fortunate, and enjoying | for ever | the fruit  
fortunàto, and godere<sup>2</sup> | in<sup>1</sup> ógni<sup>2</sup> tèmpe<sup>3</sup> | — —

of their love. You\* are not the first, nor will you be  
*amóre.* *primo,* —

the last, that is imposed upon. I know not whether  
*último,* *ingannáre.* *sapére* *se*

thou | hast minded | how close we† are kept.  
*t' hai pósto in ménte* | *stretto*<sup>2</sup> — <sup>1</sup> *tenére*<sup>2</sup>.

They having arrived at the city, | went | with  
*Essi*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *perveníre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> *cittá*<sup>2</sup>, | *ne andarono*<sup>2</sup> | <sup>7</sup>

Mr. Torello to his house,‡ where fifty of the  
*Messér*<sup>2</sup> <sup>9</sup> <sup>10</sup> <sup>11</sup> *cása*<sup>2</sup>, *cinquánta* of the

principal citizens were come to receive them. The  
*maggióre* *cittadino* *veníre* *ricevére*

message which I have given to him | to | deliver  
*commissióne* *dáre* | *di* | *riferíre*

to the king. Thou knowest what is the offence,  
*re.* *sapére* *ingiúria,*

which thou hast given me. Master, I have seen  
*fáre* *Maéstro,* *vedére*

a thing which troubles me. One who had  
*cósa* *dispiacére.*

the one, and the other hand cut off. Each one§ of  
*úno,* *áltro* *man* *mozzáre.*

them had her right breast cut off, | in order to |  
<sup>1</sup> — *diritto*<sup>2</sup> *mammélla*<sup>4</sup> *tagliáre*<sup>2</sup>, | *per* |

| carry | | the shield | | in | battles. They|| are  
*portare* | | *lo scúdo* | | *álta* | *battáglia.*

handsomer than the painted angels, which you have  
*bélla* *dipinto*<sup>2</sup> *ángeli*<sup>2</sup>,

often-times shown me. Thou¶ hast been with that  
*piú vólte mostráre* *co-*

lady, whom thou hast deceived.  
*léi,* *ingannáre.*

I have caused the greater part of my possessions to-  
 — *fáre* <sup>2</sup> *maggiór*<sup>2</sup> *párte*<sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> *possessione*<sup>2</sup> *ven-*

\* You, feminine gender.

‡ House, in the plural.

¶ They, feminine.

† We, feminine.

§ Each one, in the feminine.

¶ They, feminine.

be-sold. They were glad that they had — (of having)  
*dere*<sup>1</sup>. — *Rimanère contêto* — — —

successfully — (with success) known how to mock the  
 — *successo*, *sapère* — — *schernîre*

avarice of Calandrino. | No sooner | had she entered (into)  
*avarizia* . | *Nè prima* . | — — *entrâre*<sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup>

the room, than the (beating of the arteries — the) pulse  
<sup>2</sup> *câmera*<sup>2</sup>, *che* *battimêto* — — *pôlo*

returned to the youth; and having left it — (she hav-  
*ritornâre* *giòvane*; — — —

ing departed), it [the pulse] left him also — (it ceased).  
*partîre*, — — — — — *cessâre*.

Is not this the land, which I first | trod with  
*terrén*, *prîa* | *loc-*

my feet | ? Ciacco replied: "Thou knowest very  
*câr* | ? <sup>2</sup> *Rispondere*<sup>1</sup>: " — *sapère* —

well, that I shall come." Who quickly opened  
*bene*, *venîre*." *prestamête* *apîre*

the door. The Devil said once to St. Macarius:  
*pôrta*. *Diavôlo dîre úna vólta* *San Macârio*:

"If thou art always watching — (watchest), I never  
 " — — — *végiare*,

sleep; if thou | usest all thy efforts | in thy works  
*dormîre*; | *ti* *affatîchi* | — — —

— (working), I never rest — (have never rest).<sup>2</sup>  
*operâre*, — — *non mâi ripôso*."

Did not thy master say, that we should carry  
*padrône dîre*, *portâre*

| home | these things? Caring (himself) neither  
*a casa* | *côsa?* *Curâre*

| for | the palaces, nor | for | the ox, nor | for | the  
*di* | *palâgio*, | *di* | *búo*, | *di* |

horse, nor | for | the ass, nor | for | the money,<sup>2</sup> nor  
*cavâllo*, | *di* | *ásino*, | *di* | *dendro*,

| for | any other thing, which he had seen.  
*di* | *côsa*, — <sup>2</sup> *vedére*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Money, in the plural.

## CHAPTER IX.

## EXPLETIVES.

[Although many of the following words have been already mentioned in treating of the different Parts of Speech, which they respectively belong to, it has, nevertheless, not been thought altogether useless to present them here once more united in a single chapter.]

## BÉLLO :

IL vostro vestito è BÉLL' e fátto. Your suit of clothes is finished.  
(Fir.)

per BÉLLA paura gittò le bandiere del comúne. (Cron. Mor.) through fear he threw down the standards of the commonwealth.

per BÉLLE scritte di lor máno s' obbligárono l' uno all' altro. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.) they were bound to each other by *fine* obligations written with their own hands.

## BÉNE, BEN, BÉ' :

Gli domandái, se gli bastáva l' ónirio di cacciárló via ; ed egli rispóse : " Sì BÉNE." (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.) I asked him, if he had courage to send him away ; and he answered : " Yes, indeed."

égli è què un malvógio úomo, che m' ha tagliáto la bórsa con BEN cénto fiorini d' óro. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.) here is a wicked man, who has cut my purse with *full* one hundred florins of gold.

" BÉ'," rispos' io, " Messétre, parlerém pói ; — Non fáte qui per or quèsto fracáso." (Bern. Rim.) " well, Sir," answered I, " we will speak afterwards ; do not make now such a noise here."

## CI :

Sémpre che tu ci viverái. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 4.) As long as thou livest.

la dóнна e Pirro dicevano : " Nóni ci seggiámo." (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.) the lady and Pyrrhus said : " We will sit down."

## CON :

Stássi con méco. (Petr.) He is with me.

spéro d' avére avéti búon témpo con téco. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.) I hope I shall have a fine time with thee.



## ÉCCO :

*Ed ecco Piétro chiama all'uscio.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.) And lo Peter called at the door.

*ecco, Giannotto, a te piace ch'io divenga Cristiano.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.) here, John, thou wishest that I should become a Christian.

## ÉGLI :

*ÉGLI è una compassione a vederlo.* (Mach. Com.) It excites pity to see him.

*non ti fa mestieri il dirlo, il viso tuo favella ÉGLI.* (Sen.) it is not necessary to tell it, thy face manifests it.

## ÉLLA :

*ÉLLA non andrà così.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.) It shall not go on so.

*se non ch'ella ha in ciò voléto mostráre, ch'ella è gentile.* (Bocc. Corb, 79.) except that she wished to show by this, that she is courteous.

## ÉSSO :

*Andiáme a Róma con esso lui.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.) Let us go to Rome with him.

*Ésso*, as an expletive, is *invariable*, and may be used equally well before a masculine and a feminine pronoun, both singular and plural; as, *con esso méco*, 'with me'; *con esso téco*, 'with thee'; *con esso lui*, 'with him'; *con esso léi*, 'with her,' or 'with you'; *con esso nói*, 'with us'; *con esso vói*, 'with you'; *con esso loro*, 'with them,' or 'with you':

*fatti alla finestra, e chiamala, e di' che venga a desinare con esso nói.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.) go to the window, and call her, and tell her to come and dine with us.

## GIÀ :

*GIÀ Dio non voglia.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 5.) May God forbid.

*non crédo io già che ne avéte a male.* (Varch.) I do not think you take it ill.

## IO :

*Che farebbe egli s'io morissi.* (Mach. Com.) What would he do if I should die?

*comechè ogni altro uomo molto di lui si lodi, io mène posso poco lodare, io.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 3.)      although every other person praises him much, I can praise him but little.

## MÀI :

*Una parte del mondo è, che si giace — MÀI sempre in ghiaccio.* (Petr. c. 5.)      There is a part of the world, which lies always frozen.

*“come,” disse Ferondo, “dunque sono io morto?” — Disse il Monaco: “MÀI sì.”* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)      “how,” said Ferondo, “am I dead, then?” — The Monk replied: “Yes indeed.”

## MI :

*Fo MI sono un povero pellegrino.* (Bocc. Filoc. 1. 5.)      I am a poor pilgrim.

*io MI credo che le suore sien tutte a dormire.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)      I believe that the nuns are all asleep.

## MÍCA :

*Son novelle e vere, non son MÍCA favole.* (Fir. Trin.)      These are true news, they are not fables.

*non MÍCA idiota nè materiale; ma scenziato, e di acuto ingegno.* (Casa. Gal.)      not an idiot nor a vulgar man; but learned, and of an acute mind.

## NE :

*Chetamente n' andò per la camera insino alla finestra.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)      He went tranquilly through the room to the window.

*andianne là, e laveremo spacciatamente.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 5.)      let us go there, and we will wash it immediately.

## NON :

*Temo che voi non mi abbandoniate.* (Bocc.)      I fear you will abandon me.

*la qual modestia dubito che non gli sia dannosa.* (Tolom. lett.)      which modesty, I doubt, may be hurtful to him.

## ÓRA :

*Deh ! on t' avéssero éssi affogá- Ah ! would that they had*  
*ta. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)* drowned thee.

*ÓRA che verrà dir quésito ? now what does this mean ?*  
*(Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.)*

## PÓI :

*Non è pói vtro quánto mi di- What you told me is not true.*  
*ciate. (Bocc.)*

*Io non mi sono pói risólto di I have not come to the resolu-*  
*partir di Róma. (Car. lett.)* tion of leaving Rome.

## PÚNTO :

*Staza obgettiv pÚNTO. (Bocc.) Without being frightened at all.*

*Tedáldo non è PÚNTO mórtó. Tedaldo is not at all dead.*  
*(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)*

## PÚRE :

*La cosa andò PUR così. (Bocc. The affair went off so.*  
*g. 2. n. 5.)*

*fa PÚRE che tu mi móstri quél do but show me him whom thou*  
*ti piáce. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)* likest.

## SI :

*Del palógio s' uscì, e fuggéssi He went out of the palace, and*  
*a casa. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)* fled to his house.

## SÌ :

*Sì è ténta la benignità, e la So great is the goodness and*  
*misericórdia di Dio. (Bocc. the mercy of God.*  
*g. 1. n. 1.)*

## TI :

*Io non so se tu t' hai pósto I know not, whether thou hast*  
*in ménte. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)* minded.

## TU :

*Tu di' tuc paróle, TU. (Bocc. g. Thou mayest say what thou*  
*7. n. 1.)* pleasest.

## TÚTTO :

*La dónna, udéndo costíi par- The woman, hearing this man  
láre il quále ella credéva speak whom she thought  
mítolo, TÚTTA stordì. (Bocc. dumb, was quite amazed.  
g. 3. n. 1.)*

## ÚNO :

*Vubi tu quell' úno ? (Bocc.) Dost-thou want that one ?*

## VI :

*Vbi non sapéte ciò che vbi vi You do not know what you  
díte. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 6.) say.*

## VÍA :

*"Va vía," rispóse ; "e ciò che tu "Go away," answered he ; "and  
vubi, cónla." (Dant. Inf. 32.) relate what thou pleasest."*

## CHAPTER X.

## OF THE ELLIPSIS.

ELLIPSIS is a figure in grammar, which consists in the omission of one or more words in order to add conciseness and elegance to the phrase, without affecting its clearness. This figure is very frequent in Italian, and offers one of the principal difficulties in the grammatical analysis of the Classics. We will here give some examples in which the *ellipsis* is employed, *supplying the words which are omitted*, that the learner may familiarize himself with similar locutions.

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Substantive :

*Ruppe [la náve] in máre. He made shipwreck.  
(Crusca.)*

*mí scusái [della cólpá] dí ciò. I exculpated myself from that  
(Class.) fault.*

- Alessandro muore [per amore] di quella vedova. (Bocc.)* Alexander dies for that widow.
- conoscendo che quivi non tra [luogo] da piangere . . . . (Bocc.)* knowing that there was no place to weep . . . .
- bástami [la disgrázia] di essere stato schernito una volta. (Boec.)* it is enough to have been insulted once.
- io ci tornerò, e daròttenne tante [bússe], ch' io ti farò tristo per tutto il tempo, che tu si viverai. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)* I will return, and give thee so many blows, that I will make thee sorry as long as thou livest.
- néuno mále si fece nélla caduta, quantunque alquanto cadésse da alto [luogo]. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)* he did not hurt himself in falling, although he fell from a high place.

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Adjective :

- E sempre pói per [buóno] da móltto l' ebbe, e per amico. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 2.)* And considered him always afterwards as a very good man, and as a friend.
- fu [abile] da tanto, e tanto seppe fare, ch' egli pacificò il figliuolo col padre. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)* he was so able, and knew how to do so much, that he reconciled the son with the father.
- non suspicò, che ciò Guccio Balena gli avesse fatto, perciocchè nol conosceva [capace] da tanto. (Boec. g. 6. n. 10.)* he did not suspect that Guccio Balena had done this to him, because he did not think him capable of so much.
- il re gli chiamò, e quí, quando il videro, ténersi [immóbili]. (Nov. Ant.)* the king called them, and they, when they saw him, stopped.

## ELLIPSIS OF Relative Pronouns :

- Esaminiamo se delle cose [che si sóno] dette ne ha fatto alcuna. (Mach. Princ.)* Let us examine if he has done any of the things which have been said.
- la donna gli fece apprestare panni [i quali erano] státi del marito. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)* the woman caused clothes to be prepared for him, which had been her husband's.

*riscontròlle quivi Pettilio Ceriale* [il quale era] *fuggito dalle guardie di Vitellio.* there met him Petilius Cerialis, who had escaped from the guards of Vitellius.  
(Dav. Stor.)

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Infinitive OF Verbs :

*Andate per* [prendere] *essi.* Go after them.  
(Bocc.)  
*què il sole non vi può* [penetrare]. (Class.) here the sun cannot penetrate.  
*io era un asinaccio che non poteva* [sostenere] *la vita.* I was a great ass that could not endure life.  
(Firenz.)

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Verb IN THE Indicative Mood :

*Tessa, odi tu quel ch' io* [odo]? Tessa, do you hear what I hear?  
(Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)  
*questi è il capitano, gli altri* [sono] *da nulla.* (Dav. Stor.) this is the captain, the others are of no account.  
*era parente stretto di Vespasiano, e [era] soldato di conto.* (Dav. Stor.) he was a near relation of Vespasian, and a good soldier.

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Verb IN THE Conjunctive Mood :

*Qui ha questa cena, e non sarebbe chi* [potesse] *mangiarla.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.) Here is this supper, and there is no one to eat it.  
*avrei gridato, se non* [fosse stato] *che egli mi chiese mercè per Dio, e per voi.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.) I would have cried out, had it not been that he besought mercy both in the name of God and in your name.  
*ah! ah! se non* [fosse] *ch' io ho reverenza a voi, padre, io direi pure il bell' onore ch' è mi fa.* (Mach. Com.) ah! ah! were it not for the respect that I bear to you, father, I would tell the great honor he does me.

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Gerund :

[Essendo] *durante la guerra.* [Being] during the war.  
(Bocc.)

- [avéndo] vedéto il luógo solitário. (Bocc.) having seen the solitary place.
- [esséndo] grúato il famigliáre a Génova, e [avéndo] dáte le lèttere, e [avéndo] fáta l'ambasciáta . . . . (Bocc.) the domestic having arrived at Genoa, and having consigned the letter and delivered the message . . . .

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Participle :

- Se essi mi cacciásser gli ócchi a che saré' io [ridóto] ?* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.) If they should tear out my eyes, to what should I be reduced ?
- se non fósse [státo] il Gran Préte, a cui mal prénda.* (Dant. Inf. 27.) if it had not been for the High Priest, whom curses light on.
- se non fósse [státo] ch' égli éra giovane, égli avrébbe avúto mólto a sostenére.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.) had he not been a young man, he would have had a great deal to suffer.

## ELLIPSIS OF Adverbs :

- O'ra [così] fússero essi pur già dispósti a venire, che veraménte potrémmo díre la fortuna éssere favoreggiánte.* (Bocc. Intr.) Would that they were disposed to come, that we might truly say that fortune is favorable.
- al móndo non fur mái persóne [talménte] ráte, — A far lor prò . . . — Com' io dópo cotái parole fáte.* (Dant. Inf. 2.) never among men did any with such speed haste to their profit . . . as I when these words were spoken.

## ELLIPSIS OF Prepositions :

- In casa [di] quésti usurái.* (Bocc.) In the house of these usurers.
- servíva [a] córti pescatóri.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.) she served certain fishermen.
- usáva mólto [in] la chiésa.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 4.) he frequented much the church.
- sedétte re [per] ánni quíndici.* (Crusca.) he reigned for fifteen years.

*cenerémo* [con] *un pòco di* we will sup upon a little salt  
*cárne saláta.* (Bocc. g. 7. meat.  
 n. 1.)

ELLIPSIS OF Conjunctions :

*Io sóno la mísera* [e] *sventu-* I am the miserable and un-  
*ráta Zinóra.* (Bocc. g. 2. . fortunate Ginevra.  
 n. 9.)

*real nátura,* [e] *angélico intel-* a royal nature, and an angelic  
*létto,* — [e] *Chiar' álma,* [e] mind, and "clear spirit," and  
*prónta vísta,* [e] *bechio cer-* a quick sight, and piercing  
*vítro.* (Petr. s. 201.) eyes.

REMARKS ON THE DIFFERENT MODES  
 OF ADDRESS IN ITALIAN.

THE Italians have *three different modes* of addressing a person ; — viz. the *second person singular*, TU, 'thou'; and its *inflexion*, TI, 'to thee,' 'thee': — the *second person plural*, VOI, 'you'; and its *inflexion*, VI, 'to you,' 'you': — and the *third person singular, feminine*, ELLA, and its *inflexions*, LE, LA; representing the title VOSTRA SIGNORÍA (generally contracted into VOSSIGNORÍA, and often written V. S.), 'your worship,' 'your lordship,' 'your ladyship'; whether the person addressed be a man or a woman.

The *second person singular* is used in *addressing* a person of *inferior condition*; as by a master *speaking* to a *servant*, by a parent *addressing* a *child*. Likewise *husbands* and *wives*, *brothers* and *sisters*, and any two *intimate friends* adopt it in *speaking* to *each other*. It is also used in *poetry*, and in *addressing* the *Divinity*.

The *second person plural* is used in *addressing* a person of *equal rank* with the speaker, but not par-



ticularly intimate with him. Also by children *addressing* their *parents*, by ladies *speaking* to *gentlemen*. It is likewise used in *addressing artisans, tradesmen, dealers, &c.*

The *third person singular, feminine*, is used in *addressing a superior*, or one towards whom the speaker wishes to exhibit *special civility and respect*; as by a servant to his *master*, by a tradesman to a *gentleman, &c.* Ladies, and persons *respectable* for their *age or office*, are addressed in this mode.

It is to be observed, that when the *second person plural, VÓI*, and its *inflexion, VI*, are used, the *verb* is put in the *plural*; but all the other words, such as *adjectives, participles, &c.*, agreeing with the *subject*, remain in the *singular*, masculine or feminine, according to the *gender* of the person addressed; as,

vói, Signóre, SARÉTE respé- you, Sir, will be respected;  
táto,

vói, Signóra, SIÉTE avía, you, Madam, are wise.

When the *third person singular, feminine, E'LLA*, and its *inflexions, LE, LA*; or the title *VOSSIGNORÍA*, are employed, the *verb* is put in the *singular*; and the words agreeing with them take the *feminine gender*, whether the person addressed be *masculine or feminine*; as,

E'LLA, or V. S. SARÀ respéttáta, } you [Sir], or your lordship will  
be respected;  
} you [Madam], or your ladyship  
will be respected:

E'LLA or V. S. È avía, } you [Sir] are, or your lordship  
is wise;  
} you [Madam] are, or your lady-  
ship is wise.

Where *two or more individuals* are addressed in the *third person*, the *third person plural, feminine, E'LENO*,

and its *inflexion*, LÓRO; or the titles VÓSTRE or LE VÓSTRE SIGNORÍE, LE SIGNORÍE LÓRO, LOR SIGNÓRI, are used; the *verb* being put in the *plural*, and the words agreeing with them, in the *plural feminine*; as,

<p>ÉLLENO, OR LE VÓSTRE SIGNORÍE SARÁNNO <i>rispettáte</i>,</p>	}	<p>you [gentlemen], or your lordships will be respected; you [ladies], or your ladyships will be respected:</p>
<p>ÉLLENO, OR LE SIGNORÍE LÓRO SÓNO <i>sávie</i>,</p>	}	<p>you [gentlemen], or your lordships are wise; you [ladies], or your ladyships are wise.</p>

Some Italian Grammarians assert, on the authority of Bembo, Bentivoglio, Ganganelli, and other modern writers, that this *agreement* in gender of adjectives and participles, with the word *Vossignoría* or the pronoun *élla*, when used in addressing a man, ought to take place only, when the verb *éssere*, 'to be,' stands *between* them; as,

ÉLLA, OR V. S. È MOLTO DÓTTA, you [Sir] are, or your lordship is very learned:

but if *any other verb* stands *between* the word *Vossignoría* or the pronoun *élla* and the *adjective* or *participle*, these are made to agree with the *person signified* by those; as,

V. S., OR ÉLLA PAR MOLTO PENSIERÓSO, you [Sir] seem, or your lordship seems very thoughtful.

If the verb happens to be the auxiliary *éssere*, and the *participle* of another verb, then this participle agrees in gender with the word *V. S.* or the pronoun *élla*, and the following *adjective* or *participle* is made to agree with the *person signified* by them; as,

ÉLLA SI È MOSTRÁTA, SIGNÓRE, you have shown yourself, Sir, both non méno *sávio*, *che* *benigno*, wise and kind.

Adjectives of nations agree always with the *person signified* by the pronoun *élla* or the word *V. S.*; as,

ÉLLA SÉNZA DÚBBIO È ROMÁNO, you, Sir, without doubt are a Roman;

LE SIGNORIE LÓRO SARÁNNO CÉRTO ITALIANI, you, gentlemen, are certainly Italians.

Besides the abovementioned modes of address, the Italians often use the demonstrative pronouns *quello*, *quella*, and the words *giovane*, *uomo*, *donna*, in speaking to a person whose name is unknown to them; and say *quel giovane*, 'young man'; *quell' uomo*, 'good man'; &c.; as,

*avvertisci, quel giovane, che tu f' ingannai,* take care, young man, for thou deceivest thyself;

*quell' uom dabbene, che cosa è stata?* what is the matter, good man?

*vói siete molto altiera, quella donna,* you are very proud, my good woman :

but this way of addressing people, is only used by superiors towards their inferiors.

The following are the TITLES used by the Italians in addressing the different qualities of persons: viz. in speaking to a GENTLEMAN, *Signóre*, 'Sir'; *Vossignoria* (written, *V. S.*), 'your worship,' 'your lordship':—to a PERSON OF RANK, or to a NOBLEMAN, *Illustrissimo (Illmò)*, 'most illustrious Sir'; *Vossignoria Illustrissima (V. S. Illmà)*, 'Your most illustrious lordship'; *Eccellenza*, 'Excellency'; *Vóstra Eccellenza (V. E.)*, 'Your Excellency':—to a PRINCE OF THE BLOOD, *Altézza*, 'Highness'; *Vóstra Altézza*, 'Your Highness':—to a KING, *Sire*, 'Sire'; *Maestà*, 'Majesty'; *Vóstra Maestà (V. M.)*, 'Your Majesty':—to an EMPEROR, *Sire*, 'Sire'; *Maestà*, 'Majesty'; *Maestà Imperiale*, 'Imperial Majesty'; *Vóstra Maestà Imperiale (V. M. I.)*, 'Your Imperial Majesty'; *Vóstra Maestà Reale e Imperiale (V. M. R. I.)*, 'Your Royal and Imperial Majesty':—to a MONK, *Pádre*, 'Father'; *Vóstra Paternità (V. Ptà)*, 'Your Paternity':—to a PRIEST, *Reveréndo*, 'Reverend'; *Vóstra Reverénza (V. R.)*, 'Your Rever-

ence' : — to a BISHOP, *Monsignóre*, 'Right Honorable'; *Eccellenza Reverendissima*, 'Most Reverend Excellency'; *Vóstra Eccellenza Reverendissima* (*V. E. Remã*), 'Your most Reverend Excellency' : — to a CARDINAL, *Eminénza*, 'Eminence'; *Vóstra Eminénza* (*V. Emzã*), 'Your Eminence' : — to the POPE, *Santità*, 'Holiness'; *Santo Pádre*, 'Holy Father'; *Vóstra Santità* (*V. Stà*), 'Your Holiness'; *Vóstra Beatitúdi-ne* (*V. Bètdñe*), 'Your Blessedness.'

---

[For Illustrations of the above Remarks on the Different Modes of Address in Italian, see the Author's CONVERSATIONE ITALIA'NA, where they have been fully exemplified.]



## PART IV.

# ITALIAN ORTHOGRAPHY.



## CHAPTER I.

### OF ACCENTS.

THE *accent*, in Orthography, is a *small sign* placed upon the *vowels* of words to determine their *pronunciation*.

There are *two* accents in Italian, the *grave* and the *acute*.

The *grave* accent is an *oblique line* drawn from the *left to the right* ( ` ); and the *acute*, an *oblique line* drawn from the *right to the left* ( ´ ).

These accents are generally put on all words in which a *letter* or *syllable* has been *suppressed*; as in *natio* from *native*, 'native'; in which *o* is suppressed; *virtù* from *virtute*, *virtude*, or *virtus*, 'virtue'; in which *te*, *de*, *e*, are suppressed; &c.

And on those words in which the *sameness* of *spelling* might produce a *confusion* of *signification*; as in *però*, 'but'; *balia*, 'power'; &c. to distinguish them from *pero*, 'pear-tree'; *balia*, 'nurse'; &c.

---

The *grave* accent is put

On all *contracted nouns* of more than one syllable;  
as,

<i>carità</i>	[ <i>caritate</i> , or <i>caritade</i> ],	charity;
<i>mercè</i>	{ <i>mercede</i> },	mercy:

On the *names* of the *days* of the *week* ending in *i* ; as,

*Lunedì*, Monday ; *Venerdì*, Friday :

On the *compounds* of *che* ; as,

*perchè*, because ; *benchè*, although :

On the *compounds* of *tre* ; as,

*ventitrè*, twenty-three ; *centotré*, one hundred  
[and three :

On the *first* and *third* persons *singular* of the *future* of all verbs ; as,

<i>amerò</i> ,	I will	{	love ;	<i>amerà</i> ,	he will	{	love ;
<i>temerò</i> ,			fear ;	<i>temerà</i> ,			fear ;
<i>sentirò</i> ,			hear ;	<i>sentirà</i> ,			hear :

On the *third* person *singular* of the *perfect* of all those verbs in which the *first* person of the *same* tense terminates with *two vowels* ; as,

{	<i>cantá</i> ,	I	{	sang ;	<i>cantò</i> ,	he	{	sang ;	
				believed ;				<i>credè</i> ,	believed ;
				slept ;				<i>dormì</i> ,	slept :

On the words

<i>metà</i> ,	half ;	<i>cremisi</i> ,	crimson ;
<i>baccalà</i> ,	cod-fish ;	<i>sofà</i> ,	sofa ;
<i>caffè</i> ,	coffee ;	<i>taffetà</i> ,	taffety ;
<i>tanà</i> ,	tawny ;	<i>alò</i> ,	aloes ;
<i>falò</i> ,	bonfire ;	<i>alcali</i> ,	alkali ;
<i>oibò</i> ,	fy ;	<i>col</i> ,	} there ;
<i>orà</i> ,	come ;	<i>colà</i> ,	
<i>così</i> ,	so, or thus ;	<i>così</i> ,	
<i>testà</i> ,	just now ;	<i>costà</i> ,	
<i>aiamè</i> !	} alas !	<i>collà</i> !	
<i>oimè</i> !		<i>ohè</i> !	take care !

On the words

<i>ciò</i> ,	this, or that ;	<i>quì</i> ,	already ;
<i>giù</i> ,	below ;	<i>quà</i> ,	} here ;
<i>più</i> ,	more ;	<i>qui</i> ,	
<i>può</i> ,	may, or can ;		

which are written with a grave accent in order to show that the *two vowels* are to be pronounced both in *one syllable* :

And on the words

<i>dì,</i>	(noun)	day ;
<i>dà,</i>	} (verb)	{ gives ; is ;
<i>è,</i>		
<i>là,</i>	} (adverb)	there ;
<i>à,</i>		
<i>sì,</i>	(affirmative particle, or adverb) yes, or so ;	
<i>nè,</i>	(negative particle, or conjunction) nor, or neither ;	
<i>sè,</i>	(personal pronoun)	one's self ;
<i>tè,</i>	(noun)	tea ;
<i>chè,</i>	(conjunction)	for, or because ;

in which the grave accent is used as a *mark of distinction* between them, and the words

<i>dì,</i>	} (preposition)	{ of ; from, or by ;
<i>da,</i>		
<i>e,</i>	(conjunction)	and ;
<i>la,</i>	} (article, or conjunctive pronoun)	{ the, or her ; the, or them ;
<i>là,</i>		
<i>si,</i>	(conjunctive pronoun)	one's self ;
<i>ne,</i>	(relative particle)	of it, or of them ;
<i>se,</i>	(conjunction)	if ;
<i>te,</i>	(personal pronoun)	thee, or to thee ;
<i>che,</i>	(relative pronoun)	who, which, or that.

The *acute* accent is put

On the *i* of the terminations *ia, io*, of nouns, when the *two vowels* are pronounced in *two distinct syllables* ; as,

*magìa,* magic ; *desìo,* desire :

On words in which the *stress* of the voice, by a poetical license, is *transferred* from one syllable to another ; as,

*simìle* [for *símile*], similar ; *oceàno* [for *océano*], ocean :

And, sometimes, on the words

<i>àncora,</i>	anchor ;	<i>nèttare,</i>	nectar ;
<i>fòlgore,</i>	thunderbolt ;	<i>ìgnere,</i>	tender :
<i>sègnio,</i>	suite ;		

to distinguish them from the words

<i>ancora,</i>	[ancóra],	yet, also, or again ;
<i>folgore,</i>	[folgóre],	splendor ;
<i>nettare,</i>	[nettáre],	to clean ;
<i>tenere,</i>	[tenére],	to hold ;
<i>seguito,</i>	[segúito],	followed.

These are all the cases in which the accents are used, except that, in *some books* which teach the principles of the language, the *acute* accent is *employed* to *facilitate* the *pronunciation* to learners.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### OF THE APOSTROPHE.

THE *apostrophe* is a small sign, like a comma ('), inserted between two words to mark the *elision* of a *vowel*.

The apostrophe is generally used at the *end* of those words that *terminate* with a *vowel*, followed by a word that *begins* with the *same vowel* ; as,

[buóna avventúra]	buon' avventúra,	good fortune ;
[gránde edifizio]	grand' edifizio,	great edifice :

And at the end of words that terminate with a vowel followed by a word that begins with any other vowel, *whenever* it is *necessary*, to *render* the *pronunciation* more *agreeable* ; as,

[quésto úomo]	quest' úomo,	this man ;
[quéllo álbero]	quell' álbero,	that tree.

---

The Italians write with an *apostrophe*

The articles *lo, la, 'the,'* making an elision of the vowels *o, a,* before words *beginning* with a *vowel* ; as,

*l' amico,* the friend ; *l' innocénza,* the innocence.



These articles are also written sometimes *without* an *apostrophe*; as,  
*lo amoré,* the love; *la energia,* the energy.

But when *lo* is followed by an *o*, and *la* is followed by an *a*, they are *always* written with an *apostrophe*; as,

*l' onóre,* the honor; *l' ánima,* the soul:

---

The article *gli*, 'the,' when it is *followed* by an *i*; as,  
*gl' ingégni,* the geniuses; *gl' ídoli,* the idols:

The article *le*, 'the,' when the following word *begins* with *e*; as,

*l' eresie,* the heresies; *l' eménde,* the emendations.

Sometimes they write also with an *apostrophe* the article *il*, 'the'; after a word *ending* with a *vowel*, and make an *elision* of the *vowel i*; as,

*tutto 'l mondo,* all the world; *sopra 'l petto,* upon the breast:

---

The words *mi*, 'me'; *ti*, 'thee'; *ci*, 'us,' or 'here';  
*vi*, 'you,' or 'there'; *si*, 'one's self'; *ne*, 'of it,' or  
 'of them'; 'hence,' or 'thence'; *se*, 'if'; *di*, 'of';  
 when they come *before* a *vowel*; as,

<i>m' ingánnó,</i>	I deceive myself;
<i>l' ama,</i>	he loves thee;
<i>c' inténde,</i>	he understands us; &c.

And the words *i', é', dé', á', dá', có', né', pé', b'é',  
 sé', dí', fé', ré', pó', mé', mó', vó', té', &c.*, abbreviated  
 from *io*, 'I'; *éi*, 'he,' or 'they'; *déi*, 'of the'; *ái*,  
 'to the'; *dái*, 'from or by the'; *cói*, 'with the'; *nei*,  
 'in the'; *péi*, 'for or by the'; *béi*, or *béne*, 'hand-  
 some,' or 'well'; *séi*, 'thou art'; *díci*, 'say thou';  
*féce*, 'he made'; *védi*, 'see thou'; *póco*, 'little'; *mé-  
 glió*, 'better'; *módo*, 'mode' or 'manner'; *vóglío*,  
 'I wish'; *tiáni*, 'hold thou'; &c.

---

The apostrophe ought *never* to be *used* when the elision of the vowel might produce, in nouns or adjectives, a *confusion* of *gender*, of *number*, or of *relation* among themselves :

Thus the *feminine* of all the adjectives of the *common gender*, like *innocente*, 'innocent'; *errante*, 'wandering'; &c. preceded by the article *la*, 'the,' are written without elision, *la innocente*, 'the innocent woman'; *la errante*, 'the wandering woman'; to distinguish them from the *masculine*, *l' innocente* [lo innocente], 'the innocent man'; *l' errante* [lo errante], 'the wandering man':

Those nouns which in the *plural* do not change their termination, as, *effigie*, 'image'; *éstasy*, 'ecstasy'; preceded by the article *le*, 'the,' are written without elision, *le effigie*, 'the images'; *le éstasy*, 'the ecstasies'; to distinguish them from the *singular*, *l' effigie* [la effigie], 'the image'; *l' éstasy* [la éstasy], 'the ecstasy':

And the preposition *da*, 'from or by,' expressing the *relation of derivation*, followed by a noun beginning with a vowel, as *da amore*, 'from or by love'; is written without elision, to distinguish it from the *relation of possession*, *d' amore* [di amore], 'of love.'

*Nor* is the apostrophe to be *used* when the elision of the vowels would *change the sound* of the consonants; as in *gli*, 'the,' followed by the vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, where the elision of the *i* would render *hard* the *liquid* sound of the *gl*; as in

<i>gl' aviri,</i>	} for {	<i>gli anóri,</i>	the misers;
<i>gl' editti,</i>		<i>gli editti,</i>	the edicts;
<i>gl' ócchi,</i>		<i>gli ócchi,</i>	the eyes;
<i>gl' uccélli,</i>		<i>gli uccélli,</i>	the birds.

For the *same* reason, *ci*, 'us,' or 'here'; and words ending in *ce*, *ci*; *ge*, *gi*, are *never* written with an *apostrophe* before the vowels *a*, *e*, *u*; since the elision of *e*, *i*, would give to the consonants a *hard* sound; as in

<i>c' àma,</i> <i>fac' ardente,</i> <i>dolc' accenti,</i> <i>piagg' apriche,</i> <i>poggi' améni,</i>	} for	<i>ci àma,</i> <i>face ardente,</i> <i>dolci accenti,</i> <i>piagge apriche,</i> <i>poggi améni,</i>	he loves us ; burning light ; sweet accents ; sunny places ; pleasant hills.
---	-------	--	--

Finally, words that *end* with *two vowels*, as *cambio*, 'exchange'; *nebbia*, 'fog'; though followed by another vowel, do *not receive* an apostrophe ;

## EXCEPT

A few verbs, ending in *io*, as *voglio*, *doglio*, which followed by *io*, 'I,' are written

*vog' io*, I wish ; *mi dog' io*, I grieve.

Likewise words that are *marked* with a *grave accent*, as *felicità*, 'happiness'; *gioventù*, 'youth'; &c. do *not receive* an apostrophe ;

## EXCEPT

*Perchè*, *benchè*, and all the other compounds of *che*; as, *perch' egli disse*, because he said; *bench' ella fosse*, although she was.

## CHAPTER III.

## REDUPLICATION OF CONSONANTS.

The Italians *write* all words *as they pronounce* them ; and in those words in which a consonant is pronounced with double force, they *double the consonant* in writing ; as,

*obbligo*, obligation ; *immagine*, image ;  
*faccenda*, business ; *legittimo*, lawful.

Consonants are generally doubled

In words compounded of one of the particles *a, o, i* or *in, si, se, nè, co* or *con, so, su, da, ra, fra*, and of any other word *beginning* with a *consonant* ; as,

[A péna]	appéna,	hardly ;
[O véro]	ovvéro,	or else ;
[I or IN rigáre]	irrigáre,	to water ;
[SÌ cóme]	siccóme,	as ;
[SE béne,]	sebbéne,	although ;
[NÈ méno,]	nemméno,	nor yet ;
[CO or CON MUÓ- vere]	commuóvere,	to move ;
[SO Leváre]	solleváre,	to raise ;
[SU cédere]	succédere,	to succeed ;
[DA béne]	dabbéne,	honest ;
[RA cónto]	raccónto,	relation ;
[FRA méssó]	framméssó,	put between :

In words compounded of a *verb* ending with a *vowel* bearing the *accent* upon it, and of a *conjunctive* pronoun ; as,

[HA LO]	háLLO,	he has it ;
[DIRÒ VI]	diróvvi,	I will tell you ;

## EXCEPT

When the *verb* is followed by the pronoun *gli*, when the *g* is never doubled:

In all words compounded of an *adverb*, a *preposition*, or a *conjunction*, ending with a *vowel*, and of any other word *beginning* with a *consonant* ; as,

[óltre ciò]	oltrecciò,	besides that ;
[là giù]	lassgiù,	there below ;
[già mái]	giammái,	never ;
[sópra nóme]	soprannóme,	surname ;
[E púre]	eppiúre,	and yet.

## CHAPTER IV.

## INCREASE OF WORDS.

THE *increase of words* is the *addition of a vowel or a consonant*, either at the *beginning* or at the *end of a word*.

When the words *in*, 'in'; *con*, 'with'; *non*, 'no,' or 'not'; *per*, 'for,' 'by,' or 'through'; are *followed* by a word *beginning* with an *s* *followed by another consonant*, as, *stráda*, *spavénto*, *scrive*, *schérzo*; to avoid the harshness produced by the meeting of these consonants, the *second word* commonly *takes an i* before it; as,

IN <i>istráda</i> ,	} instead of	{ <i>in stráda</i> ,	in the street;
CON <i>ispavénto</i> ,		{ <i>con spavénto</i> ,	with fright;
NON <i>iscrive</i> ,		{ <i>non scrive</i> ,	does not write;
PER <i>ischérzo</i> ,		{ <i>per schérzo</i> ,	in jest.

In *poetry*, however, this rule is *not so strictly observed* as in *prose*; since the *increase* (adding a *syllable* to the word), would be often *incompatible* with the *measure of the verse*.

The preposition *a*, 'to,' and the conjunctions *e*, 'and'; *o*, 'or'; when *followed* by a word *beginning* with a *vowel*, sometimes *take a d* after them, to *prevent the hiatus*; as,

AD <i>úno ad úno</i> ,	one after another;
AMÓRE ED ÓDIO,	love and hatred;
ED IN CIÉLO ED IN TÉRRÁ,	either in heaven or on earth.

And the prepositions *su*, *insù*, 'upon'; *followed* by another *u*, *take an r* after them; as,

SUR UN MÓNTE,	upon a hill;
INSUR UN PÁLCO,	upon a stage.

CHAPTER V.

DIMINUTION OF WORDS.

THE *diminution of words* is the *suppression* or *retrenchment* of a *letter* or a *syllable*, either at the *end* or in the *middle* of a word.

The Italians retrench the *last vowel* of words *ending* in *e, o*, preceded by one of the consonants *l, m, n, r*, forming with them a *syllable* by themselves; as in *sá-LE*, 'salt'; *uó-MO*, 'man'; *má-NO*, 'hand'; *cuó-RE*, 'heart'; and followed by a word beginning with a *consonant*; as,

SAL COMÚNE,	common salt;
UÓM DI Córte,	courtier;
MAN DI dónna,	lady's hand;
CUÓR DOlénte,	grieving heart.

But if *le, lo; ne, no; re, ro*, do not form a *syllable* by themselves, but in concurrence with any other consonant, as in *Sófo-CLÉ*, 'Sophocles'; *A'n-GLO*, 'Englishman'; *ví-GNE*, 'vineyards'; *pé-GNO*, 'pledge'; *á-CRE*, 'sour'; *pí-GRO*, 'lazy'; the words are *never retrenched*.

When *e* is preceded by *rr*, as in *condúr-RE*, 'to conduct'; and *o* is preceded by *ll* or *nn*; as in *fanciúl-LO*, 'youth'; *hán-NO*, 'they have'; they retrench the *whole syllable*; as,

CONDÚR séco,	to conduct with one's self;
FANCIÚL vezzóso,	handsome youth;
L' HÁN RUBáto,	they have robbed him.

The *last vowel* of the words *úno*, 'a or an'; *béne*, 'well'; *buóno*, 'good'; and the *last syllable* of the words *bélló*, 'handsome'; *quéllo*, 'that'; *gránde*, 'great';

when they are *followed* by a word *beginning* with a *consonant*, are *always retrenched* ; as,

UN <i>Flóre</i> ,	a flower ;
BEN <i>Ti sta</i> ,	thou deservest it ;
BÓN <i>vino</i> ,	good wine ;
BEL <i>Práto</i> ,	beautiful meadow ;
QUÉL <i>Líbro</i> ,	that book ;
GRAN <i>mercádo</i> ,	great market ;
GRAN <i>ciadá</i> ,	great city.

The *last vowel* of the word *Signóre*, ‘ Master ’ ; and the *last syllable* of the words *Fráte*, ‘ Brother [Friar] ’ ; *Sánto*, ‘ Saint ’ ; when they are *used as titles* ; is also *retrenched before a consonant* ; as,

SIGNÓR <i>Cárlo</i> ,	Master Charles ;
FRA <i>Giovánni</i> ,	Brother John ;
SAN <i>Páolo</i> ,	Saint Paul.

---

Words ending in *a* are *never retrenched* ;

## EXCEPT

*Suóra*, ‘ Sister ’ ; which, when *used as a title*, loses the *a* ; as,

SUÓR <i>María</i> ,	Sister Mary ;
---------------------	---------------

and *óra*, ‘ now,’ with its compounds *allóra*, *acóra*, *talóra*, &c. which, *before a consonant*, may be *retrenched* ; as,

OR <i>dí</i> ,	now say ;
ALLÓR <i>vídi</i> ,	then I saw ;
ANCÓR <i>piángo</i> ,	he weeps still ;
TALÓR <i>véggia</i> ,	sometimes he is awake.

---

Words ending in *i* are *never retrenched* ;

## EXCEPT

*Fuóri*, ‘ out ’ ; and the *second person* of the *imperative* of verbs ending in *nére*, *níre* ; as *tiéni*, ‘ hold thou ’ ; *viéni*, ‘ come thou ’ ; from *tenére*, ‘ to hold ’ ; *veníre*, ‘ to come ’ ; which *before a consonant* lose their *i* ; as,

FUÓR di città,	out of town ;
TIÉN <i>quésto</i> ,	hold this ;
VIÉN <i>frésto</i> ,	come quick.

Words ending in *u*, and words accented on the last syllable, are never retrenched.

Words ending with *two vowels* are never retrenched ;

EXCEPT

When the two vowels are preceded by *n*, as in *António*, 'Anthony' ; *testimónio*, 'testimony' ; in which case they may be retrenched ; as,

ANTON-Mária,	Anthony-Maria ;
TESTIMÓN <i>veráce</i> ,	true testimony.

Words retrenched in the singular, are never retrenched in the plural ;

EXCEPT

*Gránde*, 'great' ; which in its plural *gránde*, also, loses the last syllable ; as,

GRAN <i>pericoli</i> ,	great dangers ;
GRAN <i>ricchézze</i> ,	great riches ;

and such words as *cavaliére*, 'cavaller' ; *demónio*, 'demon' ; &c. which, in poetry, may lose the last vowel or vowels, even in their plurals ; as,

<i>le dónne</i> , i CAVALIÉR,	the ladies, the cavaliers ;
i DEMÓN <i>dúri</i> ,	the cruel demons.

Words, which would be retrenched before a word beginning with a consonant, are always written with an *apostrophe* before words beginning with a vowel ; as,

<i>bell' aspétto</i> ,	handsome appearance ;
<i>quell' arco</i> ,	that bow ;
<i>grand' uómo</i> ,	great man ;
<i>Frat' Albérto</i> ,	Brother Albert ;
<i>Sant' Andréa</i> ,	Saint Andrew ;



## EXCEPT

*Uno*, 'a or an,' and its compounds; *quale*, 'which'; *bueno*, 'good'; *bene*, 'well'; *Signóre*, 'Master'; *Suóra*, 'Sister'; and the infinitive, and forms of verbs ending in *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, which do not receive an apostrophe; as,

<i>un amico</i> ,	a friend;
<i>alcún odór</i> ,	no smell;
<i>quéi ardír</i> ,	what daring;
<i>buen úomo</i> ,	good man;
<i>ben inciso</i> ,	well engraved;
<i>Signór Onofrio</i> ,	Master Onofrio;
<i>Suór Angélica</i> ,	Sister Angelica;
<i>andar a spásco</i> ,	to go and take a walk;
<i>abbiam amato</i> ,	we have loved;
<i>andrán exénti</i> ,	they will be exempted;
<i>sarebber brsi</i> ,	they would be burnt.

Words are *never retrenched*, when they are followed by a *z*, or an *s* followed by another consonant; or when they are at the end of a sentence;

## EXCEPT

In poetry where words are sometimes retrenched, even before a *z*, or an *s* followed by another consonant, on account of the measure of the verse.

Some words, when they undergo some alteration, lose a vowel in the middle, particularly if the tonic accent of the word, by such alteration, is transferred to the following syllable; as,

<i>búno</i> ,	good;	<i>boníssimo</i> ,	very good;
<i>túno</i> ,	thunder;	<i>tonáre</i> ,	to thunder;
<i>súno</i> ,	I play;	<i>sonísimo</i> ,	we play.

Some compound words lose a letter, or a syllable in their composition; as,

[ <i>íeri séra</i> ]	<i>ierára</i> ,	last evening;
----------------------	-----------------	---------------

[sótto térra]	sottérra,	under ground ;
[dománi mattína]	domattína,	to-morrow morning ;
[cénto cinquánta]	cencinquánta,	one hundred and fifty.

*Infinitives*, and those forms of verbs that end in *le*, *ne*, *mo*, *no*, when joined to a conjunctive pronoun, drop their final vowel ; as,

[amáre lo]	amárlo,	to love him ;
[duóle ti]	dublúti,	it grieves thee ;
[viéne séné]	viénsene,	he comes thence ;
[andiámo vi]	andiámvi,	let us go there ;
[aiutárono ci]	aiutáronci,	they assisted us.

The first and third persons singular, and the third person plural, of the imperfect of the indicative of all the verbs, which in the infinitive terminate in *ére*, *íre*, generally drop the *v* ; as,

[io } teméva,]	io,	} teméa,	I	} feared ;
[égli } teméva,]	égli,	} teméa,	he	} feared ;
[églino temévano,]	églino,	temévano,	they	feared ;
[io } sentíva,]	io,	} sentía,	I	} heard ;
[égli } sentíva,]	égli,	} sentía,	he	} heard ;
[églino sentívano,]	églino,	sentívano,	they	heard.

The words *caválli*, *capélli*, *coltéli*, *fratéli*, *ruscélli*, *quéli*, *béli*, *déli*, *áli*, *dáli*, *néli*, *péli*, *cólli*, *súlli*, *tráli*, and *quáli*, *máli*, *táli*, *figliuóli*, may be contracted into *cavái*, *capéi*, *coltéi*, *fratéi*, *ruscéi*, *quéi*, *béi*, *déi*, *ái*, *dái*, *néi*, *péi*, *cói*, *súi*, *trái*, *quái*, *mái*, *tái*, *figliuói* ; which, when they are followed by a consonant, it is more elegant to abbreviate, and write with an apostrophe ; as,

<i>cavá' leggiéri</i> ,	light horses ;	<i>ruscé' ridénti</i> ,	smiling brooks ;
<i>capé' bianchi</i> ,	white hair ;	<i>qué' signóri</i> ,	those gentlemen ;
<i>colté' pungénti</i> ,	sharp knives ;	<i>bé' costúmi</i> ,	good manners ;
<i>fraté' carnáli</i> ,	own brothers ;	<i>dé' nemíci</i> ,	of the enemies ;

*á' parénti*, to the parents ; *trá' bóetti*, amongst the woods ;  
*dá' látri*, by the robbers ; *quá' doléri*, what pains ;  
*né'biségni*, in the necessities ; *mal' pensári*, malicious thoughts ;  
*pl' cónpi*, through the fields ; *lá' discórsi*, such discourses ;  
*cb' dénti*, with the teeth ; *figliuó' misér-* very miserable sons.  
*stú' mónti*, upon the mountains ; [rimi,

The word *églino*, 'they' ; often loses its last syllable and makes *égli* ; and *égli*, 'he,' or 'they,' may be contracted into *éi*, and written *é'*, 'he,' or 'they.'

---

This is all that needs to be said on the diminution or retrenchment of words ; except that the rule respecting the retrenchment of *e*, *o*, when preceded by *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, does not hold in certain instances, where such retrenchment would produce a harsh sound. Thus the words, *cóme*, 'how' ; *nóme*, 'name' ; *ánimo*, 'courage' ; *chiáro*, 'clear' ; *ráro*, 'rare' ; *néro*, 'black' ; *dáro*, 'hard' ; *oscé-ro*, 'obscure' ; &c., are never written *com*, *nom*, *ánim*, *chiár*, *ner*, *rar*, *dur*, *oscúr*, &c.

THE END.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

---

PREFACE to the former Edition - - - - -	vii
" to the present Edition - - - - -	xi
A LIST OF WORKS examined with Reference to the Com- pilation of this Grammar - - - - -	xxvii
A TABLE of the Abbreviations of the Names of Authors and of the Works quoted in this Grammar - - -	xxiv

---

### ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

INTRODUCTION - - - - -	1-10
ITALIAN ALPHABET - - - - -	11, 12
PART I.—ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION - - - - -	13-24
CHAPTER I.— <i>Sounds of the Vowels</i> - - - - -	13
" II.— <i>Pronunciation of the Consonants</i> - - - - -	14
" III.— <i>Of J and H</i> - - - - -	16
" IV.— <i>Double Consonants</i> - - - - -	17
" V.— <i>Of Syllables</i> - - - - -	19
" VI.— <i>Diphthongs and Triphthongs</i> - - - - -	20
" VII.— <i>General Rules on the Italian Pronunciation</i> - - -	21
EXERCISE on the Pronunciation - - - - -	23
PART II.—ITALIAN ANALOGY - - - - -	25-388
PARTS OF SPEECH - - - - -	25
CHAPTER I.— <i>Articles</i> - - - - -	25
Union of the Prepositions with the Articles - - - - -	28
EXERCISE I. - - - - -	34
CHAPTER II.— <i>Substantive Nouns</i> - - - - -	36
Gender - - - - -	36
Number, or Formation of the Plural - - - - -	48
Variation of Nouns - - - - -	56
EXERCISE II. - - - - -	60

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

<b>CHAPTER III. — <i>Adjective Nouns. — Comparatives and Superlatives</i></b>	<b>62</b>
Gender	62
Formation of the Plural	62
Agreement of Adjectives	63
<i>Comparatives</i>	65
EXERCISE III.	71
<i>Superlatives</i>	72
EXERCISE IV.	78
<b>CHAPTER IV. — <i>Augmentatives and Diminutives</i></b>	<b>80</b>
<i>Augmentatives</i>	80
EXERCISE V.	83
<i>Diminutives</i>	84
EXERCISE VI.	89
<b>CHAPTER V. — <i>Numerals</i></b>	<b>90</b>
Cardinal Numbers	90
Ordinal “	94
Collective, Distributive, and Proportional Numbers	96
EXERCISE VII.	98
<b>CHAPTER VI. — <i>Substantive Pronouns</i></b>	<b>100</b>
<i>Personal Pronouns</i>	100
Variation of Personal Pronouns	101
EXERCISE VIII.	107
<i>Conjunctive Pronouns</i>	109
Union of the Pronouns <i>mi, ti, gli, ne</i> or <i>ci, vi, si</i> , with the Pronouns <i>lo, la, gli, li, le, ne</i>	114
EXERCISE IX.	118
<i>Relative Pronouns</i>	119
EXERCISE X.	125
<i>Interrogative Pronouns</i>	127
EXERCISE XI.	129
<b>CHAPTER VII. — <i>Adjective Pronouns</i></b>	<b>131</b>
<i>Possessive Pronouns</i>	131
EXERCISE XII.	134
<i>Demonstrative Pronouns</i>	137
EXERCISE XIII.	143
<i>Indefinite Pronouns</i>	145
EXERCISE XIV.	156
<b>CHAPTER VIII. — <i>Of the Particles Ne, Ci, Vi</i></b>	<b>158</b>
EXERCISE XV.	162
<b>CHAPTER IX. — <i>Verbs</i></b>	<b>164</b>
<i>Variation of Verbs</i>	164

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

<i>Auxiliary Verbs</i> - - - - -	165
The Verb <i>Avère</i> , affirmatively - - - - -	165
"    "    negatively - - - - -	169
"    "    interrogatively - - - - -	171
"    "    interrogative-negatively - - - - -	172
<i>Èssere</i> - - - - -	173
<i>Regular Verbs</i> - - - - -	177
<b>Active Verbs — FIRST CONJUGATION</b> - - - - -	177
<i>Amàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>àre</i> - - - - -	177
<i>Cercàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>càre</i> - - - - -	181
<i>Prègàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>gàre</i> - - - - -	182
<i>Baciàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>ciàre</i> - - - - -	183
<i>Fregiàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>giàre</i> - - - - -	185
<i>Noiàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>iàre</i> - - - - -	186
<i>Inotàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>tàre</i> - - - - -	187
<b>SECOND CONJUGATION</b> - - - - -	187
<i>Temère</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in the <i>infinitive</i> in <i>ère</i> ( <i>long</i> ); and of those which in the <i>perfect</i> end in <i>éi</i> and <i>étti</i> - - - - -	187
<i>Tèssere</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in the <i>infinitive</i> in <i>ère</i> ( <i>short</i> ); and of those which in the <i>perfect</i> end in <i>éi</i> only - - - - -	191
<i>Tacère</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>cère</i> - - - - -	193
<i>Èmpiere</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>iere</i> - - - - -	194
<b>THIRD CONJUGATION</b> - - - - -	195
<i>Sentire</i> , paradigm of those Verbs of the third conjugation which, in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> , end in <i>o</i> only - - - - -	195
<i>Esidire</i> , paradigm of those Verbs of the third conjugation which, in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> , end in <i>isco</i> only - - - - -	198
<i>Abborrire</i> , paradigm of those Verbs of the third conjugation which, in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> , end both in <i>o</i> and <i>isco</i> - - - - -	201
<i>Cucire</i> , paradigms of the Verbs ending in <i>cire</i> - - - - -	204
Remarks on the foregoing Verbs - - - - -	205
<b>EXERCISE XVI.</b> - - - - -	209
<b>Passive Verbs</b> - - - - -	212
<i>Èssere Amàto</i> , paradigm of the <i>passive verbs</i> - - - - -	212
<b>Neuter Verbs</b> - - - - -	216
<i>Partire</i> , paradigm of the <i>neuter verbs</i> - - - - -	216
<b>Pronominal Verbs</b> - - - - -	220
<i>Pentirsi</i> , paradigm of the <i>pronominal verbs</i> - - - - -	220
<b>Unipersonal Verbs</b> - - - - -	224
<i>Piòvere</i> , paradigm of the <i>unipersonal verbs</i> - - - - -	224
<i>Èssere</i> , unipersonally used - - - - -	227
<b>EXERCISE XVII.</b> - - - - -	232

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

<b>CHAPTER X. — Irregular Verbs</b> . . . . .	<b>237</b>
<b>Irregular Verbs of the FIRST CONJUGATION</b> . . . . .	<b>238</b>
<i>Andare</i> . . . . .	238
<i>Dare</i> . . . . .	240
<i>Fare</i> . . . . .	242
<i>Stare</i> . . . . .	244
<b>EXERCISE XVIII.</b> . . . . .	<b>248</b>
<b>SECOND CONJUGATION — Irregular Verbs in <i>ère</i> (long)</b>	<b>249</b>
<i>Cadere</i> . . . . .	249
<i>Dissuadere, dolere</i> . . . . .	251
<i>Dovere</i> . . . . .	253
<i>Giacere</i> . . . . .	254
<i>Parere</i> . . . . .	255
<i>Persuadere, piacere</i> . . . . .	256
<i>Potere</i> . . . . .	257
<i>Rimanere</i> . . . . .	258
<i>Sapere</i> . . . . .	259
<i>Sedere</i> . . . . .	260
<i>Tacere</i> . . . . .	262
<i>Tenere</i> . . . . .	263
<i>Valere</i> . . . . .	265
<i>Vedere</i> . . . . .	267
<i>Volere</i> . . . . .	268
<b>EXERCISE XIX.</b> . . . . .	<b>272</b>
<b>Irregular Verbs in <i>ère</i> (short)</b> . . . . .	<b>273</b>
<i>Invadere</i> , paradigm of the <i>first class</i> [ <i>invadere, ledere, riedere, rodere, alludere, ardere, accendere, chiudere, spargere, mergere, correre, rivertere</i> ] of the verbs in <i>ère</i> (short)	276
<i>Assorbere</i> , paradigm of the <i>second class</i> [ <i>assorbere, vincere, torcere, volgere, giungere, porgere, distinguere, assumere, volere</i> ]	277
<i>Cogliere</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>gliere</i>	278
<i>Spegnere</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>gnere</i>	279
<i>Sciogliere</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>liere</i>	280
<i>Concedere</i> , paradigm of the <i>third class</i> [ <i>concedere, scindere, esprimere, scuotere, discutere, connettere, muovere</i> ]	282
<i>Cuocere</i> , paradigm of the <i>fourth class</i> [ <i>cuocersi, dirigere, leggere, scrivere</i> ]	283
<i>Adiucere</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>ucere</i>	284
<i>Distruggere, trarre</i>	286
<i>Rispondere</i> , paradigm of the <i>fifth class</i>	288
<i>Chiedere</i>	288
<i>Ponere</i>	289
<b>Other Verbs in <i>ère</i> (short)</b> . . . . .	<b>291</b>
<i>Conoscere, crescere</i>	291
<i>Muocere, nascere</i>	292
<i>Rompere</i>	292
<i>Bevere</i>	293

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

Remarks on the foregoing Verbs	295
EXERCISE XX.	301
<b>THIRD CONJUGATION</b>	<b>303</b>
<i>Dire</i>	303
<i>Morire</i>	305
<i>Safire</i>	306
<i>Seguire</i>	308
<i>Udire</i>	309
<i>Uscire</i>	310
<i>Venire</i>	311
<i>Offerire</i>	312
Remarks on other Verbs in <i>tre</i>	314
EXERCISE XXI.	316
<b>CHAPTER XI. — Defective Verbs</b>	<b>317</b>
Defective Verbs ending in <i>ere</i> (long)	317
<i>Calere</i>	318
<i>Colere</i> or <i>cólere</i> , <i>locere</i> & <i>licere</i> or <i>lécere</i> & <i>licere</i>	319
<i>Puere</i> , <i>silere</i>	320
<i>Soere</i> , <i>stupere</i>	321
Defective Verbs ending in <i>ere</i> (short)	322
<i>Algere</i> , <i>angere</i>	322
<i>Arrógere</i> , <i>cáperere</i>	323
<i>Chérere</i> , <i>convóllere</i>	324
<i>Fiédere</i>	325
<i>Lúcere</i>	326
<i>Mólcere</i>	327
<i>Riédere</i> , <i>sérpere</i>	328
<i>Soffúlcere</i> or <i>soffólgere</i>	329
<i>Tángere</i> , <i>tóllere</i>	330
<i>Tórpere</i>	331
<i>Urgere</i> , <i>vígere</i>	332
Defective Verbs ending in <i>tre</i>	333
<i>Gire</i>	333
<i>Ire</i>	334
<i>Oltre</i>	335
<b>GENERAL REMARKS ON ITALIAN VERBS</b>	<b>338</b>
<b>CHAPTER XII. — Participles</b>	<b>334</b>
EXERCISE XXII.	348
<b>CHAPTER XIII. — Adverbs</b>	<b>349</b>
Simple Adverbs in common use — of <i>Time</i>	349
<i>Place</i>	350



## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

<i>Order, quantity, quality, affirmation, negation, doubt, comparison, interrogation</i>	351
<i>Choice, demonstration</i>	352
Compound Adverbs	356
<i>Adjectives commonly used as Adverbs</i>	357
Adverbial Phrases in common use	359
EXERCISE XXIII.	361
CHAPTER XIV. — <i>Prepositions</i>	363
Prepositions in common use	363
EXERCISE XXIV.	373
CHAPTER XV. — <i>Conjunctions</i>	376
Conjunctions in common use	376
EXERCISE XXV.	382
CHAPTER XVI. — <i>Interjections</i>	384
Interjections in common use	384
EXERCISE XXVI.	387
PART III. — ITALIAN SYNTAX	389—553
CHAPTER I. — <i>Order and Position of Words</i>	389
Simple Construction	389
Inverse “	393
EXERCISE XXVII.	395
CHAPTER II. — <i>Concordance or Agreement of Words</i>	397
Concordance of Articles	397
“ of Adjectives	397
“ of Numerals	403
“ of Pronouns	403
“ of Verbs	405
“ of Participles	411
EXERCISE XXVIII.	413
CHAPTER III. — <i>Regimen or Government of Words</i>	415
Regimen of Substantives	415
“ of Adjectives	418
“ of Verbs	421
“ of Prepositions	432
“ of Conjunctions	433
EXERCISE XXIX.	436
CHAPTER IV. — <i>Use of Articles</i>	440
EXERCISE XXX.	468
CHAPTER V. — <i>Position of Adjectives</i>	472
EXERCISE XXXI.	480
CHAPTER VI. — <i>Use and Position of certain Pronouns</i>	483

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

Personal Pronouns . . . . .	483
Conjunctive " . . . . .	486
Possessive " . . . . .	495
Indefinite " . . . . .	499
EXERCISE XXXII. . . . .	502
<b>CHAPTER VII. — Verbs</b> . . . . .	<b>506</b>
Position of Verbs . . . . .	506
Use of the Imperfect and First and Second Perfect . . . . .	509
Use of Certain Tenses of the Indicative for some other Tenses of the same Mood; and of the Infinitive for cer- tain Tenses of the Indicative, and for the Conjunctive and Imperative Moods . . . . .	512
Of the Tenses of the Dependent Verbs in a Compound Sentence . . . . .	517
Of the Manner of Expressing the English Present-Participle in Italian . . . . .	519
Of the way of Rendering into Italian the English participle <i>Tv</i> , before the Infinitive of Verbs . . . . .	522
EXERCISE XXXIII. . . . .	525
<b>CHAPTER VIII. — Participles. — Use and Position of   certain Adverbs</b> . . . . .	<b>529</b>
Agreement of Participles . . . . .	529
Use and Position of certain Adverbs . . . . .	535
EXERCISE XXXIV. . . . .	538
<b>CHAPTER IX. — Expletives</b> . . . . .	<b>541</b>
<b>CHAPTER X. — Of the Ellipsis</b> . . . . .	<b>545</b>
<b>REMARKS ON THE DIFFERENT MODES OF ADDRESS IN   ITALIAN</b> . . . . .	<b>549</b>
<b>PART IV. — ITALIAN ORTHOGRAPHY</b> . . . . .	<b>554 — 568</b>
<b>CHAPTER I. — Of Accents</b> . . . . .	<b>554</b>
" <b>II. — Of the Apostrophe</b> . . . . .	<b>557</b>
" <b>III. — Reduplication of Consonants</b> . . . . .	<b>560</b>
" <b>IV. — Increase of Words</b> . . . . .	<b>562</b>
" <b>V. — Diminution of Words</b> . . . . .	<b>563</b>

---

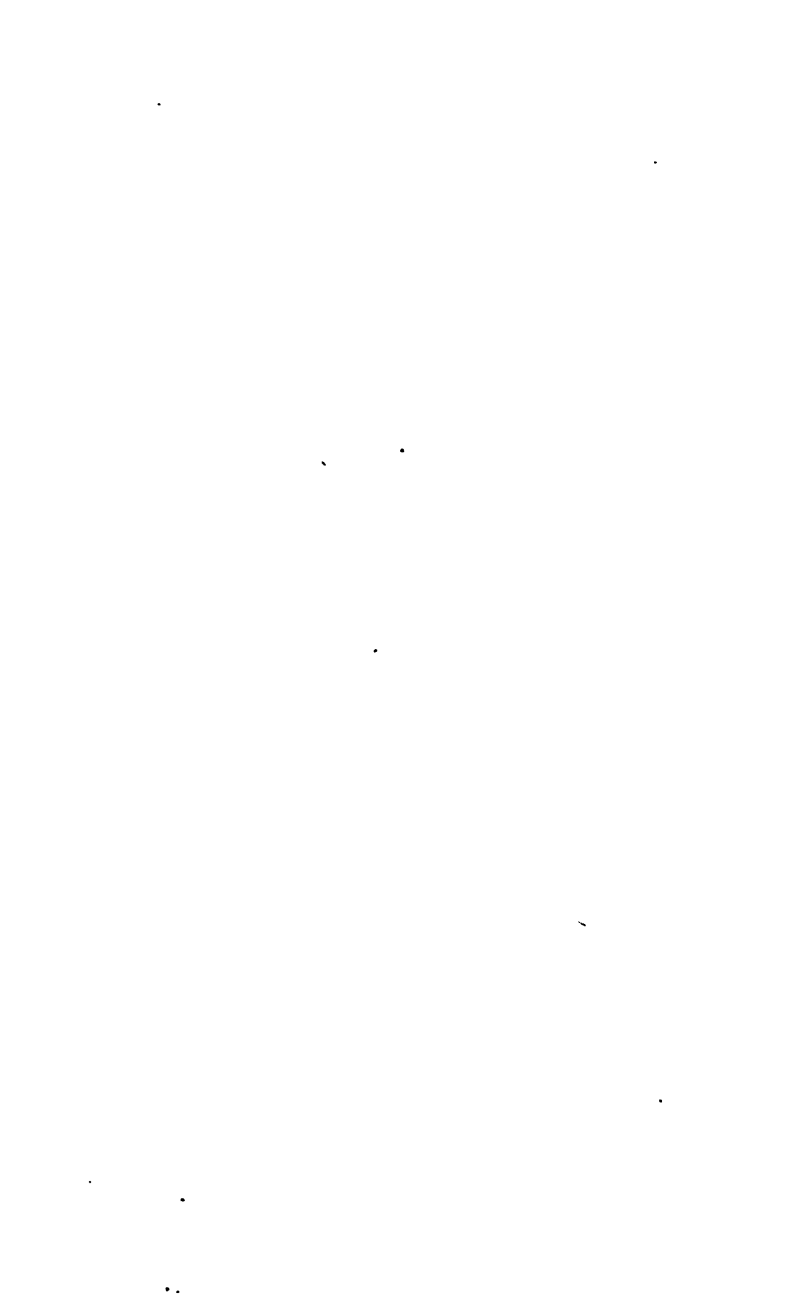
## CORRIGENDA.

Page, 4	line, 44	For, a subject and a quality, to which it affirms that the sub- ject is, or is not attributed,	Read, a subject, and a quality of which it affirms that it is, or is not, at- tributed to the subject.
93	15	<i>giocondo,</i>	<i>giocondo.</i>
94	14	<i>magnánimo,</i>	<i>magnánimo.</i>
96	12	nouns begins,	noun begins.
33	8	MERCA'TANTE,	MERCATA'NTE.
35	22	<i>pidágere,</i>	<i>pidgere.</i>
36	13	<i>Erato,</i>	<i>Erato.</i>
"	25	<i>Lápis,</i>	<i>Lápis.</i>
43	41	<i>déto cós,</i>	<i>che gti ho déto.</i>
44	13	<i>ecclesi,</i>	<i>ecclesi.</i>
64	14	Dev. Tac. am.	Dev. Tac. am.
66	6	Add. Cavalc.	Cavalc.
69	1	<i>Jó,</i>	<i>Jo.</i>
87	17	UMIDIZZO,	UMIDU'ZZO.
89	4	BACIUCCHIA'I,	BACIUCCHIA'I.
"	26	<i>Nascémmo,</i>	<i>Nascémmo.</i>
155	34	Quánte cós,	Quánte cós.
161	4	Pass. tr. Hu. c. 4.	Pass. 276.
173	17	<i>essere státa,</i>	<i>essere státa.</i>
179	20	that thou lovest,	that thou love.
"	21	that he loves,	that he love.
193	24	<i>i,</i>	<i>in.</i>
258	25	as in the case,	as is the case.
267	18	<i>confitto,</i>	<i>confitto.</i>
296	6	'I kindle',	'I kindled.'
299	6	<i>Mi mis,</i>	<i>Mi mis.</i>
"	40	Arr. Vang.	Ann. Vang.
300	14	<i>Jerusalém,</i>	<i>Jerusalem.</i>
348	23	<i>frónda,</i>	<i>frónda.</i>
369	10	Petr. Fr. Am.	Petr. Tr. Am.
"	37	Bocc. Floo.	Bocc. Fileo.
370	30	Mach. Corn.	Mach. Com.
382	1	<i>rinnovelli,</i>	<i>rinnovelli.</i>
394	5	Ephigenia,	Iphigenia.
"	19	FR'ESMI ALLÓNA,	FR'ESMI ALLÓNA.
"	27	Ephigenia,	Iphigenia.
395	20	<i>E'lviche,</i>	<i>Elviche.</i>
406	26	FIGLIERA'MO,	FIGLIER'HO.
419	5	<i>décto,</i>	<i>décto.</i>
455	28	Gian. Stor. Civ. Nap.	Gian. Stor. Civ. Nap.
458	30	<i>sviticcchia,</i>	<i>sviticcchia.</i>
463	8	FIGLIÓLI,	FIGLIÓLI.
468	5	FRUM'NTO,	FRUM'NTO.
477	39	Lipari,	Lipari.
479	36	Tris. Elog. Galil.	Tris. Elog. Gall.
491	26	I see you,	I see thee.
495	5	disposto,	disposto.
500	2	<i>dispósi,</i>	<i>dispéti.</i>
501	8	woman,	woman.
"	30	even,	ever.
In a few copies only:			
137	13	these,	those.
"	14	these near you,	those near you.
138	30	STAMA'TTINA,	STAMATTINA.
143	19	COSTUI,	COSTU I.
"	24	EXERCISES,	EXERCISE XIII.

### ADDENDA.

409	35	add	(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)
446	26	add	(Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)
479	42	add	(Dant. Inf. 2.)
486	32	add	(Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)
486	10	add	(Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)
516	41	add	(Bocc.)













THIS BOOK IS DUE ON THE LAST DATE  
STAMPED BELOW

AN INITIAL FINE OF 25 CENTS  
WILL BE ASSESSED FOR FAILURE TO RETURN  
THIS BOOK ON THE DATE DUE. THE PENALTY  
WILL INCREASE TO 50 CENTS ON THE FOURTH  
DAY AND TO \$1.00 ON THE SEVENTH DAY  
OVERDUE.

FEB 3 1947

JUL 1 1947

21 Feb '40 BE  
22 Apr '53 VH

18 Jun '53 LOT

JUN 11 1953 LU

SANTA BARBARA  
INTERLIBRARY LOAN

ONE MONTH LATER RECEIPT

1-35-0

SEP 28 1970

11-7-70

U. C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES



C046323063

24 9:15

THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

